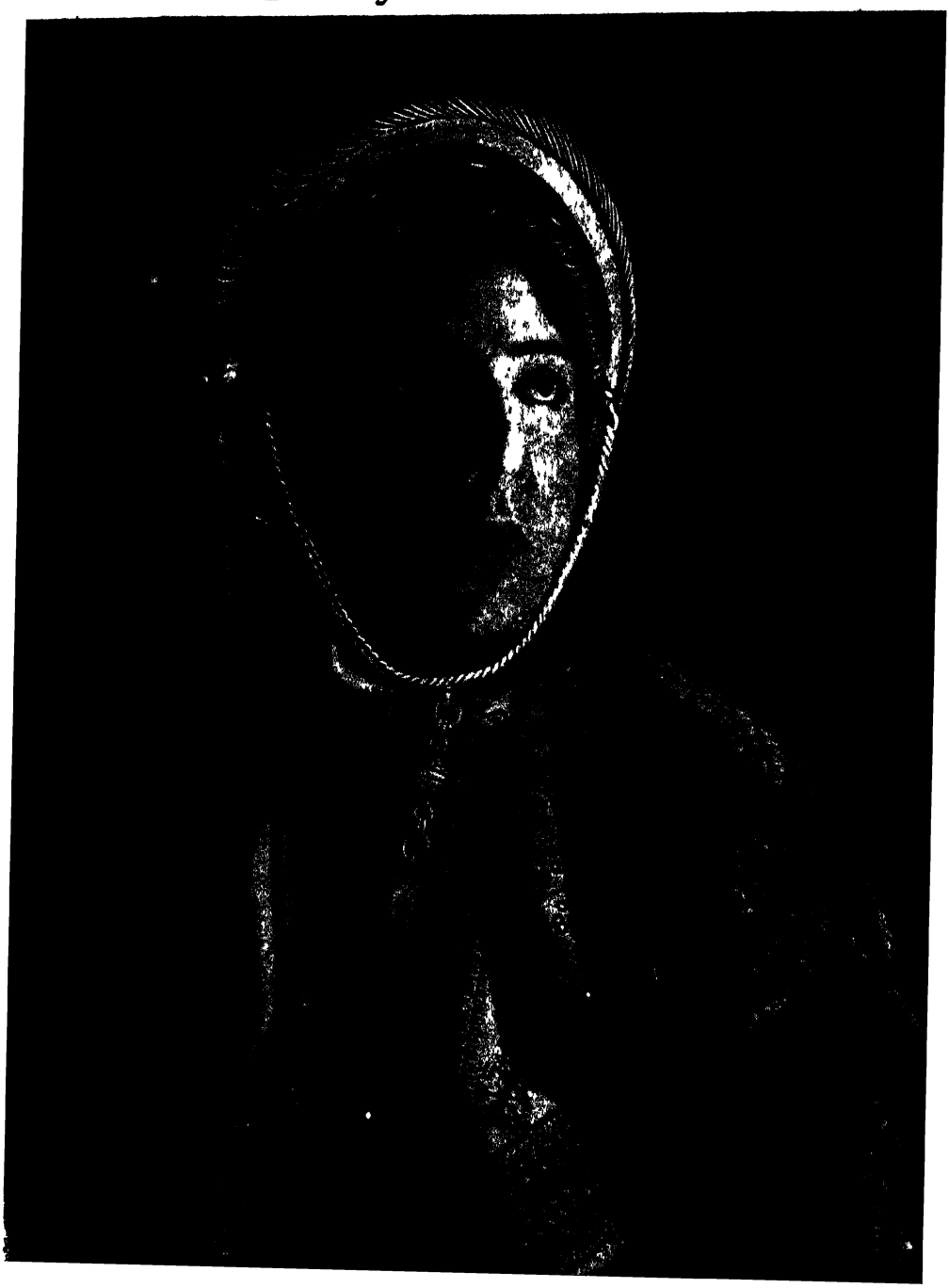
लाल बहादुर शास्त्री राष्ट्रीय प्रशासन अकादमी
L. B. S. National Academy of Administration
मसूरी
MUSSOORIE
पुस्तकालय
LIBRARY

प्रवाप्ति सख्या
Accession No. 13101
वर्ग संख्या
Class No. 909
पुस्तक संख्या
Book No. Pco
Vik

36 PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS

Edited by J.A.Hammerton



BACK NUMBERS OF 'PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS' CAN STILL BE HAD

Contents of this Part

PALESTINE I.	Jew and Arab in the Holy Land	19 *Photographs*	Herbert Bentwich
,, II.	Its 3,000 Years of History	1 *Photograph*	Leonard Stein
PANAMA I.	Mixed Peoples of the Isthmian Republic	10 *Photographs*	Hamilton Fyfe
,, II.	The Story of Its People and Canal	3 *Photographs*	Percy F. Martin
PARAGUAY I.	Races of a Land-Locked State	11 *Photographs*	H. F. Notley
,, II.	The Story of Its Mis-government	2 *Photographs*	W. H. Koebel
PERSIA I.	Pastoral Life in the Land of the Shah	20 *Photographs*	Sir Percy Sykes

PHOTOGRAVURE SECTION: IN PALESTINE WITH JEW AND CHRISTIAN *(17 Photographs)*

COLOUR PLATE: Palestine: Old Jewry in Jerusalem

COVER PICTURE Palestine A Maid of Bethlehem

From the Editor's Desk

THE FLEETWAY HOUSE FARRINGDON STREET.
LONDON E C 4

PALESTINE, with its paramount appeal to the religious emotion of Christian, Jew, and Mahomedan, is the main subject of the present Part of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS. Little adverse criticism is to be anticipated of the manner in which it has been dealt with by pen and by camera. Mr. Bentwich's knowledge of the Holy Land and its peoples is at once wide and profound, and enables him to give a life-like description of human activity in Palestine to-day. Supplemented by the admirable photographs, especially the fine plates reproduced in photogravure, his chapter is a fascinating travelogue.

卐

Subject Matter of Part 37

OUR next Part will contain the rest of Sir Percy Sykes' descriptive account of life in Persia begun in these present pages, and also a highly instructive survey of its past history and present intriguing situation, from the same practised intelligence. Peru is dealt with descriptively by Mr. G. M. Dyott, the particularly graphic style of whose book, "Silent Highways of the Jungle," is used to great advantage in this chapter; while the history of the Republic is related by Mr. G. R. Enock. Mr. Arnold Wright, author of "Early English Adventures in the East," supplies a vivid chapter on the Philippine Islands.

卐

Uses of Comparison

ALTHOUGH by no means unmindful of the adage that comparisons are odious, I think there is little doubt that when asked to purchase an article one should regard with suspicion the attitude of a would-be seller who urges one not to compare his goods with another's. This by way of preface to some observations upon the educational works issuing from the same house as PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS.

卐

Competition Among Publishers

THE present is a period of remarkable competition in fortnightly publications, and at no time in the history of British publishing have the booksellers and newsagents been able to offer so wide a range of choice to their customers. This is a good thing if there be any virtue in the reading and studying of informative literature; for the wider the choice the larger is the body of readers likely to become. Competition is good for all, as it is always under the stress of competition that the best efforts are called forth, and I am far from regretting in any measure the present state of the publishing market; especially as the publishing house from which PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS is issued has every reason to view with satisfaction the circulation it has attained.

卐

Justifiable Self-Satisfaction

AS editor of this work, I have been curious enough to examine all the new and recent competitors in this particular field, and quite apart from the merit of the very costly contributions it has been my privilege to secure, I confess that after examining all of the other fortnightlies I have an increased feeling of satisfaction at the liberal, nay, the generous policy of the Amalgamated Press, which has made these fortnightly publications of ours famous throughout the world for sterling value. More than that I need not say, but I would suggest to my readers that if they have an

(Continued on page iii of this wrapper

The entire contents of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS are protected by copyright in all countries signatory to the Berne Convention. The literary and most of the pictorial contents are copyright in the United States of America.

N.A.S. National Academy of Arts Library 17316

PALESTINE · OLD JEWRY IN JERUSALEM

Jerusalem, after centuries of Ottoman possession, is seeing the gradual return of the descendants of Israel's children who built it Here sit three elders under the ramparts

To face page 3898

Photo Photochrome Company

Palestine

I. Jew & Arab in the Holy Land To-day

By Herbert Bentwich, LL.B.

Author of "The Renaissance in Palestine," etc.

BIBLICAL Palestine stretches from the Lebanon Mountains on the north to the Desert of Sinai on the south, and from the Mediterranean Sea on the west to the Syrian Desert on the east. It comprises about 6,000 square miles on the west, and 3,000 on the east side of the Jordan. No country in the world of the same area has such a remarkable diversity of climate and nature. It falls indeed into four main geographical divisions, as follows:

The Maritime Plain on the west stretches from the "River of Egypt," that runs into the Mediterranean Sea at El-Arish, the whole length of the coast to the seaport of Tyre. The Central Hill Range again dominates the whole country from Beersheba to Dan. The great depression of the Jordan valley, which from Tiberias to Jericho is lower than the Mediterranean, culminates in the Dead Sea, the lowest point on the earth's surface, 1,300 feet below sea level. The plateau on the east side of the Jordan, which forms in appearance a continuous wall that includes the Biblical Bashan, Gilead, and Moab, is raised from 3,000 to 4,500 feet above the depression.

Between the Maritime Plain and the Central Hill Range stretch the foothills, the Shephela of the Bible, which rise from a few hundred to a thousand feet. The mountain range itself is broken by the Vale of Esdraelon which, winding round the ridge of Carmel, cuts in a narrow pass between that verdant hill and the mountains of Galilee and then, widening to a broad expanse, descends gradually to the Jordan. The highest points in the range are Mount Ebal, which towers over Nablus, the ancient Schechem, at a height of over 3,000 feet, and Mount Jermak, that rises crested to a height of 4,000 feet above Safed, the Galilean city set on a hill. The range is intersected by numberless wadis, or water-courses, which are dry for nine months in the year, but during the other three months intermittently contain torrents breaking

COIN-DECKED MATERNITY

On the head of this mother from Jericho is an adornment of coins arranged edgewise in a seeming halo of currency. It formed her dowry, a bright bait for a husband

Photo, H. Perrin

Copyrighted, 1922, by The Amalgamated Press (1922), Limited

EXTREMES MEET IN THE ARID ACRES ON PALESTINE'S BORDER

Pulled unwillingly by the neck the sturdy baggage camels, their supercilious faces swaying, as they pad softly along, slowly follow their master. Above at a hundred miles an hour roars a flying line. The immemorial desert heedless of modern hurry still keeps its old arduous transport methods. Aeroplanes hurtle over it, but still there are fresh bones to whiten along the caravan routes.

Photo, Georg Haeckel

down to the Mediterranean or to the Jordan.

The rainy season falls within the period from December to March. There is an early rain in November, and a latter rain in April, but for the rest of the year the sun shines every day and all day. Several small perennial streams, however, thread their way across the plain, besides the Jordan, which flows all the year with a swift current fed by the snows of the Lebanon. These smaller rivers are the Auja, which bursts from springs in the Maritime Plain and runs by devious windings into the sea about ten miles north of Jaffa, the Zirka, reputed haunt of crocodiles, which spreads into marshes around Caesarea, and the ancient brook Kishon, which takes its rise in the foothills of the Galilean heights and has its mouth in the Bay of Acre, a mile to the north-east of Haifa.

On the east there are two principal streams which feed the Jordan—the Yarmuk, that comes down headlong in successive rapids from the plateau of the Hauran finally dropping in a cascade into the main river south of the Sea of Galilee, and another Zirka, the Jabbok of the Bible which falls from the plateau of Gilead about half way between the Sea of Galilee and the Dead Sea. Lastly, to the east of the Dead Sea the Biblical Arnon now known as the Moojib, forces its way through a narrow gorge between cliffs over 1,000 feet high until it merges its clear stream into the salt laden waters of what the Arabs call "Lot's Sea."

The Jordan in the first half of its course, as it passes through the Valley of Galilee, spreads into two lakes. The more northerly, the Waters of Hulch, or, as it is sometimes called, of Merom, is a papyrus covered marsh at one end, opening into what much resembles a Norfolk Broad at the other. About twenty miles south of Hulch the river flows into the Lake of Galilee, known to the Jews as the Sea of Kinnereth, or the Harp, because its shape is like that of the harp of David.

The Sea of Galilee, some twelve miles long and eight miles broad at its widest point, is in the spring one of the most beautiful places on earth surrounded with flowery meadows bright with every hue In winter it can be very stormy, and in summer, encircled as it is by cliffs which become stony and arid, and lying below the level of the ocean, it is a cauldron A still hotter cauldron is the Dead Sea, in which the Jordan loses itself at a point about eight miles south of Jericho The sea is some forty-seven miles long and has a greatest breadth

ARMED CAVALIER OF THE NOMAD BEDUINS OF PALESTINE

With his horse gaily caparisoned in tassel and plume, his parti coloured raiment, curved sword and double barrelled gun thrown across his saddle bow, this horseman may truly be said to have dressed himself to kill He and his ever wandering tribesmen are still as untamed as their own wild mounts Seldom remaining in one camp for more than ten days they live as well by plunder as by trade

Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

BEARDED SHEIK OF A PALESTINE VILLAGE

There is a strong Arab element in Palestine, and in the days before the railway the sheiks would often levy tribute from travellers as a protection against robbery—from their own followers—and the perils of the road in general

Photo, Photochrome Co.

of ten miles. So great is the heat that the evaporation accounts for the whole inflow of the Jordan. The waters are deeply impregnated with all manner of salts, potash, and bromide, and the like, which may one day give up an immense treasure of chemical wealth.

Throughout its length the Maritime Plain has a rich soil, and where the water of the rivers or of the wells that lie at no great depth below the ground has been used, flourishing orange groves and orchards can readily be made to spring up. Over the greater part of it, however, the Arabs busy themselves with the cultivation of cereals, and the whole plain of Sharon, from Gaza to the Carmel, is a waving green sea of barley and wheat in the spring and the early summer.

Similar is the plain of Esdraelon, and such part of the Jordan valley as is tilled. In the hill country, on the other hand, cultivation is difficult, and in large areas very scanty. The limestone hills, which in Biblical times must have been covered with wood, have been almost completely deforested through the neglect of centuries and the reckless destruction of Turkish rulers, and, except in the neighbourhood of the villages, are now bare. The old terraces have fallen into ruin, and the soil which is now no longer contained by them is washed down by the violent winter rains to the narrow valleys and the plains. The consequence is that, over the greater part of this central strip, cultivation is only of rough barley and maize, or a poor kind of wheat, and vast spaces are left unploughed and unfruitful. It has been calculated that only about one quarter of the arable land of the country is utilised.

Down in the Jordan valley the soil is again bountiful and generous, but human energy has not yet been applied to take from it a full return. There is scarcely any irrigation, and masses of scrub and overgrowth have been allowed to cover lands which were once among the fairest pleasances of the Greco-Roman world.

The eastern plateau, which was a celebrated granary of the Roman Empire is, in a large measure, waste and unpopulated. The Beduin tribes wander freely over the land, taking little out of it themselves, and making it difficult for the more settled population to work it more diligently. Thus the land of Gilead and Moab, which tempted the two and a half tribes of Israel to stay on

SHEIKS AND EFFENDIS GROUPED ABOUT A MOSLEM LIBRARY

Moslems are rightly proud of their share of the famed "learning of the East," and conserve their knowledge upon scrolls which they collect into libraries. Certainly with them in the making of books there is no end, and their effendis or wise men are as eager for the reputation of savant and philosopher as in the most enlightened of communities. These men certainly look the part

Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

BRIDE INVESTED WITH MODESTY AND BRIDEGROOM WITH AUTHORITY

In Palestine the ardours of courtship are often dispensed with Those with beautiful daughters put them upon the marriage market at a price, while girls of plain visage must be provided with a dowry by way of compensation if haply lacking beauty they may still appeal to avarice Here the bridegroom holds a scimitar symbolical of the right to wifely obedience

Photo Underwood Press Service

the further side of the Jordan are to day more backward and less developed than the rolling hills of western Palestine

The population of the country is little less varied than its nature and climate The main element is composed of Arabs, but there are all manner of Arabs, from the wandering Bedum tribe that derives from the sandy steppes of the desert, moving about from place to place with its black tents, its herds of goats, its strings of camels, to the alert, commercial Levantine Arab in the sea ports who has often had a Western education in some missionary or clerical school, and steadily pursues his trade and gathers in his hand the produce of the peasants These peasants or fellahîn, as they are called are again of many different kinds and represent the amalgam of all the races and civilizations that have passed through the Holy Land in the procession of the ages

There are the tall and sturdy "sons of Anak" in the south who still reproduce the stature and the features of the

WILD AND STIRRING SWORD DANCE TO CHEER THE WEDDING GUESTS

According to the length of the purses of the contracting parties so the extent and splendour of the entertainment to the guests. Mountebanks may be called in to give exhibitions of scorpion swallowing and other jugglery while musicians groan and whine upon their instruments to much thudding of accompanying drums. Here one is rousing his audience to excitement by his bloodthirsty gestures

Photo, L. T. Stern

BRIGHTLY CLOTHED AND TURBANED CROWD COLLECTED FOR A WEDDING

As much excitement is to be seen at a marriage in Palestine as elsewhere Usually the bride, having been anointed with many unguents and scents, is conveyed to the bridegroom's house and there received across the threshold Here the throng jostles in the narrow way about the approaching cortege, and the balcony above is brilliant with spectators

Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

CRUDE DELICACIES AT A JERUSALEM STREET RESTAURANT

Upon the boxes lie skewers transfixing titbits of roasted meat and, at the side, flat loaves of bread. There is also a nargileh at which customers may puff, inhaling the blue fumes through bubbling, pleasantly scented water. The heat, the number and persistence of the flies, and the not too cleanly condition of the tables, form no deterrent to the Eastern appetite

Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

Canaanites as they are shown upon the Egyptian monuments, contrasted with them are the fair men and women of the cities such as Bethlehem, Nazareth, and Acre, where the Crusaders mingled their blood with the people of the country which they ruled for a hundred years. There are, too, the Druses, maintaining a secret cult for hundreds of years, isolated from the rest of the people in mountain villages of Carmel and Galilee.

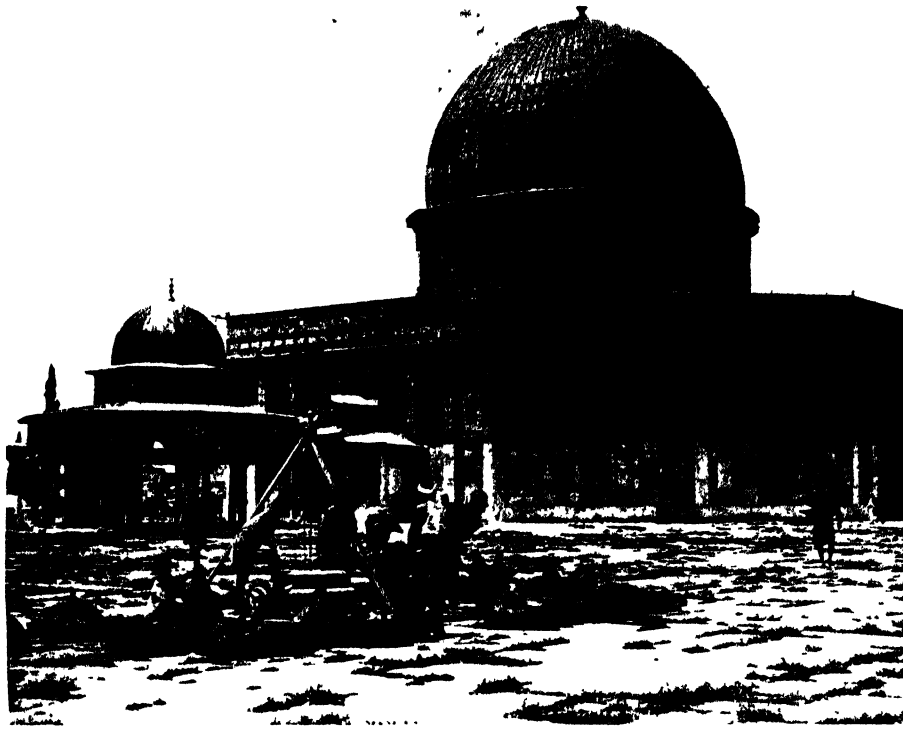
On the other hand, the Christian Arabs, literate and enterprising professional men, clerks, farmers, and general traders, are principally to be found in the towns and the larger villages. They are descendants of the people who occupied the whole of Syria before the Moslem invasion in the seventh and eighth centuries, and they have remained in close touch with the peoples of Europe, who have at all times been anxious to maintain at the shrine of their religion settlements of monks and of many sisters and nuns to bring teaching and healing to the people of the country.

The Arabs are calculated to number between 650,000 and 700,000 souls, of

MOURNING RELATIVES IN THE GREEK CEMETERY OF JERUSALEM

Greek influence has always been strong in the Holy City, and at times has caused some dissension among pilgrims of other communities of whom thousands come annually to visit the various sacred spots. The mourning for departed ones has a certain amount of ceremony among those who have settled in the city, white instead of black being the usual uniform

Photo, Underwood Press Service



WATER-SELLERS OF JERUSALEM BY OMAR'S BEAUTEOUS MOSQUE

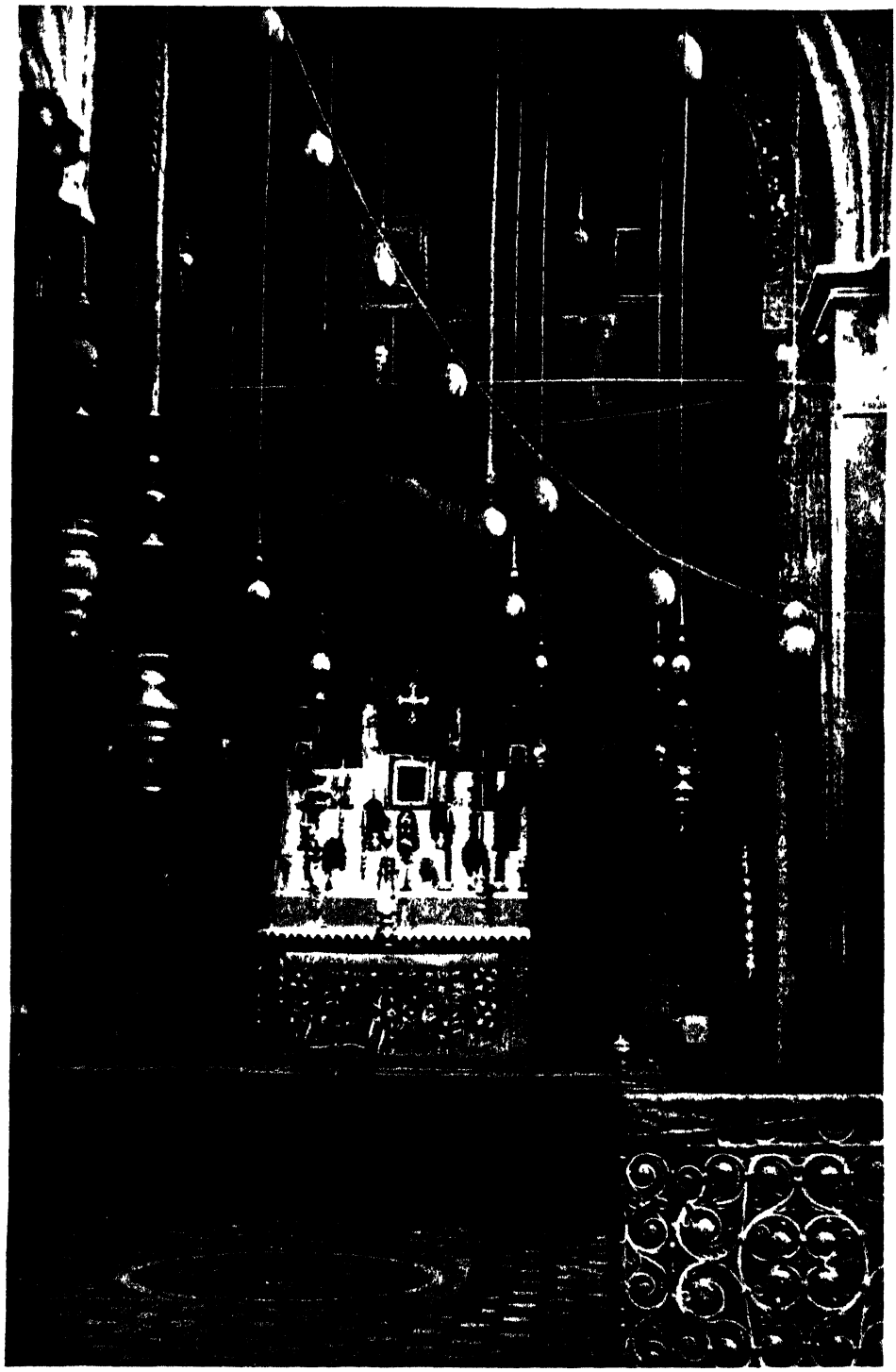
In this weed grown court the water venders of the town are filling their goat-skins at the well whence they will go forth laden into the city's foetid streets. In contrast is this mosque, one of the finest of Saracenic structures in existence. Porch and colonnade, altar and cistern, and, over all, the sublime curve of the surmounting dome, stand like a gem in a setting of grime

Photo, Donald McLeish

whom all but 73,000 are Moslems. Of the Christians just under half belong to the Orthodox Church, while of the remainder there are groups of Latin Catholics and Maronites, Armenians, Chaldeans, Copts, and Abyssinians. The Protestants count between 6,000 and 7,000; many of them have been gained to that Church by British and American missionaries, who have established schools and hospitals in the holy towns and in several of the villages. They include, too, over 700 members of the "Temple" society who emigrated from Germany in the middle of the nineteenth century.

The heads of the Orthodox and the Latin and Protestant Churches come from abroad, while the rank and file of their communities are people of the country. The Armenians and the smaller Christian communities consist mainly of persons of foreign race, and are more in the nature of special religious settlements.

The other important section of the population of Palestine is the Jews, of whom there are between 80,000 and 90,000. Since the time of the destruction of their national life by the Romans, the Jews have cherished an intense faith in their restoration to Palestine, and they have never ceased to have a small remnant in the country. A hundred years ago, however, there were only 8,000 Jews in the whole land, all of whom were settled in the towns of Jerusalem, Jaffa, Hebron, Tiberias, and Safed, except for a hundred or so agriculturists in a Galilean village, Pekiin. This small community was composed of the descendants of settlers planted in the seventeenth century by an Ottoman Jewish worthy who desired to bring about the return of his people to their old way of life in their historical country. The movement among the Jews towards an agricultural life in Palestine has made remarkable development in



BEFORE THE ALTAR IN THE CHURCH OF THE HOLY SEPULCHRE

Devotees of the Greek Church were largely responsible for the erection in the year 1810 of this Church of the Holy Sepulchre. It is built on the reputed site of the Golgotha hill, and stands upon the foundations of several former structures. Its dome, crowned by a gilded cross, makes a conspicuous landmark from outside, where Turkish guards once kept order among the pilgrims

Photo, Georg Haeckel

TROOPER AND PILGRIM AT A GREEK CEREMONY IN HOLY WEEK

During this period, when Jerusalem and its topography become specially sacred to the pilgrims of all nations who flock thither, the ceremony of the Washing of the Feet is observed In the courtyard of the Church of the Holy Sepulchre is seen a throng crowded about the central platform, Turkish soldiery jostling Christian worshippers in the packed space while, heedless of the stir, the rite proceeds

the last fifty years. Impelled, on the one hand, by the imperishable ideal of the restoration of the national life, and, on the other hand, by the bitter persecution in Russia and Eastern Europe, groups of Jewish pioneers have come out resolved to work the soil, and have now formed more than fifty villages in different parts of the country. Most of these settlers are small farmers, but, while tilling the soil, they retain their love of knowledge, and every cottage has its library.

The first modern settlement of the kind was established in 1876 by the International Association of the Alliance Israélite, which founded an agricultural school, known as Mikweh Israel (the gathering of Israel) a few miles out of Jaffa. Two years later pioneers from Russia started a colony in the plain about ten miles north of Jaffa, and named it the "Gate of Hope" (Petach Tikweh). It was, indeed, to be rather the gate of death to some of the pioneers; but their hard struggle engaged the interest of Baron Edmond de Rothschild, who came to the help of all the Jewish settlements springing up in the country. Some half a dozen villages, or, as they are commonly called "colonies," were founded in the early eighties of the nineteenth century around Jaffa, another group in the northern part of the Plain of Sharon and on the lower spurs of the ridge of

MONKISH CURATOR OF THE GARDEN OF GETHSEMANE

By the side of the highway that leads to the Mount of Olives may still be seen this garden, now surrounded by a wall and tended by Franciscan monks, who present the visitor with a bunch of flowers as a souvenir of the visit. Some of the olive trees are said to date from the beginning of the Christian era, and are shored up with stones

Photo, Donald McLeish

EAST AND WEST MINGLE ABOUT JERUSALEM'S JAFFA GATE

On every hand ancient and modern, Orient and Occident, meet and mix in this sunny scene beneath the shadow of the Jaffa Gate. Dragoman and tourist, beggar and pilgrim, swarm on the cobbled pavement and untidy roadway while hotel and rampart stand within a stone's throw of each other. The gap through which the road runs was made for the entrance of the Kaiser in 1898.

Photo American Colony in Jerusalem

are some 35,000 in Jerusalem, 20,000 in Jaffa, and considerable communities in Haifa, Tiberias, Sated, and Hebron. Since 1920 the Jews have built what is now a flourishing garden-city on the sand dunes to the north of Jaffa, known

YACOB, THE HIGH PRIEST

Samaria is now ruins, but the Samaritans still keep their rites and high priest, a descendant of Levi, who receives a tenth of their income and performs their immemorial rites

Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

as Tel Aviv (The Hill of Spring), which now holds some 10,000 people; and new Jewish quarters are rising on the hills around Jerusalem and on Mount Carmel above Haifa.

Jerusalem, especially, forms a remarkable microcosm of the whole Jewish people. There are the Sephardic Jews who have been settled in Palestine for generations, have adopted the manners and wear the clothes of the Arab Effendis and can speak their language. Then there are some thousands of the pious Jews from Eastern Europe, who wander about the Oriental streets under the Oriental sun wearing the cloth and plush kaftans and the fur-trimmed plush hats that they have brought with them from the Ghettos of their old home.

Old and young alike spend a large part of their day in study and prayer, in colleges—Yeshiboth—which fellow-Jews in Europe and America maintain in order that Jewish scholarship may be kept alive in its ancient seat. But side by side with their study many of them also carry on little trades. Then there are the Jews of a younger and more vigorous generation, who have come to Palestine in recent years with the determination to regenerate the land and build up a national life, have founded their modern schools and institutions, are active in the learned professions and engage in various forms of social endeavour and the Arts.

Then, again, there are the dark, puny Jews from the Yemen district of Arabia, who, oppressed in their own home, have come to Palestine to lead a better life and help towards the re-building. They are thrifty and industrious and form a labouring class of agricultural workers, craftsmen, and domestic servants in both the towns and villages. They are minutely observant of the religious law, and may be distinguished from the Moslem Arab, whom they otherwise resemble, by the ringlets of dark hair hanging from the head which they leave because of the Biblical prohibition against cutting the corners of the hair.

Contrasted with them in stature, yet also preserving intensely the old religious life, are the Jews from Bokhara and Georgia, many of them still robed in the splendours of the bazaars of Turkistan, families of scholars and mystics. There are, too, smaller societies of Jewish men and women from Europe and America who play a large part in the organization of the communal life and in the administration of the communal charities.

Small groups have migrated from Persia and Morocco, a few individuals from Aden and India, and even from

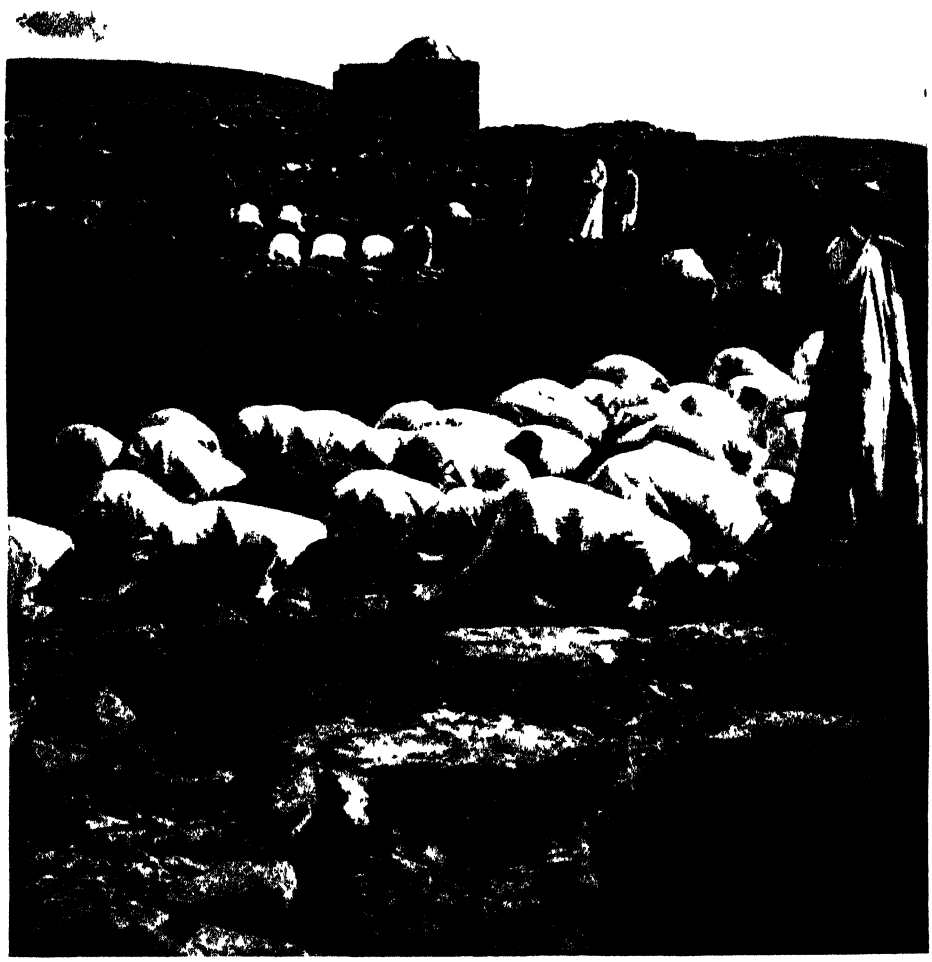
Abyssinia; indeed, from every country in which, during the two thousand years of his endless roaming, the Jew has planted his life and fostered his religion. They have all come back with the same enthusiasm for the regathering of Israel from the four corners of the earth; and within the last twenty years they have revived the ancient language of the people. They speak to one another in the Hebrew of the Bible, which has been made again a living tongue.

The Jews are actually the majority of the population in Jerusalem, but that is the only town in Palestine in which they exceed the Moslem population. The rest of the people of Jerusalem, though not so diverse in origin as the Jews, yet form a wonderful medley of humanity. Jostling together in the narrow cobbled streets, down which no carriage can pass and man must go on foot or on a donkey, there gather the village Arabs coming into the market in their galabiahs and their vari-coloured turbans, and the fellahîn women in their bright dresses tricked out with the embroidery of which they have maintained the art from the Middle Ages; reverend sheiks and religious

WATCHING THE SERVICE OF SACRIFICE ON GERIZIM'S MOUNTAIN
Through continual intermarriage the Samaritans of Samaria have become a dying race. Yet theirs is, perhaps, the oldest sect in the world, and still, on the eastern end of Mount Gerizim, they keep the Passover. A lamb is roasted near the traditional site of Abraham's sacrifice, and the entire community gathers round in reverent audience The rite has remained almost unaltered for centuries
Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

students in black flowing gown and white turban, to whom Jerusalem is the third holiest city in Islam; the shrewd persuasive merchant in European clothes and Turkish tarbush chaffering in his little shop, the Christian monks and priests from every European land; the Russian peasant women, survivors of the 10,000 pilgrims who, prior to the Great War, came yearly to Palestine from all parts of the Tsar's Empire, and who, with their demure skirts and white headdress, still preserve the manners of Holy Russia in the Holy Town; and hundreds of tourists, most of them to-day from America, wearing the horn spectacles of their race, and making a desperate effort to exhaust the sights and history of the world's most historical town in forty-eight, or it may be in twenty-four, hours.

The architecture of the town of Jerusalem, like its population, is most variegated. Within the ancient Saracenic walls which enclose the three hills of Zion, Ophel, and Moriah, lies an almost perfect Eastern city of shaded bazaars and arched alleys, interrupted only by



SAMARITANS PROSTRATED WHILE PRAYERS ASCEND TO HEAVEN

Mount Gerizim is especially sacred to Samaritans, as they believe it to be the scene of Abraham's sacrifice. Here they are gathered upon its summit under the leadership of their high priest. The prayers are made in the Samaritan dialect and the worshippers prostrate themselves in religious ecstasy. This, the east end of the mountain, is its holiest part, with an altar of sacrifice

Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

BEARDED PRIESTS OF SAMARIA'S ANCIENT SECT

These steadfast looking priests are the leaders of their dwindling band of followers, in whom they inculcate the traditions of the past and the hope—the coming of their Messiah—of the future. This advent they reckon to be due six thousand years after the Creation, according to their own date for this occurrence. All images and pictures are held in abhorrence as idolatry

Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

a score of great churches, orphanages, monasteries, and patriarchs' palaces. Its greatest glory, and one of the world's sublimest monuments, is the Haram El Sherif, the area of the ancient Temple, which covers one-eighth of the whole town, and comprises the Dome of the Rock, commonly known as the Mosque of Omar, the Mosque of El Aksa, and a number of other holy Moslem buildings.

Between the shrines stretches a beautiful grassy expanse shaded here and there by venerable cypresses. The second most striking monument within the Old City is the Church of the Sepulchre, which dates from the Middle Ages, and is a dark, somewhat cavernous building, divided up into a number of chapels, each the holy place of a different section of the church.

Outside the ancient city a baffling mass of institutions displays many styles of architecture. Each Christian country has vied with the other to produce a big and imposing building. The Russians led the way with a vast compound for pilgrims, able to accommodate thousands of visitors, in the midst of which stands a cathedral with half a dozen typical Russian domes. The French followed with a number of spacious Latin institutions, culminating in the Convent of Notre Dame, which rises up in its huge bulk of 600 rooms. The Germans, impelled to great efforts by the imperial progress of the Kaiser at the end of the nineteenth century, erected four bastions in and around the town. The most imposing of the four is the Hospice, that crowns one of the spurs of the Mount of Olives, and is now the seat of Government.

The Italians have built a hospital and a church which are the replicas of one of the great buildings of medieval Florence, the Armenians have a

CONJUGAL LIFE OUT OF SAMARIA'S MUD HUTS

On the wrinkled face of the aged husband is the haughty mien of a race that has long maintained itself to be a superior minority Even Samaria, the pride of its people, restored by Pompey and favoured by Herod, who added temples and palaces to its architecture, is nothing but a litter of broken stone among which a few shepherds find housing

Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

beautiful convent set in a garden, the Abyssinians have their cathedral, whose coal-black roof is one of the landmarks of outer Jerusalem. The English have a modest cathedral church set in a truly English close and surrounded by an English garden, which may well make the stranger exclaim in the words of the Bible, "Surely the meek shall inherit the earth." Jaffa is the second town of Palestine, its principal place of commerce, and, despite its inhospitable approach, still the principal port. No harbour exists either there or at the other chief maritime place– Haifa; and passengers and merchandise are disembarked in barges which are driven through an opening in a rocky reef to the quay.

Jaffa, surrounded by orange groves, is a busy town divided into three quarters the port quarter rising on a hill immediately above the sea, and mainly inhabited by Moslems, the Christian quarter to the south, where many of the big merchants have their residence, and the new Jewish quarter of Tel Aviv, which is altogether European in its design and its amenities, spreading ever farther upwards to the north

The exports of Palestine are principally the oranges from the Jaffa district, the sesame and the barley from the plain of Sharon, and the soap which is made largely at Nablus from the olive berry They mostly find their way from the country through Jaffa The imports, which exceed the exports nearly tenfold, consist largely of clothing and building material and machinery, and find their way into the country through that port

Haifa is the commercial rival of Jaffa, and by nature more favoured The town nestles under the ever-green ridge of Carmel and is divided, like Jaffa, into three quarters—the Moslem centre

SALTING THE SACRIFICE AT THE OFFERING OF LAMBS

In the ceremony of the sacrifice of the seven white lambs the Samaritans are unique among the Jewish peoples Clad in surplices and scarlet turbans they proceed in order of rank to the summit of Gerizim, where the oblation is to be made According to their ancient commandment no meat offering may be made unsalted The animals are prepared upon wooden spits

Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

SAMARITAN HIGH PRIEST IN THE PERFORMANCE OF HIS OFFICE

Standing upon a decorated prayer carpet the venerable father of the Samaritan flock preaches to the close ranks of congregation and spectators. This creed has a canon of its own, including the Pentateuch and certain sacred songs and prayers that have been handed down through long years and acquired the greatest value and awe among this dwindling band of devotees

Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

BAREFOOT URCHIN OF JAFFA AND HIS BASKET OF GOLDEN FRUIT

This ancient seaport of Palestine, known of old as Joppa, has long been famed for its oranges Though the harbour has only accommodation for light draught vessels, it is of great economic importance to the country as being the point at which the railway from the capital touches the Mediterranean The little Syrian boy with his basket stands as if symbolical of the town's chief trade

Photo V S Manley

LOADED CAMELS AND PACKED CRATES ON JAFFA WHARF

Jaffa, one of Palestine's most pleasant cities, is a place of orange groves and gardens, fruit trees, and vegetable patches A belt of land, more than a mile wide, runs round it, and, fed by artesian wells, is a mass of fertility. A Jewish garden city has been built under regulations stipulating that each house shall be surrounded by cultivated land Both population and trade have greatly increased

Photo, L T Stein

WITHIN THE FAMILY CIRCLE OF A HOUSEHOLD OF JERICHO

Both as to clothing and appearance these folk seem somewhat drab and dingy. In this they but faintly reflect the spirit and atmosphere of their surroundings, for modern Jericho is but a collection of sordid hovels This erstwhile great city, whose walls fell to Joshua, and which, re erected by Herod, boasted tower and temple and green gardens, is again little more than a human rubbish heap

Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

around the port; the suburb on the plain that runs out to the promontory built by the German Templars who settled there in the latter part of the nineteenth century in order to live a more Christian life, and first brought to the Holy Land the enterprising, progressive spirit of the West, and a new suburb which is growing up on the slopes of the mountain for the accommodation of the Jews and European non-Jews who are flocking to the place which to-day bids fair to be one of the "gates of the East."

The next most considerable town in Palestine is Nablus, which lies in the very centre of the country, nestled in a smiling valley between Mount Ebal and Mount Gerizim It is an important centre of Moslem learning, and more than four-fifths of its population are Moslems. The rest are Christian Arabs, save for a small but deeply interesting community of some 150 Samaritans who have maintained in the ancient centre of the Kingdom of Israel a distinct life and a distinct literature for over 2,500 years They have refrained from intermarriage, and have a very clearly-marked type. But they have fallen on evil days, and have a desperate struggle to survive racially and economically

IN THE GARDEN-GIRT MAIN STREET OF JAFFA'S NEW JEWISH GARDEN SUBURB

Contrasting with the uncleanness of the crowded native quarter is the flower-grown, tree-planted area of Tel Aviv, or the Hill of Spring. As one of the direct results of the Zionist movement this modern township, growing rapidly, has sprung up with clean thoroughfares and well-ordered housing. It lies upon the fringe of the fruitful Plain of Sharon, rich with vine and orange tree, with the healthful expanse of the azure Mediterranean beyond the white beach to which the houses are extending

Photo, Donald McLeish

SUNSHINE AND SHADOW OVER STACKED MERCHANDISE IN HAIFA'S COBBLED MARKET PLACE

Upon the blue bay of Acre stands the port of Haifa the gateway to the sea for Damascus It is connected with the main railway system of Palestine and is the finest natural harbour in the country The Jewish influx which began somewhat after the middle of the nineteenth century has transformed an insignificant Arab village into a thriving town built rather on European lines Increasing in importance as a trade centre of the Levant it has a well attended market

Photo Donald McLeish

LITTLE MAID OF NAZARETH AND HER WEIGHTY WATER-POT

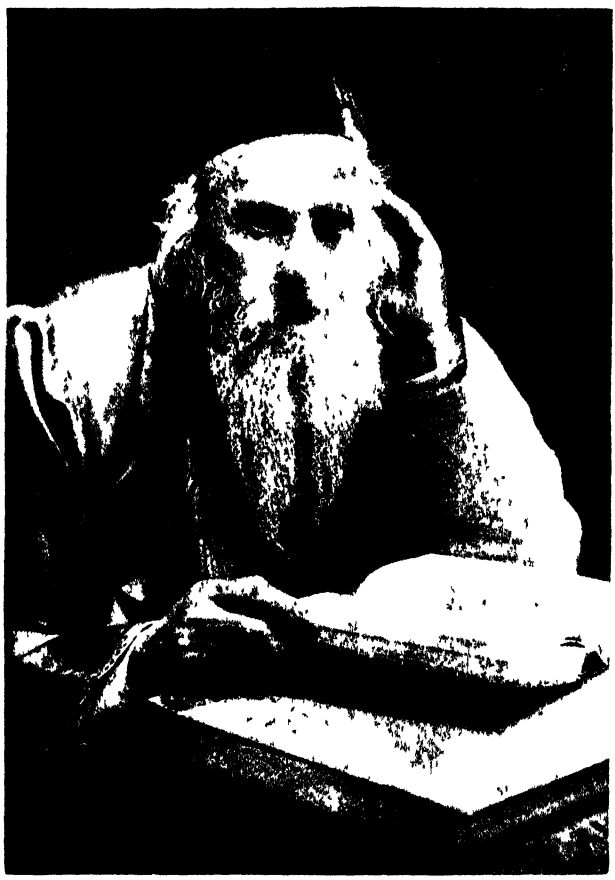
In the midst of fifteen encircling hills lies the little town of En Nasira, upon the site of Nazareth famous among cities Built upon the side of a stone strewn hill its whitened houses are set amid gardens and orchards, and everywhere are spots sacred to an undying memory The country around, remarkably fertile, is unchanged in appearance since the first century A D

Photo, Donald McLeish

ONE BRAWNY BACK SUPPORTS BABY AND BEDDING ON ACRE BEACH

Upon the swiftly drying sand, whose sea flattened expanse the waves have ruffled, stands a coal-black son of Acre town, baby on back and bottle in hand, a merry sight. Behind and over the white lines of surf the Cape of Carmel juts its mountain length seawards. The scene is laid upon the strand that runs between Acre and the port of Haifa

Photo, Donald McLeish



HOARY STUDENT OF TALMUDIC LORE

Compiled from the fruits of Jewish legal tradition and discussion, the Talmud forms the basis of Jewish philosophy. This venerable elder is plainly replete with its wise saws and profound precepts

Photo, L. T. Stein

Other historic towns in Palestine must be mentioned briefly. Beersheba and Gaza in the south are the market places of the Beduin of Sinai desert. Hebron, one of the cities "half as old as time," has preserved an unbroken history for over three thousand years. It is looked on with the greatest veneration by Moslem, Christian, and Jew alike as the city of Father Abraham and the burial place of the Patriarchs, over whose tombs there rises a great mosque. Two of the smaller cities are particularly sacred to the Christian people—Bethlehem and Nazareth—and both have been endowed by the Western communities with large institutions which make them richer and more progressive than their neighbours. Northern Galilee contains two towns that are particularly sacred to the Jews, Tiberias and Safed, famous centres of learning in the Roman and medieval times. To-day they are populated by a half-Moslem and a half-Jewish population, and are beginning to experience the revival which has come to the whole land. Tiberias, until a few years before the Great War pressed within its medieval walls around the Sea of Galilee, now begins to spread on the healthier hills which rise immediately above the lake; and Safed, identified as the "city set on a hill" of the Gospel, has been linked at last by a metalled road with the great trunk line of communication between Palestine and Syria.

One other city in the north has its peculiar historic glory, and preserves, more than Jerusalem itself, its medieval beauty. This is Acre, the last fortress of the Crusaders, which is still girt by the mighty Crusaders' walls, but is to-day principally a Moslem city.

So much for the towns which hold about one-half the population of Palestine. The other half lives in some eight or nine hundred villages; except for those Beduin tribes, numbering perhaps in Palestine some 70,000 souls, who pursue their nomad life in easy disregard of the cares and troubles of fixed property.

The Arab village represents the spirit of the unchanging East. It must be to-day what it has been for a thousand years. The ways of cultivation, the habits and beliefs of the people, the

IN PALESTINE
With Jew & Christian

Even in the variegated crowds that throng Jerusalem this turbaned patriarch in his sheepskin coat is notable as he quietly twists his thread

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

For more than seven centuries Moslems like these outside the Jaffa Gate were masters in Jerusalem. Now the Jews are coming into their own

Photo, Donald McLeish

Sternly ascetic lives are led by these monks of Mar Saba in their terraced monastery on a precipice in the Valley of the Jordan

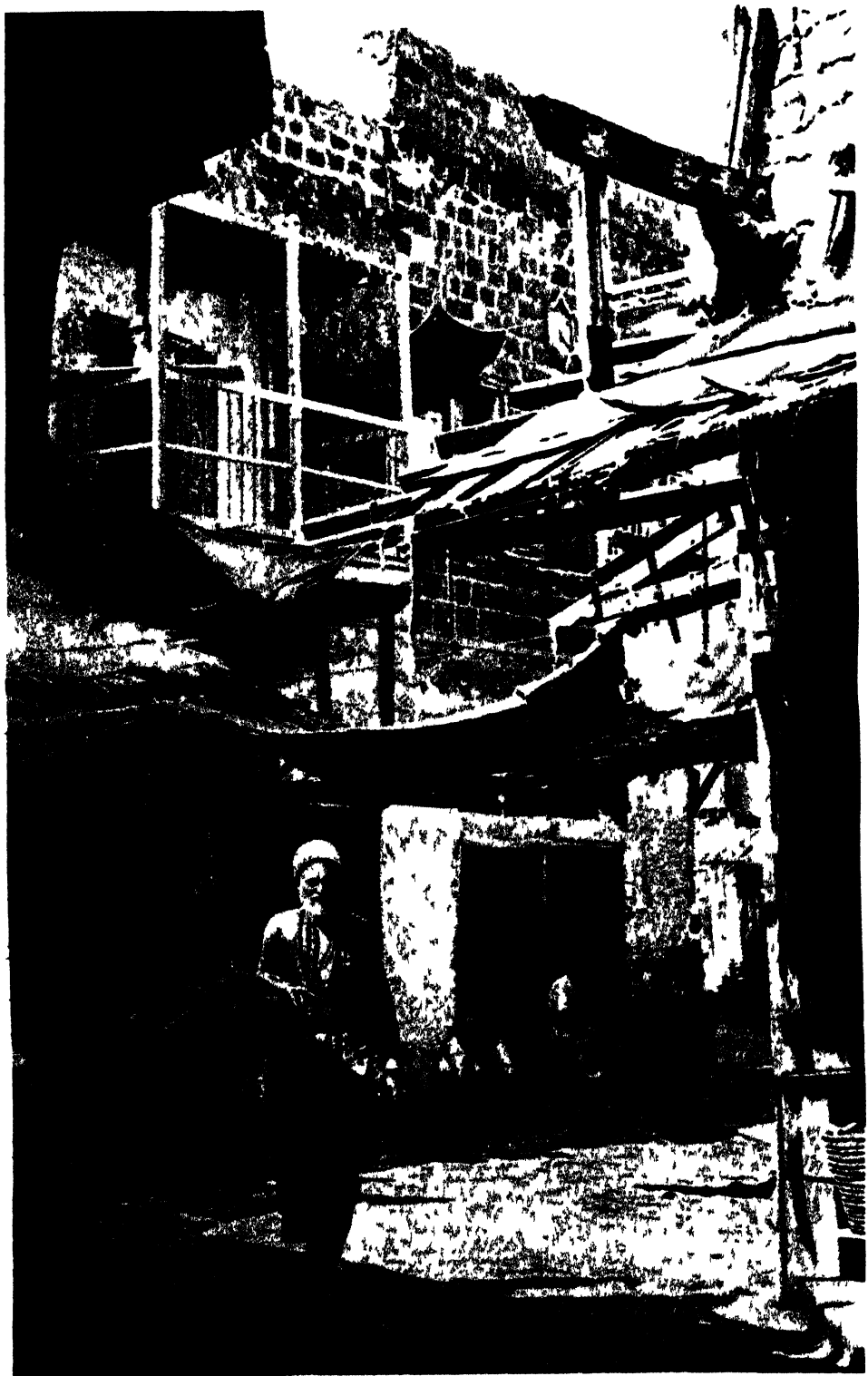
Photo, Donald McLeish

Palestine is a shepherds' country. Clad as in Abraham's day, the shepherds bring their flocks from the green ranges beyond Jordan to the sea-coast for sale, still, as Jacob did, leading the young lambs softly

Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

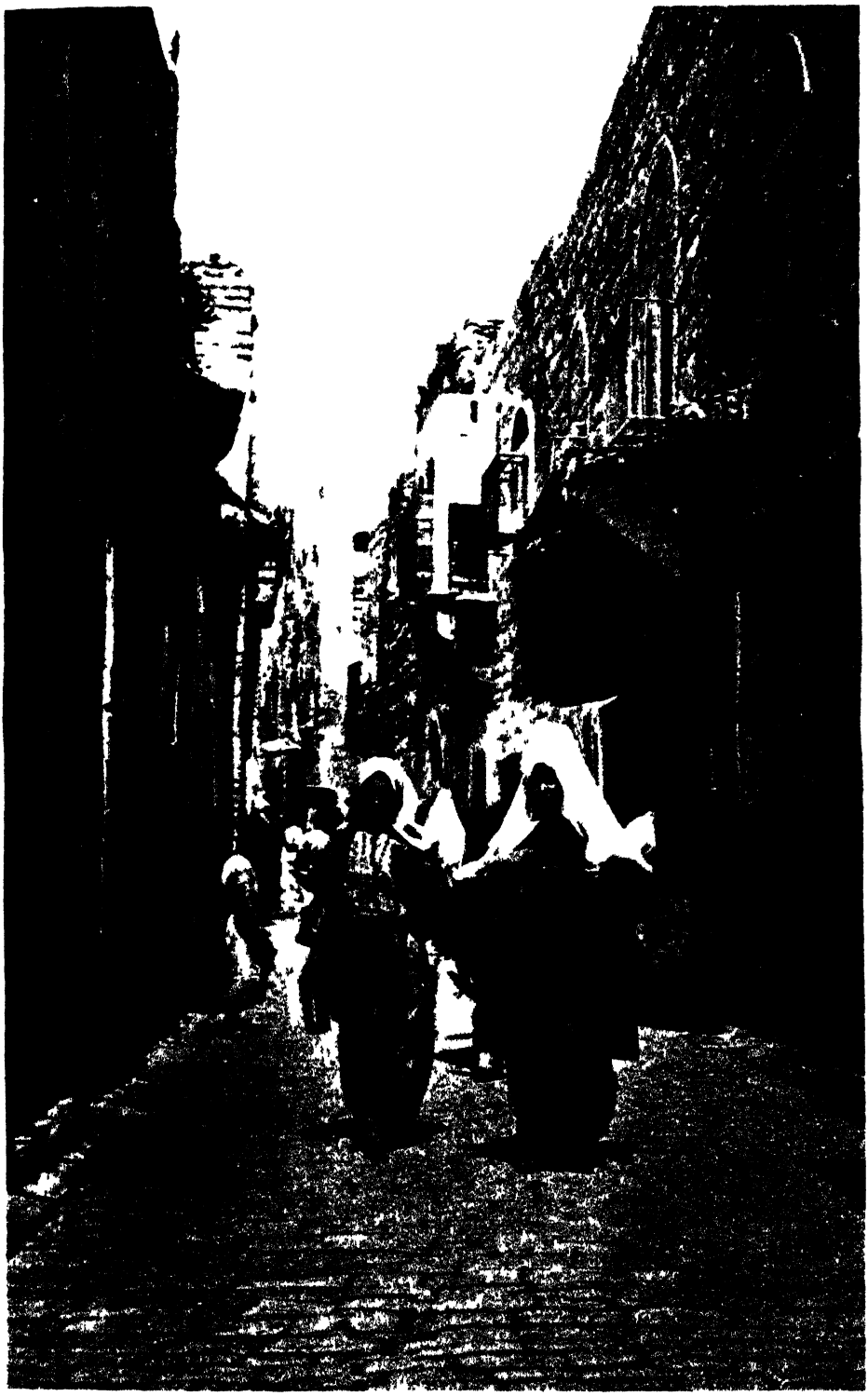
Numbers of precious springs and streams have endowed the soil of Samaria with rich fertility. So the Samaritan's heart is glad at harvest-time, for then he gathers in an abundant reward of his labour

Photo, Donald McLeish



Though still one of the four holy cities of Jewry, Tiberias has sadly fallen from its first splendour as Herod Antipas's capital of Galilee

Photo Donald McLeish



Very clean and orderly are the streets of Bethlehem. Christians all of them, its men are industrious and its women beautiful

Photo, Donald McLeish

Erect and grave, this water-carrier of Bethlehem is an appealing figure in her gracious local costume, edged and striped with rich embroidery

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

From their white-veiled conical felt hats the pretty maidens of Bethlehem suspend silver chains and coins as indication of their wealth

Photo, Donald McLeish

At eventide the well of Cana of Galilee is a focal point where all the villagers assemble to water their beasts, fill their pitchers, and exchange gossip. It was in this village that Christ wrought His first miracle

Photo, Donald McLeish

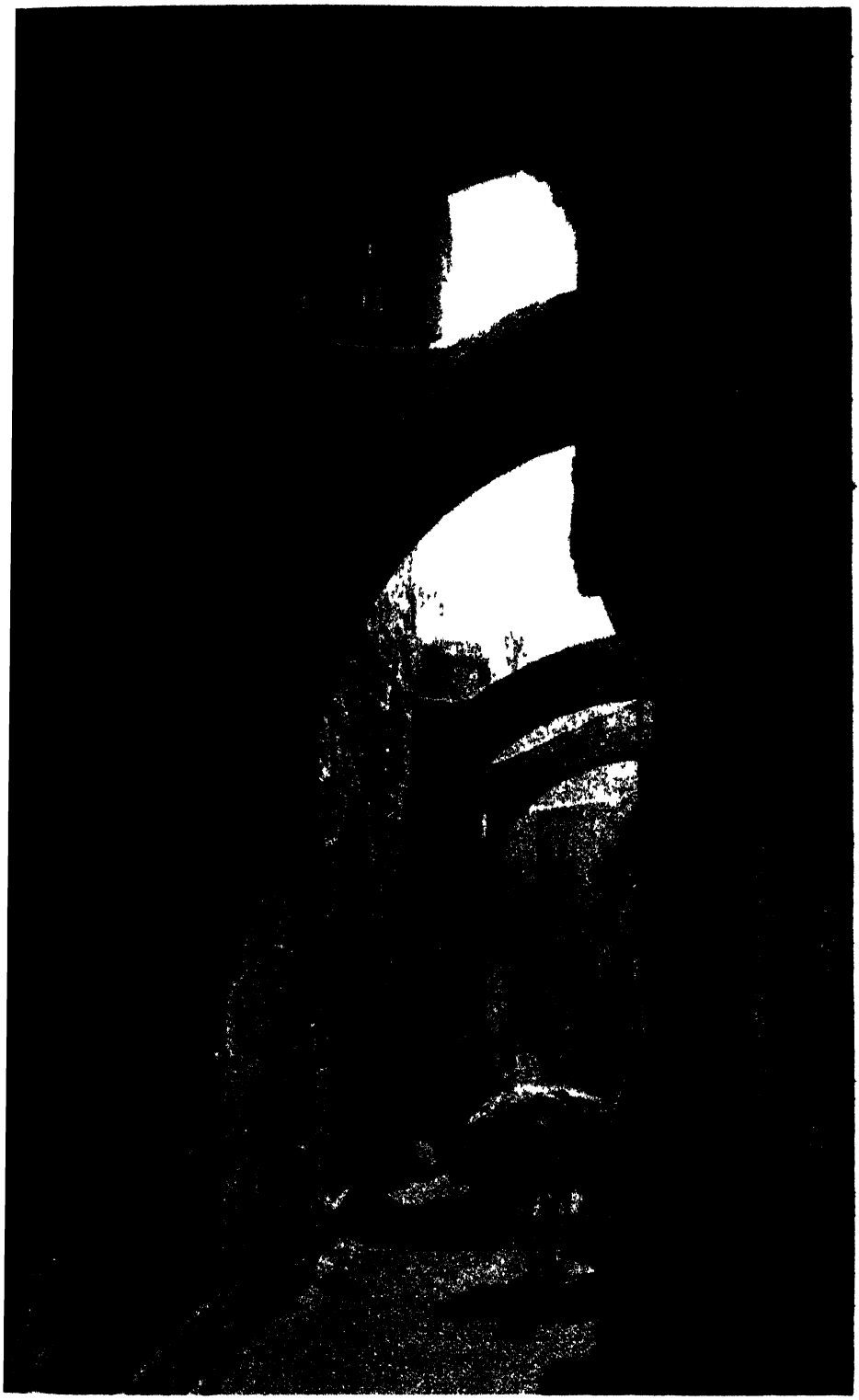
Jews of every class and clime gather weekly at the great Wall of the Temple and, turned towards stones set up by Solomon, bewail the destruction of his Temple and pray for the restoration of Jerusalem

Photo Donald McLeish

At the massy battlemented towers that flank the imposing Damascus Gate of Jerusalem the goatherd tarries awhile to rest his tired charges

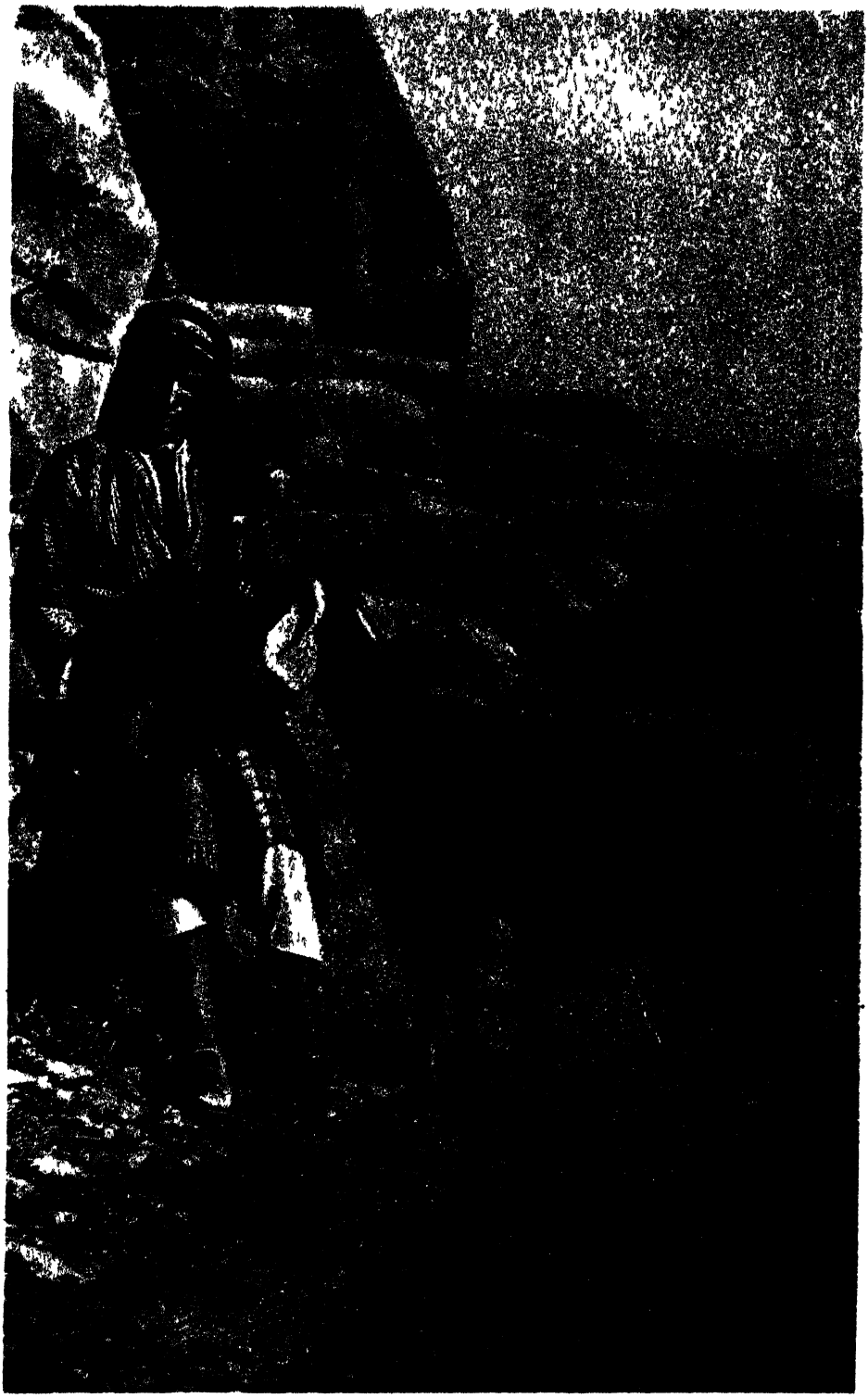
Daily the people of Nazareth gather here to draw water from Mary's Well. This spring must oft have served the boy Jesus Himself

Photos, Donald McLeish



This window in the Via Dolorosa overhangs the Fifth Station on the march to Calvary, where Christ's cross was laid upon Simon of Cyrene

·Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem



From the tender herbage of the Kidron valley the mother follows her kids to the rocky seat where the goatherd fondles them in his arms

Photo, Donald McLeish

Tenacious of their ancient religious customs, these Jews have come to the Gate of the Prophets to perform the liturgy of the weekly wailing

Photo, Donald McLeish

In his tiny workshop in Jerusalem the aged craftsman deftly fashions out of olive wood crosses and other souvenirs of the Holy City

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

family ceremonies, the ideas and beliefs, the very site of the houses and threshing-floors are as they were at the time of the Arab conquest, perhaps as they were in the times of the Bible. The houses lie close together, the courtyard enclosed by mud walls, the living rooms opening on to it, one part for the men and one part for the women. The animals are part of the family, and wander freely into courtyard and room. Around the cluster of houses are the gardens and little vineyards and fig plantations of the village, and the common threshing-floor to which the harvest of all the villagers is brought. The rulers of the villages are the mukhtars, the head men of the different tribes from which the village has sprung, and the Council of Notables. When any public question is mooted they sit under some spreading tree and maintain the respect for the ancient manners.

CHIEF RABBI OF THE JERUSALEM SEPHARDIM

Those Jews who were expelled from Spain and Portugal, at the close of the fifteenth century, were known as the Sephardim, and their descendants yet bear the name. They form a colony in Jerusalem with certain distinct customs.

Photo, L. T. Stein

The bigger villages have each their imam, or learned clerk, who writes letters and petitions for the illiterate when important things are afoot, celebrates marriages, records divorces, registers the births and deaths, and is generally the teacher and guide of the people. They have to-day, almost always, a village school, sometimes one for boys and one for girls; for the whole people have a love of education, and the emulation of Jewish and Christian schools has touched the Moslems. The schools are under the supervision and inspection of the Government, and the spreading of them over the whole country is the augury of a new era in which the spirit of the conservative East will be fertilised with the spirit of the progressive West.

The great events of the village life are the great events of all simple human society—birth, marriage and death. A marriage usually involves three festal occasions, the betrothal, the carrying of the dowry, and the wedding itself. At each the young men and the girls feast and sing, and escort with wild music the groom, or the bride, as the

CHILDREN OF THE YEMENITE JEWS IN COMMUNAL STUDY

Seated in obedient rows about their class room, these little people are taking under the persuasive presence of their mentor's rod, their first educational steps The Yemenite Jews form a distinct community of Jerusalem, and formerly inhabited the wretched " Box Colony," now largely vacated This took its name from the materials of its house construction, and perpetual hunger was its chief feature

CHILDREN'S CORNER BY TIBERIAS ON THE GALILEAN LAKE

Tiberias, named by its founder, Herod Antipas, after the great Roman Emperor, was once one of the fairest of Rome's provincial cities and the capital of Galilee Now, despoiled of classic arch and Corinthian pillar, it is a place of dirt and evil odours, weltering under the Syrian sun Here some children have come to play in the pebbles, paddle, and sail their toy boats

Photo Donald McLeish

SMILING CHILDREN OF PALESTINE'S WANDERING BEDUINS

Beduins or Bedawi, whose name signifies wandering people, make up a proportion of the Arabs in Palestine Some confine their migrations to Syria, while others go as far as Central Arabia every winter They are a thorn in the flesh of the peasantry, who often prefer to pay blackmail to reliance on official punishment of these fierce marauders Yet they are a poetic and often gay race

Photo, Donald McLeish

case may be, to the house of the other. Death, the saddest event of society, affects particularly the women, who, for a period after the burial, go out and sit in the village graveyards and offer up their prayers for the dead. Besides these occasions of common humanity there are the religious feasts and fairs. Two are common to the whole Moslem world, the great Bairam and the little Bairam, when for three or four days the people make holiday and rejoice and slay the fatted sheep and eat it whole. The little Bairam falls

RICKETY ROOF OF FAGGOTS GIVING SHELTER FROM THE SUN OUTSIDE A MUD-HOME OF PALESTINE

These lowly, dark-visaged Syrians have to be content with very little in their domestic surroundings. It might be expected that life for them would be largely a hope for a long list of things that they lacked. But this is a case of like father like son, and they exist as have their ancestors for centuries. All they have in abundance is offspring. For the rest, their possessions are more reminiscent of the scrap heap than of any home but their own. A small hand-mill, upon which the household flour is ground, seen on the right, is about their only belonging not already worn out

Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

THIRSTY TRAVELLERS AT ONE OF BEERSHEBA'S SEVEN WELLS

Beersheba, now called Bir es Saba, lies some fifty miles south west from Jerusalem. It still, as in Bible times, forms one of Palestine's limits, being, by reason of its wells—all ancient, and all but one still yielding water—a station on the Damascus Cairo caravan route

PEASANT FAMILY OF RAMALLAH IN FESTAL ARRAY

In this part of Palestine costume has changed little from what it was in New Testament times. Just such a house, too, as this stone house of Ramallah, would have been seen then. The village, largely populated by Christians, lies some ten miles from Jerusalem on the road to Nablus

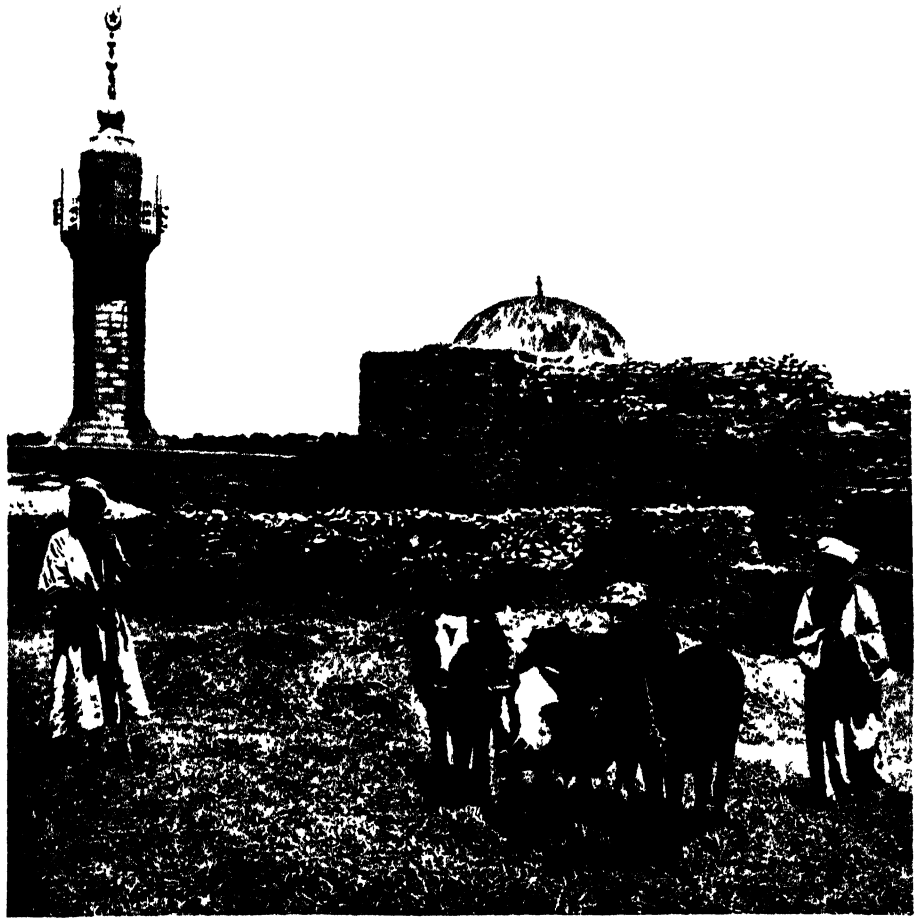
Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

3942

PALESTINE'S WASTES TRANSFORMED TO SPREADING ACRES OF FRUITFUL FARM LAND

Jewish enterprise and organization have been at work upon the face of Palestine since the ousting o the Ottoman Areas that had remained for decades entirely unproductive under the cramping domination of the Turks have been made to bear good crops Millet lentils grain and sesame have been sown and reaped while vineyard and olive grove bear increasingly A glance at this well built farm wagon shows the progress made over native transport vehicles The workers with rake and fork are piling well filled sacks of hard w n harvest

Phot. J. T. Stan



TRAMPING OUT THE GRAIN ON A THRESHING-FLOOR

Within the stone-walled space, heavy-footed oxen, assisted by a donkey, are doing the work of a flail. In accordance with the Biblical injunction the beasts are unmuzzled so that, in reward of work, they may take their perquisite of corn. Oxen are specially suited to this work as, the weaker they become, the heavier do they plant their hoofs

Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

at the close of the fast of Ramadan, a fast spread over a whole month, during which, from sunrise to sunset, man may neither eat nor drink nor smoke. The large mass of the Moslem community still observes this month of abstinence, turning indeed the night into the day, singing and eating, and praying and eating again, during the hours of darkness.

Besides the common feasts of the Moslem calendar, many of the districts of Palestine have their special customary celebration. Most famous of all is the pilgrimage to Nebi Musa, the reputed burial mountain of the Prophet Moses. This pilgrimage sets out from Jerusalem at Eastertide, when the Christian pilgrims used to assemble in their thousands from all parts of the Christian world. The Moslem villagers gather from all parts of the country, and go out in great procession amid the firing of guns and the playing of bands and the shouts of the people, along the dusty Jericho road to the hill above the Dead Sea, which is venerated as the place where the Prophet died.

There they camp for some days out in the open, fed generously by a charitable foundation, the Wakf of Nebi Musa, amusing themselves to the

WOMEN OF JUDEA SIFTING THE GRAIN GROWN ALONG BROOK KIDRON'S ONCE BARREN BANKS

Between Jerusalem and the Mount of Olives lies the bed of Kidron. During about nine months of the year it remains dry. But the enclosing slopes bear good harvests, as can be seen by the piled corn stalks around these women. Temples to Ashtoreth, Chemosh and Moloch were built here, and its association with Tophet, the place of burning, gave it a sinister reputation in Bible times. Now called Wady Setti Maryam, or Mary's Valley, it has been turned from a refuse dump to corn and

Photo Donald McLeish

GRAZING FLOCKS AND WATCHFUL SHEPHERD IN THE VALLEY OF THE KIDRON

In this flock that finds pasture upon the rock littered side of this steep valley are mingled sheep and goats At the slope s end is the shepherd's goat skin tent, by the side of which some of the stones have been collected to form a rude wall Beyond the cleft of the torrent itself wends its tortuous way, and in the distance the hills make a grand sweep to the right All this is but a short walk from Jerusalem, for which town it once formed a vast refuse pit

Photo Donald McLeish

LOADING CAMELS WITH MERCHANDISE IN BETHLEHEM'S NATIVE MARKET PLACE

In this stone built square a noisy crowd has gathered to watch the departure of a caravan This famous home of the line of David has been devastated at least three times since it became an important town in the third century After Constantine and Justinian had enriched its building many monasteries and churches were built and for hundreds of years pilgrims have crowded there This photograph was taken from the Church of the Nativity, built on the supposed site of Christ's birthplace

Photo Rev Dr Luring

FULL MEASURE, PRESSED DOWN AND RUNNING OVER

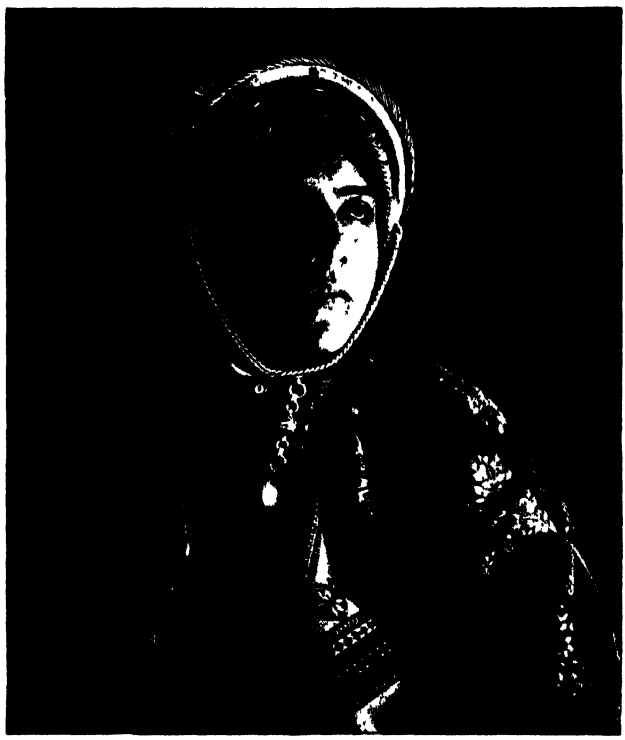
In the granary there is welcome relief from the torrid temperature outside The men swathed in Eastern wrappings squat upon the soft and pleasantly yielding pile and let the cool corn trickle through their fingers As each measure begins to burn, the grain is pressed down and, as in the Biblical reference shaken together, so that an honest measure may be given

Photo American Colony in Jerusalem

full with their songs and dances and sword play and native wit and humour, and, by the way, causing some anxiety to the administration of the country in their going out and coming in, lest they should collide with other elements of the population. Similar feasts and pilgrimages are held at Ramleh and at Nablus and other places in honour of the local saints. Thus the life of the Arab peasant people of Palestine has its full measure of colour and happiness

The religious ceremonies of the Christians are more gorgeous, and not less numerous than those of the Moslems The most splendid celebrations are for the feast of Easter, which is twofold, there being one date for the Eastern Church and one for the Western Church Both are equally marked by splendid processions in the churches, when the Patriarchs and dignitaries, decked in magnificent robes, carry out a ceremonial recalling the incidents of the Passion week.

The Jews likewise have their feasts and their pilgrimages. The feasts partly recall the great events of their national life and partly the events of the natural life of the country. The Passover is the Feast of the Exodus and of the



CHARMS FROM ROYAL DAVID'S CITY
This heavy headdress, adorned with a brim of metal disks and with a chinstrap of heavy chain, has something of the Saracen helmet in its design. Her dress is of solid weaving, heavily and brilliantly embroidered
Photo, American Colony in Jerusalem

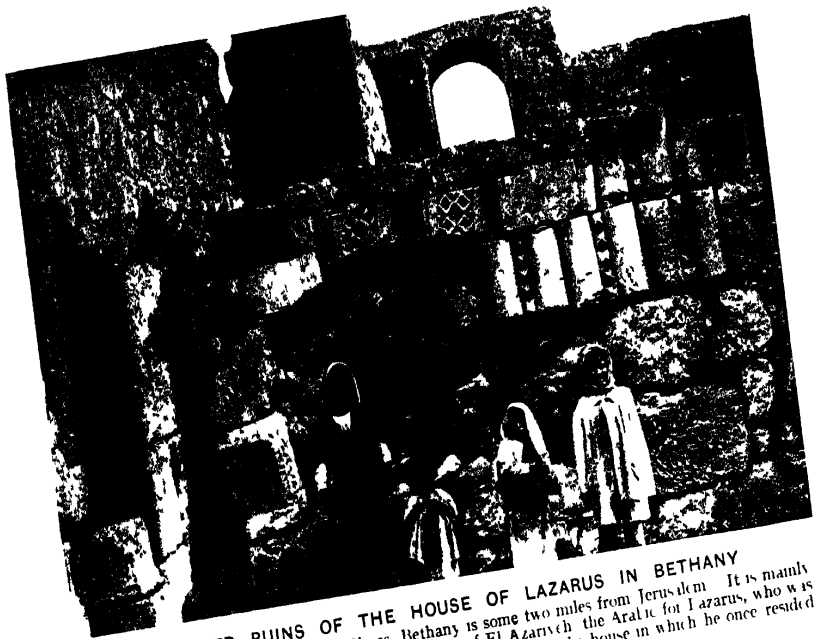
beginning of the barley harvest; the Pentecost is the feast of the Giving of the Law and the end of the first harvest, the Tabernacles celebrate the wandering in the desert and the ingathering of the vintage.

The calendar of Palestine is indeed more strikingly marked and inscribed with the religious and the seasonal rejoicing of all peoples than the calendar of any other country, and it illustrates, as everything in the most historical land illustrates, the gathering of nations and of creeds into the country which is the source for all of them of their dearest and most cherished ideas.

A word as to the development which has taken place since the British occupation and has already gone far to change the face of the country. It has brought about materially a great opening-up of the land. Whereas before the Great War but one motor-car climbed with difficulty from Jaffa to Jerusalem, the trunk roads which now lead out north, east, south, and west, are thronged with cars and lorries. Telegraph lines and telephones have been spread through the country. The railway system is linked up with that of Egypt on the one hand and with Syria on the other, and one may cover in one day the length of the land from Beersheba almost to Dan either by car or by railway as one lists.

Modern machinery is being introduced into agriculture, and industry is speedily beginning to take root in the towns of Palestine. Schemes are afoot for the harnessing of the water power of the Jordan and the Yarmuk to provide electricity for the whole country, and for exploiting the mineral wealth of the Dead Sea and prospecting for oil in the wilderness of Judea.

On the moral and intellectual side there has been a great quickening, somewhat marred though it is at present by the intensity of national sentiment and inter-racial feeling between Arab and Jew, which occasionally has burst forth in actual conflict. Yet in all communities there is an intense desire for education and knowledge, a determination to revive the glories —intellectual and moral—of the old national life; and under the control of a just, tolerant, and at the same time a strong administration that spirit should tend to make the history of Palestine in the near future worthy of the place of the country in the thought and the heart of humanity.



REPUTED RUINS OF THE HOUSE OF LAZARUS IN BETHANY

Built upon a spur of the Mount of Olives, Bethany is some two miles from Jerusalem It is mainly inhabited by Moslems, who have given it the name of El Azariyeh the Arabic for Lazarus, who was here raised from the dead Those ruins are shown as those of the house in which he once resided

SKIN SCRAPING IN A TANNER'S YARD AT JAFFA

Simon, the tanner, perhaps the most famed of his craft in history, had his house at Jaffa, and upon it S. Peter saw his famous vision The site is disputed between a mosque near the lighthouse and the Latin Hospice Above, some fellow craftsmen are seen at work cleaning the hides, while between them a little boy holds in his arms a kid

Photo Rev Dr. Ewing

DIGNITY ON A DONKEY AMONG THE HEIGHTS OF BETHLEHEM

Bethlehem contains in proportion to its Christian inhabitants very few Moslems or Jews This Arab merchant, in his brilliantly coloured and flowing garments, is one of a small community doing a brisk trade The rest of the inhabitants rely very largely on pilgrims and tourists for their source of income and manufacture religious emblems in sandal wood and mother of pearl

Photo Photochrome Ltd

Palestine

II. Its Three Thousand Years of Stirring History

By Leonard Stein

Author of "To-day and To-morrow in Palestine"

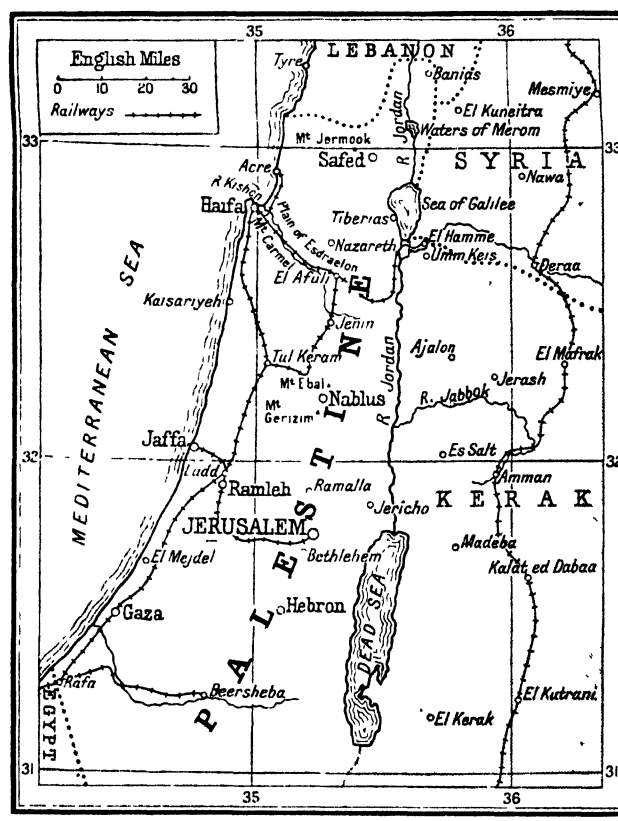
CRUDE flint implements of the Early Stone Age found in many parts of Palestine show that human life existed there thousands of years before the dawn of history. The transition from the Early to the Late Stone Age is usually believed to have begun about 10000 B.C. and to have been a gradual process extending over five thousand years or more. Recent excavations in Southern Palestine show that during this period the country was inhabited by cave-dwellers of non-Semitic stock.

About 3000 B.C. the non-Semitic aborigines were swept away by a Semitic invasion from the desert. The entry of the Canaanites—for such was the name by which the invaders came to be known—marks the opening of the Bronze Age. About 2300 B.C., another tide of Semitic immigration brought in the Amorites, who superimposed themselves upon the earlier Semitic invaders.

As early as about 2900 B.C. all Palestine was brought within the Babylonian sphere of influence by Sargon I. The ties between Palestine and Babylonia became closer when an Amorite dynasty established itself, towards the end of the second millennium, on the Babylonian throne. Meanwhile, Egypt also was making itself felt. Peaceful penetration, dating back to the dawn of history, culminated in an Egyptian invasion under Pepi (or Phiops) I. of the sixth dynasty, about 2275 B.C. As the Babylonian Empire crumbled, Egypt gradually gained ground, and by the period of the twelfth dynasty (about 2000 B.C.) Palestine had passed into the Egyptian sphere of influence, though its civilization and culture remained predominantly Babylonian.

Early in the second millennium a widespread migration of races brought into Palestine a mixed multitude of new inhabitants. These included certain non-Semitic peoples, of whom the most important were the Hittites from Central Asia and the Jebusites from Asia Minor. Among them may also have been the Semitic forefathers of the Hebrews, whose settlement at Hebron under Abraham may be placed at about 1700 B.C. With these racial movements was associated the irruption into Lower Egypt of the nomads from the north, who came to be known as the Hyksos or "shepherd kings" Under the Hyksos there was an intimate connexion between the Egyptian Delta and Southern Palestine, and it was they who encouraged the Hebrews to migrate from Palestine to Egypt.

After the ejection of the Hyksos by the native Egyptian kings of the eighteenth dynasty (1580-1350 B.C.), Egyptian



PALESTINE TO-DAY

YEMENITE GOLDSMITH AT WORK OF COSTLY INTRICACY

Those of the exiled Yemenites who have taken up their abode in Jerusalem have made a name for themselves as artisans and craftsmen. Rescued from the intense poverty of their dreadful "Box Colony," a district of hovels unfit for any human habitation, they have, with the organized help of their brother Jews, become a source of prosperity instead of a drain on charitable resources

Photo, L. T. Stern

authority began to be forcibly asserted in Palestine, which remained under Egyptian occupation for the greater part of the next four hundred years. Under the heretic king, Amenhotep IV., otherwise known as Akhnaton (about 1375 B.C.), Egypt was torn by religious feuds and lost its grip on the Asiatic dependencies. The chaotic situation thus created is vividly illustrated by the Tell-el-Amarna letters—a collection of cuneiform tablets containing correspondence between Akhnaton and his representatives in Syria and Palestine.

Akhnaton's heir, Tutankhamen, and his successors of the nineteenth dynasty (about 1350-1205 B.C.), were able to some extent to restore the Egyptian ascendancy. Syria had eventually to be abandoned to the Hittites, but the Hittites acknowledged Egyptian sovereignty over Palestine. This was in the reign of Rameses II. (about 1292-1225 B.C.), who is commonly identified with the Pharaoh "who knew not Joseph." In the closing years of the nineteenth dynasty there was again a weakening of Egyptian authority, which coincided with a new series of racial migrations. This was the background to the Exodus of the Israelites from Egypt about the end of the twelfth century B.C. Failing to find a suitable resting-place in the wilderness of Sinai, the Israelites pressed on to the fertile lands east of the Jordan. Here some of their tribes were content to settle. The remainder soon afterwards crossed the Jordan and proceeded to invade Canaan.

At the time of the Israelite invasion, which may be dated about 1150 B.C., the collapse of Egyptian authority had left Palestine in a state of chaos. Thus, in spite of determined local resistance, the invaders soon established themselves throughout the central plateau, though there were numerous enclaves, including Jerusalem, into which they long remained unable to penetrate. The native inhabitants, however, lived on side by side with the conquerors. On the other hand, the newcomers were a fresher and more vigorous stock, and while the Canaanite strain long remained visible in Palestine, the Israelites gradually established an unquestioned ascendancy.

About the time of the Israelite invasion from the east, Palestine began to be threatened on the west by seafaring adventurers from the eastern Mediterranean. These were the Philistines, who drove the Canaanites back from the sea, pressed forward far into the interior, and by the beginning of the eleventh century were well on the way to bringing the

whole of Palestine under their control In face of the Philistine menace, the loose confederacy of Israelite tribes was consolidated into a kingdom. The first king, Saul, after some initial successes, was disastrously defeated at Gilboa (about 1060 B.C.) His successor, King David, was more fortunate Not only were the Philistines driven back to the coastal plain, but the unconquered enclaves in the interior, including Jerusalem, were at length reduced, and Israelite authority was effectively asserted beyond the Jordan The reign of Solomon, which followed, seems to have been a period of economic expansion, but of moral decadence and political decline

On the death of Solomon (about 980 B.C.) tribal jealousies re-asserted themselves, and Palestine was divided into the two weak and unstable principalities of Israel in the north and Judah in the south. The position of the northern kingdom was especially precarious, lying as it did across the path of Assyria, which had now emerged as a militant and aggressive empire. In 854 B.C. Israel, in alliance with other minor states, was overwhelmed by Shalmaneser III. at the battle of Karkar. About a hundred years later Israel became an Assyrian fief. Israelite intrigues with Egypt led to a fresh Assyrian invasion (724 B.C.), ending in the fall of Samaria, and the deportation en masse of the surviving Israelites by Sargon II. (721 B.C.)

Under the Heel of Eastern Empires

Judah had also been drawn into the Assyrian orbit, but it maintained a precarious existence for another 140 years At the close of the seventh century Babylonia displaced Assyria as the suzerain power, and Judah was drawn into the conflict between Babylonia and Egypt. Under Egyptian influence, Judah more than once rebelled, until at length, in 586 B.C., Nebuchadrezzar II. took Jerusalem by storm, laid Judah waste, and carried its people into captivity.

The empty spaces created by the successive deportations of Israel and Judah began to be filled by colonists from various parts of the Assyrian Empire and by Edomites from the southern desert. Nevertheless, Judah, though not Israel, was destined to return. In 538 B.C. Cyrus, having built up a powerful Persian empire, occupied Babylon, with the result that Palestine now came under Persian control. Cyrus at once authorised the return of the Jewish exiles to their native Judea. A small minority, led by Zerubbabel, immediately made their way back, and were reinforced about 450 B.C. by a fresh stream of Jewish immigration from Babylonia, under the leadership of Ezra and Nehemiah.

After two centuries of Persian rule Palestine was occupied by Alexander the Great in the course of his victorious Eastern campaign (332 B.C.). The Macedonian conquest brought Palestine into intimate contact with Greek civilization, and a sharp collision between Hebraism and Hellenism became inevitable.

Liberation by Judas Maccabaeus

On the death of Alexander (323 B.C.) his empire was carved up among his generals. Palestine was contended for by Egypt, which fell to the House of Ptolemy, and Syria, which fell to the House of Seleucus. The Ptolemies maintained a precarious suzerainty over Palestine for a little more than a hundred years, but in 198 B.C. it was occupied and annexed by Antiochus the Great, the Seleucid king of Syria. Before long, the Seleucids found their empire threatened simultaneously by Rome and Parthia. They were thus able to exercise but a loose control over Palestine, and the Jews, whom the Ptolemies had recognised as an autonomous community, were now in a position to enlarge their already considerable liberties

When Antiochus Epiphanes rashly attempted to hellenize them by force they broke into open revolt (167 B.C.), and under the leadership of Judas Maccabaeus, they secured a brief taste of political independence On the defeat and death of Judas in 160 B.C., the Jews suffered a temporary set-back; but by 139 B.C. Judea had became to all intents and purposes an independent state. The coastal plain, the whole of northern Palestine, and most of the territory east of the Jordan were rapidly annexed. The new state was thus on an imposing scale, but its strength was sapped by incessant conflicts between rival factions. Palestine was in the throes of civil war when, in 63 B.C., Pompey, in the course of his pacification of the Middle East, entered Jerusalem at the head of a Roman army.

Last Vain Bid for Independence

Pompey proceeded to break up the Jewish State and to reduce Judea proper to the status of a Roman protectorate under the rule of the High Priest. The Roman yoke lay heavily upon Palestine, and the situation only began to improve when Pompey disappeared from the scene and Julius Caesar came into the ascendant. Julius Caesar was well disposed to the Jews, and was in close relations with Antipater, the adviser of the High Priest, Hyrcanus. Antipater, and his son Herod after him, behaved with singular astuteness throughout the stormy years which followed Caesar's assassination, and after many vicissitudes, Herod succeeded, in 40 B.C., in inducing the Roman Senate to

recognize him as King of Judea, to which the remainder of Palestine, east as well as west of the Jordan, was eventually added.

On Herod's death in 3 B.C., his kingdom fell to pieces, and in A.D. 6 Judea sank to the level of a mere annexe to the Roman province of Syria. For some years the Romans continued to govern Palestine mildly, but after the death of the Emperor Tiberius, their policy became less tolerant, and the Jews were goaded into a determined revolt, which ended, after four years intermittent fighting, in the sack of Jerusalem by Titus, in A.D. 70. With the failure of their final bid for independence in A.D. 132, the Jews disappeared as a political force, and Judea, which was re-named Syria Palaestina, became an integral part of the Roman Empire.

Conquest by the Caliph Omar

The Pax Romana was now firmly established, and for more than three hundred years the history of Palestine was in the main an uneventful record of orderly administration. On the division of the empire in A.D. 395, Palestine naturally fell to Byzantium. In the sixth century the Eastern Empire began to be seriously threatened by the growing power of Persia, and after a series of Persian raids, Palestine was invaded and occupied by the Persian King Chosroes, in 614. In 628 it was recovered by the Emperor Heraclius. But it was soon to be menaced from another quarter. In 636 repeated Arab incursions from the desert culminated in an organized invasion. The Byzantine army was decisively defeated by the Arabs at the Battle of the Yarmuk, and in 639, after the rest of the country had been overrun, Jerusalem capitulated to the Caliph Omar in person.

Moslem Rulers and the Crusaders

With the change of masters, the bulk of the population passed over en masse to Islam, though Christian and Jewish minorities still survived. The Arabs governed mildly, and for a hundred years Palestine remained at peace. In 749 the Ommiad caliphs were overthrown by the Abbasides, and the seat of the Caliphate was removed from Damascus to Bagdad, with the result that the western dependencies began to break away. In the ninth century the Egyptian emirs became independent, and a little later Palestine was brought under their control, to pass in due course to the Fatimite caliphs, who ascended the Egyptian throne in 969.

Towards the close of the tenth century the Byzantine emperors made repeated but unsuccessful attempts to wrest Palestine from the Egyptians. A little later the Fatimites began to be challenged by bands of Turkish adventurers who filtered in from the east and north. Of these, the most formidable were the Seljuks, who occupied Jerusalem in 1076 and continued to dominate southern Palestine until the eve of the Crusades, when they were ejected by the Fatimites. While previous Moslem rulers had been relatively tolerant, the Seljuks profaned the Christian sanctuaries in Palestine and virtually closed the country to Christian pilgrims. These indignities set Christendom aflame and largely contributed to the launching of the Crusades.

The first Crusade, which opened in 1096, culminated three years later in the capture of Jerusalem by Godfrey de Bouillon. The Crusaders divided their conquests in Syria and Palestine into four states on the feudal model. The most important of these was the Kingdom of Jerusalem, which was in its outward form a detached fragment of Christian Europe, though it comprised a curious medley of races and religions. After a stormy beginning, the Latin kingdom entered upon a brief period of peace and prosperity, during which Palestine flourished as it had not done for many generations. In 1187, however, after the remaining Latin states had succumbed one by one to their Moslem neighbours, Palestine was invaded by Salah-ed-Din (Saladin), a military adventurer of mixed Turkish and Kurdish stock. The Latins were decisively defeated at the Battle of Hattin, and by 1189 all Palestine was in Saladin's hands.

Mameluke and Ottoman Periods

As a result of the third Crusade (1189-1192), the Latins again secured a precarious foothold in Palestine, and the Sixth Crusade (1228-1229) ended in a treaty under which Jerusalem and several neighbouring cities were restored into Christian hands. Less than twenty years later Jerusalem was captured and sacked by Tartar invaders, who were followed by the Mongol hordes of Hulagu. The Mongols were met and routed in the Plain of Esdraelon by the Mameluke Sultan of Egypt, who then proceeded to deal with the Latins. In 1291, Acre, the last crusading stronghold, fell to the Egyptians, and the Latins vanished from the scene.

The opening years of the Mameluke period were marked by repeated and destructive Tartar invasions. Palestine then entered upon a hundred years of comparative tranquillity. In 1400 the Tartar menace reappeared in the person of Tamerlane, who reached the border of Palestine, but withdrew without actually invading it. Towards the close of the fifteenth century the Mameluke Empire began to be seriously challenged by the Ottoman Turks. In

1516 the Ottomans defeated the Egyptians in Syria, and in the following year they became masters of Palestine

The Turks neither colonised Palestine nor made any sustained attempt to administer it After a generation or two of energetic government, Palestine was allowed to relapse into anarchy. Its history during the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries is one of perpetual feuds between local chieftains, one or other of whom from time to time succeeded in establishing a short-lived principality. This was the state of Palestine when Napoleon invaded it in 1799 in the course of his operations against Egypt, only to withdraw six months later after an abortive campaign

For a moment the Turks reasserted themselves, but in 1820, Abdallah ibn Ali defied the Sultan and made himself virtually independent His career was ended by Ibrahim Pasha, the representative of Mehemet Ali, the rebellious Viceroy of Egypt. The Egyptians remained in occupation from 1831 to 1840. Their rule was harsh and unpopular, but they rendered Palestine the service of introducing some semblance of orderly government. When the Turks, supported by the Powers, returned in 1840, Palestine had at length left the Middle Ages behind and had become a comparatively civilized province.

After the return of the Turks, Palestine had little or no political history other than that connected with the rivalries of the Greek and Latin Churches, which were among the immediate causes of the Crimean War, and which afterwards continued to play their part in the competition of the European Powers for ascendancy in the Levant. Palestine shared in the benefits, such as they were, of the Young Turkish revolution of 1908, but the reforms were little more than a dead letter, and Palestine remained politically stagnant On the other hand, in the closing years of Ottoman rule there were some signs of economic progress, as the result of the building of roads and railways, the growth of the ports of Jaffa and Haifa, and the influx of European and especially Jewish settlers.

The entry of Turkey into the Great War led to the British invasion of Palestine in 1917 and to its complete conquest by Lord Allenby in the following year. The Supreme Council of the Allies agreed at San Remo, in April, 1920, that Palestine should be placed under a British Mandate, and the terms of the Mandate were eventually confirmed by the Council of the League of Nations in July, 1922. The British Military Administration was replaced in July, 1920, by a civil government under a British High Commissioner.

PALESTINE: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Forming a part of the Levant, it is bounded north by Syria proper, south by Egyptian and Hejaz territory, east by the Syrian Desert, and west by the Mediterranean. Coastline almost harbourless and unindented. Average width from sea to eastern desert about 100 miles. Land rises from coastal plain to hills of Judea and Samaria, then forms Plain of Esdraelon, or Megiddo, whence the level drops abruptly to the Ghor, which drains to the Dead Sea, 1,300 feet below sea level, and the lowest level in the land surface of the world. Climate varies with topography, and is mainly sub-tropical, with a humid breeze from the sea and occasional hot dry winds from the desert. Winter rainy and summer hot and dry. Area about 9,000 square miles, with a population of some 700,000, the latter considerably less than in the New Testament era

Government and Constitution

Country under British mandate, with High Commissioner and nominated Advisory Council composed of heads of Government Departments, and four Moslem, three Jewish, and three Christian unofficial members. Jewish population has National Committee to represent Jewish interests with administration. World Zionist Organization represented by Palestine Zionist Executive.

Commerce and Industries

Agriculture chief industry—barley, wheat, vines, oranges, millet, melons, and olives being among the chief products; tobacco, cotton, and sesame are also raised. Main exports are oranges, melons, wine, and soap, the total export figures for two years ending March 31, 1920-21, in Egyptian pounds, being £E771,701. Imports, including cottons, sugar, and petroleum, amount to £E5,216,633 for the same period. Considerable numbers of sheep, goats, and camels. Limestone, gypsum, and rock salt are extensively found. Palestine legal tender is Egyptian currency, one Egyptian pound being nominally worth £1 0s. 6d.

Communications

There are some 480 miles of railway and 500 miles of public highway. Jaffa and Haifa are chief ports, a regular Palestine service being maintained by a number of steamship companies.

Religion and Education

Bulk of population are Mahomedans. There are about 80,000 Jews, 84,000 Christians, 5,500 Druses, and 170 Samaritans Large numbers of pilgrims, mainly of the Coptic Church, visit Jerusalem annually, and there are representatives of various Christian sects and monastic orders throughout the country. There are about 250 schools maintained by Government, with some 15,000 children in attendance. Majority of pupils are Moslems. Over fifty schools are partly maintained by Government, and village education is being extended. Training colleges for teachers have been instituted, and teachers' examinations held at various points throughout the country. All Government instructors are Civil Servants. Christian children mainly educated by the different communities. Zionist organization has under its control about 135 schools, with over 500 instructors, with an aggregate of some 13,000 pupils. There are also schools of music, agriculture, gymnastics, and arts and crafts.

Chief Towns

Jerusalem, capital (estimated population, 64,000), Jaffa (45,000), Haifa (39,000), Nablus (20,000), Hebron (16,000), Nazareth (9,000).

STARING AT THE PACIFIC, UPON A PEAK IN DARIEN OVER THE GREAT CANAL THAT CUTS THE ISTHMUS IN TWAIN

Hands shading their eyes from the dazzling sunlight, these girls are gazing out upon the Pacific Ocean, which Balboa was the first European to behold from American soil. The town below the hill on which they stand is named Balboa after him; a busy port, the western terminus of the great canal, through which, from ocean to ocean, are passed huge ships that would have astonished Balboa more than he astonished the Indians on Michælmas Day, 1513, when, waving the banner of Castile and Leon, he strode waist-deep into the new-found waters, and claimed them in the name of Spain

Panamá

I. Mixed Peoples of the Isthmian Republic

By Hamilton Fyfe

Author of "The Real Mexico" etc.

THE Republic of Panamá has about the same area as Ireland, it has a sparse population of less than 500,000 people of Spanish, Indian, and negro descent Until 1903 these people were subjects of the Republic of Colombia, and never failed to take an active part in the many revolutions which disturbed that uneasy State In 1903 they broke away and declared their independence

For many years there had been discussion of projects for piercing the Isthmus of Panamá which connected South with Central America De Lesseps, the famous French engineer, who planned and brought into being the Suez Canal, was ambitious for himself and his country that this other great enterprise should be French also. In 1881 a French company began work. But the obstacles in their way were too formidable. To begin with, the physical difficulties of the task had not been sufficiently considered. The isthmus had the reputation of being one of the most unhealthy spots on earth. Yellow fever, malaria, and other diseases were permanent plagues in Panamá Furthermore, the American Government looked on at what the company was doing with unconcealed suspicion and jealousy. The French were suspected of desiring to take and hold the isthmus This would have infringed the Monroe Doctrine that no foreign Power must acquire territory on either of the American continents There was also a feeling among the people of the United States that, if a canal was to be cut, it ought to be their business to cut it. So, before the work had got far, the American government intervened, and the enterprise was hung up

OPEN MARKET ON PANAMÁ BEACH
Pure-blooded natives, who have never been conquered nor permitted intermarriage, these San Blas Indians often come to Panamá city to trade bananas for cloth and gunpowder
Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

Another French company, however, at a later date continued to induce investors in France to subscribe for the completion of De Lesseps' grandiose design, which, in addition to promising large dividends, flattered their patriotic pride. Immense sums were raised by shady financiers, stories got about that they were stealing the money, investigation was at last ordered by the French government, and the Panamá scandal was revealed in all its ugliness. Senators and deputies were accused of taking bribes. Even ministers were

CAYUKA CARRYING BANANAS TO THE FRUIT MARKET OF GATUN

Cayuka is the name of the dug outs fashioned by the Cholo and other Indian tribes of Panama Roughly hewn with machetes out of hard wood tree trunks, they are heavy craft, which the dexterous natives can, nevertheless, pole and paddle at considerable speed, even against the current Nearly all the fruit and other native produce is brought to market in cayukas along the waterways of Panama

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

shown to have soiled their hands by receiving hush-money. Some were sent to prison, including poor old De Lesseps, for whom everyone felt sorry, but the investors could not get their money back. It had all disappeared

That was the end of the French attempt to pierce the isthmus which separated the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans. Next came the turn of the United States. Plans were drawn, the money was all ready, nothing remained save to come to agreement with the Colombian Republic. What the United States wanted was the control of a canal zone. The only question to be settled was: how much should be paid for this concession? The Colombian ministers higgled and haggled until, on November 3, 1903, Panamá suddenly proclaimed itself an independent State, was recognized by the United States on November 13, and on November 18 signed a treaty giving the American government all the powers it required for the making of the canal.

The Colombians asserted furiously that the revolution had been instigated and engineered by American energy and American dollars This was hotly denied. What the truth of the matter was became known to a few, but has never been publicly revealed Mr Roosevelt was President at the time, and was credited with having cut the knot by using the weapon which lay nearest to his hand. Whether Panamá was pushed or not, the result was that the United States government received the right to control for ever a five-mile strip on either side of the canal, the coast-line of the canal zone and several islands commanding the entrance.

No time was wasted. The work was put in hand and the world was given a valuable lesson in thoroughness,

administrative energy, the management of labour, and the fighting of disease. At first the construction of the canal and the government of the zone were entrusted to a commission of seven, with a civilian chairman. After a short period it was decided that the authority should have a military character. To be chairman of the commission and chief engineer President Roosevelt appointed Colonel Goethals. Under his severe, but just and sensible, administration, the work went forward rapidly, the workers were disciplined, yet remained content, the " most pestilential spot on earth " was turned into what the Americans called a " health resort."

This was not due so much to Colonel Goethals as to the chief sanitary officer, William Crawford Gorgas, who died in London, July 5, 1920. He it was who resolved to prevent the spread of fever by getting rid of the mosquitoes which carried infection. He was an enthusiast, a man who, it was said, " would have spent the whole sum voted by Congress for the canal upon sanitation." He had many a struggle with Colonel Goethals, whose fault, if he had one, was that he kept too tight a hand over the money given him to spend.

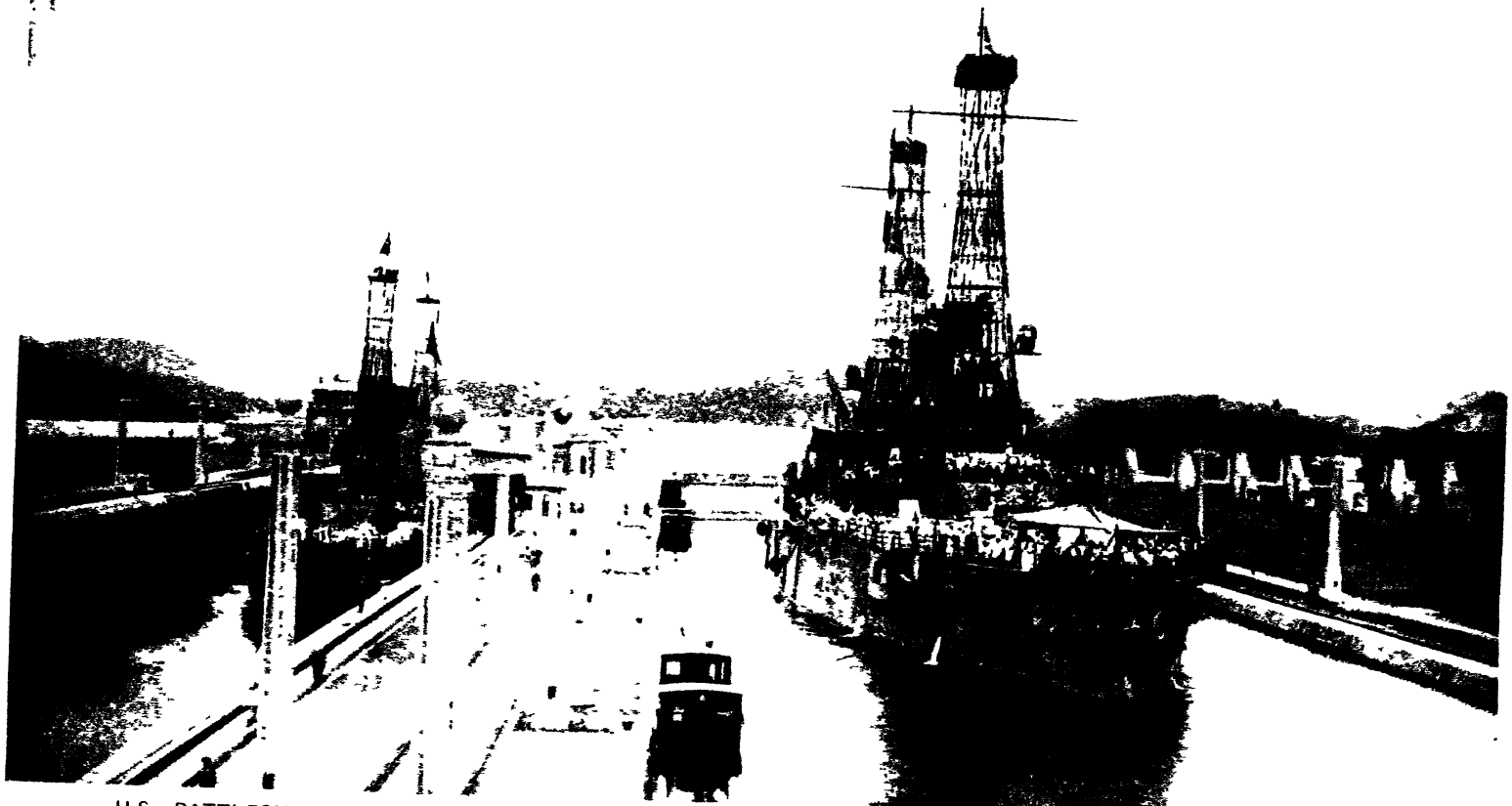
" Is it worth while to spend so much to save the lives of a few niggers ? " he was reported to have asked, with some impatience

To which Colonel Gorgas replied · " That's not the point. We're going to spend it to save your life, sir."

The war against the anopheles mosquito which, having once bitten a person

RESCUE OF BABES IN THE WOOD BY A ZONE POLICEMAN

Invaluable service was rendered by the Canal Zone Police Force attached to the Civil Administration Department of the Isthmian Canal Commission. Well set up young Americans, almost all of military training, their multifarious duties among the polyglot community employed on the canal included census work, prevention of crime, and, on occasion, the recovery of children lost in the jungle



U.S. BATTLESHIPS PASSING THROUGH ONE OF THE HUGE DUPLICATE LOCKS ON THE PANAMA CANAL

Gatun Lake, with an area of 125 square miles, eighty-five feet above sea level, is the practical solution of the problem of safeguarding the flood waters of the rivers in the canal zone. Ships coming from the Caribbean are lifted on to it by the gigantic three-stepped, two flighted stairway at Gatun Lock, and at the other end are lowered in the Pedro Miguel Lock thirty feet to Miraflores Lake, whence the Miraflores Lock lowers them the further fifty five feet to the sea level on the Pacific side

Photo U S Navy Department

suffering from malaria, conveys infection to every person whom it bites thereafter, was carried on chiefly by three methods: first, the swamps and pools in which the mosquitoes lay their eggs were filled up wherever this was possible; secondly, the larvae which managed to get out of the eggs were attacked with a mixture warranted to kill; thirdly, the reduce malaria almost to the vanishing point. The yellow fever carrier was exterminated also. The health of the canal zone community was excellent. At the same time equal pains were being taken to secure moral health. Colonel Goethals, following the fine tradition of the American army, was incorruptible himself, and he kept everyone

PEACEFUL CHIEFS OF THE ONCE WARLIKE TRIBES OF DARIEN

Indians of the Darien—the term vaguely applied to the eastern end of the Isthmus of Panamá—are descendants of the Carib race that had its cradle in the heart of South America. Formerly a ferocious and cannibal people, who fiercely resisted the Spanish invasion, they now live peacefully enough and have interbred freely with the immigrant black and white peoples on the coast

Photo, Consulate for Panamá

larvae which escaped this mixture and became mosquitoes were hunted down as soon as it was known that they were carriers of infection. Whenever a person was bitten and made it known to the health authorities, they searched out all the mosquitoes in the neighbourhood. They also isolated all malarial patients. Wire-netting guarded the doors and windows of all dwellings. If anyone heard the ping-g-g of the creature his duty was to ring up the Sanitary Department, just as one would inform the police upon hearing a burglar in the house. The effect of these measures was to else so by giving them no chance to be corrupted. By the complete absence of anything like "graft" the parties of Congressmen who visited the canal works were as much astonished as they were by the magnitude of the "cuts," the enormous size of the lock-gates, and so on.

It was by personal rule that Colonel Goethals succeeded in keeping his community both orderly and satisfied. He adopted the method of the Eastern governor and made himself accessible to all who wanted advice or had grievances. Every Sunday morning he held an informal reception which everybody

SMILES AND SUNSHINE LIGHTEN LAUNDRY WORK AT COLÓN

As in many other lands, the rivers serve as public laundries for the natives of Panama. In this group of women washing at Colon, the mixed blood of the population is clearly seen. In most, the strong African strain introduced with the negroes from the West Indies dominates their original Indian type, while others show Iberian grace, inherited from the Spanish conquerors.

Photo, I. L. Maduro

could attend: tried disputes, settled quarrels, smoothed away difficulties. The words of a song written and sung heartily in the canal zone illustrated the confidence that the colonel's plan inspired:

If you have any cause to kick or feel disposed to howl,
If things ain't running just to suit and there's a chance to growl,
If you have any axe to grind or graft to shuffle through,
Just take it up to Colonel G., like all the others do.

See Colonel Goethals, see Colonel Goethals,
It's the only right and proper thing to do;
Just write a letter, or even better,
Arrange a little Sunday interview.

In 1914 the canal was opened to the ships of all nations for use on equal terms. Such use had been guaranteed by the United States in 1901, and though Congress passed an Act in 1912 giving privileges to American ships, President Wilson refused to agree to a measure which broke the pledged word of the nation, and the Act was repealed. For some time after the opening of the canal there were falls of earth which caused anxiety as well as stoppages of traffic. In 1915-16 no ships passed through during a period of six months. Gloomy apprehensions began to find utterance. A number of engineers shook their heads and spoke as if the great work were doomed. Fortunately, the croakers have not up to the present time found any further justification for their little faith.

The length of the canal is fifty miles; vessels pass through it in ten hours. There are three sets of locks, the first to raise ships 85 feet, the other two to lower them to ocean level again. From this it will be understood that there was a hill in the way. At each end there are huge coal yards and oil stores, with the

finest appliances for putting fuel of either kind on board

What the canal does in the way of shortening voyages and cheapening freights is shown by this statement of distances by which voyages are reduced Liverpool to San Francisco 6 000 miles Liverpool to Valparaiso 1 400 miles Liverpool to Guayaquil 5 000 miles Liverpool to Iquique 2 800 miles New York to Wellington N Z 5 700 miles New York to Sydney 3 800 miles New York to Melbourne 6 200 miles New York to Yokohama 3 700 miles

While the canal set in active current of business flowing through Panama the people of the peninsula drew little profit from the fact that their country had become a highway for the shipping of the world Their climate disinclines them to do any more work than is required to provide them with a living Next to nothing is demanded of them in the way of national effort They have no defence forces to pay for The interest on the lump sum (£2 000 000) handed over and the rent paid for the canal zone by the United States (£50 000 a year) cover a considerable part of their state expenditure a fairly large proportion of which goes to education not only for children in the free schools but for the young men and women who are sent to European universities or technical colleges owing to the lack of any such institutions on the spot

If one watches the trans shipping of cargoes which goes on in great volume at Colon and at Cristobal—the new

SPIGGOTY WOMEN AT THE WASHTUB IN PANAMÁ CITY

Negro, Spanish and Cholo Indian blood predominates in these women numbered from left to right, the bold fronted creature in the centre showing many characteristics of the women of Spain, though darker skinned than them From the Panamanians' habit of replying ' No spiggoty Inglis " when addressed in the early days, Spiggoty " has become a slang term for the natives of Panama

Photo, I L Maduro

American port which adjoins the old one—one notices that the men working do not appear to be natives of the place. A great many of them are British negroes from the West Indies; very few are Panamanians. Out in the country there are natives working on coffee and rubber plantations or in banana groves; but they do not need to work hard, for the soil is so fertile as to bring forth its kindly fruits with very little persuasion. There are vast grasslands, too, for cattle pasture; there are forests full of timber that the world requires; but none of these industries is highly developed.

In the towns there are no industries at all. The "Panamá hats" are not made in Panamá, but in Ecuador, in Colombia. Trade and banking are mostly in the hands of Chinese and Jews. Not many years ago German merchants and financiers were prominent in these directions, but they are not so prominent now. The drinking saloons which abound are generally American; the gambling houses belong for the most part to Chinese. These, it must in fairness to the local population be added, draw their profit almost entirely from the foolish stranger. The natives like a little "flutter"; indeed, this seems to be an element in their lives without which they could not exist. But they find their opportunity in the state lottery.

The episcopal see of Panamá is the oldest on the American continent. The cathedral once was, and is said by some to be still, immensely rich. The buccaneers who sailed from or put into the isthmus ports were induced to give largely of their ill-gotten gains by the hope that their crimes would in return be pardoned. The present cathedral, finished in 1760, was built at the cost of a bishop who was the son of a freed negro, a poor charcoal-burner, who lived to see his son a prelate and a power in the land.

GENTLENESS REPAID BY TRUST

Bird life teems in the isthmus of Panamá, many species as brilliant in hues as the tropical flowers that make the jungle an indescribable phantasmagoria of colour. The native women show much skill and patience in taming wild birds, notably the parrakeets

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

There are other old churches in Panamá city and some traces of seventeenth-century Spain in the streets still, although the place has been Americanised, much to the benefit of the inhabitants' health.

There stand unbroken the old seawalls and fortifications which cost so much that a Spanish king said wittily they "ought to be visible from his palace in

UNSOPHISTICATED WOMANHOOD OF THE PANAMANIAN INTERIOR

Of the native Indians of Panamá, only the San Blas people have preserved their ethnic purity. The rest, of whom this group is representative, have intermarried freely with every immigrant race, and have no tribal sentiment. In the country they lead a life of Arcadian simplicity, squatting where they please. The women wear little more than a scanty skirt, and the children go naked

Photo, Underwood Press Service

Madrid." Go up on these at the sunset hour or by moonlight, and you will be rewarded by a prospect steeped in beauty. In front lies the Pacific; on the right the mountains can be seen, the giants of the Cordillera; along the coast shine white sand beaches, relieved by the green of mangrove swamps.

Colón leaves no such pleasant memories. It is a place of sweltering heat, of fierce warm winds, which bend the coconut palms fringing the front. Standing in the same relation to the Panamá Canal as Port Said does to the Suez Canal, it has more than a little in common with the African town.

Panamá

II. The Story of its People & its Canal

By Percy F. Martin

Author of "Through Five Republics of South America," etc.

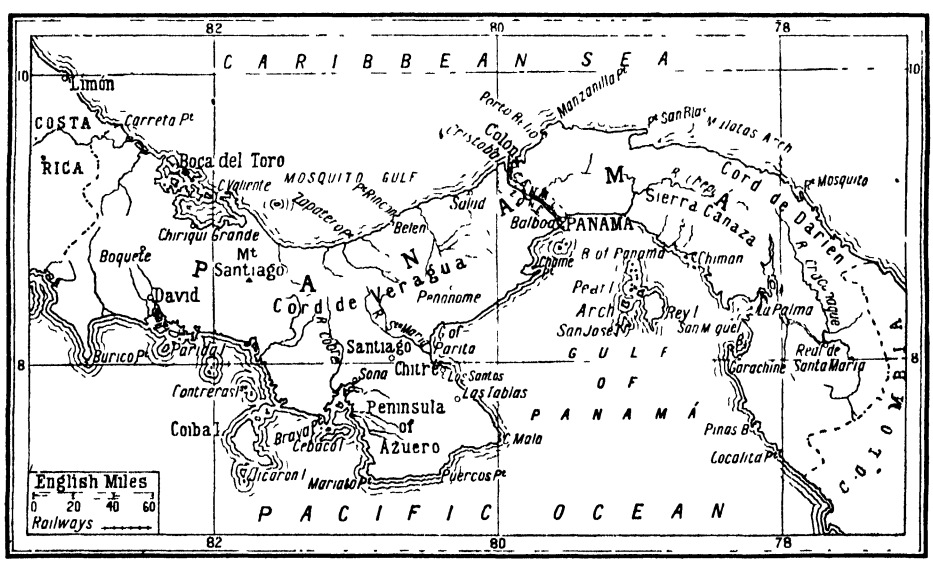
AT one time the name "Panamá" stood for pernicious fever, piracy, and perilous adventure, to-day it denotes the central meeting-place of the world's great transportation routes, and ranks probably as one of the healthiest tropical stations in existence

Mountains, irregular hills, a few rivers —now partially controlled by the great canal—swamps, and dense forests form the main physical features of the country. Scenically, it can compare with any other of the fair lands of Central America, while in regard to temperature it proves hardly more trying to the white man than any of its immediate neighbours The indefatigable Columbus landed here in 1502—on his fourth voyage—but the actual discoverer of the isthmus was one Rodrigo Galvan de Bastidas Panamá's then untouched wealth in minerals—especially gold—was soon discovered, and this, amassed in fabulous amounts by King Ferdinand's lieutenant, Diégo de Nicuesa, greatly enriched the crown of Spain until separation took place nearly three hundred years later (1821). The isthmus formed the scene of many a daring exploit by the merry men under Drake, Parker, and Morgan. Indeed, between 1595 and 1700, Panamá was attacked and sacked again and again, Spain finding it difficult—and later on impossible—to communicate by this route with her other South American colonies

Panamá formed the richest province of Colombia, but, owing to its distance from the Federal capital (Bogotá), it took little part in the various conflicts which distinguished the early days of the mother country's history, when it still formed part of the Venezuela, Ecuador, and New Granada Confederation

In 1840 an independent State of the Isthmus was formed. This comprised Panamá and Veragua, first under Fábrega and then under the Venezuelan leader, Carreño The new regime lasted, however, a very short while, and in 1831 Bolívar, the Liberator, was requested to convert Panamá into a separate State But he advised, rather, reincorporation with Colombia In 1855 Panamá became an autonomous State by act of the Colombian Congress, which then, repenting of its action, tried unsuccessfully to reclaim the province When, in 1848, the Californian goldfields were discovered (some £300,000,000 in all were won from them), Panamá prospered exceedingly; by the isthmus all the precious metal was shipped to the United States and Europe.

Thirty-seven years later (1885) United States marines landed, nominally to



THE REPUBLIC OF PANAMÁ AND THE CANAL ZONE

protect the transit of the isthmus between Colón and Panamá cities. Relations between Panamá and Colombia thereafter became worse Many revolts took place, and in July, 1900, under the lead of Belisario Porras (who later became President of the new Republic upon two occasions, including the 1920 election), a desperate but unsuccessful attempt was made by the Liberal army to secure control of Panamá city

Far different was the result of the revolt which is said to have been supported by the United States Government, an allegation warmly repudiated It was said that, finding Colombia unwilling to sell her right over the canal zone of the isthmus for the price offered (£10,000,000), and unable to move the smaller State from its refusal, the United States sent emissaries to Panamá, and when rebellion broke out warships forcibly prevented any interference upon the part of the four hundred Colombian troops despatched from the capital The independent Republic of Panamá was proclaimed November 3, 1903, and the American Government at once recognized it, inducing the British Government, a few months later, to do the same

Since then political disturbances have seldom been allowed to make headway. At the first sign of trouble troops from the United States have stood in readiness to intervene The interests of the world in the safety of the canal are real enough, and the United States, which stands as voluntary custodian, as it was the triumphant constructor, of this great waterway, pleads these interests as sufficient justification for its attitude An anti-American demonstration took place June 28, 1920, at Panamá city on account of the United States acquiring part of Tobago for the defence of the canal

In 1919 there were changes in the diplomatic representatives of Great Britain and Panamá, Mr. Andrew Percy Bennett, C M G. (formerly British Consul at Zurich), being appointed to Panamá, and Señor Don Guillermo Andreve to the Court of S James's. Prosperity increased the country's balance of trade from a little more than $2,000,000 (approximately £400,000) in 1903 to over $15,000,000 (£3,000,000) in 1920

In May, 1921, trouble broke out between Panamá and Costa Rica, the latter without warning occupying territory allotted to it by the "White Award," which, when made in 1916, was refused recognition by Panamá. The United States (which controlled the award) took the side of Costa Rica, and threatened Panamá with punishment unless it consented to resign the disputed territory peacefully. The American troops, however, were not allowed by the Panamanians to leave the canal-zone territory Panamá has now appealed for moral support to Peru, Chile, Argentina, and Brazil, and refuses to bow further to the dictation of the United States

PANAMÁ: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Forms connecting isthmus in the shape of a double curve, between South and Central America. Bounded north by Caribbean Sea, south by Pacific, east by Colombia, and west by Costa Rica. Western mountain chain forms watershed, and there are coastal ranges on the eastern curve. Short, swift rivers drain from hills to each coast. Numerous small ports along coasts. Interoceanic canal runs across narrowest part of isthmus, having on each side of it a neutral zone five miles wide Rainfall abundant but country underpopulated and mainly undeveloped. Breadth of isthmus varies between 37 and 110 miles Total area about 32,000 square miles with a population of some 450,000. Panamá has police force of about 800 officers and men, but no army or navy.

Government and Constitution

Panamá proclaimed its independence from Colombia in 1903 Constitution based on republican lines and provides for Chamber of Deputies with thirty-three members and a President elected for four years by direct voting. President assisted by Cabinet of five and three Vice-Presidents.

Commerce and Industries

Only small part of country agriculturally developed though soil fertile. Chief products bananas, coffee, cocoa, and rubber. Mahogany is found, and ipecacuanha, sarsaparilla, tobacco, and sugar cultivated. There are considerable timber resources, and cattle do well. Mineral resources extensive. Turtle and pearl fishing carried on. In 1921 total imports amounted to £2,396,871, and exports, for same year, to £512,931. Standard coins the gold balboa and silver peso. Nominal value of balboa 4s. 2d., and of peso, 2s. 1d.

Communications

Total railway lines measure about 250 miles, of which large portion are privately owned. Telegraph cables run to Europe and North and South America. There are some one hundred post offices and forty telegraph offices. Chief port for provincial traffic outside canal zone is Boca del Toro.

Religion and Education

Principal religion Roman Catholicism, but all creeds tolerated. Canal territory mainly Protestant. About sixty parishes with some seventy Catholic churches and seventy priests, among whom are included Italians, French, and Spanish. Elementary education compulsory between ages of seven and fifteen. State maintains about 400 schools containing over 22,000 children with a staff of over 300. There are, besides, about a dozen private schools, and also a University. Large numbers of Panamanians educated with State aid in United States and Europe.

Chief Towns

Panamá, capital (estimated population 61,000), Colón (26,000), David, Santiago, Penonome, Los Santos, and Chitre.

SWEET MUSIC CHARMS INTERVALS OF LEISURE IN PANAMÁ

Music appeals strongly to the West Indian negroes, many of whom are employed by the industrial company developing the banana fields of Boca del Toro, Panamá. This pleasant faced lad, a member of the crew of a fruit boat, is one of them, and he can pluck very charming music from the strings of his mejorana, a home made Panamanian variant of the Spanish guitar

Photo Publishers' Photo Service

INDIAN BUCKS DRESSED FOR THE DANCE IN DARIEN

Gaiety does not enter largely into the life of the Indians of Panamá but at feasts and dances they are sufficiently spectacular. Daubed with paint, crowned with headbands, or with large crowns of painted wood, and wearing yards of gaudy beads draped about shoulders and waist, they dance to an accompaniment of throbbing drums and shrill reed flutes, until compelled to stop by exhaustion

Paraguay

I. Blending Races in a Land-Locked State

By H. F. Notley

Traveller and Lecturer

THAT the Spanish occupation of South America did that continent an infinity of harm no one acquainted with its history would now question. Neither is there room for doubt that the freeing of the continent from the rule of Spain did it harm also. By the beginning of the nineteenth century the yoke of Spain had become fairly light, it did not result in good government, but it could have been improved in such a manner as to prepare the way for a system on democratic lines. This probably would have made the development of South America a more orderly business than it actually became.

The new states were not supplied with a large enough number of honest and sensible national leaders. The peoples were utterly ignorant and dangerously excitable. The consequence was that nearly all of the republics created in the early years of the nineteenth century were for a long period torn by revolution, usually accompanied by civil war of a very savage and detestable character. The one South American country which long escaped the plague of revolution that swept the continent was one of the two inland republics, Paraguay. The other, Bolivia, had its full share of the disease. That Paraguay did not become infected for a very long time is explained by the circumstance that Paraguay for many years had no professional politicians. From four years after it declared itself independent of Spain it was ruled autocratically for more than fifty years. The autocrats who thus governed the Paraguayans were not models of benevolent despotism. Yet, when all their faults are admitted, it has to be granted that they did keep order, that they did instil some kind of discipline into the people, and that they encouraged work.

LENGUA WOMAN OF PARAGUAY

Averaging five feet four inches in height, Lengua women have well proportioned figures, and soft textured, reddish-chocolate skin. Tribal marks deform their not unpleasing faces

Photo, J. Richards

Therefore, when at last Paraguay became a self-governing state, it began by governing itself on the whole wisely, choosing better leaders and administrators than were chosen by most of its neighbours. This

ONE JAGUAR LESS TO PREY UPON HIS STOCK

In the pastoral industry lie potentialities of great wealth for Paraguay, which possesses vast grassy plateaux perfectly adapted for pasture. The industry is being greatly developed by the improvement of breeds and the establishment of freezing plant. This horseman, taking home the skin of a jaguar he has killed, a most destructive brute among cattle on the Pampas, is the foreman on an estancia

Photo, Miss G. Boulter

did not come to pass, unfortunately, until the land had been ruined and the population reduced from about 1,337,000 to about 221,000 by a disastrous six years' war. This war broke out in 1864, and was caused by the ruling autocrat's attempt to keep the country within a ring-fence, so that the people might not be affected by modern ideas. Foreigners were kept out by every means possible. The dictator went so far even as to block the Paraná river, one of the two vast streams which flow through Paraguay, with a barrage of logs

The neighbouring countries, Argentina, Brazil, and Uruguay, resented his attitude and seized an opportunity to protest, upon which the ruler of Paraguay defied them, and induced or forced the people to keep them at bay for six years.

However, there returned to the country after peace had been made a number of the educated Paraguayans who had been exiled for their intelligence or other good qualities, and they applied themselves with good sense as well as energy to the task of reconstruction. That their efforts were, for a time, not in vain was due to the nature of the Paraguayan people. The chief Indian stock upon which the nation was based possessed many excellent qualities. The

Guaranis were a more peaceable, teachable race than most of those which the Spaniards found in possession when they conquered South America. For a time they were as badly used as the rest, in spite of their amiable character. Then the Jesuits took them in hand, rescued them from the cruel stupidity of their conquerors, ruled them ably and kindly, treating them as children, taught them not alone the industries, but even the arts of civilization.

The system was not unlike that of the Inca government in Peru, a bureaucratic communism Among all the governed there was equality All were expected to do their share of work for the community, for the ruling brotherhood, and for themselves. The brotherhood, the Jesuits, were above the law, but they appear, so far as the records can be trusted, to have used their power moderately and with justice.

It was their trading genius which brought the Jesuits into disfavour with the Spanish authorities. They were compelled to give up their territory and to leave the country. All that they had done for the people was allowed to perish. Yet so strong did the tradition of their just and orderly government remain that soon after independence had been declared the Paraguayans permitted a Jesuit named Francia to become perpetual President of the Republic, which meant that he was

HAPPY DOMESTICITY IN A VILLAGE OF PARAGUAY

Home life can be very pleasant in Paraguay, and prosperous, too, for those of more industrious disposition than the average Paraguayan, who, as a rule, is indolently content to produce enough for his own maintenance and no more. Labour reaps a rich reward in the fertile agricultural districts, and climatic conditions simplify domestic architecture in the villages and reduce necessary expenditure on clothing to a minimum

Photo, Miss G. Boulter

STRONGBOW OF THE PARAGUAYAN WILDS

Elephantiasis is crippling his hands and feet but this predatory Guayeuru Indian of the Gran Chaco, whose jaguar skin helmet attests his prowess in the chase, can still draw a three foot arrow to its head on his powerful bow

empowered to rule as a despot, responsible to nobody

Francia began his reign in 1815 it lasted for thirty five years He certainly kept the people isolated from the rest of the world He certainly kept them ignorant He was an autocrat in commerce as well as in religion, he directed the stream of trade as well as the tendencies of thought And he used his power to crush all who tried to overturn him

Yet "El Supremo," as he liked to be called, proved himself to be wiser in his actions and was more sincerely mourned when he died at the age of seventy four than the generality of kings are One illustration of his good sense may be quoted In 1810 the crops of certain districts were entirely consumed by locusts a plague from which the farmer is not entirely free to day The inhabitants of these districts were in despair Francia heard of it and sent word to them, Sow your crops over again At first they supposed he spoke foolishly but most of them took his advice and they reaped plentiful harvests Thus it was proved that the richness of the soil and the kindliness of the climate made two sowings in the year possible The most pressing of the problems that had to be faced by the Government which took office after the war was how to repopulate the land and get it under cultivation again For some time not only land but implements and seed and even money were supplied to immigrants A great many Spaniards Italians and Germans were induced to settle but it was found before long that, at any rate among those of Latin races the efforts of the settlers were in inverse ratio to the help that they received They looked to the Government to keep them altogether Now the married man who emigrates from Europe or the United States to Paraguay receives a free grant of forty acres the bachelor receives twenty acres, and free passages are given for the voyage up the river from Montevideo to Asuncion the capital of Paraguay

This voyage gives the newcomer a good idea of the character of the country As he passes from Argentina

CAMOUFLAGE IN THE CHASE DELUDES THE SHY OSTRICH

Both for the sake of its flesh, considered a delicacy, and for its feathers, largely used for personal adornment, the rhea, or South American ostrich, is much sought after by the Indians. A very shy bird, the hunter takes advantage of its equal foolishness to approach it in ant hill country by disguising himself with a bunch of the creepers that crown the head of every ant-hill

Photo, Miss G. Boulter

HOSTAGES OF FORTUNE WHOSE LOT IS NOT TOO HAPPY IN AN INDIAN TOLDO OF PARAGUAY

Large families are not usual among the Paraguayan Indians, whose precarious and nomadic life would be greatly embarrassed by such a responsibility. There is, indeed, among the Lenguas an organized system of birth control, and infanticide is still largely practised. Twins are deemed unlucky, and generally both are put to death. The first child is also often killed at birth, the excuse alleged being that it is never physically strong, owing probably to girls becoming mothers too young. Yet the mothers themselves are by no means devoid of natural maternal affection.

Photo, Miss G. Boulter

into Paraguay he can notice a change in the appearance and the manners of the people. The Argentino, accustomed to the life of the cowboy, and the Paraguayan, habituated to agriculture, are in many ways different; most of those who know them both prefer the latter.

The villages in which they live are composed of reed huts scattered round a low-roofed church, with a belfry standing a little apart, as the custom is in North Italy, and with open cloisters running along outside the wall. On the banks can be seen fields of tobacco and sugar-cane and groves of bananas The plant life of Paraguay is marvellously rich and varied; in the damp, warm forests the flowering creepers form effects of indescribable loveliness. Some very fine timber is shipped down the Paraguay and Paraná rivers.

Bounteous Nature's Useful Gifts

The chief export, so far as the rest of South America is concerned, is the herb called Yerba Maté, which is brewed into the tea drunk all over the continent for its stimulant and refreshing effects. Oranges grow to perfection, and they are even used for making wine. The Paraguayan tobacco is black and strong. Men and women alike smoke it in large quantities, but there is not much demand for it out of the country. Another product of the soil is mandioca, which forms the staff of life for the Paraguayans as wheat bread does for the English. This is a root which has the alarming property of being poisonous to human life until it has been either boiled or baked. It is eaten as we eat potatoes, and it is also ground into a coarse powder and made into a kind of bread. It is used outside Paraguay for making tapioca; the Paraguayans themselves scarcely eat it in this form at all.

The soil is so fertile that it requires little cultivation. The people produce, therefore, when they are left to themselves, just what they need and no more. The most industrious elements in the country are those which have been introduced from Europe. There are many thousands of Italians and a large number of Germans. A good number of Australians have done well.

Paraguay's Pastures and Park-lands

For grazing the land of the Republic is excellently suited; it has already a considerable export of beef, and, should conditions become more settled, it would become a cattle-raising country in a very big way of business. No high mountain regions reduce the quantity of grass-land. The climate is mild and equable. There is a heavy rainfall which, added to the mighty rivers and other numberless streams, keeps the pastures green and nourishing. The appearance of the greater part of the country has been described as resembling that of an English park. Here the climate has moved enthusiasts to call it "ideal." But there are also huge forests, which bring down the average of healthiness.

The forest area is called El Gran Chaco, and its size is estimated at 100,000 square miles. It forms the western part of Paraguay, and its ownership is not certain, for Bolivia claims it also. The population is very small, probably not more than 50,000, all Indians, about whom next to nothing was known until a missionary named Barbrooke Grubb went among them at the risk of his life, studied their institutions and psychology, and explained them to the world.

Native Life in El Gran Chaco

He found that their system is still much the same as it was under the Jesuit rulers of their ancestors. The land belongs to the people; no man can own more than he cultivates. They work for present needs only. The desire to accumulate is scarcely known among them. Any ambition, any tendency towards "getting on," is discouraged. Change of any kind is opposed as

CORRECT MASCULINE COSTUME IN THE HEART OF PARAGUAY

Lengua men commonly wear but one garment, a blanket, fastened kilt wise round the waist It is made entirely of wool, spun and woven by the women, and is often of very fine texture Districts have their distinctive patterns and colours, black and white being obtained from the natural wool, reds from the cochineal insect, yellows and browns from various barks. Greens and blues are not found

Photo, Miss G Boulter

HERO OF MELODRAMA REALIZED ON A PARAGUAYAN ESTANCIA

Cattle farming ranks second among the industries of Paraguay, over five million head of cattle being enumerated in the Republic. This peon is about to start on a round up, equipped with lasso and bolas, and with his poncho on his saddle before him, ready to serve as waterproof, overcoat, or blanket, as need may be. In the angle behind him is the outlook tower adjoining the estancia house

Photo Miss G. Boulter

uncomfortable and unnecessary. They are suspicious of strangers; after the experience their forbears had with the Spaniards this is not surprising. Therefore they are reticent before them, and appear at first to be sullen, unemotional, gloomy. When Mr Grubb got to know them, he learned that they were in truth a cheerful folk, loving laughter, enjoying their simple festivities, kindly, very fond of their children, and with strongly developed emotions of affection, hate, and fear.

Their patience under suffering or irritation seems to be without limits. They bear whatever bodily pain comes to them without annoyance or complaint, though they show deep grief when those whom they hold dear die.

TOBA DANDY IN FESTAL GARB

Toba Indians of the Gran Chaco usually wear paint and feathers rather than clothing, and the costume donned by this young exquisite for a festival is exceptionally "full" dress

The industries which the Jesuits taught them have almost died out. Once these Guaranis were weavers, carpenters, potters, metal-workers, even locksmiths. They were skilful music-makers, both with voice and instrument. There were painters among them. Now they have relapsed from their civilized state, and the Christianity in which they were instructed has given place to that mythology which is found so widely spread among ancient races. This supposes that the Creator of the Universe, who is symbolised by a beetle (the Egyptian scarab), does not direct its course, but merely looks on. There is no worship of God therefore, no prayers, no sacrifices, no ritual. Happiness both in this world and hereafter is believed to depend upon observing natural laws. It is anticipated that the future life will be rather dull (this was the Roman idea), but although it may be no more pleasant than this life, it will not be actively unpleasant. If there is no enjoyment, there will at all events be no pain.

In wizards and witchcraft the Indians of the Chaco firmly believe, and they are ready to commit any cruelty under such influence. They practise the killing of unhealthy or unwanted babies, as did the Spartans of ancient Greece, but they pay much attention to the care and education of children who are strong and well. This is not left to individual parents, but is made a tribal concern.

Of the Indians who live outside the Chaco most are Roman Catholics, thus belonging to the Established Church of Paraguay. Other religions, however, are allowed free practice of their faith, and all marriages must be entered into before state officials in order to be recognized as valid by the law. They can also be solemnised by a priest if the parties desire the Church's blessing, but the ecclesiastical ceremony by itself is

not sufficient. There is a state system of education – on paper. Schooling is free and compulsory – where there are schools The number of those who can neither read nor write is large

The capital, Asunción, is an ancient city. It was the residence of Spanish viceroys, and reminders of old Spain, which was so much under the influence of the Moors, peep out continually from the architecture of the place It is a city of gardens and orange groves The Paraguayans are a flower-loving people; the taste no doubt comes down from the Guaranis They are fond of cleanliness, too, and order, though revolutions interfere sadly with the attainment of these blessings. Unhappily the South American habit of turning out governments by force was soon picked up by the Paraguayans. From 1881 onwards there were frequent revolutions The curse of the professional politician descended upon them.

MOUNTED FISH-SPEARMAN OF THE CHACO

Large tracts of El Gran Chaco are swamp. In summer much of the surface water subsides, and the fish take to the mud beneath. This Lengua Indian is going prodding with his long spear

Photo, Miss G Boulter

The new buildings are in the usual South American stucco style. Many of them, including the Parliament House, have suffered more than once from the effects of revolution; the thirteen senators and twenty-six deputies who compose the legislature meet in rather dilapidated halls. The chief industry of the capital is politics, with journalism as its tributary. There are plenty of newspapers, each advocating the claims of some party or politician, and promising prosperity as soon as their triumph is assured. The drying and packing of the Yerba Maté ought alone to make Asunción well-to-do, but the growing of the leaf is hindered by the uncertainty of politics, by the undeveloped state of the country, by bands of marauders. If a stable and wise government should be put in office and given a fair chance, nothing could stop Paraguay from becoming one of the most flourishing and contented of the South American states.

Then its other towns would grow and prosper –Villa Rica, in a rich agricultural district; Concepción, on the Paraguay river; Encarnación, on the Paraná. These mighty highways to the sea make up for the lack of any coastline.

INDIANS ON TREK IN PARAGUAY, WHERE CARTS, AND ROADS TO CARRY THEM, ARE UNKNOWN

Carts are virtually unknown in the remote regions of Paraguay, where roads are non existent, and as the Indians do not use saddles they have to fasten all their belongings to their own persons when travelling. A household removal thus has its humorous aspect to the onlooker, the women, cumbered with mat blankets, water jars, cooking pots, and large string bags stuffed with other goods, balanced on the stocky little horses and followed by other women on foot similarly encumbered, while the men walk in front, carrying only their weapons.

Photo Miss G. Boulter

Paraguay

II. The Unhappy Story of Its Mis-Government

By W. H. Koebel

Author of "Paraguay," "In Jesuit Land," etc.

ACCORDING to one account, the name of this inland Republic is a corruption of the word "Payagua," an Indian tribe, while another version renders it as "crowned rivers"—i.e., "Paragua" (palm-crown) and "i" (water). It embraces an area of slightly less than 300,000 square miles, is situated between 22° 4′ and 27° 30′ S lat., and 54° 32′ and 61° 20′ W long., and is bounded north and east by Brazil, south-east and south-west by Argentina, and west and north-west by Bolivia.

Climatically, the winter season lasts from April to September, and the summer season from October to March. In the former season the mean temperature is about 71°, and in summer 81°. The heaviest rains occur during August, September, and October. Treaties of 1872 and 1876 sought to delimitate the boundaries, and by the second of these (signed at Buenos Aires on February 3, 1876) the point of the El Gran Chaco between Rio Verde and Bahia Negro was awarded to Paraguay. The region stretching from Rio Verde and the River Pilcomayo was eventually (1878) also confirmed as Paraguayan territory, on the arbitration of the Government of the United States.

The great River Paraguay splits the Republic into two regions, Paraguay Oriental to the east and Paraguay Occidental (better known as El Gran Chaco) to the west. Of these the first is by far the more important, containing all the centres of population and commerce. The Chaco country, much of which is still unexplored, is sparsely populated, principally by Indians of various tribes. Paraguay Oriental is mountainous in character, but the plateaux are gently undulating and the valleys are fertile. The mountain system, known as the Sierra Amambay from north to south, is identified as the Sierra Mbaracayu to the east and west. Both the Paraguay and Paraná rivers have their sources in Brazilian territory, and have a total length of 1,800 and 2,000 miles respectively. The Paraguay joins the Paraná in the neighbourhood of Corrientes, and its chief affluents include the Apá, Tacuari, Cuyabá, Jaura, Bermejo, and the important frontier river Pilcomayo. The two last-mentioned streams serve to water the Chaco. In the valley of the Paraguay are situated extensive tracts of marsh country. The principal sheet of fresh water in the Republic is Lake Ypoa. There is a total population of about 1,500,000. The chief towns of the Republic comprise Asunción, the capital (on the east bank of the Paraguay, 12,000 miles from the sea, with a population of 150,000), Villa Rica, Concepción, Villa del Pilar on the Paraguay, and the port of Encarnación on the Paraná.

In 1515 Paraguay was tentatively visited by Juan de Solis, and a decade later by Sebastian Cabot in the course of his surveys of the Paraguay and Upper Paraná. Cabot contented himself with building the fort of Santo Espiritu, but several years later Juan de Ayolas arrived, and founded the town of Asunción on August 15, 1535. He was in turn followed

THE REPUBLIC OF PARAGUAY

in command by Domingo Martinez de Irala in 1538-42 when Spanish explorations were pushed into the Chaco and large numbers of Indians enslaved. In 1542 Alvar Nunez Cabeza de Vaca was appointed viceroy of the Plate country, with special instructions to propagate the Christian faith. A few Franciscan missionaries had already arrived and on reaching Asuncion Alvar Nuñez informed them of the importance attached to their labours among the Indians.

The Franciscan fathers effected much good but an intrigue by Irala overthrew Nunez in 1544, he being deported to Spain to endure a trial which ended in his acquittal eight years subsequently. Irala then administered the affairs of Paraguay until he died in 1557. He built schools and a cathedral in Asunción, but both Franciscan and Jesuit missionaries frequently suffered from misunderstanding and even hostility on the part of the governing powers. Francisco Ortiz de Vergara ruled the province (1559-65) until his deposition, and Felipe de Caceres (1566-80) until his murder by the Indians.

During the administration of Torres de Vera, who took office in 1587, the celebrated Franciscan Solano (canonised as "The Apostle of Paraguay") made a momentous journey from Peru through the Chaco to Paraguay preaching to the Indians in their own language and baptising thousands of them. Hernando Arias de Saavedra himself born at Asuncion enjoyed two terms as governor (1589-93 and 1601-9) and during his second term the Jesuits were officially recognised in Paraguay by order of Philip III of Spain. They accordingly began their work including the erection of missions and prospered for more than a century. In 1620, Paraguay and La Plata (Buenos Aires) were formally separated, both being subservient to the viceroy of Peru.

Although a movement in opposition to the Jesuit influence was frustrated by the action of Zabala, the governor of Buenos Aires (1735), the act of Ferdinand VI of Spain in ceding to Portugal the area of La Guayra and 20,000 square miles east of the Uruguay river (1750), led to the eventual expulsion of the Jesuits from Paraguay in 1767. By that time, however, the treaty with Portugal had actually been abrogated. In 1776, the important step was taken of including Paraguay in the newly constituted viceroyalty of La Plata.

Paraguay proclaimed herself a Republic, independent of Spanish rule or interference, in 1811. A series of more or less bloodthirsty dictatorships followed. The first

HANDY HOUSEWIFE WHO MAKES HER OWN STRING BAGS

Labour is fairly evenly divided among the Lengua Indians, the husband doing the hunting while the wife manufactures most of the household articles. Here, the hunter being fed, his wife takes up her knitting to contrive a waist bag, which she is fashioning out of home spun string.

Photo, Miss G. Boulter

of these, under José Gaspar Rodriguez de Francia, endured from 1811 to 1840, and ended only with his death His despotic power was then assumed by Carlos Antonio Lopez (1841-1862) On the accession to power of the latter's son Francisco Solano Lopez, serious trouble arose with Argentina, Brazil, and Uruguay. Lopez was the aggressor in the war which followed in 1864. He violated the neutrality of Argentina by marching his army through it for the invasion of southern Brazil. To this act of aggression the Republics of Brazil, Argentina, and Uruguay rejoined by forming an alliance against Lopez. The sequel was a terrible war—one of the most bloodthirsty and prolonged that have ever devastated the South American continent—which endured for nearly six years before the power of Lopez was finally overcome.

Ruin Wrought in Six Years' War

The war was quickly carried into Paraguayan territory. Lopez, foreseeing that he was doomed to be crushed by weight of numbers, adopted the desperate expedient of wholesale conscription of all Paraguayan males down to the ages of fourteen and even twelve Not only this, but the female population were utilised for the commissariat service, and suffered terrible hardships in the course of the campaign Moreover, Lopez in his desperation caused every homestead on his line of retreat, and every animal in the fields to be destroyed, so that the invaders might find only a wilderness. A fairly reliable computation has placed it on record that, out of a Paraguayan population of 1,337,439 in 1864, there remained 28,476 males, 106,254 females above the age of fifteen, and 86,079 children, when hostilities came to an end

This occurred on March 1, 1870, when finally Lopez was slain in the decisive battle of Aquidaban. During the following six months, a council of three governed the country, Carlos Loizaga, José de Bedoya, and Cirilo Rivarola On November 25, 1870, the Constituent Assembly promulgated a Constitution for Paraguay. It enacted that the legislative power be vested in a Senate and Chamber of Deputies, elected by universal manhood suffrage in the ratio of one senator to every 12,000 inhabitants and one deputy to every 6,000, and the salary of each member of Congress to be £200 per annum. The President, chosen by an electoral college for four years and only to be re-elected after eight consecutive years, was to be assisted by a Cabinet of five. Paraquay became insolvent in 1874.

Efforts Towards Peace and Progress

Paraguay escaped annexation, although the Brazilian army remained in partial occupation of her territory for more than six years, and it was estimated that she owed Brazil, in indemnities and compensations, some forty millions sterling. Minor revolutions took place in Paraguay in 1881, in 1894, when J. B Egusquiza assumed the Presidency, and in 1898, when he was hurled from power. His compulsory resignation probably averted a war with Bolivia over the frontier question, but the financial situation certainly improved during his administration. Further civil outbreaks took place in 1904, happily terminated by the treaty of Pilcomayo in December, and in 1908-9.

The extension of the Paraguay Central Railway, beginning in 1906, proved a landmark in the increase of trade and prosperity of the country generally. By two enactments of 1909, primary education was made compulsory between the ages of five and fourteen years, and a law was ordained for the "conversion of the Indians to Christianity and civilization."

During the present century the most notable presidents of the Republic have been Dr. Eduardo Schaerin, 1912-16, and Manuel Gondra who served two separate terms in the chief magistracy.

Paraguay preserved complete neutrality throughout the Great War.

PARAGUAY: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

A republic of South America forming part of the Rio de la Plata system. Bordered east by Brazil, south and west by Argentina, and north by Bolivia, it lies across the tropic of Capricorn, and has a climate varying between tropical and sub-tropical. Rivers Pilcomayo and Paraguay form western, River Paraná the eastern and southern boundaries, the latter stream uniting eventually with Rio de la Plata and forming highway to South Atlantic. Large portion of country covered by valuable forests or plains of grass from which rise moderate hills. Both pasturage and agriculture well provided for. Part of the region of swamp and savanna known as El Gran Chaco is included in Paraguay. Total area, excluding El Gran Chaco, about 75,000 square miles, with population of less than a million.

Commerce and Industries

Country supports large herds of cattle, and there is considerable meat packing and curing industry. Sweet potatoes, maize, rice, beans, sugar, and cotton are produced. Copper, iron, and manganese deposits exist. In 1920 imports, including hardware, wines and spirits, textiles and drugs, totalled £2,623,701; and exports, of which hides, yerba (Paraguay tea), tobacco, oranges, cattle, and canned beef were the chief, aggregated £3,037,116.

Chief Towns

Asunción, capital (estimated population of town and surrounding district, 100,000), Villa Rica (26,000), Concepción (15,000), Carapegua (15,000), Encarnación (12,500).

MEMBERS OF THE PERSIAN PARLIAMENT GROUPED OUTSIDE A GOVERNMENT BUILDING

Persia has been a kingdom for 2,500 years. Until the year 1906 the form of government in its most important [illegible] called the Majlis, with the Shah within certain limitations being an absolute ruler. In 1906 consequent on the demand of the people for representative government the Shah granted the establishment of a National Assembly known as the Majlis. The Majlis held sessions in 1907 and 1908 and then were suspended. In 1909 the Majlis [illegible]

Photo United Press Service

Persia

I. Pastoral Life in the Land of the Shah

By Sir Percy Sykes, K.C.I.E.

Author of "A History of Persia," etc

BETWEEN the low-lying valley of the Indus on the east and that of Mesopotamia (renamed Irak) on the west there rises a vast plateau which includes not only Persia, but also Afghanistan and Baluchistan. This plateau is termed the Iranian, for Persia is termed Iran by its inhabitants, the word being a form of the European word "Aryan." In fact, Persia is the land of the Aryans, and the Persians were the first Aryans to be civilized and to found communities which developed into great empires. The altitude of the plateau is considerable, exceeding 5,000 feet at Kerman and at Shiraz, and 3,000 feet in the case of Teheran, the capital, and Meshed, the chief town of the great province of Khorassan. Ispahan, once the capital and situated in the centre, stands 5,000 feet up. In complete contrast with this plateau is the strip bordering the Persian Gulf, which is terribly hot and unhealthy. Similarly, the Caspian provinces to the north are low-lying and unhealthy. The total area of the country averages 1,000 miles from east to west and 700 miles from north to south.

MULLAH OF MAHOMEDAN PERSIA

The Persian priesthood shows itself a fanatical opponent of progress, but recognizes any man as a mullah, provided he can read and interpret the Koran

Photo, A. Brett

It is beginning to be widely recognized that the rainfall of a country is of great importance. Unfortunately, in Persia there are only ten inches in the north and half that amount in the south, as against forty inches for the British Isles. So meagre a rainfall means that the country is covered with a steppe vegetation. Instead of succulent grass that covers more favoured lands, sterile Persia can only show stunted bushes growing several feet apart from one another. Between them, in the spring and early summer, a few miserable blades of grass that can almost be counted appear, and are eagerly devoured by the flocks of sheep and goats that thrive all over the country. The sheep are of the "fat-tailed" variety. In the late spring their tails weigh eighteen pounds or thereabouts, whereas at the end of the winter they have shrunk to perhaps one-sixth the weight.

Persia, at best, is a land of deserts, with few oases, and its centre is a dead heart—one vast desert. It is curious how much the Koran affects nomenclature in Moslem countries. This great central desert is termed Lut, the Koranic

PRIEST AND MEMBERS OF HIS HOUSEHOLD AT THE NOONDAY PRAYER

The social structure of Persian life is based on the Mahomedan law, but the country is the stronghold of the Shiite schism, recognizing Ali, the son-in law of the Prophet, as his successor, in opposition to the Sunnites who form the majority in the Moslem world Though strictly adhering to the letter, the devout bigotry of the Persian priesthood has but feeble regard for the spirit of the law

Photo, Georg Haeckel

form of the name of Abraham's nephew, Lot. Guides point out bluffs worn by the wind, which is extraordinarily potent, and carves the naked soil into fantastic shapes resembling castle, palace, or minaret, and declare that these are the cities of Lot. This is, undoubtedly, the origin of the name, a view supported by the fact that the Dead Sea is termed Bahr-i-Lut, or the Sea of Lot.

I have crossed the Lut in many parts. My first journey was from north to south, and I was the first European to traverse this section since the great Venetian traveller, Marco Polo, in the thirteenth century. He feelingly referred to the water as "bitter green stuff, so salt that no one can drink it," but did not describe the various phases of sandhills—stony, bare ranges, and saline swamps of ochrous slime These last are most dangerous in case of rain, and many caravans have been engulfed and totally lost when overtaken by a rainstorm. Only less dangerous are the sandstorms. Indeed, the track is marked by skeletons of animals.

The mountains have a regular trend from the south east to the north-west This makes the approach from Irak extremely difficult as range after range has to be crossed at rightangles During the Great War a metalled well graded road was constructed from the rail head in Irak to Hamadan, to the distinct benefit of the country The great northern range is the Elburz South of the Caspian it throws up the gigantic peak of Demavend which rises to about 18 000 feet above sea level and is the highest peak in Asia west of the Himalayas In the extreme south-east is Kuh i-Taftan, which I was the first European to scale at about a height of 13 000 feet It is a volcano in the solfatara stage with smoke issuing from its craters These great ranges play a decisive part in retaining the moisture that falls in the form of snow, which melts in the spring and waters the crops But for these ranges Persia would be as much a desert as Arabia

The rivers of this arid, treeless country are of little importance Indeed, from the Indus to the Shatt el Arab, no river

VENERABLE DESCENDANTS OF AN ERSTWHILE SCOURGE OF SOCIETY

They are Ismailis descended from the famous Assassins, followers of Hassan i Sabbah, who, in 1071 joined the Ismailis a secret sect of the Shiites, and devoted himself to undermining the power of Islam Ruled throughout the Mahomedan world, for no man was safe from their daggers, the Assassins pursued their evil work without hindrance up to the time of the Mongol invasion

Photo, Sir P Sykes

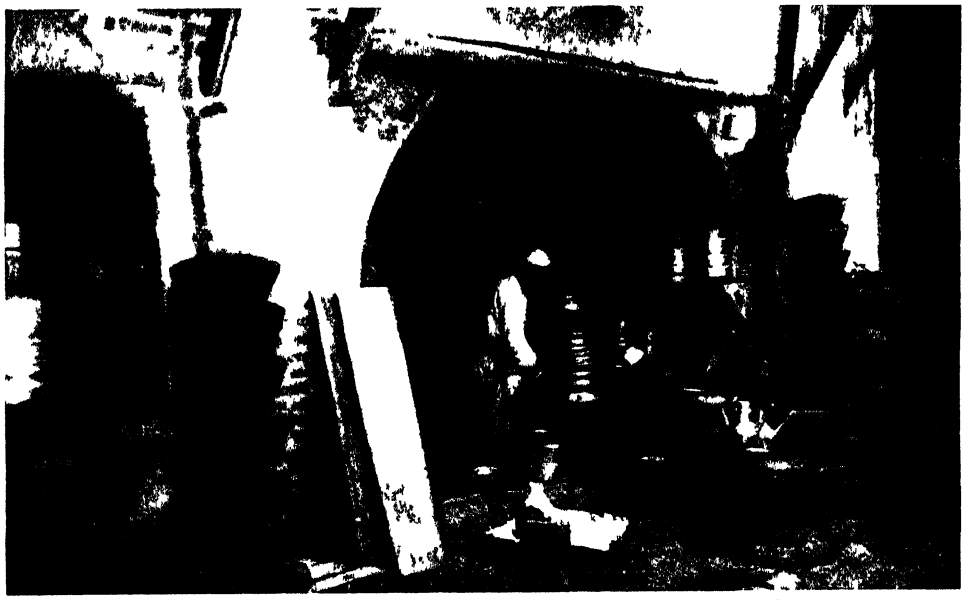
GRACE OF UNCULTURED WOMANHOOD DISPLAYED IN RHYTHMIC DANCE BEFORE APPRECIATIVE VILLAGE SPECTATORS

Among most high class Persians it is considered degrading to practise dancing and music, these arts being practically confined to professionals. But the free and easy unconventional life of the nomad gypsies, who wander all over the country, picking up a living as best they can, knows no restrictions, and their scarcely clad wives and daughters may sometimes be seen giving public exhibitions of their skill as dancers and musicians. Here, in a quiet corner of a village courtyard against a tiled wall background, gypsy girls are performing a characteristic dance and exciting the admiration and applause of the spectators by their graceful poses.

LADY OF RANK IN THE LAND OF THE LION AND THE SUN

All Persian women are fond of silks and bright colours, and the lady of rank and means decks herself out with all the gay trappings in which her heart delights Fine embroideries are sometimes produced by the more energetic of them, for time hangs heavily on their hands, and eating sweetmeats, yawning their lives away like grown-up children, suffice only the minority

Photo, Underwood Press Service



HOUSEHOLD VESSELS FOR SALE IN A KAZVIN BAZAAR

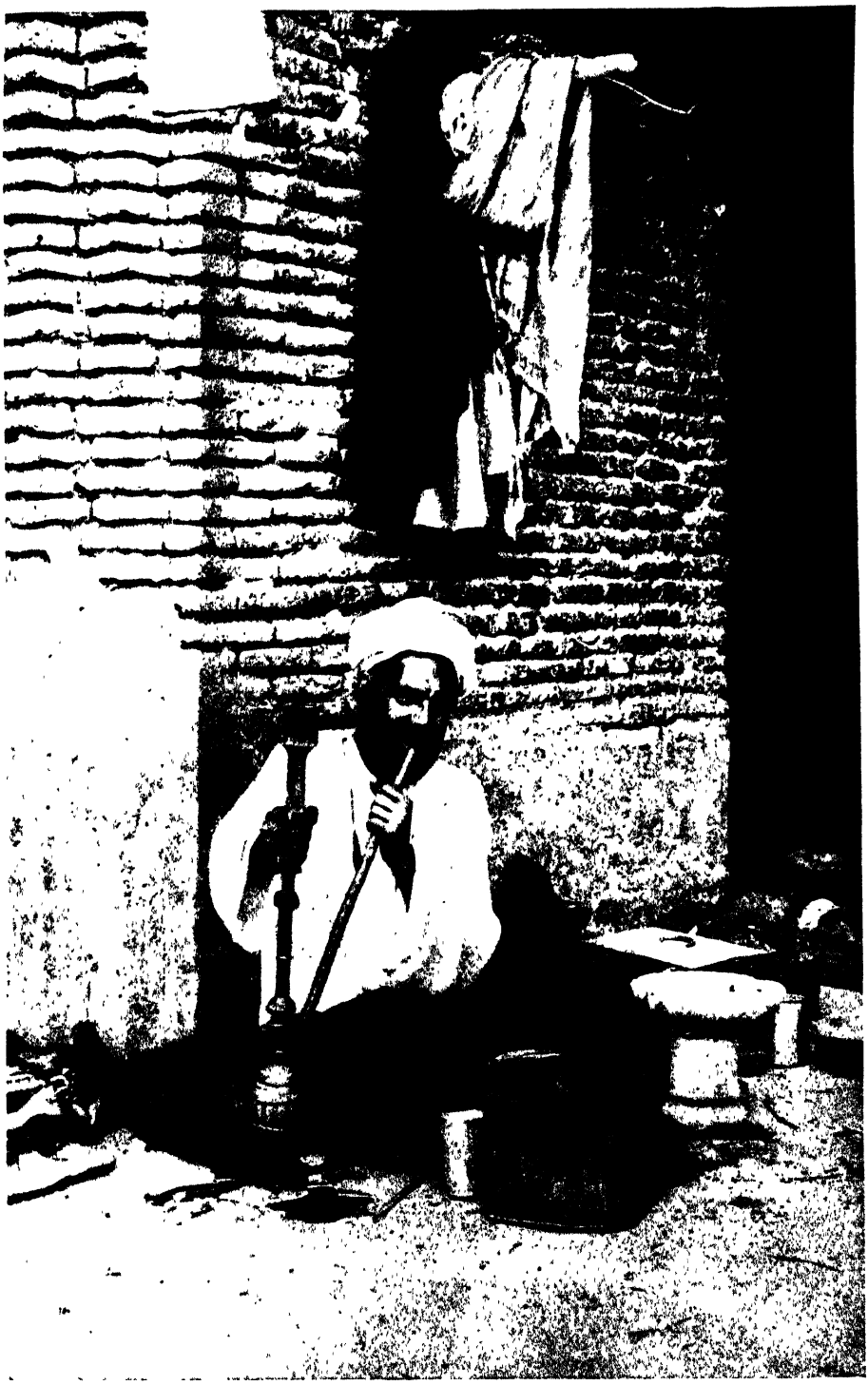
Only on Friday the Mahomedan equivalent of our Sunday is business stilled in the Persian bazaars In this coppersmith's shop graceful ewers stand side by side with vessels of more ungainly make, for nearly all household utensils are made of beaten copper those used for cooking being tinned over Time is no object in Persia and weeks of discussion may precede the completion of a bargain

Photo C J Gallo way

TURKS OF THE ASTRABAD PROVINCE IN A VALLEY VILLAGE

The tribes inhabiting the Astrabad province on the Caspian are mainly of Turkish origin Much of this region is given over to jungle and mountain, but the fertile valleys where native mud hovels huddle together within encircling mud walls produce large quantities of rice and other cereals The greenness of the landscape is pleasant to the eye, but malaria never ceases to take its toll of victims

Photo, Sir P Sykes



KALIAN AIDS THE PRODUCTION OF DECORATIVE DAMASCENED WORK

The artisans of modern Iran are singularly skilful in the treatment of fine metals, and inlaid work of gold and silver upon finely-tempered steel is brought to a high state of perfection. In his designs this goldsmith shows the artistic taste that has long distinguished his countrymen, and all the inspiration he requires comes to him through an occasional puff at the kalian, the smoking apparatus beside him

Photo, Major W. J. P. Rodd

brings down any considerable volume of water to the sea nor is there any navigable river in Persia with the sole exception of the Karun the utility of which is lessened by the existence of a natural barrage at Ahwaz In the north the rivers contain more water the Sefid Rud which pours into the Caspian Sea near Resht being a fine river but not navigable

The villages are generally situated ten or twenty miles apart and between them is barren land without water In South Africa the Karroo where it takes ten acres to feed a sheep closely resembles Persia and it is interesting to note that Persian fat tailed sheep have been introduced there with marked success A village depends almost entirely for its crops on irrigation

TURCOMAN OF PERSIAN TERRITORY

The broad face and high cheekbones show traces of Mongol blood and the manners of his race lack the refinement which usually distinguishes the men of pure Persian stock

Photo, R Gorbold

SHEPHERD OF A NOMAD TRIBE

One of a band of loose limbed wary hillmen whose only wealth is derived from the flocks of goats and sheep with which they wander about the Pushtikuh highlands

Photo, Brill

water, which is scanty Yet Europe owes to Persia many of its fruits and flowers—for example, the peach, the orange, the lime, and the pistachio, all of which have retained their Persian names

The same remark applies to the myrtle, the lilac, and the narcissus Again Pliny tells us that the Persians introduced lucerne clover into Europe when they invaded Greece an early example of progress on the powder cart! It is doubtful whether the vine came to Europe from the Caspian provinces, where it grows wild, but it certainly came either from this neighbourhood or from the Caucasus, which borders on it Generally speaking, trees depend entirely on irrigation

Persia is usually entered from the Persian Gulf, up which so many men

READY TO CARRY ANYTHING

Still, as in old Omar's day, the Persian porter's shoulder knot may be heard a-creaking as he cheerily earns his modest living by carrying burdens that tax even his brawny muscles

Photo, Underwood Press Service

of the British race steamed on the way to the battlefields of Irak This body of water is of great importance, and since 1622, when the English, in alliance with Persia, captured Hormuz from the Portuguese, their influence has ever been on the side of law and order, and, entirely owing to British efforts, piracy has been abolished and the way to Irak made safe. In no part of the world have British responsibilities been faced with greater determination or success.

The Persian Gulf is entered by the straits of Hormuz or Musandam, "the Anvil." The name is well chosen, and I shall never forget the grim, black range rising sheer out of the sea. The view from the deck of the steamer when approaching the port of Bander Abbas is striking. From many miles out to sea a great range is visible, and as the ship draws nearer, the island of Hormuz is passed, with the Portuguese fort imposing even in decay, and palm groves dotting the landscape. The town itself is picturesque from a distance, the Arab architecture being everywhere attractive, whereas, on shore, the bazaars are actually squalid, and only the motley crowd, which includes sleek Hindu traders, swaggering Afghans, and wild-looking Baluchis jostling the Arab-Negroid population, is really interesting.

The port is protected by the islands of Hormuz and Kishm, but, even so, it is difficult to land goods on the open beach, and the little pier only runs out a very short distance. Ships have to lie about two miles out. Bushire, at the head of the Gulf, is the most important

CASPIAN ABLE-BODIED SEAMAN

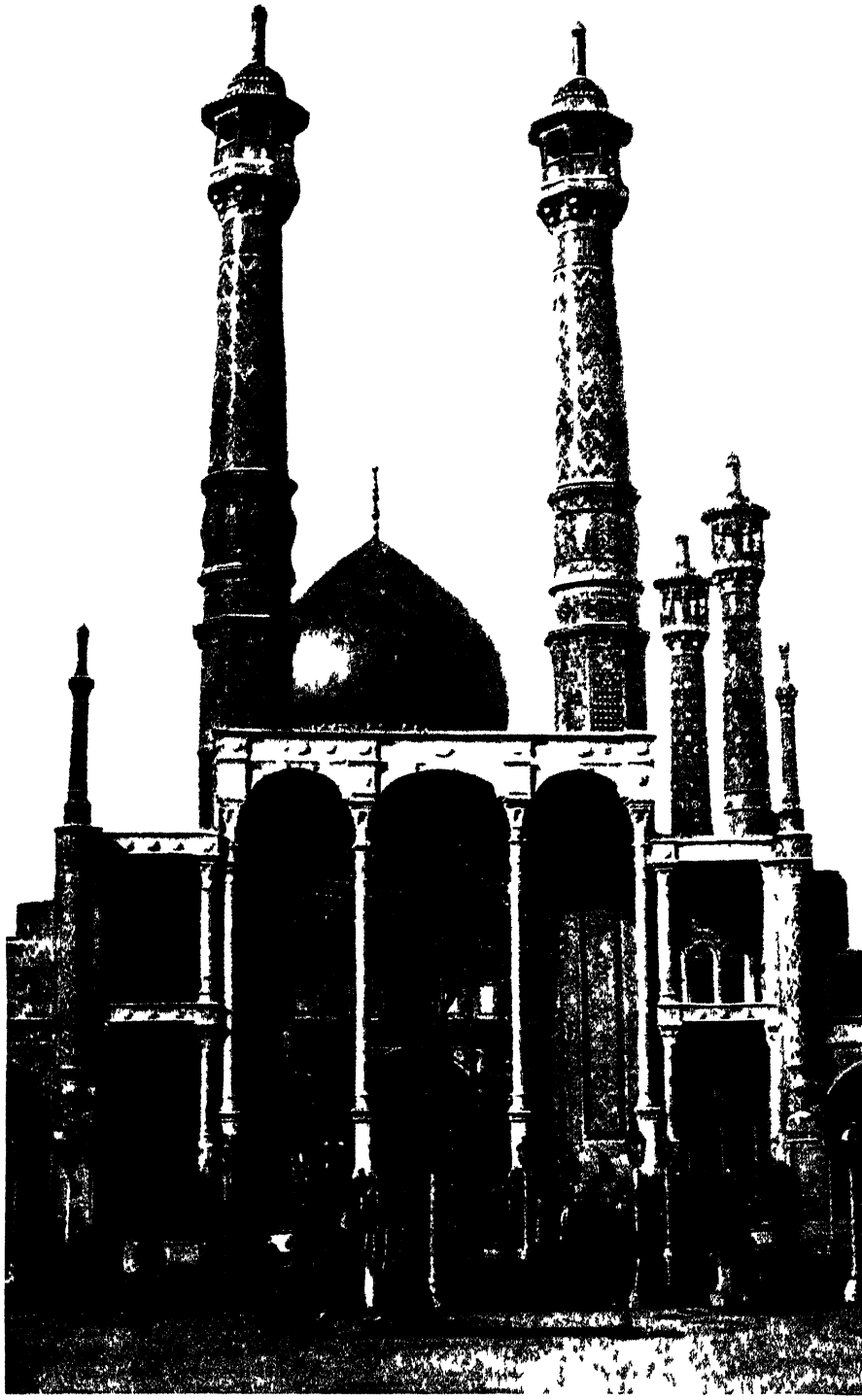
About the salt waters of the Caspian, the largest inland body of water in the world, he finds his livelihood as sailor, guide, porter, and all-round handyman

Photo, R. Gorbold

GATEWAY TO THE GOLDEN-DOMED SHRINE OF THE SAINTED FATIMA

The sacred city of Kum is a great centre of pilgrimage in Persia. Thousands flock yearly to the magnificent shrine of Fatima, who died in the city when on her way to visit her brother the Imam Reza, at Meshed. The gateway leading to the mosque, and the mosque itself, are structures of considerable beauty, their tilework and mosaic being of exquisite quality and design

Photo Sir P. Sykes



BEAUTIFUL SHRINE THAT ATTRACTS AN ENDLESS PILGRIMAGE

The present mosque of Fatima at Kum has a gold covered dome and two gold tipped minarets in the original design but the two huge tiled minars are of later construction Among the faithful visiting this shrine women predominate, but the honour paid to Fatima, and to that other Fatima, her ancestress, the daughter of Mahomet, has in no way raised the status of women in the Moslem world

READY FOR THE CHASE: PERSIAN FALCONER WITH GOSHAWK

In Persia royalty and commoner have always been devoted to the chase, delighting to pursue the ibex and wild sheep in the mountains, and the fleet gazelle in the plains. Hawks, chiefly used in partridge shooting, are also trained to hunt the gazelle, and swoop down, dashing repeatedly at the head of their prey, bewildering it and checking its speed until the horsemen or hounds have overtaken it

Photo, Sir P. Sykes

ART AND CRAFT IN THE COMMERCIAL CARPET WORLD

Carpets are the most famous textile productions of Persia, their elaborate patterns, fine weaving, and tasteful blending of colours making them famous throughout the Western world These superb creations of the hand loom—for all are made by hand, as no machinery exists—are exposed for sale in the bazaars, where the dealer delights to display their splendours before the would-be buyer

Photo, Sir P. Sykes

CARPET MERCHANTS IN THE BAZAAR OF RESHT EXHIBITING AN EXQUISITE PRODUCTION OF THE HAND-LOOM

Always an artistic people, the modern Persians have by no means lost their sense of beauty and excel in many fine industries, especially in that of carpet making

THEATRICAL PERFORMANCE IN PROGRESS AT TEHERAN IN THE INTERIOR OF THE COURT OF THE SHAH OF PERSIA

Teheran replaced Ispahan as the capital of Persia about the end of the eighteenth century, and since that time has been the residence of the Shah and the seat of government The palace is situated in the centre of the city, and covers a vast space with its groups of buildings, courtyards, and rose gardens, all enclosed within high walls During a theatrical performance, at which no European may be present, the Shah and princes occupy the royal box, around the stage are grouped notables of the court, while in the foreground stand closely veiled members of the Shah's "anderoon"

Photo Underwood Press Service

PIETY OF THE WOMAN PILGRIM OF PERSIA

Strapped to her mule she rejoiced hour after hour day after day closely veiled despite the hot weather But all thoughts of hardship and fatigue disappear upon arrival at her goal the shrine of Imam Reza at Meshed

Photo K Corbett

port and the centre of British influence, for the British Resident, who maintains the Pax Britannica in the Gulf, lives at Bushire as Consul General It is also the headquarters of the Indo European Telegraph Department in these torrid waters Actually, the port, or, more correctly, landing place, is worse than at Bander Abbas, ships having to lie several miles off shore, while there are no protecting islands

On the other hand the country behind is richer, Shiraz, the capital of the province of Fars from which the name Persia is derived through the classical Persis standing in relatively fertile country Continuing our survey northwards we come to Muhammerah situated at the point where the Karun flows into the Shatt el Arab Here conditions are better as it is generally smooth in the Karun which is only half a mile wide at its mouth At the same time it cannot be too clearly understood that there are no harbour works no cranes and no dredgers It is true that the bar at the mouth of the Shatt el Arab has been buoyed by the British who have also erected wireless stations at various centres but Persia has made no attempt to create landing or other facilities

In the north the only important port on the Caspian is Enzeli Here again Persia took no steps to develop the port and in rough weather passengers and cargo had frequently to be carried back to Baku because it was impossible to land In recent years the Russians created a port at Kazian, opposite Enzeli and joined it to Resht the capital of the province by a road which was continued across the Elburz Range to Kazvin and Hamadan

One test of greatness for a nation is its communications Here, again Persia fails lamentably It is pitiable but yet true that Persians do nothing whatever, except that they occasionally repair a broken down bridge and immediately charge a heavy toll A traveller might well exclaim that the engineers of Persia are its transport animals whose hoofs have made such communications as there are The only metalled roads

From the Editor's Desk

(CONTINUED)

opportunity at a bookstall of turning over any of the half dozen fortnightly serials issued by other houses, they should do so and compare them very closely as regards material, quantity, and quality with this or any of the Harmsworth educational works. I should be only too pleased if the comparison were pursued to the last detail in respect of the importance of the literary contributions, but the material comparison is an easy and effective one, and will serve. My own impression after examining all these other publications to which I refer, is that if they are worth the price charged for them, PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS is surely worth from fifty to a hundred per cent. more than the modest sum at which it is obtainable!

卐

Tribute from Christiania

ODDLY enough, after writing the above, a letter has just been brought to my desk, and it is so appropriate to the occasion that I print it exactly as received.

Dear Sir, -I want to congratulate you most heartily on your new publication, "Wonders of the Past." At first, I didn't want to subscribe to it, but when I had looked through Part 1, I had to. The picture which made me change my mind was the photogravure view of Timgad, with the dramatic effect of the double columns of the Capitol. It was most impressive.

Later I have found other very good pictures, and I have also learnt that there are lots of wonderful places on the earth quite unknown to me—viz., Petra, Boro Budur, and we have only reached Part 4! I am immensely interested in your work, and await with eagerness each subsequent part.

I hope "Wonders of the Past" will stick to its standard -52 pp., including 4 colour plates, and not in any way degenerate, like some other English publications I have been subscribing to (f.i., - -). But I have a general confidence in Harmsworth publications. I am subscribing to PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS, "Children's Encyclopedia" (which is of *immense* educational value), and "My Magazine," whereby I know that works started at Fleetway House may be trusted. I always recommend them to my friends.

Once more, my best congratulations.

Yours sincerely,

The University, Christiania. EGIL MEIDELL HOFF, stud. mr.

卐

Appreciation on the Continent

THE above letter from a university student at Christiania is typical of many that come to hand, and indeed, I could take up most of my space in this place with very similar epistles, but I have been moved to print it because of its value as an honest testimonial to the excellence of the productions of the Amalgamated Press, and also as an indication that our appreciative public is by no means limited to our compatriots. Indeed, a very considerable proportion of our circulation for these educational publications is obtained among Continental readers.

Publishers' Binding Scheme

SPECIAL OFFER TO OUR SUBSCRIBERS

The Publishers of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS are prepared to undertake the actual work of binding the loose parts into volume form for such subscribers as are unable to get this done to their satisfaction locally.

Conditions which must be observed:

Only fortnightly parts in good condition—free from stains, tears, or other defacements—can be accepted for binding.

The seven parts constituting Volume I must be packed securely in a parcel, containing the name and postal address of the sender clearly written, and posted direct to the publishers' binding department, or handed to a newsagent, in which case the subscriber is liable for the cost of carriage.

In a separate envelope the cheque or postal order should be enclosed, together with advice of the parcel and the instructions as to binding. Name and address of sender should again be clearly given. The parcel and letter should be posted separately.

In sending instructions all that need be done is to specify which of the following styles is desired:

(Style No. 1)—To bind the seven parts in the *Red Cloth* binding case with full gilt back, the top edges of the leaves to be "sprinkled." The inclusive charge for this will be 6/- (2 - for the binding case and 4/- for the actual binding and cost of packing and carriage).

(Style No. 2)—To bind the seven parts in the beautiful *Blue Roxburgh* style, with full gilt back, heavy canvas grained end-papers, special cloth joint and burnished top. The inclusive charge for this will be 9 3 (4 6 for the leather binding case and 4/9 for the cost of binding as specified, packing, and return carriage).

(Style No. 2a)—To bind precisely as Style No. 2, but with English gold top to the leaves. The inclusive charge for this is 9 9 (4 6 for the morocco grain binding case and 5/3 for the work of binding, special gold top, packing, and return carriage).

The only instruction which the subscriber need give in forwarding the seven parts will be to specify which of these styles he desires, and to enclose a cheque or postal order for 6/- (Style No. 1), 9/3 (Style No. 2), or 9/9 (Style No. 2a), which cheque or postal order must be placed in the envelope containing the order, and *not* in the parcel containing the parts.

All cheques or postal orders must be made payable to The Amalgamated Press, Limited, and crossed "Bank of England, Law Courts Branch."

Address the package to

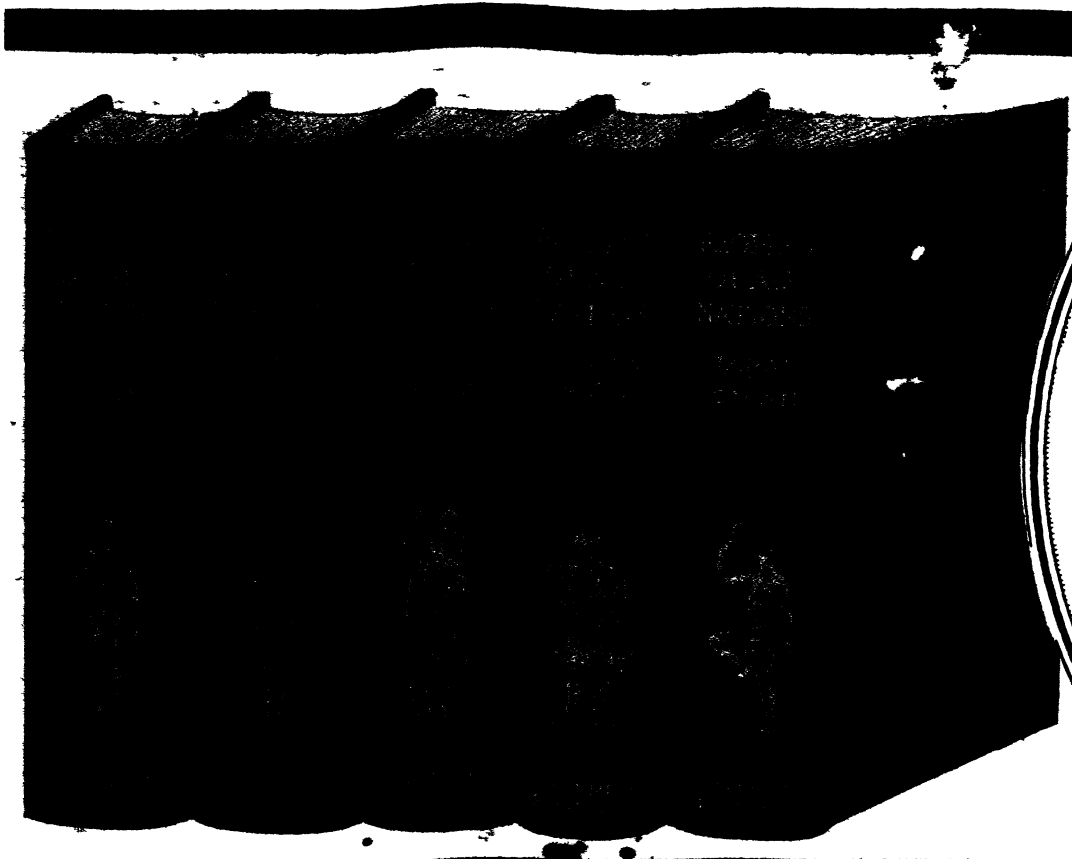
"Peoples of All Nations,"
Binding Department,
7-9, Pilgrim Street,
Ludgate Hill, London, E.C.4.

The bound volumes will be despatched to subscribers in strict rotation according to the order in which the loose parts have been received at the publishers' binding department.

Terms to the Trade will be supplied on application to the above address.

Part 37 PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS will be on sale everywhere Tuesday, July 3

Printed and published every alternate Tuesday by the Proprietors The Amalgamated Press (1922) Ltd The Fleetway House Farringdon St London E C 4 Sole Agents for South Africa The Central News Agency Ltd Sole Agents for Australasia Messrs Gordon & Gotch Ltd for Canada The Imperial News Co Ltd (Canada) Subscription Rates Inland and Abroad, 1s 6d per copy July 17th, 1923



Publishers
Binding Cases

RED CLOTH

(*As Illustrated*)

Price 2/- each

BLUE ROXBURGH

Price 4/6 each

These binding cases may be obtained through any newsagent or bookseller If ordered direct from the publishers 6d extra must be enclosed to cover cost of postage and packing All prices mentioned apply to Great Britain only

SPECIAL BINDING SCHEME

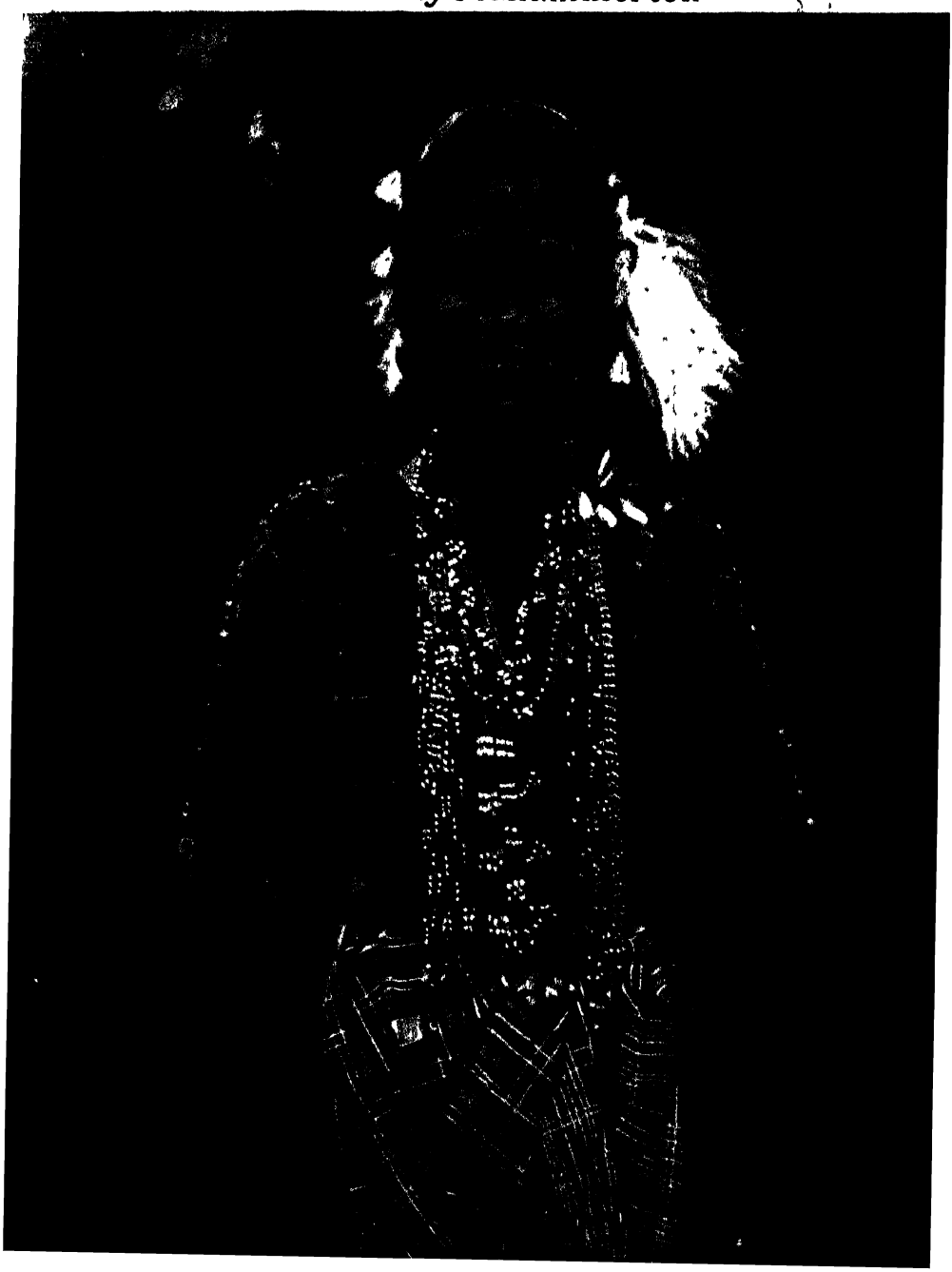
See Page iii of this wrapper for particulars of the Publishers binding scheme which relieves readers of all worry as to the effective binding of their volumes

FIVE Volumes now complete

37

PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS

Edited by J.A.Hammerton



BACK NUMBERS OF 'PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS' CAN STILL BE HAD

Contents of this Part

PERSIA I. Pastoral Life in the Land of the Shah - 35 *Photographs* - Sir Percy Sykes

,, II. Its Past Grandeur and Present Predicament 3 *Photographs* - Sir Percy Sykes

PERU I. Land of the Children of the Sun - - - 34 *Photographs* - G. M. Dyott

,, II. From Inca Empire to Latin Republic - - 1 *Illustration* - C. R. Enock

THE PHILIPPINES: Warlike Tribes in the Pacific - 37 *Photographs* - Arnold Wright

INTAGLIO SECTION: PERUVIAN INDIANS OF SIERRA AND MONTAÑA *(10 Photographs)*

THE PHILIPPINES: A PANORAMA OF TRIBAL LIFE *(8 Photographs)*

COLOUR PLATE: The Philippines: A Smile from Filipina

From the Editor's Desk

THE FLEETWAY HOUSE, FARRINGDON STREET
LONDON EC 4

SIR PERCY SYKES'S descriptive account of life in Persia to-day is completed in the accompanying Part of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS, and is supplemented by his summary of the long history of that country. Covering a period of two and a half millenniums, and blazing with names of men who are world heroes, and of places that were cardinal points in the rise and fall of empires, the annals of Persia must stir the imagination of the dullest and excite desire in the mind of the most indolent to make history a main subject of his reading.

卐

Romance and Mystery of Peru

WHILE the romance of history is gathered round the name of Persia, the romance of adventure glows from that of Peru. Virtually three countries in one, Peru appeals equally to the ethnologist, the archaeologist, the naturalist, the mountaineer, the prospector, and the stark adventurer. For all alike it remains a land of unknown and infinite possibilities, and every scrap of information is welcome, not least because it is so hard to come by.

卐

Peeps Behind the Curtain

THUS a particularly warm welcome is assured for the graphic and informative chapters by Captain G. M. Dyott and Mr. C. R. Enock, contained in the accompanying pages. Both men have travelled far and wide in the country, acquiring an unrivalled first-hand knowledge of its resources and its people that has already borne fruit in authoritative books of remarkable interest. In addition to being an intrepid explorer, Captain Dyott is also an expert photographer, and his chapter here is illustrated by photographs, now published for the first time, of Indian tribes in the Amazon basin of Peru, among whom only a courageous man would venture to wander.

卐

Concerning Our Colour Sections

LETTERS reach me daily expressing the admiration of subscribers for the artistic beauty of the coloured photographs given in Part 34, illustrating the people of the Dutch East Indies in their lovely environment. As will be readily believed, the cost of these colour sections is very heavy, but they give so much pleasure that I intend to publish further similar sections in colour when the beauty of photographs and the natural colour of the originals warrant so expensive a method of reproduction.

卐

Contents of Our Next Part

IN respect of variety, Part 38 will bear comparison with any of its predecessors. The descriptive account of Poland is supplied by Miss Florence Farmborough, who knows the country from north to south and from east to west, and has a warm affection for its people. Poland, indeed, is a passion with this gifted woman, and she is now engaged upon an important book about it, to be published next year. Our historical chapter is written by Lieut.-Colonel F. E. Whitton, C.M.G., author of "A History of Poland." Professor George Young, an authority on Portugal, writes chapters on the Portuguese at Home and on the Portuguese Colonies, and the historical sketch of Portugal is supplied by Mr. Francis Gribble, whose many books, historical and biographical, prove him a master in the art of stirring dry bones into life.

The entire contents of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS are protected by copyright in all countries signatory to the Berne Convention. The literary and most of the pictorial contents are copyrighted in the United States of America

in the country are from Julfa, on the Russian frontier, to Tabriz; from Astara on the Caspian to Ardebil; and, as already mentioned, from Enzeli to Kazvin, Hamadan, and the frontier which marches with Irak. There is also a metalled road from Teheran to Kum, which, in 1921, was being extended to Kashan when the Persian Government suddenly withdrew the concession. During the Great War the British opened up many tracks to wheeled transport or improved them for pack animals.

From the British frontier to the south of Seistan, a route four hundred miles in length was opened up to Meshed. Again, I opened up quite one thousand miles in Southern Persia, while a remarkably good track was constructed between Bushire and Shiraz, a country that has been described as a nightmare. Generally speaking, the Persian plateau is open and easy for road construction, but the ascent to it is extremely difficult.

We now come to the important question of railways. I hold strongly that there is but slight hope of Persia marching along the route of progress until her chief centres are united by railways to the outside world. Then, and not until then, will her people devote themselves to developing their country instead of ruining it by raiding and by oppression, as at present. Yet I maintain strongly that, without a subsidy, it will not pay to construct railways in Persia. The country is three times as large as France, and the population is less than ten millions. The only railway actually constructed on Persian soil is that from Julfa to Tabriz, a length of some eighty miles. Owing to the scanty rainfall and the lack of rivers, there is no possibility of important developments in the direction of agriculture.

No minerals that it would pay to work have been found. Indeed, with the exception of the rich oilfields, that can be worked by means of pipes, Persia is singularly poor in minerals. She has no manufactures excepting carpets, so that her exports are confined to grain,

IN THE MARKET PLACE OF KAZVIN

Grapes are grown in profusion throughout Persia, and famous wines are produced, the praises of which have been sung by many an Iranian bard. From the refuse of the grapes arrack, the favourite spirit of the country, is distilled

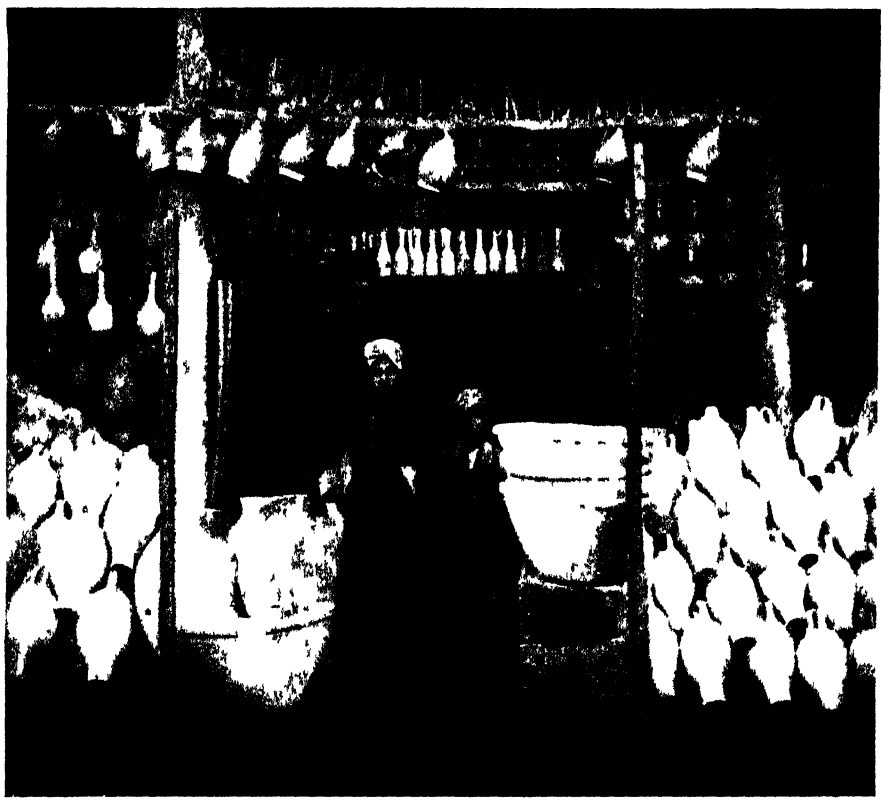
Photo, R. Gorbold

Copyrighted, 1922, by The Amalgamated Press (1922), Limited

cotton wool hides opium, dried fruits and nuts Her imports are considerable and exceed her exports in value but with the revival of her trade with Russia which may surely be anticipated her position will be better

The population is divided into the sedentary inhabitants of the towns and villages and the nomadic tribesmen, the latter constituting one quarter of the whole The backbone of Persia is the patient, agricultural class, which wrings a living from grudging Nature Owing to the scarcity of population, land-owners generally treat their tenants fairly They supply the land, the water, and the seed, they also pay the taxes In return they receive one half of the grain harvest The peasant, in addition to his land for wheat, barley, and cotton, frequently owns a small orchard He also finds grazing for a few sheep and goats on whose milk he depends for cheese clarified butter and curds The desert area also provides fuel mushrooms, and rhubarb

The peasant is well clad and so is his wife His huts built of mud cost very little, and are better than those of the Punjab villagers, who are the richest in India His food is wheaten bread, with plenty of cheese and sour milk He also eats large quantities of fruit and vegetables in the summer, and meat once a week in the winter When a peasant proprietor, he makes money if grain is dear On the other hand, he is less able to defend himself from the tax-collector, although that functionary is usually ready to accept a bribe



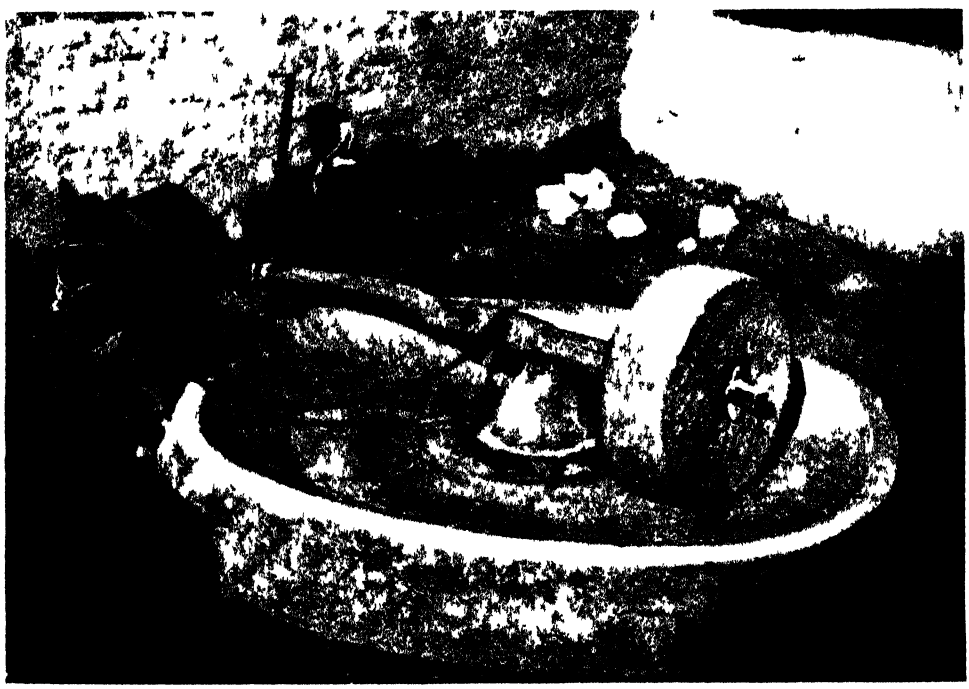
POTTER'S STALL AT MESHED, A HOLY CITY OF PERSIA

The celebrity of Meshed as a sacred city is due to the tomb of the Imam Reza, Persia's patron saint It is a well known seat of commerce as well as of devotion, being the junction of many caravan routes for Turkistan and Afghanistan Most of the bowls and pitchers stacked on this potter's stall have been subtly wrought into shape from the muddy soil of the public highway

Photo M Sevaguine

HUSBANDING THE GOLDEN GRAIN OF THE PERSIAN HARVEST

Barley, the chief crop of the country, is used both as fodder for animals and food for the peasantry, wheaten bread being usually eaten only by the more prosperous of the community. Thanks to skilful irrigation many fine crops are produced on the most unpromising soil for the land well repays cultivation and if irrigated the dreariest waste can be made to blossom with rose and poppy



GRINDING THE GRAIN IN A PRIMITIVE PERSIAN MILL

A kind of feudal system flourishes in many Persian country districts, the owner of the ground finding the seed and implements, while the peasant provides the labour and is given half the produce in payment. This scene is a common one in the villages where the peasants grind the grain into powder on circular millstones, animal labour bringing the massive stone wheel into action

Photos R. Gorbold

Altogether, were it not for the insecurity due to raids by the tribesmen and locusts, the peasant, who is a fine, sturdy fellow, would be well off, because of the grazing and other advantages. Actually, the agricultural population is decreasing.

The townspeople live in such insanitary conditions that they have to

SHROUDED IRANIAN WOMANHOOD
They glide about like spectres rather than human beings, imparting an impression of mystery and subtle elusiveness to the unvarying commonplace of Persian street life
Photo, Sir P. Sykes

be constantly replenished from the countryside; but the system of cesspools and of leaving dead animals and refuse to be eaten by dogs and jackals is not as bad as it would be in a wet climate. On the other hand, the absence of medical aid results in the loss of nearly all the young children from smallpox and other epidemics, although, of late years, something has been done by the Church Missionary Society and American missionaries to meet this deplorable state of affairs. Even so, the physique and health of the townspeople are at a very low ebb. When I recruited for the South Persia Rifles at Kerman and Shiraz it was found that syphilis and eye complaints were almost universal in those towns. So serious was the situation that we refused to accept recruits who offered themselves, unless they produced evidence that they were villagers

Persia being a Moslem country, alcoholic drinks are forbidden, and only the upper classes drink; but, sad to say, of late years opium smoking has increased to a terrible extent This vice renders the smoker unreliable and careless of everything except his beloved pipe. The actual smell is almost as bad as the smoking. So much is this the case that if one member of a family smokes, in time his example will be followed by the others. Even horses, that become accustomed to their groom smoking in the stable, will lose condition for a while if a non-smoker takes his place. The children of opium-smokers are usually weak and puny.

The merchants constitute the most intelligent section of the population. They suffer terribly from the lack of security, as not only are their goods stolen by the tribesmen, but they invest their earnings in land, and, consequently, a raid may ruin them, for, if their peasants are stripped bare of stock and grain, the owner has to make good their losses to some extent, for otherwise they will desert the village and offer their services elsewhere.

Below the merchants are the shopkeepers, who sit in the bazaars in tiny shops which are stocked with very small quantities of goods. In the markets, too, the stocks appear to be very small, so that one is forced to the conclusion that profits must rule high. One curious and annoying fact is that if a large quantity of any commodity be called for, the price immediately rises,

WELL-TO-DO LADY OF IRAN TAKING AN AFTERNOON SIESTA —
The yoke of Mahomedanism weighs heavily on the women of Persia. Their fettered existence, lacking all outside interest and in which they depend upon themselves for amusement is far from happy. Their indoor costume consists of short baggy garments somewhat resembling a ballet girl's dress, when taking an outing they are usually accompanied by an escort, and always shrouded from head to foot
Photo M. Sevaguine

PERSIAN WOMEN IN THE PRIVACY OF RESTRICTED SURROUNDINGS —
Feminine life in Persia is passed in the seclusion of the anderoon, the compartments where the master of the house keeps his womenfolk, best carpets, and choicest treasures. No man, save the husband and nearest relatives, may penetrate into these private quarters, and here the victims of Islamic law spend time in sipping sherbets or syrupy tea, smoking kalians and chattering without ceasing

HEAVILY-LADEN PACK-ANIMALS BRINGING BRUSHWOOD FOR USE AS FUEL INTO THE MARKET OF KAZVIN

Kazvin, situated on the road between Teheran and Tabriz, has a few imposing structures which are, however, chiefly in a state of decay, and give a somewhat [illegible] from its walls is Alamut, the ancient stronghold of the fanatical chief Hassan, known to the Crusaders by the [illegible] farming bricks, manure and

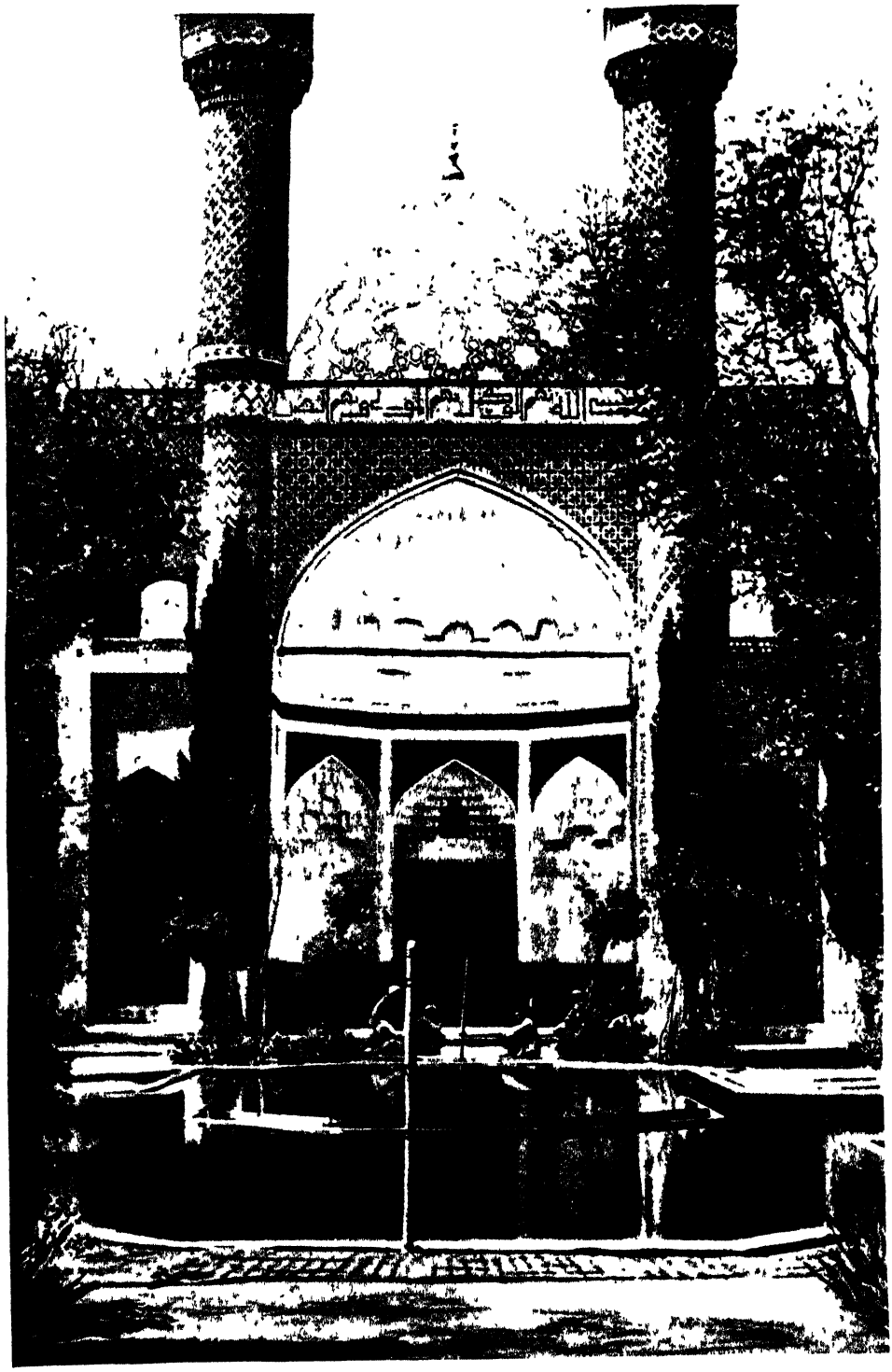
PRACTICAL GARB AND FOOTGEAR
The long cloak serves as a protection from the sun, and in his cotton "givas," not unlike modern bathing shoes, he traverses the hot Persian plains in comparative comfort
Photo R Gorbold

as one merchant or shopkeeper is unable to supply it. The Persian of the merchant, shopkeeper, and peasant class generally possesses good surface manners, combined with a great deal of cunning. There is little fanaticism evident, but the old women are said to be strongly anti-European.

We now come to the ruling classes, which may be divided into the religious and the landowning groups. The leading doctors of law possess great wealth and influence, all cases dealing with property being brought before them, as well as cases of divorce and so forth. Practically speaking, only criminal cases are judged by the governors, who generally gain the consent of the leading religious authority before ordering a death sentence to be inflicted. To put this matter in another way, the religious authorities administer the "shar" or religious law and the governors the "urf," or common law. Justice is venal, and little effort is made to arrive at the truth or to administer a province in the interests of the people.

One governor informed me that, when a young man, he executed robbers with such energy that law and order were restored to the province Upon his return to Teheran he detailed all his acts to the head of his family, expecting to win his approbation. But the old prince, his uncle, said: "You

FIRE WORSHIPPER OF YEZD
Despite the endless persecution of Zoroastrian by Mussulman, the Parsis, followers of the old national faith of Persia, have through industry and intelligence become a wealthy community
Photo, Sir P. Sykes



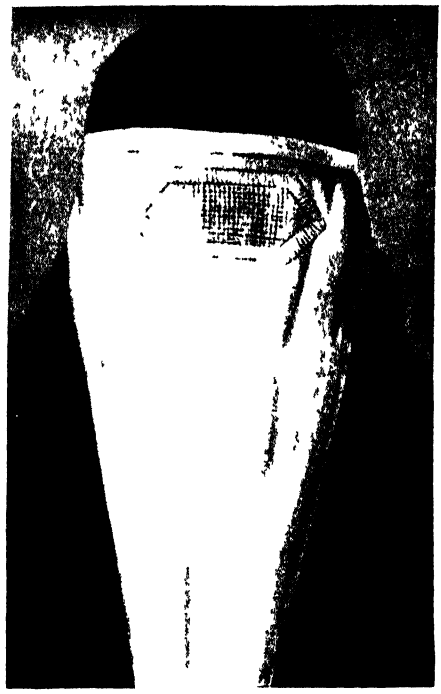
INTERIOR COURT OF A SACRED RETREAT IN MAHUN

The little village of Mahun lies near the beautiful Jupar range. Its gardens, with their fountains, and cascades, numerous rose-bushes where bulbuls—the Persian nightingales—ardently trill the live-long day, stately dark-foliaged cypresses, orchards, and exquisite blossoming trees, are considered some of the loveliest in the country, and are in striking contrast to the desert-land outside

Photo, Sir P. Sykes

MODEST ENTRANCE TO THE HOUSE OF A SHIRAZ MAGNATE

Shiraz, the capital of the province of Fars, is dear to every Persian heart, having produced two of the greatest poets of Iran, Hafiz and Sadi, whose tombs in the flowering outskirts are held in the highest veneration. The beautiful city, half concealed amid its gardens, has been described as "the home of Persian culture, the mother of Persian genius, the sanctuary of poetry and philosophy"



BEAUTY IN COMPLETE DISGUISE

Only when mantled from head to foot in the black chadar and white rou band, with a strip of lacework across the eyes, does this Persian lady venture to step abroad

have governed on entirely wrong principles, for you should indeed have shown energy in capturing all robbers, but when you were dismissed from the province you should have taken money from them and released them; otherwise, if the country remains in order after your departure, a grocer's son can govern that province, to the detriment of our class." My friend, needless to say, followed this advice in the next post to which he was appointed, or which, to be more exact, he bought. It is corruption in all classes that has brought Persia so low. If a man enters any Government office and says that he will not receive bribes, his fellow-officials band together to induce him to share with them in their pickings, and should he refuse, he is forced to resign, by fair means or foul.

The nomad tribes constitute a problem that Persia is unable to solve. Splendidly virile, but addicted to raiding from time immemorial, it requires a strong, sympathetic government to handle them. Their life is exactly that of the period of the Patriarch Abraham. They live in tents woven from goats'-hair, and move about with their flocks and herds in search of pasture. Owing to the uplands and lowlands being situated in close juxtaposition, the nomads of Fars, for example, with whom I am best acquainted, spend the winter months in the warm strip close to the Persian Gulf. They sow crops which they reap in the spring, and then move slowly northwards to the cool uplands, where they again reap crops sown in the autumn.

The route to be followed by each section of the tribe is that used for generations past, and it is an interesting sight to watch the migration. The fighting men scout far afield or seek to plunder the villages near the line of march, and so only the old men, the women, and the children are left with the flocks, on which they depend for their living.

I was deeply impressed with the numbers of sheep, goats, cattle, camels, and donkeys. The newly-born lambs or camels are all carried on pack animals, and so accustomed are their mothers to the arrangement that they make no objection. Indeed, animals are more intelligent in the East than in the West, for they live with their master and his family, instead of being shut away in fields or stables. My remarks do not apply to the dog, who is better trained in the West.

To give, as an example, the most powerful tribe in Southern Persia, the Kashgais are of Turkish origin, and settled in Fars in the fourteenth century. They are perhaps 150,000 strong, although they suffered terribly in the influenza epidemic of 1918. They are ruled by an "Ilkhani," under whom are "kalantars" of sections. They speak Turkish, but generally understand Persian. They never intermarry with the sedentary population, and thus

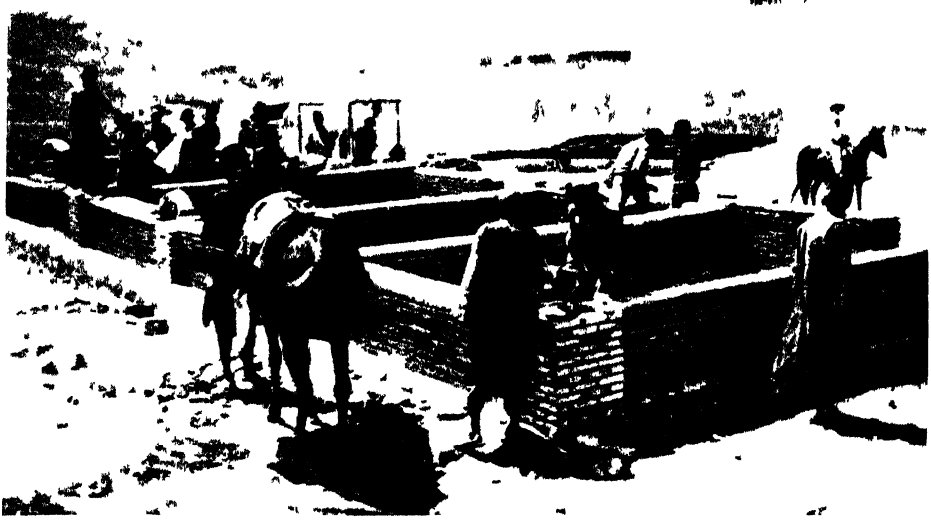
remain a distinct race. The Ilkhani collects the revenue due to the Persian Government, but keeps it himself unless the Government is strong. Of recent years not only has the Ilkhani kept all the revenue, but he has sent out parties to rob the villages, whose owners he blackmails, and also to raid the trade routes. So weak was the Government that if the governor-general of Fars made any objection to his actions he was able to block all the routes by which supplies were brought into Shiraz.

This caused scarcity, followed by riots. The people complained to Teheran, and the governor-general was dismissed, the Persian Government never facing the actual facts of the case. Far from so doing, the ministers accepted large presents from the Ilkhani, who was in a position to be generous to his supporters. Persians say well, "to be kind to the wolf is to be cruel to the lamb." The nomads are wolves and the peasants their prey.

It is impossible to gain an insight into Persian character without understanding

TRIO OF WEDDED WIVES OF A PERSIAN NOBLEMAN

The family tie can easily be destroyed in Persia, and a wife divorced at her husband's caprice. Although becoming rare, polygamy is still practised among those able to afford it. According to the Mahomedan law a man may have four permanent wives; no limit being placed on the number of divorces and re-marriages, provided he finds himself at no time with more than four



COUNTRY MUD-HOUSES OF THE PERSIAN IN THE MAKING

The little mud villages scattered about the bleak plains or the bases of long jagged mountain ranges are all one neutral tint of brown—wendly shaped excrescences of the same soft toned material as that on which they stand. Unless almost new the buildings are invariably in a tumble down condition, but fifty years is the short time often that a Persian requires his house to stand

PERSIAN BRICK-CUTTER AT WORK FACING UP SUN-DRIED BRICKS

Mud bricks invariably have an admixture of chopped kah or straw, added as a binding material During their bondage in Egypt the Israelites were chiefly employed in brick making, and their request for straw to make their bricks proves that they were conversant with the method, and found straw a necessary addition to the insufficiently cohesive mud drawn from the banks of the River Nile

Photos, G B Hopkins

their religion. The state religion of Persia for many centuries was that preached by Zoroaster, who lived more than 2,500 years ago He taught that Ahura Mazda was the one supreme God, that there was a constant struggle between Good and Evil, and that, in the end, Good would triumph. This fine old religion, which inculcated "good thoughts, good words, good deeds," is still believed by 10,000 Persians who reside at Yezd and Kerman, and by 100,000 Persians in India, who are termed Parsis

The rise of Islam in the seventh century changed the old world Persia first felt the influence of the fanatical Arabs, who overthrew her great empire within a very few years Subjugated, the nation gradually adopted the new religion, but its heart was with the old royal line of the Sassanians. At last all was well, for Hussein, son of Ali, the son-in-law of the Prophet, is believed to have married Shahrbanu, the daughter of the last Sassanian monarch.

The Persians thereupon adopted Ali as their divine and spiritual leader, and claimed for his descendants, the twelve Imams, the same divine right that had belonged to the Sassanian dynasty. In other words, they considered that the descendants of Hussein inherited the "Divine Splendour" of the Sassanians In pursuance of this train of thought, the Persians became Shia, or "Separatists," as opposed to the Sunni, or "Traditionists." The latter, who are in a large majority, which includes the Moslems of India and Turkey, acknowledged all the caliphs, including Ali, whereas the former considered the first three caliphs to be usurpers, and held that Ali, whom they placed above the Prophet, was the first legitimate caliph and successor to Mahomet.

The tragic fate of Hussein did perhaps more than anything else to establish the new sect. He was invited by the inhabitants of the powerful city of Kufa to assert his rights to the Caliphate, and set out from Mecca with his wife and family and a very small body of adherents. The fickle Kufans deserted him basely, and he was attacked by overwhelming forces and slain in battle.

The victor showed great brutality to the dead, and the tragedy of Kerbela became the subject of Passion plays which annually excite the nation to a white heat of religious fervour. I have

BRICKLAYER PLYING HIS TRADE
The Persians are remarkably clever in the manipulation of mud, and not only their houses but many vessels are fashioned from the soft soil taken from their thoroughfares
Photo, Sir P. Sykes

been present at these plays, and have felt moved by the depth of the tragedy that is shown and also by the genuine emotion that is displayed. So long as these plays are acted Persia will remain apart from, and hostile to, her Sunni neighbours.

Since her foundation as a great empire Persia has been governed through

PERSIAN LABOURERS ENGAGED IN MIXING THE CLAY FOR MAKING SUN DRIED BRICKS

All the civilized nations of antiquity were skilful in brick making, and over 6 000 years ago the Babylonians built their dwellings of burnt bricks. To this day adobes, or sun dried bricks, of which the Great Wall of China was partly constructed are used extensively by many Eastern races. In Persia they prevail in the construction of both town and village habitations. The clay is collected indiscriminately from all sides large holes are often left at the roads, and even in the big towns no compunction is shown in digging up the public highway to obtain mud to make these sun dried bricks

Photo G B Hopkins

MOULDING THE PLASTIC MUD INTO BRICKS AND SPREADING THEM IN THE SUN TO DRY

The process of making the sun dried bricks is easy in the extreme A pit or hole is prepared in which mud chopped straw and water are deposited in suitable quantities, the whole being then thoroughly mixed until of the proper consistence when it is removed moulded into briels and left to bake in the hot rays of the sun The mud dwellings of Persia are by no means of an enduring order wet weather plays havoc with them, and the best built town house would remain standing little more than a fortnight if exposed to a less dry climate

Photo G B Hopkins

SULPHUR BURNING PEASANTS PREPARING A PRIMITIVE KILN

Though Persia is not without certain mineral wealth very little is done to tap the resources of the country, a fact chiefly due to the lack of communications Some of the natives however have their own methods of exploitation and two are here seen building a kiln for the purpose of burning the sulphurous minerals which are available in most of the volcanic districts

DISMANTLING A KILN AFTER THE SULPHUR HAS BEEN FIRED

When the kiln is opened, the twigs are found thickly coated with sulphur, most of the impurities having been dissipated by simple vaporisation The coating of sulphur adhering to the twigs can be easily chipped off and collected for use The sulphur is principally used in the manufacture of crude gunpowder, a necessity for the maintenance of life and property in most parts of Persia

Photos G B Hopkins

WATCHING A KILN DURING THE PROCESS OF BURNING THE SULPHUR

Above the sulphur ore, deposited in a hole in the ground, twigs are piled which are covered over with mud plastered on top The ore containing the sulphur is then slowly burnt with very little air, and the sulphur vapour gradually condenses on the twigs, thus producing pure sulphur, separated from the other minerals and impurities of which the ore is composed

Photo, G. B. Hopkins

MARKETERS CROSSING A CORNER OF THE GREAT WATERLESS LUT

Astride their pack animals, and exposed to the mercyless rays of the desert sun, they are making their way over a part of the great treeless, arid region known as the Lut, which occupies the centre of Persia This desert, said to have been in times long ago an inland sea, cuts the country completely in half, and hinders free communication and commerce to a considerable extent

Photo, Sir P Sykes

governors appointed by the Shah. These officials were obedient to Cyrus the Great, or to any powerful monarch, but enjoyed virtual independence if the Shah was weak. I have referred to the Lut, which, for all practical purposes, broke up Persia into a congeries of provinces. It was a very far cry from the capital, say, to Seistan, and still farther to Baluchistan And so the empire hung together in a very loose fashion The position, however, changed for the better when the British constructed the Indo-European telegraph line across Persia from the frontier near Tabriz to Teheran, and thence southwards to Kum, Kashan, Ispahan, Shiraz, and Bushire. From that port a cable ran down the Gulf to Jask, whence there was communication with Karachi both by a land line and by cable. Early in the twentieth century a second line was constructed from Kashan through Yezd and Kerman to Bam. Thence it

FRANKNESS AND FREEDOM AMONG SEMI-CIVILIZED LARISTAN NOMADS
Health and vigour envelop the women of these untamed tribes, who boldly face the world, the picture of jaunty independence. Their refined and carefully-guarded sisters despise them for thus openly showing their features, but these wanderers know nothing of the discontent so prevalent among the Persian women cloistered in silken seclusion, and to them freedom is the keynote of their existence

Photo, A. Brett

ONE OF THE LAWS OF THE MEDES AND PERSIANS THAT ALTERETH NOT

No matter how charming a figure a Persian woman may possess, she looks but a shapeless bundle when shrouded in her outdoor costume The Persians say that the veiling order in Islam came about because a passing Arab, admiring the beauty of Ayesha, Mahomet's favourite wife, offered a camel in exchange for her, the irate husband thereupon established this decree

Photo, M S[illegible]

crossed the Lut to the British frontier of Baluchistan and ran across that desert province to Karachi.

Other lines were also constructed for the Persian Government. There is no doubt that these telegraph lines were of great benefit to Persia They were popularly believed to end at the foot of the throne, and in consequence Persians who were oppressed by their governors took sanctuary in the offices and petitioned Teheran until their wrongs were redressed Apart from this the British officials of the telegraph department rendered most valuable services both in giving Persians news of the outer world and in reporting through their directors to the Persian Government the actual truth about events They were often the means of stopping much bloodshed, and were trusted by all classes Finally, the Government could convey its orders rapidly

There is a Persian proverb that a fish decays from its head This applies to Persia. The Government is generally composed of men who wish to amass huge fortunes as quickly as possible, Teheran being full of the palaces of such officials. One of the most wealthy was said to weep bitterly at night and to lament a wasted day if he had not

made one thousand pounds. When a governor is appointed to a province he is bound to pay large sums to the Shah and to the ministers, also to his friends who have acted as intermediaries in the negotiations. He then proceeds to his province, accompanied by relations and dependents, none of whom is paid, but all of whom have to be provided with posts.

Upon his arrival, gifts—which consist of money, horses, carpets, and so forth - are received, especially from the sub-governors or from those who wish for posts. Notice is then given that every one is dismissed from his post, and much bargaining takes place, as almost every official, however petty, is affected Needless to say, the wretched subjects suffer in any case, for they either receive back a governor who has had to pay heavily for the post, or else a new and very hungry ruler. Persians prefer to have as governor a local grandee, as he has to live in the province and is, therefore, to some extent, reasonable, whereas a Teheran notable makes all the hay he can in a short time. One detestable custom is to sell a post and then, in two or three months' time, to dismiss the occupant and resell it to someone else. This is, of course, very profitable to the governor.

The revenue is fixed on lists drawn up a century ago, and takes no notice of changes in population. For example, a village may have dwindled in size owing to one of its watercourses having run dry, but no allowance is made for this. Or, again, a new village may have been founded, and so long as a bribe is given in the right quarter, this village is never asked to pay revenue. When the revenue is paid in the governor makes out large bills for expenses, such as imaginary expeditions against robbers

WEAVERS AT A HAND-LOOM IN A PERSIAN CARPET FACTORY

In the carpet factories the pattern is dictated by an overseer who carefully studies the design he holds, while the workers deftly twist and knot the strands of coloured worsted according to his directions. Among the weavers is a large percentage of children, many of whom are crippled and diseased from the cramped positions and the damp, unhealthy atmosphere in which they work

Photo, M. Sevragusne

PEACEFUL SCENE OF PASTORAL LIFE AMONG THE HILLS OF NORTH-WEST PERSIA OVERLOOKING HAMADAN

For the most part the region is sterile and barren of vegetation, save for some small patches of green fertility lying about the stony flanks of the mountains. Driving their animals from one meagre pasturage to another, the herdsmen pass long days in these vast solitudes, where their cattle, and perhaps a vulture slowly wheeling in the sky, are the only living creatures to be seen. Behind this rocky range lies Hamadan, a town famous for its strong white wine, and as occupying the site of past glories, to which the tombs of Esther and Mordecai—a place of pilgrimage for countless Jews—bear silent witness

Photo Major W. J. P. Rodd

TWO OF A BAND OF ITINERANT MUSICIANS

Though distinctly of a barbaric nature there is something strangely haunting about Persian music Wild and tuneless as it may appear to the European heard from a distance, it conjures up some of the mystery and glamour of the Orient The large tambourine like instrument is tapped on incessantly during a performance, while the curious pipe emits fearfully discordant sounds

Photo Sir P Sykes

and so forth, with the result that very little money reaches Teheran

There is also the Government estate The governor profits by declaring that the crops were much less than in fact they were, and he states that he has sold the grain at a much lower price than that prevailing at the time One governor used to say frankly that as the ministers embezzled most of the money that reached Teheran, he was determined to take all he could Other sources of profit are found in selling justice, in making false charges against innocent people, and in releasing criminals upon payment

LUCKLESS LAZINESS IN A PERSIAN SEMINARY PAYS THE PENALTY BY UNDERGOING THE BASTINADO MODE OF PUNISHMENT

The bastinado the rudimentary instrument f Ier m ju tice i appl d t the highe t as wel a th l we t m the and Sh uld he le unlucky en u h to fi nd the Shah a nobleman may be liable to this castigati n a refract ry ervant will have it mete l itt him by hi ma ter a lazy pipil by an irate tea l er I e culprit is thrown on his back and his feet held high in the ur ly means f l cps fa tene d t a p l are beaten with supple wand —a puni hment to which the hard soles of the ordinary ffender are s mure l that he pr fer t at tic rather than pay a t

The old Persian army possesses no military value. Its material is frequently good, being drawn from the country districts, but its officers are hopelessly corrupt. The men are merely given rations of bread. Large numbers are posted as permanent guards at the houses of officials and of their own officers, where they receive small allowances or perquisites. During the revolution in 1906, and again in 1909, their influence was nil. When these men have been away from their homes for some time they collect a sum of money to secure the regiment being temporarily disbanded.

Some years ago the colonel of a regiment approached the commander-in-chief with an offer of one thousand tomans (nominally about £200) to purchase this concession. That high official was very ill - indeed, he was dying and his attendants waved the colonel back. The commander-in-chief, however, signalled for the officer to approach—he was too far gone to speak - and when the offer of one thousand tomans was made he shook two skinny fingers at him to signify that the offer must be doubled, and while shaking his fingers he died!

Persia's Foreign Legions

The only force of any military value is the Cossack brigade, which was raised by the Russians a generation ago. It behaved badly in the presence of the Bolshevists in 1920, and took refuge in the lines of a British brigade that was then stationed in North Persia. The Russian officers resigned, and not long after the Cossacks marched on Teheran and seized the reins of power. The South Persia Rifles, which I raised during the war, was maintained until the summer of 1921 at the expense of the British Government. It rendered admirable service to the Persian Government, maintaining good order in South Persia, and even capturing two powerful robber bands in the Ispahan province. The Persian Government at first agreed to take over the force with some British officers, but finally other counsels prevailed, and the entire force was disbanded in the autumn of 1921. There was a third force—to wit, the gendarmerie, raised by Swedish officers. This body possessed some military value, and it is now being absorbed into the Cossack division, although not without trouble, the detachment at Tabriz having mutinied and attacked the Cossacks.

Unintelligent Education

Persia has frontiers of great length to guard. She has also a very turbulent population to control. The upper class has lost its manhood and will not face death in the field, so that a Persian force organized by corrupt officers who would never lead their men in action can neither protect the frontiers nor secure internal tranquillity.

Education in Persia is defective from almost every point of view. When a boy reaches the age of six he is usually placed in the hands of a male teacher, and separated to a considerable extent from his mother. This is perhaps as well, for a male child is usually spoiled by her, whereas little notice is taken of girls. The old-fashioned teaching which is still in vogue, except where European influence makes itself felt, is to teach the letters. After that, the first chapter of the Koran is learned by heart in Arabic, together with the Persian equivalents for each phrase. The unfortunate pupil is too young to understand what he is being taught, with the result that he learns like a parrot.

A Lesson in Translation

Nor are the teachers in the least efficient. When I studied Arabic my professor insisted on my translating the word " mann " as quails, whereas I told him that it was the English word " manna." A reference to the dictionary proved that I was right, with the result that my old teacher lamented with tears that for forty years he had made this mistake, and would, even now, have great difficulty in checking himself!

In addition to the Koran, simple sums of addition are taught and a few facts about the world, which are generally inaccurate. For example, Persians always teach that London is the name of the country inhabited by the British, and frequently state that " Atlantic " is applied to a great city in Europe. Persia owes much to the various missionary societies who have founded schools at the chief centres. Even more good has been accomplished by medical missions, for Persians admire their cleanliness, their order, and, above all, the unwearying effort made to cure them. They undergo these influences at a time when they are susceptible to them, and if, as her friends hope, Persia shakes off the shackles of corruption, vice, and sloth, the missionaries will deserve the chief credit.

In a sense, every European who lives in Persia is a power for good or for evil, and one possession of the British is a reputation for truth, which is of great value. The Great War has undoubtedly raised British prestige and also that of Indian troops. Persians despised the " thin-legged " Indians, but since they defeated the Kashgais in 1918, although

WANDERING WOMEN OF THE WILD KURDISH TRIBES

Though classed as Iranians, the Kurds are somewhat of a puzzle to ethnologists. Among the hills they enjoy a quasi-independence, and are greatly feared by the inhabitants of the plains, who are frequently subjected to their harassing incursions. As pack and draught animals their mules are invaluable, and these wiry beasts appear to flourish on the coarse herbage of the Persian uplands

assailed by vastly superior numbers, Persians readily acknowledge their valour

When a boy reaches the age of sixteen it is considered high time for him to marry It may be said at once that there are very few bachelors or spinsters in Persia, and that is certainly as it should be Polygamy, of course, provides for any superfluous women, while youths are married before they are old enough to have much of a say in the matter. Unfortunately, the custom prevails of marrying cousins in order to prevent property going out of the family, and also because a relation will naturally be happier than a stranger in the house of her mother-in-law. The results are very bad from a physical point of view, as has been proved in many parts of the world.

Persians are loath to give up their old customs, and it is still usual for brothers to arrange intermarriage on the largest possible scale, cases being common of large families intermarrying entirely with their cousins. The marriage ceremonies are very interesting, and include the bestowal of many gifts. The bridegroom sends a tray with one hundred different varieties of drugs and herbs. He also sends a mirror and white sheeting to cover the bride during the ceremony. A pair of candlesticks and a number of pairs of shoes are also usually included. These gifts are, of course, given in addition to gifts of jewelry. The actual ceremony consists in the representative of the bridegroom, who is generally a doctor of law, proceeding to the outside of the room in which the bride and her female relations and friends are assembled. He remains behind the curtain and asks the bride if she accepts the bridegroom. At first there is no reply, the bride being naturally shy. But finally she gives her consent. To make sure, a lady of

WELL VERSED IN MOUNTAIN BRIGANDAGE

As rugged and untamed in character as the hilly regions of north-western Persia where they dwell, the Kurds, by their fierce aspect and war-like propensities, have established for themselves a reputation of which depredation and violence are conspicuous features

Photo, R. Gorbold

AT HOME WITH THE LAWLESS INHABITANTS OF A LUR VILLAGE IN LURISTAN

Among the three million nomads that roam the ideal and mountainous surface of Persia are some 240,000 Lurs, a primitive wild people—real children of Nature—who chiefly inhabit the rugged region of Luristan. Rude and savage in most of their ways, they are especially notorious as robbers and would show little compunction in murdering their victims should these make an attempt to fight for their possessions. They enjoy life in their rough and tumble ways, are contented with the poorest of shelters for their dwellings, and with such food and clothing as they can obtain by fair means or foul.

Photo A. Brett

position who is known to be present is requested to confirm the fact that it is the bride who has replied, and when this is done the agent of the bridegroom returns to the assembly of the men, and the contract, which constitutes the legal ceremony, is completed. Much feasting then follows in the separate rooms.

At a late hour of the night the bridegroom's party starts off to meet that of the bride, both parties being accompanied by musicians, while fireworks are let off. The bride, who generally rides, takes some bread and salt in her hand with which to start her new home. She is welcomed at the house of the bridegroom, who, for the first time, sees his wife when he removes her veil, unless he is a relation, in which case he will have known her as a child. Both sit down to partake of the food brought by the bride, each feeding the other, and the bride refuses to speak until she receives a further gift of jewelry.

At last the ceremonies end, and the young couple receive the compliments of the parents and female relations and friends, and, in Persian stories, the nightingale in the rose-bushes bursts out into an ecstasy of song.

INFIDEL OF PERSIA

The dress restrictions imposed upon the remnant of Zoroastrians have not deprived the women of a singularly effective costume

IN A TURCOMAN CAMP OF NORTH KHORASSAN

An independent, brave people, with an innate aversion to restraint, the Turcomans, among whom a strong bond of brotherhood prevails, prefer to spend their days in freedom away from the regulated routine and harsh methods of large Persian cities

Photos, Sir P Sykes

GATEWAY OF THE RUINED PALACE OF SHAH ABBAS, A REMNANT OF THE BYGONE SPLENDOURS OF A GOLDEN AGE

Ispahan, the old capital of Persia, is full of the traditions of that great warrior and administrator Shah Abbas, the contemporary of the English Queen Elizabeth. So lasting an impression did he make on his country that nearly every structure of note is ascribed to his enterprise, and it has been said that "When this prince ceased to live, Persia ceased to prosper." From the porch-pavilion in the background, overlooking the Maidan, or Royal Square, Shah Abbas and his court were wont to watch royal tournaments when the Persian nobility engaged in a national game, now popular on British soil as polo.

Photo, Harold F. Weston

Persia

II. Its Past Grandeur and Present Predicament

By Sir Percy Sykes, K.C.I.E.

Author of "History of Persia, etc.

THE beginnings of Persian history are wrapped in legend, but we reach firm ground with Cyrus the Great, who was the founder of the Persian empire. He belonged to the Achaemenian family which ruled in the provinces of Fars and Arabistan, and in 550 B.C. he conquered the neighbouring tribe of the Medes. He then started out on an amazing career of conquest.

First of all he marched westwards to the limits of the kingdom of the Medes in Asia Minor. There he met the famous Croesus of Lydia, whom he overthrew, capturing Sardis. This conquest brought Persia into direct contact with the Greeks of Asia Minor, whom he subdued without much trouble. He then marched eastwards for perhaps two thousand miles and annexed vast provinces in Central Asia up to the borders of India. Finally, he reached the zenith of his fame by the capture of great Babylon.

Cyrus was the first great Aryan who is known to us in the pages of Isaiah and of Herodotus. The Jewish prophets praised the Persians, and we read, "Thus saith the Lord to His anointed, to Cyrus whose right hand I have holden." Indeed he was a splendid figure, merciful and just, with a sane outlook that was unknown among the rulers of Babylon or Assyria.

The next great ruler of this mighty Achaemenian dynasty was Darius. He ruled Asia from the Punjab to the desert beyond Egypt and organized his empire with great skill. His successors were men of little ability. Xerxes, his son, was defeated by the Greeks at Salamis, one of the decisive battles of the world, and then withdrew into the heart of his empire, to Susa, the Shushan of the Book of Esther, in which we read of Xerxes under the name of Ahasuerus.

For many generations after the repulse from Greece Persia remained a great power, but gradually decay set in, mainly owing to a surfeit of luxury. At this juncture there appeared on the stage of history one who was perhaps its greatest actor, for the fame of Alexander exceeds that of all other men. His father, Philip, was also a very great ruler and soldier, and it was he who organized that wonderful army, with its irresistible heavy cavalry and the famous phalanx, which could break through all opposition.

Alexander set out in the spring of 334 B.C. to overthrow the Persian empire with a force of only 40,000 men, and, crossing the Hellespont, where he held a fort on each side of the straits, he defeated the Satrap, although not without hard fighting. Gradually he annexed and began to administer Asia Minor, and, at Issus, close to the modern Alexandretta, he overthrew the enormous host of the craven Darius Codomannus and won the lordship of Asia, for as Darius fled from Issus, it was certain that his troops would never again face the Macedonians.

Alexander occupied Babylon, Susa, Persepolis, and Ecbatana in turn. He beat the bounds of the Persian empire and crossed the five rivers of the Punjab. He then returned to Susa down the Indus and across the deserts of Baluchistan. When he died at the early age of thirty-two, he had organized his conquests so well that his generals were able to found dynasties and rule over the Persian Empire for many generations. Alexander represented the

THE KINGDOM OF PERSIA

culminating point of Greek civilisation The next dynasty to appear on the scene was a nomad tribe from the plains to the south-east of the Caspian Sea These Parthians acquired a veneer of Greek civilization and used coins with Greek inscriptions They gradually built up a powerful empire and fought Rome on almost equal terms for many centuries. Who does not remember reading of the crushing defeat they inflicted on Crassus in 53 B C ? Indeed, Roman history cannot be properly studied without some knowledge of events in Persia.

Period of the Sassanid Dynasty

In the middle of the third century of our era a national dynasty, termed the Sassanid, arose and took up the position occupied by Parthia Indeed, the Sassanids were even more warlike than the Parthians, or, perhaps, it would be more correct to say that they were better organized Their culminating feat of arms was the defeat of a Roman army and the capture of the Emperor Valerian, a theme which is portrayed in bas-relief sculptures in many parts of Persia

The Sassanid dynasty was often pressed hard by tribes from Central Asia, and on this subject more light would be welcome However, we know something about the invasions of the White Huns and, later, of the Turks The last great monarch of the dynasty was Chosroes Parvez, who nearly captured Constantinople. He sacked Jerusalem and carried off the "True Cross," an act which stirred Christendom to its depths and rallied the people round the Emperor Heraclius, who engaged in a series of remarkable campaigns, which resulted in the final defeat of Persia. Actually both combatants were worn . out and fell easy victims to the new power that arose in the deserts of Arabia.

A Province of the Caliphate

The rise of Islam is one of the most remarkable events in history. Within a few years the Arabs, who were, for perhaps the first time in their history, welded into a nation, overthrew the Persian empire, albeit the Persians fought stoutly. They also drove the erstwhile victorious Heraclius out of the rich provinces of Syria. Once the armies of the hapless Sassanid monarch were defeated little resistance was offered to the conquerors, except in the densely wooded Caspian provinces, which, under local princes, maintained their independence for more than a century.

Persia became a mere province of the wide-spreading empire of the Caliphate, and it seemed as if her national spirit might be lost. But her genius asserted itself in a most remarkable manner Persians became Moslems indeed, but they chose their own spiritual leader in the person of Ali, cousin and son-in-law of the Prophet Mahomet They believed that his son Hussein married a daughter of the last Sassanid monarch, and that his descendants thereby inherited the almost sacred virtues of their beloved dynasty, that were summed up in the term "royal splendour"

Acting on this theory, they invented the theory that the descendants of Ali were Imams, or spiritual and temporal leaders by divine right Further, they believe that the twelfth Imam is still alive, and will, one day, reappear as the Mahdi, or Guide, to establish justice on earth Followers of these doctrines are termed Shiites or "Separatists" from the main body of Moslems, termed Sunnites or "Traditionists"

Under the Arab yoke the Persians were treated with arrogance and contempt, but, as the centuries passed, Persia reasserted her intellectual superiority and her higher civilization, and the majority of the Arabs returned to their nomadic life Towards the end of the ninth century of our era a national dynasty arose in remote Seistan. It was followed by other local dynasties, some of which carved out empires, but they were all swept away by the Seljuks, a Turkish tribe from the East which ruled over practically the whole of the Caliphate while acknowledging the spiritual authority of the Caliph.

Fire and Sword from Mongolia

The Seljuks were recent converts to Islam, which religion they revitalised. It was they who defended Asia against the invasion called the Crusades Curiously enough, the Normans, who were the chief leaders of Europe, were also comparatively recent converts to Christianity, but, in the long run, the Moslems defeated their assailants, who were operating from bases in distant lands.

From one point of view the history of Persia consists of a series of invasions from the East. The Seljuk empire rapidly decayed, and comparatively small states succeeded to it when the most awful human avalanche was set in motion, by the Mongols marching west. The leader of these fiends in human form was Jenghiz Khan, who in 1219 entered Central Asia and began to massacre the entire population, his idea being to make his line of communication safe and also to convert the entire land into pasturage for the herds of his followers.

In Persia the Mongols ruined and massacred in the north, but the southern provinces fortunately escaped. After the first wave of conquest Hulaku Khan, a

member of the reigning family, was ordered to extirpate the Caliphate. This he did without much difficulty, the Caliph being a miser, who would not unlock the doors of his treasury. The sack of Bagdad was a mortal blow to Islam. Incidentally, the massacre of thousands of learned men dealt an equally heavy blow to the supremacy of the Arab language.

The descendants of Hulaku formed a Persian dynasty and were converted to Islam. Under their rule ambassadors were sent to the kings of Europe, and letters that were exchanged between Ghazan Khan of Persia and Edward I. of England are still in existence, the purport of the correspondence being cooperation against the common foe in Palestine.

Tamerlane, the next great conqueror to appear on the stage of Central Asia, has impressed mankind more than any of his Asiatic predecessors. Born a member of a small tribe of Turks, he rose to power slowly but surely until he had gained a vast empire. At the age of seventy he won his greatest victory by defeating and capturing Sultan Bayazid, the famous monarch of Turkey. We fortunately possess a vivid account of Tamerlane from a contemporary pen, and there is no doubt that he was a very great man, always ready for action, and never allowing his ministers to decide for him. His descendants inaugurated a brilliant era of art which, in some respects, has never been equalled in mediæval or modern Europe.

English Blades for Persia's Foes

The most illustrious scion of this dynasty was Babar, who conquered India and founded the Mogul empire. At the very end of the sixteenth century a national dynasty, known as the Safavid, arose similar to that of the Sassanids and descended from that stock. It reached its zenith under Shah Abbas, a contemporary of Queen Elizabeth. At that period the Shirley brothers, who were English knights, took service with the Shah and organised an army which defeated the Turks and raised his prestige to a great height.

Ispahan was made the capital and became a city of palaces, many of which still survive, the finest being the Hall of Audience, where the monarch sat in state and received embassies. At this period the English appeared in the Persian Gulf and, in 1622, in cooperation with Persia, captured the great Portuguese stronghold of Hormuz, that is immortalised in "Paradise Lost." Since that date England has played a splendid role in the Persian Gulf, suppressing piracy at the cost of much blood. At the same time her commerce steadily increased, more especially that of her Indian subjects.

The Safavid dynasty was held to be sacred, and so, when it became effete, it was not supplanted by an internal movement. Persia became decadent and was conquered by a small force of Afghans from Kandahar. The savage tribesmen massacred thousands of the citizens of Ispahan, who betrayed extreme cowardice. But a deliverer arose in the person of Nadir Kuli, who, first as a leader of banditti and afterwards as a general, fought his way to the throne of Persia. Once crowned Shah, with all the resources of Persia at his disposal, he avenged the invasion of Persia by the capture of Kandahar.

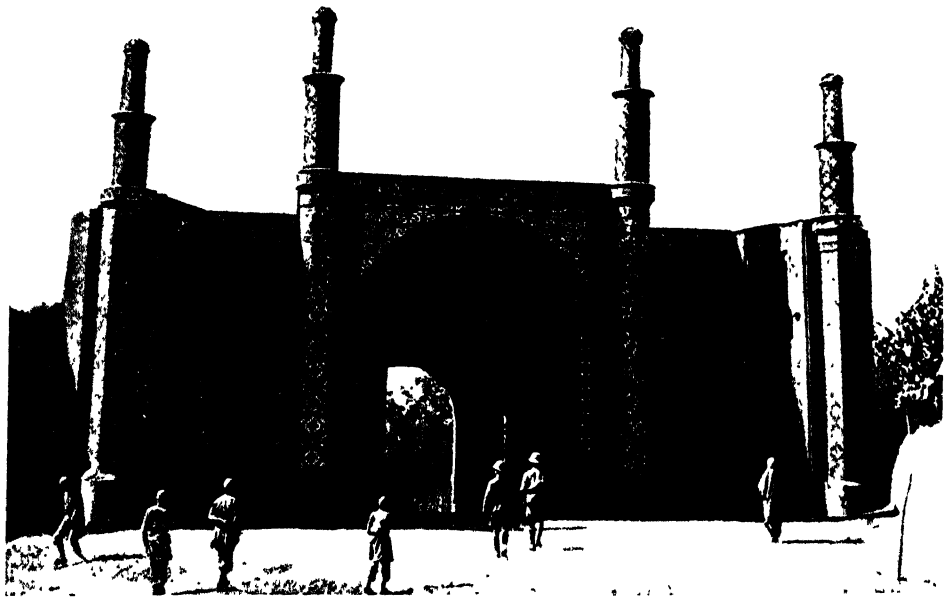
Liberator Who Turned Tyrant

He then advanced on Delhi, where he easily defeated the voluptuary who sat on the throne of Babar. He thus obtained the "wealth of Ind," and this made him a miser. He conquered Bokhara and Khiva and returned to Persia, where he was welcomed as the saviour and avenger. Had he used the millions wrung from India to repair the poverty of ravaged Persia, his name would still be blest and perhaps his family would still occupy the throne Instead, he treated Persia as if it were a conquered country, and his tyranny was so detestable that his own guards murdered him. Thus died Nadir Shah, the outstanding figure on the stage of Asia in the eighteenth century and her last conqueror.

Persia lost many of her provinces after the assassination of the conqueror of Delhi. Ahmad Shah, who commanded the Afghan division, marched off home and founded the kingdom of Afghanistan, which his descendants still rule. Westwards, too, Georgia declared her independence, and Turkey recovered her lost possessions. There was a struggle for power between various rival chiefs, which ended in the victory of the head of the Kajar tribe, who founded the present dynasty.

Persia Between the Millstones

Unfortunately for Persia, the Russian empire was expanding southwards at this period. Early in the nineteenth century the two powers fought for the possession of Georgia, victory ultimately remaining with Russia. Persia was mulcted of many rich provinces and, somewhat naturally, sought to balance her losses by recovering what had now become Afghanistan. She was, however, foiled by British policy and arms, and was forced to sign a treaty, by the terms of which she renounced her ambitions in this direction. Russia, who had added the Caucasus to her dominions, now



ONE OF THE TWELVE GATEWAYS OF PERSIA'S CAPITAL CITY

Though an ancient city Teheran lacks structures of antique architectural interest. During the nineteenth century, in the reign of Nasr-ed-Din Shah, the city was enclosed by a fine new wall and moat of a circuit of eleven miles, pierced here and there with lofty gateways, all adorned with intricate glazed-brick patterns, some depicting the exploits of the Persian national hero Rustum

Photo, Imperial War Museum

appeared to the east of the Caspian and overthrew the Khanates of Central Asia, finally ending a series of campaigns by the annexation of the Turcoman country. This completed the virtual envelopment of Persia towards the close of the nineteenth century.

It is important to remember that constitutional government is of recent growth in Persia. When brought into contact with Europe she admired her power and material well-being and desired to adopt inventions such as the telegraph and electric light, but she had no leanings towards change in her form of government. Gradually, however, an agitation was set on foot in favour of reforms, a clean administration of justice being especially desired by the people.

Had the Shah only ruled efficiently in the old way, it is unlikely that the people would have wished for a constitution, but when they saw the independence of Persia being lost through financial obligations to Great Britain and Russia, the proceeds of which were either wasted in the Shah's tours to Europe or were embezzled, a strong feeling was aroused. The immemorial method of protest in Persia is to take sanctuary, and this was adopted time and again, the great " bast " being in the British Legation. It resulted in the grant of a constitution for Persia, a country that was entirely unfitted for such a form of government, and since it was inaugurated the State has drifted towards anarchy.

The outbreak of the Great War found Persia totally unable to protect her borders. She duly proclaimed her neutrality, but was helpless to enforce it. The policy of Germany was to strike at India across Persia, using as her instrument the Turkish army, and it was on this account that most Persian provinces heard the tramp of British, Russian, or Turkish troops. At the outbreak of hostilities there were some engagements between Russian and Turkish troops in the extreme north-west corner of Persia.

Of greater importance was the advance of the British up the Karun River, after the capture of Basra, the protection of the oil-fields, the pipe-line, and the refinery on the island of Abadan being of great importance to the successful conduct of the campaign. Before the advance on Bagdad a division swept the enemy troops which were threatening Ahwaz out of Persian soil, but a force was kept in the district to the end of the war, for the local tribes were always on the look-out for a chance of plunder or destruction.

The Turks in Irak, as Mesopotamia is now termed, were based on Bagdad, and from that centre parties of German

officers were sent into Persia, well provided with munitions and money Their instructions were to enlist fighting men locally and to murder all British and Russian officials in Central and Southern Persia They were helped in this nefarious scheme by winning over to their side the Swedish officers in command of a strong force of Persian gendarmerie No Persian governor made any effort to protect the subjects of the Entente, the sole anxiety evinced being to make money from both sides if possible

The German propaganda was clever if unscrupulous It was given out that the German nation had been converted to the religion preached by Mahomet, and that the Kaiser had actually made the pilgrimage to Mecca and was now termed Haji Wilhelm The British and Russian officials were murdered in some cases seven branches of the Imperial Bank of Persia were seized and looted, and by the end of 1915 the British and Russian colonies in Central and Southern Persia had been driven out The Germans used their bands to serve as supports to other parties whose duty it was to press on into Afghanistan and to give out that they were advanced parties of a German-Turkish force that was on its way to invade India

The peril was serious, for, had a Turkish brigade reached Herat, the Afghans would have joined them, as would also the predatory tribesmen of the North-West Frontier of India and at this period there were not sufficient troops in India to withstand such an invasion Fortunately, only missions reached the late Ameer, who showed remarkable political acumen by receiving his German visitors hospitably, and by engaging in interminable conversations with them and also with his own advisers Indeed, he went further and summoned a special meeting of Afghan notables to whom the whole matter was explained at great length Finally, when it was evident that there was no Turkish force on the march the Ameer dismissed his visitors, pertinently pointing out to them that it would be folly on his part to break off relations with the British until assured of adequate military support

Meanwhile, in the north of Persia the position was better The Russians had brought in troops to protect their subjects This step led to a trial of strength, the enemy ministers trying to persuade the timorous Shah that, unless he fled with them to the south he would be made a prisoner by the Russians The Entente ministers made every effort to soothe the

ENTERING KAZVIN BY THE GRANDIOSE TEHERAN GATE

This beautiful gateway, known as the Teheran Gate, and a fine modern hotel are perhaps the only imposing features of Kazvin, for most of the mosques and monuments of the town possess an air of ruin and decrepitude This gateway is decorated with glazed coloured bricks to form various patterns, and gives a touch of bright splendour to the squalor and monotony of the surroundings

Photo, Imperial War Museum

Shah, who hesitated to take the step which, he was informed, might be difficult to retrace. As a result, the enemy ministers left Teheran, followed by ministers and deputies whom they had bought, but the Shah remained and a cabinet friendly to the Entente was formed.

British Mission to South Persia

The position in Central and Southern Persia was considered to be very unsatisfactory by the British, not only from the local point of view, but also because it was realized that the effect on opinion in Afghanistan would be most unfavourable. It was, therefore, decided to send a mission to South Persia with instructions to raise a Persian force for the restoration of the authority of the Shah.

The command was given to Brigadier-General Sir Percy Sykes, who landed at Bandar Abbas in March, 1916, with a wholly inadequate staff, and immediately set to work to enlist men. The Persian notables of the Kerman province were suffering from German oppression, as but small efforts were made to control their followers, who robbed and murdered. Sir Percy Sykes, who had been Consul at Kerman, and was well known in the province, benefited by this state of affairs and received urgent appeals to march into the interior and drive out the Germans.

Upon his report of the favourable change in the situation, a small force of Indian troops, numbering 700, was placed at his disposal, and he immediately marched to Kerman, where he was warmly welcomed. The Germans had fled westwards towards Shiraz, but General Sykes was able to secure their arrest and retention. After re-establishing the British colony, which had returned with him, the little column marched west to Yezd, where the British had recently returned.

Restoration of Law and Order

Meanwhile much had been happening in Irak. Kut-el-Amara had fallen in April, 1916, and the Germans, never forgetting their policy of invading India, sent a Turkish force, 18,000 strong, with instructions to drive back the weak body of Russian Cossacks and take Teheran. This powerful column advanced to Kermanshah and then to Hamadan, from which centre it dispatched a force to march on Ispahan, which was held by a weak garrison of Cossacks. An appeal was made to the little column of Indian troops, which marched rapidly to the support of the Russians. Their strength was exaggerated, with the result that the Turks retired to Hamadan.

Thereupon the British, after a halt, continued their march to Shiraz, which was settled upon for the headquarters of the South Persia Rifles, as the new force was finally called. At this centre a brigade was speedily raised, mainly by taking over the derelict Persian gendarmerie, and a second brigade was raised at Kerman. The Indian troops were then used to restore order in the robber-infested land, after the receipt of some welcome reinforcements.

The new order was welcome to the landowners, the peasantry, and the merchants, but it was most distasteful to the powerful nomad tribes, who had been a law to themselves and were carrying raiding to such an extent that the peasantry were disappearing from the soil. Chief of these tribes were the Kashgais, who numbered 150,000 souls and possessed perhaps 30,000 warriors, most of whom were well armed. The Arab tribe was less powerful, but equally addicted to raiding. In 1917 the capture of Bagdad reacted most favourably on the situation in Persia, and the Kashgai chief had a meeting with Sir Percy Sykes, at which he agreed to stop his tribesmen from looting. During that year the position was favourable, the deserted routes being again thronged with caravans and the peasantry returning to villages which they had deserted owing to nomad raids.

Persia Mendicant Among Powers

The collapse of Russia may be held to start from the issue of the notorious Army Order No. 1 in the same month that saw the capture of Bagdad. Its result in the East was to open to Germany the way to India by the Caucasus and Central Asia, where there were many thousands of prisoners of the Central Powers, who could have speedily been formed into a formidable army for the invasion of India. The situation for the British was desperate, and so desperate measures were appropriate.

It was decided to send a military mission to the Caucasus across North-West Persia, and to attempt to prevent the Turks from reaching the Caspian Sea at Baku, where, in addition to being able to gain touch with their prisoners in Central Asia, the oilfields would have been of great military value. General Dunsterville was appointed to command this mission, and after exciting experiences reached Baku with 1,000 British infantry. With this tiny force he heroically held Baku for six weeks against two Turkish divisions at a most critical period. Finally he was obliged to evacuate Baku and returned to Persia.

Another striking feat was the hoisting of the White Ensign on the Caspian Sea and the defeat of the Bolshevist fleet. Yet another mission was dispatched

across Eastern Persia to keep the Bolshevists from joining hands with the Turks. These missions are dealt with in Sir Percy Sykes's "History of Persia," but can only be mentioned here, as Persia was not their war area, but merely served as their lines of communication.

In March, 1918, the final great attack in the west was held by the Persian Government to point to a German victory. As a result, the South Persia Rifles were denounced as "a threat to Persian independence and integrity" and the Kashgais were encouraged to attack the British. The Indian column was about 2,000 strong, with a high percentage of recruits, and it was impossible to send any reinforcements to Shiraz. After an action in which the Kashgais were defeated, large reinforcements reached them and the British were invested for six weeks. Ultimately they defeated the enemy after desperate fighting and thus saved a second Kut, the effects of which at this period of the war would have been very serious, the Punjab seething with inflammable matter which burst out into flame some months later. The Ameer, too, might have been forced to abandon his neutrality.

After the Armistice Persia was ready to congratulate the victors, and it seemed likely that, under British influence, this ancient state would recover somewhat of her former position. Unfortunately, corruption is the keynote in Persia, and as the British were unable to satisfy the grandees, who batten on the foreigner as well as on their own people, Persia became cold to her ancient ally and turned to the Bolshevists. The Foreign Office tried to arrange for help by means of financial advisers and British officers, but insufficient attention was paid to Persian susceptibilities, with the result that to-day the British are detested by the ruling class in Persia.

When the Bolshevists had proved to be unsatisfactory in this respect, America was expected to grant a loan; but it is probable that Persia, which makes no attempt to live on her own resources, will make the discovery that the British are her only genuine friends. It is clear that the British do not wish to increase their responsibilities in Persia, but Persians consider their arid country so valuable that they believed that the British coveted it, and, until they realize that these fears are baseless, it is impossible to re-establish perfect confidence.

At present, owing to the disbandment of the South Persia Rifles and the extreme weakness of the Government, little revenue is being received. The Persian idea is to propose reforms, to secure a loan, and then to insure that the reforms are rendered nugatory. At present it cannot be too clearly understood that the ancient kingdom of Cyrus, of Darius, and of Shah Abbas is engaged in a "Rake's Progress" that can only end in disaster.

PERSIA: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Forms a tableland of from 3,000 to 5,000 feet in elevation, and is traversed by numerous chains of high mountains. Climate mainly hot and arid except between mountain ranges near Caspian and that sea. In this district vegetation is extensive, but in the south and centre any large shrubs are infrequent. Main rivers flow to Shatt-el-Arab at the head of Persian Gulf and Caspian Sea. Southern coastal area deficient in perennial streams and has an unhealthy climate. Salt deserts, marshes, and wastes of shifting sands cover large areas to east and north-east. Total area about 630,000 square miles, and is bordered north by Caspian Sea and Turkistan, south by Persian Gulf and Arabian Sea, east by Afghanistan and Baluchistan, and west by Mesopotamia. Population estimated at about ten millions.

Government and Constitution

Limited monarchy ruled by Shah, with assistance of Cabinet. Country divided into thirty-three provinces under governors-general. Each town has chief magistrate. Majlis, or National Assembly, has been convened, and meets from time to time.

Commerce and Industries

Food products include milk, wheat, barley-millet, rice, and fruits. The production of gums, wool, cotton, carpets, tobacco, and silk is considerable. Minerals are numerous, but except in the case of oil, largely undeveloped, and include coal, lead, copper, marble, and iron. Along the shores of the Persian Gulf the date palm is widely cultivated. The total value of exports for the year 1920-21 was £14,728,264. Among articles exported from Persia are opium, petroleum, fruits, raw cotton, and carpets. Among main imports are sugar, tea, rice, spices, and animals, the total import figures for same year being £18,982,492. Standard coin, the silver Kran. Nominal value between fourpence and fivepence.

Communications

About 350 miles of railway. Much of the country's commerce is carried on over the great trade routes, the main route running from Teheran to Bagdad. There are over 10,000 miles of telegraph wire and telegraphic communication with India. A letter post has been instituted.

Religion and Education

Bulk of population belong to the Shiite sect of Mahomedanism, and there is a large minority of adherents to the Sunni persuasion. Besides these Mahomedans there are about 10,000 Parsees, 50,000 Armenians, and 40,000 Jews. A ministry of education has been instituted, and many schools established on European lines. Public funds support a number of colleges for the teaching of Arabic and Persian literature.

Chief Towns

Teheran, capital (estimated population 220,000), Tabriz (200,000), Ispahan (90,000), Meshed (75,000), Kerman (70,000), Kermanshah (50,000), Yezd (45,000), Resht (35,000).

PERUVIAN HOMESTEAD SET LIKE THE CONDOR'S EYRIE ON THE EASTERN EDGE OF THE HIGH ANDES

Adobe mud and coarse grass are the usual building materials of the Peruvian Indians, but on the Andean tablelands or punas between ten and fourteen thousand feet above sea level, these fail the sparse population, and are replaced by stones and bark from the trees at the edge of the tree line. It is a harsh existence that the natives lead here, cultivating tiny patches of ground carved out of the wind-swept, mist-draped mountain sides, tending their llamas and vicunas and cut off from the outer world by the vast heights that surround them.

Peru

I. In the Land of the Children of the Sun

By G. M. Dyott

Author of "Silent Highways of the Jungle"

THE traveller arriving off the coast of Peru for the first time is apt to be grievously disappointed not to find its shores clothed in a mantle of tropical green. Throughout its entire length of 1,300 odd miles vegetation is rarely seen except where the waters of some river coming down from the mountains have been spread by man over the parched-up plains of the littoral.

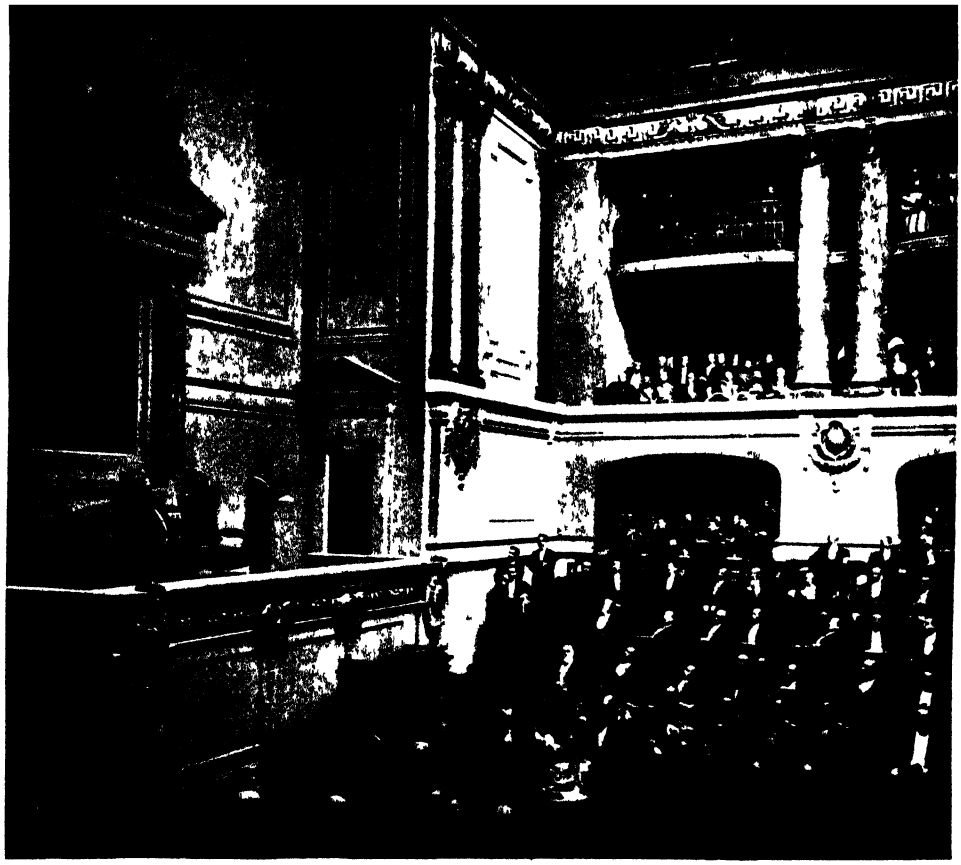
There is again nothing restful in the view which gradually evolves out of the mist as our ship comes to rest in shallow water; there are no graceful palms silhouetted against an azure sky, no tree-clad slopes to stir the heart of the hunter, no shady groves to suggest a Garden of Eden to the romantic. The sea is lifeless, lacks colour, and is icy cold. Storms are unknown, yet a heavy swell comes heaving in from the Southern Pacific, causing rare discomfort to passengers afloat and sometimes danger to the small coastal shipping lying at anchor in the open roadsteads. Except for the summer months the sky remains overcast, and then the glare reflected off land and sea alike is well-nigh unbearable. On closer view the shore reveals itself as a sterile sandy waste out of which arise rocky peaks, the foot-hills of the giant Andes. But here again disappointment follows if we expect brilliant colouring or rugged outline The one and only feature of the blurred landscape is its utter desolation. Add to this the perpetual haze which envelops it, preventing anything save the closest objects from being distinctly seen, and we have a picture of a lost and forgotten continent that no pen could adequately describe.

On first acquaintance, then, Peru is seen at her worst—stern, forbidding, empty, and abandoned, with all those features characteristic of the tropics apparently absent. Yet behind this depressing exterior exists one of the most interesting and beautiful countries imaginable, rich in natural resources of almost every kind and full of historic interest rivalling that of Egypt itself. Surprise and contrast abound at every turn, the unexpected invariably happens, and the farther afield we travel the greater the change noted in the people and the landscape. To grasp more completely this peculiar state of affairs it

MUSIC IN THE SOLITUDE

Most of the Peruvian Indian tribes fashion simple musical pipes like this—a hollow reed with three holes at the lower end, emitting thin and rather melancholy, but not unpleasing notes

Photo, G. M. Dyott



SENATORS OF PERU LISTENING TO THE PRESIDENTIAL ADDRESS

Peruvians take the same passionate interest in politics as citizens of other Latin American republics, and their politicians have strenuous and even exciting careers The Senate meets in a fine Senate-house at Lima, and its sessions are often distinguished by exhibitions of great oratorical ability, listened to with intelligent appreciation by numerous men and women in the public galleries

is necessary to set forth the topographical peculiarities of the country which in a large measure are responsible for its idiosyncrasies.

Roughly, we may divide the Republic into three distinct districts lying parallel with the coast, each of which differs completely in contour, climate, and the type of people that inhabit it. First comes the coast zone, that dry, rainless area of Sahara-like appearance to which reference has been made already. Then the Sierra, or mountainous section, which embraces the various ridges of the Andes along with the many beautiful inter-Andean valleys lying in between them. The third section, known as the Montaña, or region of woods, is found to the eastward of the great Andean chain. It is a country of heavy rainfall and is covered with a tangle of dense forest growth through which innumerable rivers have carved their way.

It can be truly said that extremes meet in Peru, a statement which applies to climate and people alike, for as we leave the flat coast zone, with its highly important centres of civilization, and head due east over the Andes, we find ridge after ridge of mountains barring our progress. The farther we penetrate the more simple does life become, till after weeks of incessant travelling, when we finally emerge on the banks of some minor tributary of the Amazon, we encounter Indian tribes roaming the

leafy solitudes of the forest in all the primitive simplicity usually associated with Adam and Eve

It can be readily understood that the population of such a country is, to say the least, mixed, but it is also a fact that among the educated classes a much larger percentage of pure Spanish blood is found than is the case in other parts of the same continent This shows itself very strongly in the manners and customs of those living on the coast, where both men and women are extremely refined, highly intellectual, and endowed with a grace of manner that is most agreeable to the stranger who finds himself among them As a rule, the men excel as lawyers, doctors, or politicians, but in engineering matters, which involve practical knowledge, they are inclined to be deficient, since the old idea of manual work being degrading still holds among certain classes of the community Under the very able example and administration of President A B Leguia, such ideas are rapidly losing ground, and public opinion is falling more and more into line with European thought

The women, especially those at Lima, the capital, enjoy the reputation of being the most beautiful and the most fascinating of any in South America They are of slight build, with small hands and feet, and possess charm and vivacity to a very marked degree They make good wives and devoted mothers, often sacrificing much in the interest of their children, whom they spoil and idolise to the point of a fault With this one exception they seem to steer a medium course in most things Social gaieties are not considered the only thing worth living for, neither are household duties brought down to the level of everyday drudgery

Again, although fond of the secluded atmosphere of their homes, they are

PERUVIAN INDIANS WORSHIPPING THE VIRGIN OF COPACABANA

Copacabana's most sacred treasure is the statue of the Virgin Mary in the cathedral by Lake Titicaca A little figure, about three feet high, with Indian features its gorgeous raiment and jewels glittering in the light of many candles, make an intense appeal to the devotional spirit of the Indians, who come from far and near to attend the festivals when it is uncovered

Photo, Underwood Press Service

OPEN TO ALL THE WINDS THAT BLOW—A ROOF WITHOUT WALLS BUT STILL A HOME

Peruvian Indian habitations vary very much in construction, some of them being quite substantial while others are the flimsiest shelters such as this which consists of nothing more than a thatched roof set on poles without any walls to afford even a minimum of privacy. If a death should occur in the family the house is vacated and left standing for the use of the spirit of the deceased the survivors constructing a new and equally unsubstantial dwelling for themselves

Photo G. M. Dodt

TWIRLING SPINDLES EVER EMPLOY THE CHOLA'S HANDS

Whatever else a Chola, or half caste, woman may be doing, whether minding her baby or her llamas or her sheep, she is almost invariably spinning, too, making coarse yarn with a ball of crude wool and a short spindle which she twirls incessantly Living up in the mountains, remote from other sources of supply, the women produce the yarn from which nearly all their clothing is made

Photo, G M Dyott

always much in evidence at public gatherings such as the races, bull-fights, etc Vigorous physical exercise is almost unknown to them, hence their pallid complexion, which, by the way, is considered a beauty rather than otherwise The usual feminine love of adornment is well developed, and when decked out in all their finery they make a picturesque sight, driving along the boulevards in magnificent motor-cars with all the airs and graces of true Parisiennes

Unfortunately this, the better class, represents but a small minority in the total population, so if a comprehensive idea is to be given of the people as a whole, attention must be drawn to all grades alike, from the intellectual member of society in the capital to the naked savage living in remote corners of the far-off jungle Between these two extremes every grade and variety can be found, but for ordinary purposes they can be classed under three general heads · those who live on the coast, those who live in the mountains, and the savage tribes of the forest.

One of the most pleasant aspects of life on the coast is to be found about the large haciendas, or farms, located in the more favoured districts where

CROSSING A PERUVIAN STREAM BY CABLE-CAR

Bridge building has always been a matter of practical concern in Peru, owing to the immense network of waterways that covers the country. Where better types of bridge are not practicable the natives stretch a cable across the stream, with a ring from which a basket or car is hung, sitting in which the passenger hauls himself across by means of a cord

Photo, G. M. Dyott

irrigation is possible. The hospitality of these places is proverbial, and the lavish hand with which it is meted out to the traveller always remains in his memory as one of his most pleasant impressions of the country. The growing of cotton and sugar-cane is an important industry, and during the Great War the export of these commodities assumed very large proportions. The fact that rain never falls, and agriculture is carried out only under irrigation, removes the worst enemies of the farmer, namely, drought or too much rain. The mechanical regularity with which crops can be harvested as a result is, to say the least, extraordinary.

Labour on these estates is recruited partly from the so-called mountain Indians and partly from the very mixed working population on the coast, most of whom are directly descended from those Indians who, in pre-Hispanic times, attained a very high order of civilization of their own on these barren shores. There is also a considerable Asiatic population along the fringe of the Pacific, with the usual sprinkling of negro blood, but the latter does not exceed two per cent. of the total inhabitants at the outside.

The prevailing language of Peru is, of course, Spanish, but it would be incorrect to say that it was universal, because in the Sierra, or mountains, which are chiefly settled by Quichua Indians, the Quichua tongue predominates, and in many a village Spanish is quite as useless as English. Should we start to probe among the aboriginal tribes of the Montaña, we find there innumerable languages or dialects which have little or no resemblance one to another, so that the traveller in these far-removed districts is faced with quite a difficult problem in making his wants known to the various tribesmen with whom he comes in contact.

Enjoyable as the stranger may find life on the coast, it is not until he mounts a sturdy mule and sets out over the mountain trail that the real heart of Peru is revealed to him. The first ascent of these high altitudes is an experience never to be forgotten, it being essential to pass up narrow gorges, abrupt defiles,

and along narrow trails cut shelf-like on the sheer mountain-side, where a false step would send one to eternity 2,000 feet below. On attaining an elevation of 3,000 feet above sea level the temperature becomes much cooler and the haze gives way to an atmosphere clear as crystal. Up to about 7,000 feet all is stark and barren, but above this point the mountain sides show signs of vegetation. At times the patch-like effect produced by the cultivated terraces is unique, and how it is possible to ever reach some of these, let alone cultivate them, is certainly a puzzle to the observer.

At two points it is possible to cross the most westerly ridge of the cordillera in a comfortable railway coach. Both of these journeys are worth making, especially the one from Lima to Oroya over the lines of the Ferrocarril Central; the other, to the southward, ascends to Cuzco from the Port of Mollendo. There are many other spur lines running up into the foot-hills, but they are of local importance only. Such towns as Piura, Trujillo, Cajamarca, Cerro de Pasco, Huancayo, and Arequipa are of great interest, reflecting the customs of old Spain to an even greater degree than Lima.

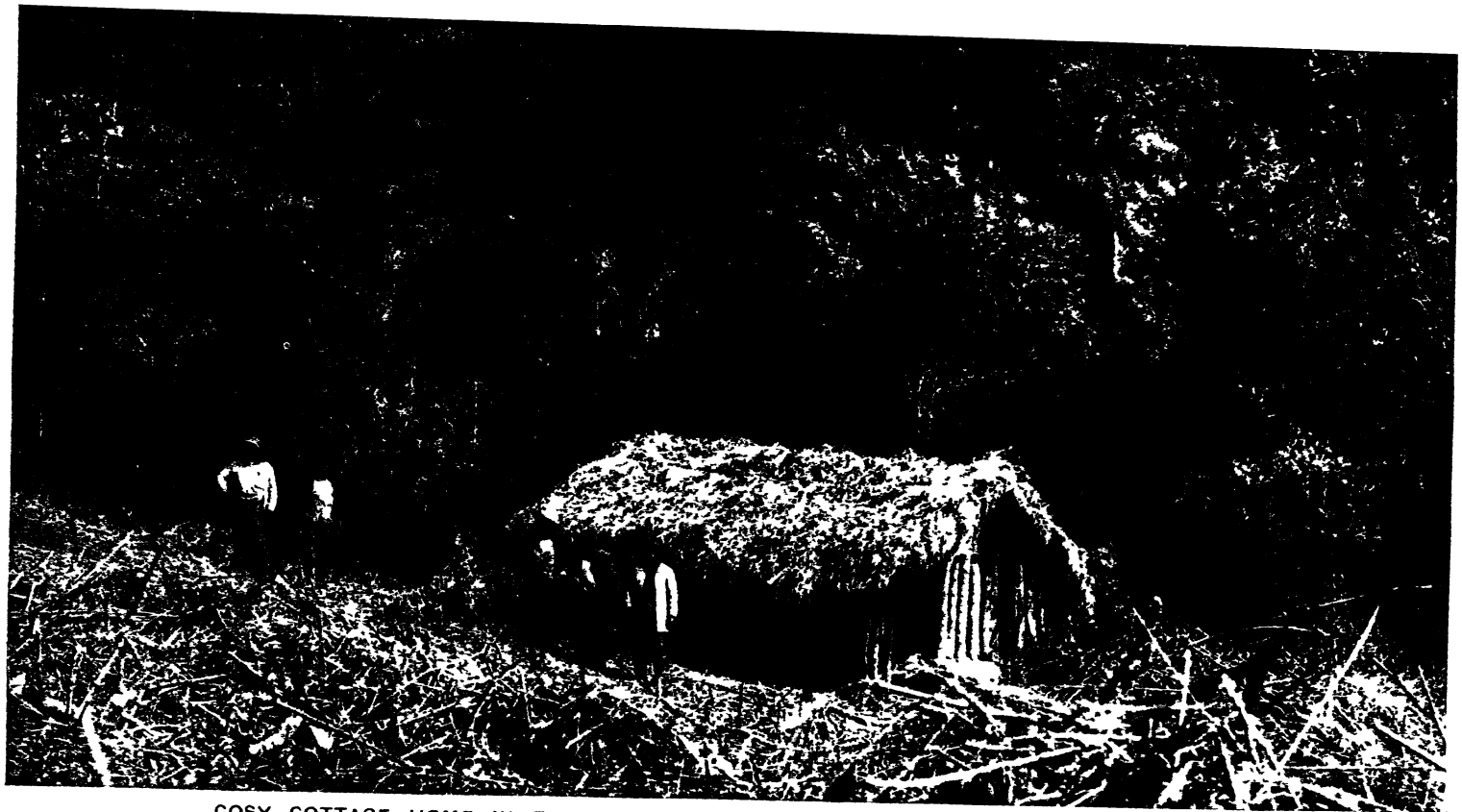
Cuzco is particularly worthy of a visit, since it was the capital of the ancient Inca empire and forms a veritable doorway into the ages of the past. Its narrow streets, which in places lead between walls of great antiquity, the curious mixture of architecture, ancient and modern, to say nothing of the squalid Indian population, picturesque in their dirty rags, stir the imagination and make one wonder what might have been had the hand of the "Conquistadores" been less heavy.

It is generally assumed that the yoke of Spain is responsible for the present degraded state of the Quichua and Aymara Indians, who once held sway over these deserted Andean uplands. This I think is a debatable point, as on the arrival of Pizarro and his band the Inca empire was already tottering.

INDIANS WHO DELVE FOR COAL IN THE SANTA VALLEY

Coal abounds throughout Peru, and is being increasingly worked. Strong vertical seams of anthracite crown the hills for miles, and other rich deposits have been found upon the sea-coast. These mountain Indians, holding the quaint big-brimmed hats made locally, are employed in the coal-mines of the valley of the Santa river, which enters the Pacific at Chimbote

Photo, G. M. Dyott



COSY COTTAGE HOME IN THE VERDURE-CLAD FOOT-HILLS OF THE UPPER MONTAÑA

Nature is generous in the long region of the foot-hills and slopes on the eastern side of the Andes, which is known as the Cabacera de Montaña as distinguished from the "Montaña real," or region of true forest In these upper regions the climate is similar to that of California, and healthy for white men prospecting the vast gold and rubber bearing areas. The Indians live well by hunting, fishing, and tilling small patches of ground, and though addicted to inter tribal warfare are by no means so savage as commonly reported

Photo, G. M Dyott

BUSY AS A BEE OUTSIDE HER BEE-HIVE HUT IN THE FAIR VALLEY OF THE PANGOA RIVER

Some ninety different tribes of forest Indians inhabit the vast, extraordinarily fertile region of the Amazon plain, known comprehensively as the Montaña of Peru. In the valley of the Pangoa river the natives build snug huts, heavily thatched all over, and as the occasional traveller passes he may see the short, physically well-developed women sitting outside their neat homes weaving the cotton fabric out of which they fashion garments, worn rather as protection against mosquitoes than from any sophisticated sense of propriety

Photo, G. M. Dyott

True, the Spaniards might have held the people together and regenerated their flagging energies. But they did not, so the Incas, being a decadent race, were sent headlong down the path on which they had started.

Swan Song of the Quichuas

Those factors which had caused them to become mighty were the very ones that now precipitated their fall. Communism was rampant, no one worked very much, individual effort and initiative had long since been snuffed out. Lacking, therefore, in cohesion and all the essentials of a virile race, the arrival of a strong and aggressive people among them only accelerated the process of decay which sooner or later was bound to lay them low.

Sad and forlorn as the Quichua Indians now appear to the observer, it is not necessarily the result of oppression. In fact, had they been allowed to break up unmolested, it is doubtful whether any would have been alive to-day to relate the story of their ancestors. This thought has often come to me while riding over some undulating storm-swept puna, void of habitations of any kind. Suddenly there comes floating on the wind the melancholy note of the pan pipes played by some solitary Indian not far away tending his sheep. It is not the music of an enslaved race, but rather the swan song of a people restrained from reverting to the oblivion out of which they sprung and into which they must inevitably return.

Easy Contentment on the Sierra

The characteristics of the mountain Indians of Peru are virtually identical with those of the Indians of Bolivia (described in pages 449-477). They are quiet, docile folk, living in mud huts thatched with grass, or else more pretentious dwellings in whose construction eucalyptus wood largely enters. They are all landowners, each one having his own "chacara" or holding on the mountain-side, where most of his foodstuff is raised. The disinclination to work is not so much a habit born of laziness as the direct result of their being able to provide sufficient to exist on without entering into the employ of others who pay in coin which, when all is said and done, is of no real value, seeing that they have no need to buy anything. Their wants in clothing are indeed simple, and usually consist of rough garments made out of homespun, with the inevitable poncho, a species of blanket with a hole in the centre through which the owner sticks his head. Add to this a hat of straw or felt made locally, a pair of raw-hide sandals, and possibly a saddlebag made of fabric hung over the shoulder, and the mountain Indian is set up for life.

Low Level of Native Intelligence

The men are addicted to chewing the leaf of the coca plant, a habit that dulls their intellect if indulged in too freely. The women, who seldom use it, are more quick-witted, and, if not too timid, are apt to answer more coherently when spoken to. It is almost impossible for the stranger to mark any difference between the pure Quichua Indian and the half-caste element which is also fairly plentiful in the Sierra.

The first sign of awakening intellect is generally shown by the discarding of sandals in favour of modern shoes. This seems to be the only line of demarcation between the cholo and his more enlightened brother. The term cholo really refers to those of half-caste origin, but it is now universally applied to all whose intelligence is below a certain standard. Just what that standard is it would be impossible to say, but it is not high, and very few have passed it.

Those who wander much through the interior generally have occasion to remember the word "abandonado," or abandoned. You will be riding your jaded mule over some endless plateau expecting to encounter a settlement,

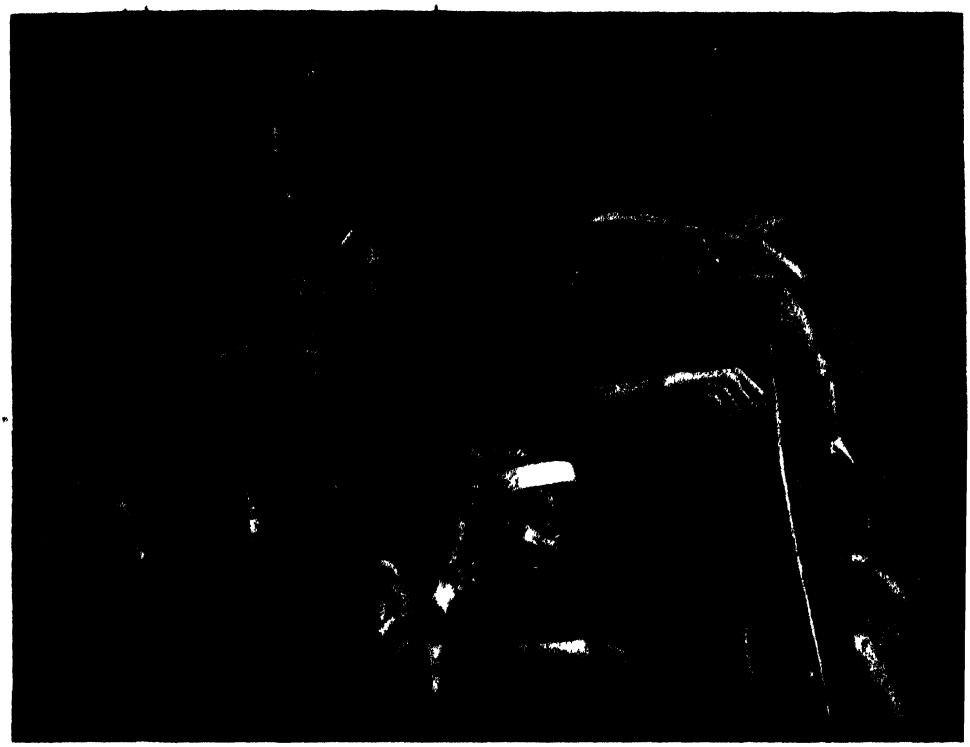
PERUVIAN INDIANS
Of Sierra and Montaña

River Indians of the Peruvian Montaña are almost as much at home in the water as out of it, and can handle the craziest form of canoe

Photos on pages 4049-4056, by G. M. Dyott

Her disk-shaped ornament hanging from her nose is the Lambo Indian mother's pride, but surely a temptation to baby fingers

That they are people of importance is shown by the masses of beads worn by this Campa lady and her winsome little daughter



Cashibo Indians eat their aged relatives when these are past work: a custom due to pious desire thus to assimilate the parental virtues

To the victor the spoils; and thus did these women of three separate tribes on the Lower Pyrene River become the wives of one warrior

Mosquitoes are a plague on the Pastaza River, and the Murato Indians don garments of cotton as some armour against their bites

Married at twelve—for life is short in the Peruvian Montaña the girl wife faces life beside her boy husband, already a great hunter

Set high upon a ridge of the towering sierra, this mountain village of Peru has almost the air of a fortress. But the structures are all of adobe mud, grass-roofed, making flimsy shelter for their poor Indian occupants

Immensely impressive are the high regions of the Andes of Peru. Here, in the plaza of a mist-swept village, a pack-train halts while the mules enjoy a good feed of alfalfa and the muleteers a welcome rest

Sure foot and steady nerve are needed on the shelf-like trails in the Andes. One slip would plunge a man to death, thousands of feet below

the name of which has been given by your guide and which you presume to be a thriving village where you can pass the night With growing anxiety at not reaching your destination in good time, you call out to your "arriero" for the hundredth time "Jose, where is Cochabamba?" "Only a little farther, senor, near that lake," he replies pointing to a silvery patch of water not far off

You arrive at the lake and still no signs of the pueblo So losing all patience at the ignorance and stupidity of Jose who has apparently landed you in a mire predicament you turn on him and, in the best Spanish at your command tell him exactly what you think, ending up by saying you believe he does not know himself where Cochabamba is

"But we are there señor, he answers meekly pointing to a pile of loose boulders lying round about 'This is Cochabamba"

"But where are the inhabitants?" you ask

'There are none senor This place was abandoned many years ago'

So, cursing your luck, you camp behind an improvised wall of rocks to break the force of the night wind a sad but wiser man Had Cochabamba been a group of huts, it would have by no means implied a comfortable night under cover The natural impulse would have been to approach the least dirty and propose yourself for the night, plus a good square meal for the price of a large silver coin But this is not done —at least, not with success To your inquiries for food there is only one answer "No hay" ("There is none") "But how about those chickens? I would gladly buy one," you say

"I am sorry, señor, they belong to someone else"

"Well, never mind, just let me sleep under your roof So long as I can get out of the rain it will be all right" "But, señor, we are already overcrowded, and there is no room within"

So you turn away disgusted and, with a frugal repast from your own saddlebags, lie down in the open, cold and wet, not to sleep, but to pray that morning will soon come and with it the sun to warm your chilled body No wonder the Incas worshipped the

WILD HUMANITY ON ITS GUARD

Menace and mutiny glower from the face even of the baby, whose mother's expression is almost animal in its restrained ferocity They belong to the Pajonal tribe of Indians noted for their savagery and hostility to the whites The making of their portraits may involve not a little danger to the photographer

Photo, G M Dyott

heavenly orb! In cases like the above, if you are wise you follow the indirect method of attack. Having selected the hut you expect to sleep in, you approach it and inquire of the occupants your whereabouts, then, producing a flask of "aguardiente," you invite the household to join in a "copita." This is readily accepted, and healths having been drunk, you ask after the welfare of the children, etc.

Friendly relations once established, you mount your mule slowly, saying that you must be on your way or darkness will overtake you before you find a resting-place. If these tactics are judiciously employed the result is unfailing, and before you have had time to climb back into your saddle, the señora will say: "But won't the señor spend the night under our humble roof? We will give you a bowl of soup, we will kill a fowl, and there are many eggs. Besides, there is ample room in our poor dwelling," etc.

So the victory is won by kind words and a little human interest in the affairs of the humble. At first one feels a despicable wretch at the fraud and deception practised, especially if the coin proffered at departure is refused. But after many experiences of a similar nature, the interest which these people inspire is certainly genuine.

CHOLAS WAITING CUSTOMERS FOR THEIR CAKES AND ALE

Among the half caste population of the Peruvian sierra a principal occupation seems to be that of a salesman, though buyers are few. These women are offering cakes and chicha, a not very palatable native beer made from corn, consumed in large quantities by the mountain folk. Huts where chicha is on sale usually advertise the fact by flying a small white flag over the door

Photo, G. M. Dyott

The mountain Indian does not concern himself with much else outside the tilling of his plot of land or tending his few sickly sheep. As a labourer in the mines he works indifferently. But there is no one else to take his place, since the strain on the heart and lungs is only to be tolerated by those born and bred at high altitudes.

A curious system of contracting for labour of this kind is in vogue. A family, or possibly a whole group of

POOR CHOLAS PULVERISING WOLFRAM IN THE ANDES

Peru's mineral wealth includes almost every known ore, stored in the whole of the vast region which is embraced by the Andes. One of the many minerals found is wolfram, in which the valuable tungsten occurs. Methods of working are still very crude. After being brought to the surface and sorted by hand, women crush it to powder by grinding it between large stones

SECOND STAGE IN THE PREPARATION OF TUNGSTEN

After the women have crushed the ore to powder it is placed in a hand jig and concentrated. The valuable mineral tungsten sinks to the bottom, while the worthless material comes to the top and is periodically removed by hand. When more scientific methods replace the present primitive system of working tungsten will be a source of considerable revenue to the republic

Photos, G. M. Dyott

FALLEN FROM THEIR FORBEARS' HIGH ESTATE

Capital of the Inca empire, Cuzco's streets are trodden still by Indians in whose veins runs Inca blood. Of refined features and often of light-coloured skins, they regard the Spanish-speaking peoples as interlopers and intruders

Photo, G. M. Dyott

people from the same village, agree to put in so many hours' work during a certain time. Arriving at the mine, men and women at once set about their task, the difficulty being not to get them to labour so much as to get them to stop during specified hours. I have seen such men work three weeks on end, all day and all night, with the exception of ten nights.

In this manner two months' labour is crammed into five weeks, and, having collected their wages, the party move off, possibly returning the next year for a similar period, but seldom remaining longer than the time contracted for. The labour problem is a very difficult one, and for that reason alone it will be some time before Peru's enormous mineral wealth can be exploited. Still, with good management, it is quite surprising what can be done.

When we pass over the last and most easterly ridge of the Andes and enter the Montaña the whole aspect of life once more suffers a complete change. This great wooded section of Peru, representing nearly two-thirds of its total area, is sparsely populated, difficult of access, and in many places quite unexplored. It has been roughly estimated that the aborigines of the forest number some 300,000 all told, divided into ninety or more tribes, but their exact number is a matter of conjecture. All we do know is that their ranks are being gradually diminished as civilization spreads its net around them. Many years must elapse before these various tribes can be accurately classified, since there is so much overlapping that it is difficult to say where one begins and the other ends. Some are more powerful and numerous than others, and there are those, again, who have reached a considerably higher state of development in both language and elementary knowledge of agriculture. The great point for the reader to bear in mind is that, although many customs are peculiar to certain tribes, there are others that are common to all Amazonian Indians, whether they be in the

CYCLOPEAN STAIRWAY TO THE FORTRESS OF SACSAIHUAMAN

Chief among the ruined monuments of the Inca empire is the gigantic fortress on the hill of Sacsaihuaman, overlooking the city of Cuzco from the north Huge stones that could only have been shaped and brought into position by the order of despots, regardless of Indian labour and life, form a staircase up the terraced hill now trodden only by curious travellers or by indifferent natives

OUTER WALL OF THE TEMPLE OF THE SUN AT CUZCO

Inca structures are remarkable for their stone masonry, of which the most peculiar feature is the disregard of uniformity in the size and shape of the stones Cubical blocks of rectangular form were commonly employed, but polygonal stones were also used, each stone being fitted into its fellow in the wall by great labour, and with such nice adjustment that mortar was never used or required

Photo, G M. Dyott

FINE SPECIMENS OF SICUANI POTTERS AND POTTERY

Some really beautiful and ingenious pottery is made by the Peruvian Indians of the high plateau of Titicaca, and its manufacture is a considerable industry in Sicuani Canchis province, where these highly intelligent looking Indians have their home Immense earthen wine jars, similar in design to this one but much larger, and probably of pre-Hispanic manufacture, are found in the coast valleys

RUFFLING IT IN CLOAK AND RINGLETS IN ANCIENT CUZCO

Suggestive of the bull ring is the gay costume of this Indian, standing in Cuzco against massive stone work that tells its story of Inca construction. The Spanish city is largely built on the foundations of former Inca work, and Indians speaking the Quichua language form the bulk of the population that throngs its Indian markets and its streets, so narrow that wheeled traffic is virtually non existent

WATER-PEDDLING IN CUZCO

A thing of shreds and patches, the Inca Indian pads the streets of Cuzco, focus of his old traditions, hawking water from the barrel roped upon his back

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

" selvas " of Brazil, Peru, or Ecuador. Peruvians call these forest Indians " salvajes," or savages, as distinct from the ignorant Andean population whom they designate as cholos, the word Indian being little used except as an expression of contempt. The Indian of the Peruvian Orient is by no means a degenerate, except where he comes in contact with the whites. In his native state he is alert, active, and agile as a panther in the chase. He fights with poisoned darts and blow-gun, spear, or bow and arrow, all with equal facility. And I have seen one seize a rock when no other weapon was handy, and hurl it at a deer bounding along the banks of a river, hitting his quarry square on the head.

They learn quickly, and in many things show surprising aptitude and intelligence. But just how primitive they really are can be better appreciated when I say that if you show one a photo of himself it would convey absolutely nothing to his untutored mind any more than a dog would recognize a picture of itself. In highly civilized communities we are apt to overlook the fact that it requires understanding to read a photograph, that is to say, if perspective or its equivalent do not enter into the composition.

In common with other aboriginal races the Indians readily assimilate the vices of the white man. It is also a recognized fact that, whenever they adopt something suggestive of civilized clothing, they soon succumb to the ravages of consumption and other pulmonary complaints. Thus a natural process of self-extermination is continually transpiring which makes it more than doubtful whether they will survive in sufficient numbers to be of any real use in years to come.

Among the more formidable tribes can be numbered the Campa, Aguaruna, Jivaro, Murato, and Witoto groups. These names, however, are not known to the tribesmen themselves, but have been given them by others. For example, an Orejone Indian would not tell you he belonged to a tribe of that name. The word signifies big ears, and was given them because they enlarge the lobe of the ear to great size.

One tribe will often apply a name to some other tribe, but it never seems to occur to its various members to associate themselves together under some distinct name of their own. As for naming individuals, that again is a rather involved subject. A man might be called after some bird or animal, but that

would correspond to our nickname, his real name being guarded as a strict secret, for if his enemies knew it he would, according to their ideas, be very much in their power.

There are many who labour under the delusion that these people are black like the negro; as a matter of fact, their colour varies from the very lightest copper to rather a darker tint. Their hair is generally straight and black, although in children dark brown hair is quite common. Men and women are physically well-developed, inclined to be short, and have by no means a revolting look except when painted and decorated for some great occasion. Polygamy is usual where women are plentiful, but with those tribes where men predominate a man is lucky if he gets even one wife.

Although the sexes have their distinctive duties in life, they live as a general rule under the most amicable terms. Cannibalism in a mild form is

QUICHUA WIVES AND MOTHERS FROM THE PERUVIAN UPLANDS

Quichuas are the original Indians of the Peruvian Sierra who formed the great population under the Inca regime. Simple-living people, clad in rough homespun, straw or felt hats made locally, and sometimes rough-hide sandals, they are rather melancholy folk. The men are somewhat dull of intellect, partly owing to over-indulgence in chewing coca leaf, the women more quick-witted

Photo, G. M. Dyott

HUMAN NERVE AND ADROITNESS PITTED AGAINST BRUTE STRENGTH AND FURY THRILL THE HEART OF PERU

Bull-fighting, with its apparently irresistible fascination for all peoples in whose veins Spanish blood runs, remains a national sport in Peru Lima, the capital, rejoices in its possession of the immense bull ring situated in the Plaza del Acho, on the north side of the Rimac river. Built in 1768, it has accommodation for eight thousand spectators, and on the frequent occasions of a great display every seat around the huge arena is occupied by Peruvians, half-castes, and Indians, all in an equal state of uproarious excitement

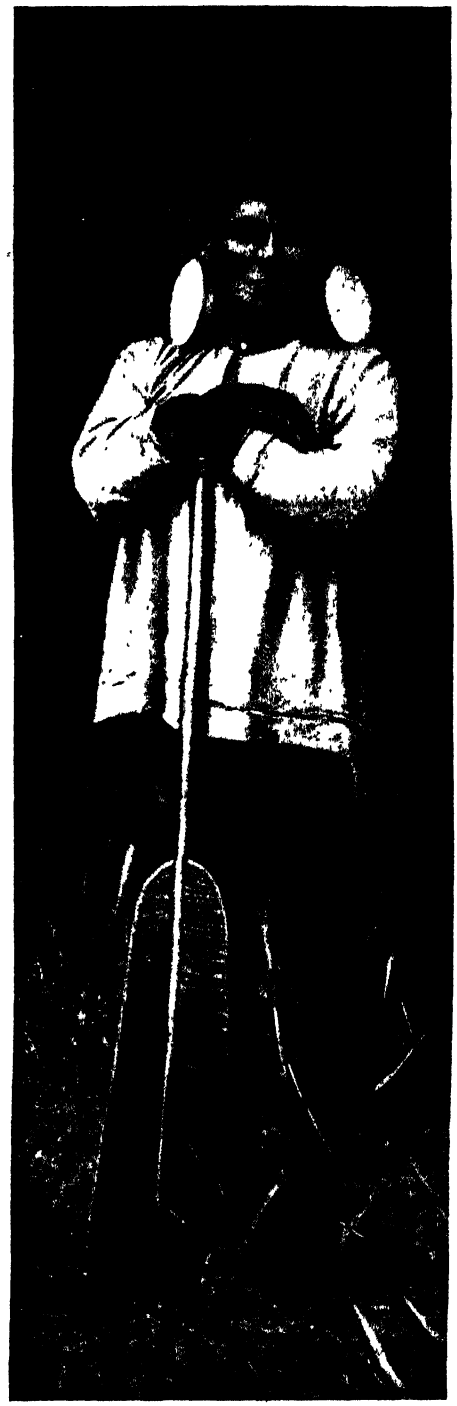
Photo, G. M. Dyott

occasionally practised, but the systematic killing of human beings for the pleasure of eating them is unknown. The greatest degradation that can possibly befall a man is to be eaten by his enemies. For this reason there are some tribes who feast on certain portions of their victims after they have been slain in combat. In doing this they believe that the physical strength of their adversary enters into their own body, so that the ceremony is more in the nature of a religious rite than a banquet to satisfy their appetites. Women are usually tabooed from taking part in such feasts.

In the matter of clothing not much in the way of variety is to be observed. It is chiefly conspicuous by its absence, except in districts where mosquitoes are plentiful. In such parts a long shirt called " cushma " is worn, its sole object being to protect the wearer from the ravages of these venomous insects. Clothing is never adopted out of any sense of propriety, and in the Putumayo is dispensed with entirely, different coloured pigments being smeared on the skin instead. The effect produced by one hundred or more of these people dancing outside their communal dwelling, their bodies daubed over with red, yellow, and white, is grotesque and savage in the extreme.

A good deal of variety is to be found in the form of habitation built by the different tribes. The Campas make only temporary shelters of wild cane, which are occupied for a time and then abandoned in favour of a new one in some other locality. The cause of abandoning them is, as a rule, the death of someone in the household. The spirit of the deceased needs a house to dwell in; hence they leave the old one for its particular benefit, burying the body in the centre before vacating the premises.

The Aguarunas go to the other extreme, and the neatness, to say nothing of the geometrical precision, of their large dwellings is quite remarkable. They are in the form of a perfect oval,



SELF-SATISFIED VANITY
From their practice of enlarging the lobe of the ear by inserting immense disks of wood the name Orejone, signifying big ears, is given to one Peruvian forest tribe on the Napo river
Photo, G. M. Dyott

AMAZONIAN HUNTER PROUD OF HIS METAL SPEAR

Besides bows and arrows, most of the forest Indians use the spear as a weapon of the chase The haft is of stout wood and the point or blade is usually of chonta palm, which is almost as hard as metal. A few spears are found with metal blades, probably taken centuries ago from the Spanish pioneers, and naturally are highly prized by their fortunate possessors

Photo, G M Dyott

the roofs heavily thatched with palm-leaves, and the walls formed of straight poles driven vertically in the ground and lashed together in a very substantial manner. At either end is a large slab of wood which acts as a door. During the hours of darkness this is barricaded with strong cross-members.

With the more warlike tribes observation towers built upon long poles 25 feet high are not uncommon. They are generally adjacent to the house, and command a good view of the country around. From these lofty perches a sharp look-out is kept against possible attack.

Publicity is never courted in the jungle—just the reverse. Safety lies in silence and obscurity; hence the Indian does not advertise his whereabouts. He secretes himself away in a remote corner where he can live unmolested and safe from marauding bands. He will even go to great pains to make the pathway which leads to his humble home as obscure as possible, and the more difficult it is to follow the better he is pleased.

Contrary to what one might expect, food is always the great problem. A tuberous root known as yuca is grown by many tribes, likewise the vegetable banana or plantain These two form the chief articles of diet, and are consumed on all occasions. Where a tribe lives near a river fish are speared, whenever possible, or else caught in cleverly arranged traps. Of meats, wild animals, such as monkeys, are considered a great delicacy, likewise jungle fowl. The tapir is only eaten by certain tribes, and even then under restrictions.

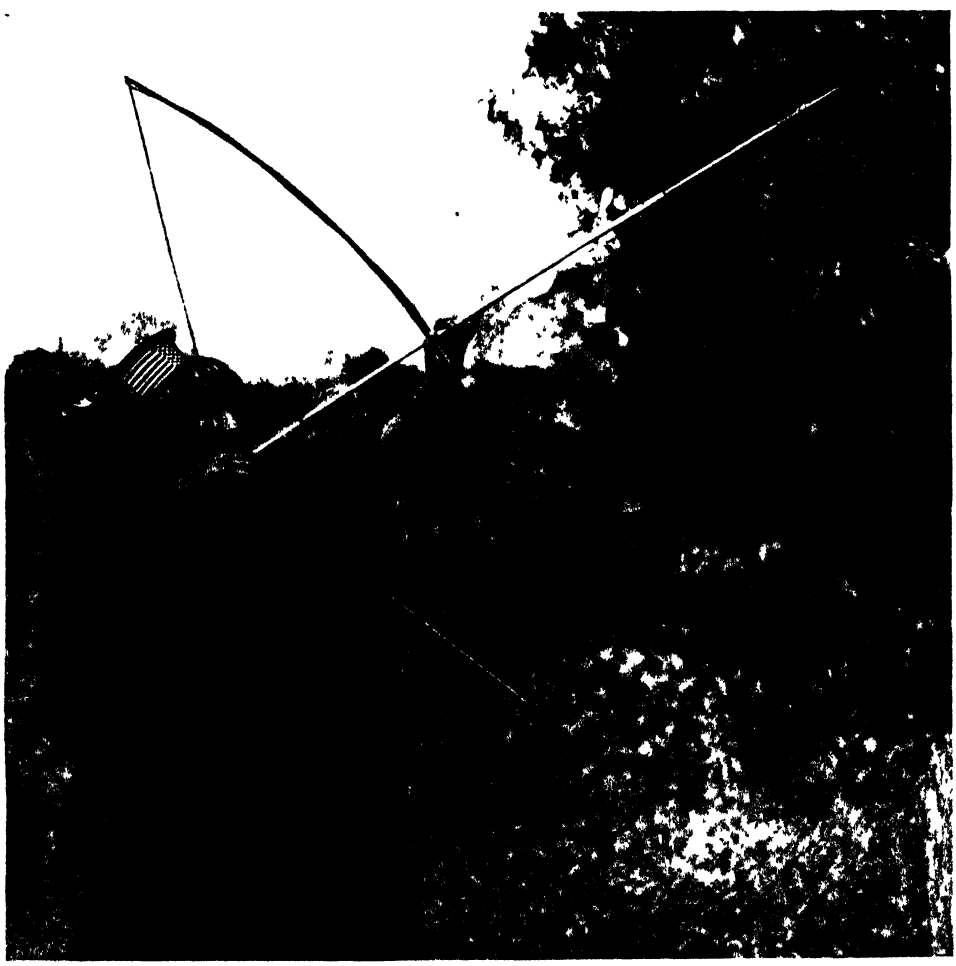
The great obstacle, of course, is the difficulty of preserving food in the extreme heat. Everything goes bad very quickly, and it is a case of feast or famine. Every morning the entire community hunt for food, and at noon the one meal of the day is prepared. What is left over goes towards the evening repast, and the remnants, if any, for breakfast the next morning. Certain delicacies are to be had, such as the heart of special palm-trees, large snails found in the woods, or else peculiar white grubs which bore their way into the fallen trunks of chonta palms.

There is not much to tempt the appetite of the fastidious, but after a week on nothing else but water the

palate becomes less particular, and the most appalling dishes are devoured with relish. Fermented drink in some form or variety is brewed by almost every tribe, and on those occasions when celebrations are held excessive drinking is universally indulged in. Some of these benighted people even imagine that the more intoxicated they become the more they please the good spirits who watch over them.

It is not an uncommon practice among some to assist their old relations out of the world as soon as their span of usefulness is completed. The young also are given very little encouragement when coming into it. From earliest infancy, when the newly-born child is treated to a cold plunge in the river, it has to lead a Spartan-like existence in every sense of the word. Weaklings soon succumb and only the very robust have a chance of survival.

The slightest symptoms of bad health are attributed to evil spirits and may receive drastic treatment, as, for instance, a small boy whom I saw in one household. He was suffering from a



OUT AFTER WILD FOWL ON THE BANKS OF THE PANGOA RIVER

Dwelling in the valley of the Pangoa river, this Indian belongs to one of the many subdivisions of the Campa tribe, widely distributed over the Amazonian basin. Keen hunters, their only weapon is the bow, and unlike some of the other tribes they use no poison on the arrow. In his sleeveless gown of wild cotton, and plumed coronal, he shows a certain nobility of feature and of character

Photo, G. M Dyott

DELIGHTFUL MODE OF TRAVEL ALONG THE WINDING WATERWAYS OF THE MONTAÑA OF PERU

It is estimated that in the Montaña of Peru there are twenty thousand miles of streams and rivers, affluents of the Amazon, available for navigation by small boats. All the Indians are expert watermen, the native craft employed being rafts of balsa trunks and dug-out canoes, often of cedar. These are about thirty-five feet long by two feet wide, and commonly have an awning of plaited leaf set upon cane uprights in the stern. They are propelled by paddles of willow wood

Photo, G. M. Dyott

PACK-TRAINS GATHERED AT THE RAILHEAD, CHILETE, TO TRANSPORT FREIGHT OVER THE SIERRAS

As the terminus of the railway from the seaport of Pacasmayo, Chilete is a very busy place Twice a week hundreds of mules, horses, and donkeys congregate there to transport the freight brought by train from the coast into Cajamarca and other towns of the interior Chilete stands upon the western Cordillera, and is an excessively hot and arid place, where nothing grows to relieve the utter barrenness of the rock, except a few poor bushes near the bed of the river

Photo G M Dyott

SHY CAMPA ADOLESCENCE

Campa Indians are well developed men, pleasant faced when not paint bedaubed. All the members of this tribe wear cotton shirts, or cushmas, as protection against mosquitoes

Photo, G. M. Dyott

complaint of the eyes, which was regarded in the light of an evil omen of such a serious character that the unfortunate child was deliberately hung up to a tree in the forest by his family and there left to die.

Another curious custom of the Muratos is that of drowning a newly-born infant if its sex is not in accordance with the parents' wishes. Luckily, their desires are not always expressed in advance. But should they be so, and disappointment follow, the offending babe is hurled into the river without further ceremony. The river is the natural burial ground of many, but men killed in action are often mummified and placed in the centre of a hut as an object of veneration. Other tribes, again, hang their dead in the river until the fish have picked the bones clean. The skeleton is then dyed red and placed in the house.

It seems astonishing that such customs can still survive within a comparatively short distance of Iquitos, the great inland port of Peru on the Amazon, 2,147 miles from the open sea. It is, however, easily explained, for throughout this vast area, covered with exuberant vegetation, no pathways are found except the rivers themselves. The main streams, stretching out in all directions, are like great tentacles to civilization. They are traversed in up-to-date launches, and the banks are dotted with a fair number of settlements. But away from the river all is unknown, and to hack a pathway

ARROWSMITH AND FLETCHER

Among his fellow-tribesmen of the Peruvian Montaña this Campa Indian was honourably known as Chucupiari, which being interpreted means the maker of arrows

Photo, G. M. Dyott

THE PHILIPPINES: A SMILE FROM FILIPINA

Tartan travestied in scarlet and gold, and a curtain of softly clashing beads from rounded neck to lissom waist, express the sunny gaiety of this sweet sprite from a tropic woodland of the Pacific

To face page 4102

Photo, Philippine Bureau of Science

SKILLED IN THE ART OF BLOWING INSTANT DEATH

Some Peruvian forest Indians are experts with the blow-gun, almost identical in make and use with the weapon of the Dayaks of Borneo, illustrated on pages 826 832 The Peruvian tribesmen use a poison on the darts which causes paralysis of the heart immediately it scratches the skin, without however affecting the edibility of the victim, as the poison is only fatal if it enters the blood direct

Photo, G M Dyott

CLOISTERS OF THE CONVENT CHURCH OF LA MERCED AT LIMA

Capital of a country where Roman Catholicism is a powerful living force Lima has some magnificent and richly endowed churches Apart from the cathedral one of the finest is that of the Convent of La Merced, whose proudly imposing cloisters are here shown Conventual establishments both for men and for women are numerous in the city, which altogether has some seventy religious foundations

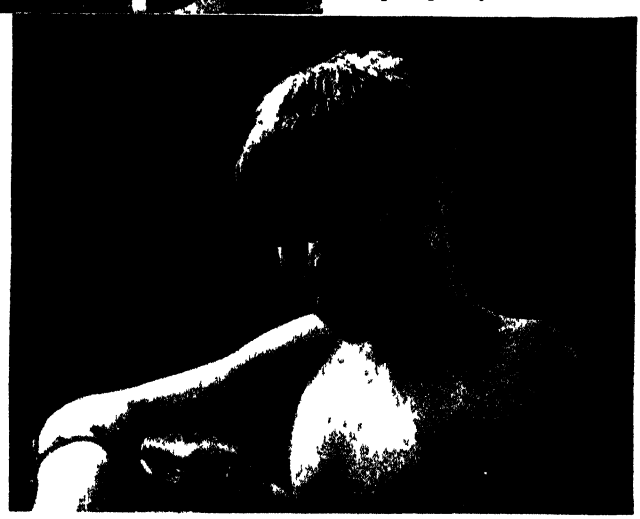
IDENTIFICATION BADGES IN PERU

When a Peruvian Indian sets out on a journey he usually daubs his face with scarlet dye with grotesque effect to indicate the tribe to which he belongs Necklaces of seeds and beads represent his total worldly possessions

through the dense undergrowth is a herculean task.

Hence, while the half-caste settler keeps to those places that are easily accessible, the Indian lives a life of complete seclusion far from the haunts of the white man. Outside of Iquitos there are many settlements of importance where natives engage in business of some kind or another. Cotton and sugar-cane grow abundantly, coffee and vanilla beans thrive, and Panamá hats are manufactured in places like Moyobamba. And then the collection of rubber was at one time the occupation of thousands of half-breeds.

Since the Great War the Upper Amazon has suffered from stagnation. Trade in Iquitos, formerly a busy metropolis, is almost dead, and until Europe itself recovers from the effects of the war not much can be expected from these extremely fertile but distant lands. Oil will undoubtedly play a big part in future development, likewise timber and the mineral riches on the eastern slope of the Andes Then, with a comprehensive scheme of transportation, a period of prosperity will ensue.



SCARLET STRIPES THAT SPELL DANGER

Facial marks of vivid scarlet proclaim this lad to be of the very formidable and treacherous Jivaro tribe settled near the Cachi Yaru river. His wristlets are of snakeskin, decorated with tufts of coloured feathers

Photo, G. M. Dyott

CAJAMARCA RICH IN MEMORIES OF PIZARRO AND ATAHUALPA THE LAST OF THE INCAS

Capital of the department the same name Cajamarca a flourishing town of the Peruvian highlands It can be reached by railway north east of Pacasmayo on the Pacific and is picturesquely situated among wild rugged hills On a little hill are remains of the palace of the last Inca emperor Atahualpa who was imprisoned here by Pizarro and near by are the Baños del Inca hot springs where Atahualpa was killed by the Spaniards 3

Photo G. M. Dott

Peru

II. From Inca Empire to Latin Republic

By C. R. Enock, C F, F R G S

Author of "The Republics of Central and South America" etc

PERU fronts upon the Pacific Ocean stretching from latitudes 3° 21′ S to 18° S with about 1 400 miles of seaboard extending thence across the mountains into the forests of the Amazon which great river affords the State what is almost the equivalent of an eastern seaboard ocean steamers from the Atlantic ascending the Amazon for 3 000 miles

The official area of the republic including that portion occupied by or in dispute with neighbouring States is given as 740 000 square miles without the disputed territories it is about 439 000 square miles

The physical configuration of the country falls into three distinct zones that of the littoral that of the mountains and that of the Amazon drained plains and forests beyond

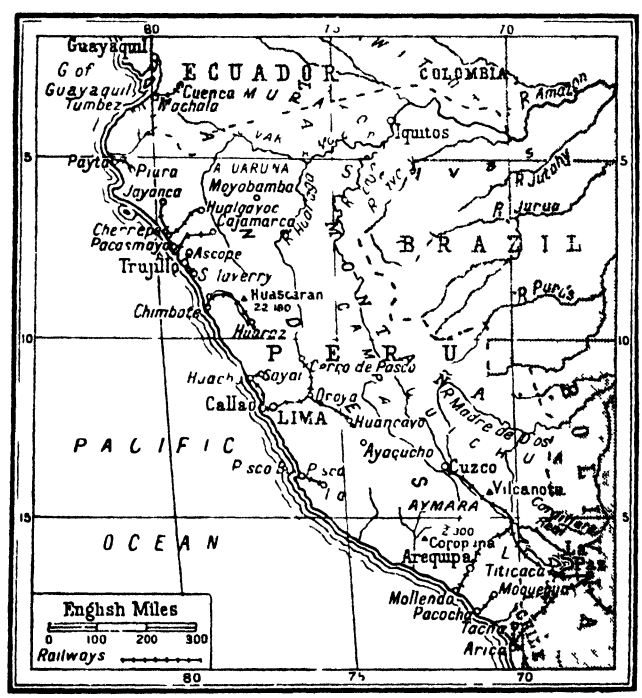
Although the country lies entirely within the tropics the general conditions are not such as would be expected in the torrid zone The coastal region a strip less than a hundred miles in width to the foot hills is almost entirely free of vegetation the purely desert areas having a Sahara like aridity a condition strongly marked north of Lima and Callao and in those provinces such as Tarapaca now in Chilian possession The condition follows on the almost entire absence of rain due to two causes—namely the interception of the moisture-laden trade winds from the east by the Andes, and the influence of the Humboldt current, flowing in a northerly direction up the coast, with a prevailing cool wind from its lower temperature, which takes up moisture instead of depositing it

At certain seasons, however, a slight mist-drizzle, or garua, falls sufficient to permit the wild flowers to spring forth Under irrigation great quantities of the Peruvian cotton, also sugar cane, vines, and other products flourish.

The Andes consist in Peru of two—in places three main ranges namely the western the central and the eastern Cordillera a system which covers a large part of the country reaching a width of 300 miles Vast relatively bleak tablelands or altiplanicies often enclosing large lakes are the predominating feature and in the abrupt intervening valleys flow great streams tributary in most cases to the Amazon their waters born of the perpetual snows of the high summits and the heavy and constant rainfall Smaller streams run to the coast

The highest peaks of the Peruvian Andes reach more than 20 000 feet above sea level the principal being Coropuna 22 000 feet and Huascaran 22 180 feet, while the elevation of the tablelands and principal passes is from 12 000 to 16 000 feet Towns of considerable size flourish in these high regions and great mineral wealth especially in silver gold copper lead and in places coal exists

Descending thence to the Montaña or forested region on the world is



THE REPUBLIC OF PERU

encountered. The line of tree-life is entered at 11,000 feet, whence the country slopes steeply to the vast Amazon forest system, crossed by innumerable streams and inhabited in the main by tribes of savage or semi-savage Indians, a region of great potential wealth, at present barely represented by the single industry of rubber-collecting.

Dawn of Peruvian History

The history of Peru may be said to begin with the Incas, whose dynasty appears to have been established towards the close of the eleventh century A.D. Prior to the Incas there flourished a folk which may be described as the "Andine people," of Aymara race, whose arts and culture the Incas inherited, a folk whose culture whether aboriginal or derived, must have been a very ancient one, doubtless contemporaneous with the early cultures of Chaldea and Egypt, with both of which certain analogy has been drawn.

Their principal remains are in the megalithic fortresses and other structures still scattered over the country, and in pottery, and so forth. The remains of other ancient folk on the seaboard would seem to point to some Mongolian origin or contact. Indeed, the type of aboriginal found all over the country is often strikingly Mongolian.

The last reigning prince, Atahualpa, was shamefully executed by Pizarro and the Spaniards. To his father, Huayna Capac, is attributed the construction of the famous Inca roads, running from Cuzco, the ancient Peruvian capital, to Quito, more than 1,000 miles. The Inca rule has been described as a beneficent Socialism, and it was certainly a system of just apportionment of the resources of the land to the general good of the community.

Pizarro and the Conquest of Peru

This civilization was almost completely stamped out by the Spaniards. In 1526, their enthusiasm aroused by the stories of voyagers, Francisco Pizarro, a poor emigrant from Spain to Panamá, Diego Almagro, and the priest Hernando Lluque, signed a deed of partnership to conquer the land lying south of the Isthmus vaguely known as Peru. There were great hardships and disappointments on the first voyage. In the midst of a mutiny of his discontented followers, Pizarro drew with the point of his sword a line upon the sand of the desolate shore where they had landed. "North of this line," he exclaimed, "lies Panamá, poverty, and probably imprisonment for debt and failure; south lies Peru, and perhaps untold gold. Let those who will return; for my part I go south who follows?"

Only a dozen stepped across the line to join him. These intrepid spirits were afterwards rewarded when Pizarro went to lay his plans before the Court of Spain which he favourably impressed. Subsequently in 1532, Pizarro and his followers reached Cajamarca, in the Andine fastnesses, and the Conquest of Peru was accomplished almost at a blow. Pizarro ruled the country until 1541, when he was assassinated by Almagro and the latter's associates.

The Spanish sovereigns, and the viceroys they appointed over Peru, in general strove to protect the native princes and people, but the work was undone by the colonists. In 1542, under Charles V., the "new laws" were enacted for the Indies, and the system of *Encomiendas*, or grants of estates, was set up, but great abuses were visited upon the Indians, and under the *mita*, or system of forced labour in the mines, the unfortunate Peruvians perished in their thousands. The last effort of the Indians to throw off their oppressors was in 1780, under the Inca descendant Tupac Amaru.

Through War to Independence

For nearly three hundred years the rule of Spain lay firmly on Peru, a long process of viceroy, priest, and colonist; the Indians in political and economic debasement, except that by intermarriage with the colonists, the Peruvian nation was formed, for the Spaniards did not take wives to the New World, and so were forced to mate with the native women. The Spanish character, culture, and institutions were thus stamped upon the land for all time.

The movement for independence began in South America in the first decade of the nineteenth century, gaining added force by reason of the conquest of Spain by France in 1807. The American-born Spanish people were discontented under the commercial and official restrictions placed upon them by the mother country, though not necessarily disloyal. Added to Spanish monopoly was the burden of the Inquisition, which, between 1581 and 1776, burned numbers of heretics at the stake in Lima. However, Lima being the viceregal and military centre of Spanish rule, disaffection began in the distant provinces, and Chile and Buenos Aires—Argentina—declared their independence in 1816 and 1817.

Under command of Lord Cochrane, and with British officers, a fleet from Valparaiso convoyed Argentine and Chilean troops under the Argentine general San Martin to Peru; the invaders were enthusiastically received, the viceroy with-

drew into the interior, and independence was proclaimed July 28, 1821 Bolivar, the famous South American Liberator, arrived in 1823, organizing an army to attack the viceroy

Then followed the fateful battles of Junin and Ayacucho, the one in August, the other in December of the following year, fought out on the bleak uplands of the Cordillera, when the viceroy and his army were defeated, taken prisoners, and the rule of Iberia disappeared for ever from the South American continent

From that time until 1879 Peru continued upon a chequered course of self-government under successive presidents, some of them enlightened statesmen, striving for the good of the republic, others dictators, or holding office for the spoils of office However despite revolutions and political murders, the Peruvians showed marked administrative, legal, oratorical and literary ability, and Lima has always enjoyed a certain reputation in this connection The condition of the bulk of the people, the Indians and lower class mestizos remains politically and economically debased

In 1879 a terrible disaster befell the republic in the war with Chile, in which Peru, despite her valour, was entirely defeated, the country was occupied by Chilean troops for several years, and was finally mulcted in an enormous indemnity by the cession of the immensely valuable nitrate provinces of Terapacà.

The Chileans alleged a secret treaty made between Peru and Bolivia as the casus belli, but publication of the document showed it to be a purely defensive one, and the real object of the attack is considered to have been the wealth of the guano and nitrate deposits, and these, after bloody struggles by land and sea, went into the possession of Chile. The still rankling question of Tacna and Arica had a similar origin After the treaty of Ancon, 1883, the Chileans withdrew.

Since that time Peru has continued to develop her national life, with, however, unfortunate intervals of revolutionary strife and economic setback Boundary questions with neighbouring states have been a source of trouble, financial difficulties, both at home and abroad, delayed the progress of the state But considerable development in mining and agriculture has taken place, and a better political spirit is apparent

During the Great War of 1914-1918 Peru favoured the Allied cause, and enriched herself by the export to Britain of cotton, sugar, and minerals The outstanding problem for the republic is the economic and educational elevation of the Mestizos and Indians, a condition by which, in the future, all Spanish-American nations will stand or fall.

PERU: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Republic of South America, lying between head waters of Amazon and Pacific Forms part of the Andine system, the Andes mountains dividing it into a comparatively rainless coastal region backed by Western Cordillera, behind which range is a plateau from 11,000 to 13,000 feet high, broken by mountains Behind this again rise the Eastern Cordillera to an elevation of more than 20,000 feet Beyond all is the Montaña, a region of forest about the Amazon basin Many streams drain from Western Cordillera to Pacific, and irrigation is carried on Total area about 650,000 square miles, with an estimated population of over 4,000,000

Government and Constitution

Centralised or unitary government. Executive power rests with President, elected for five years, with Cabinet of five Legislature carried on by Senate of thirty five, and House of Representatives with one hundred and ten members Parliament meets annually and may be convened as often as necessary There are twenty two departments, subdivided into provinces under Prefects and sub Prefects, and three local governmental sessions for north, south, and centre of state respectively.

Defence

Military service universal and compulsory for two years in line, seven years in first reserve, five years in second reserve regiments, and fifteen years in National Guard. Peru contains five military zones each with entire division. Peace strength of army about 11,000, with gendarmerie of some 8,000 Many state-aided rifle clubs. Navy includes two old cruisers, one light cruiser, one destroyer, and two submarines There is a flotilla of seven upon the Amazon.

Commerce and Industries

Main agricultural products are cotton, coffee, sugar, hides, and skins Sugar grown mainly in coastal belt Maize, olives, rice, tobacco, and the vine are also cultivated Guano industry has declined Minerals provide secondary source of wealth and include silver, petroleum, copper, coal, tungsten ore, gold, lead, and salt Imports for 1920 totalled £17,056,758, and exports £35,322,226. Standard coin the gold libra, nominal value, 20s.

Communications

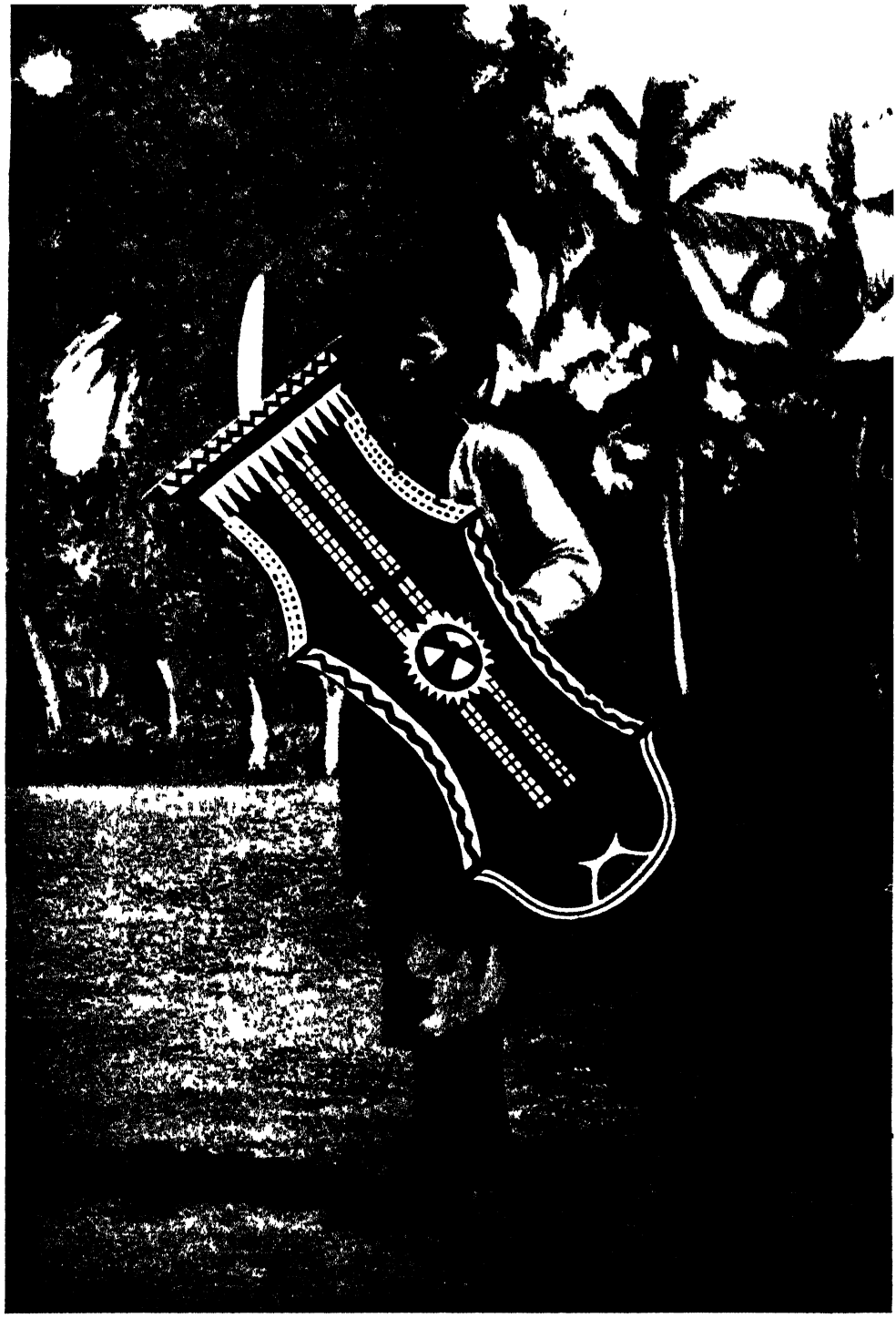
There are in the republic some 2,000 miles of railway mainly in state ownership, and about 500 miles of motor roads Telegraph lines aggregate about 9,000 miles, and there are over 700 post offices Three submarine cables to Chile and the northern republics and nineteen wireless stations.

Religion and Education

State religion Roman Catholicism, but all creeds tolerated Lima has archbishopric, and there are thirteen bishoprics. Elementary education between the ages of seven and fourteen free and obligatory Over 3,000 primary schools with staff of more than 5,000, and over 194,000 pupils. There are besides twenty nine state high schools and universities at Lima, Cuzco, Arequipa, and Trujillo.

Chief Towns

Lima, capital (estimated population 176,000), Callao (53,000), Arequipa (35,000), Cuzco (12,000), Ayacucho (14,000), Huacho (6,000).



MOSLEM FANATIC OF THE PHILIPPINES RIPE FOR FIGHT NOW

Numerically, the Moros are well in the minority with the Filipinos, and yet, by their mad lust for slaying and their utter indifference to anything else, no matter what the odds, they are very well feared by their neighbours. The faith of the Prophet, and the fervid fanaticism so often associated with it, is their driving force, with death to the dog of an unbeliever

The Philippine Islands—

Warlike Tribes of a Pacific Archipelago

By Arnold Wright

Author of ' Early English Adventurers in the East," etc

IN an oceanic region which is one vast archipelago the Philippine Islands occupy a position of considerable prominence and importance They look out upon one of the greatest trade routes in the world that to the Far East and they closely neighbour the vast empire of China with all its unlimited potential wealth of commercial opportunity

Nearly all the leading ports of the further Orient are within a few days' sailing of the Philippine capital Manila Thus Hong Kong is but 631 miles away and only 573 miles separate the city from Sandakan the seat of the British North Borneo administration Shanghai with its 1 162 miles of intervening sea Saigon with its 907, and Singapore with its 1 370 are also comparatively within easy reach, while the fact that Yokohama is no farther than 1 757 miles to the north east not more than three or four days' sailing for the most modern battleships has excited uneasy comment on the part of American writers who have deplored the strategical weakness of the islands for the occupying power, the United States of America. The position being what it is, the islands are likely to become not less, but more important with the lapse of time They constitute hostages to fortune given by the great democracy of the West, and as such have acquired a political significance which never attached to them in the period of Spanish rule

The map of Asia reveals the Philippines as a few small specks in the ocean and insignificant they undoubtedly are relatively to the huge expanse of the Eastern Continent But if you adopt the late Lord Salisbury's advice and consult a large map you will have a greater respect for this colonial appanage of the U S A Your eye will range over a curious tangle of islands, clustering for the most part thickly together and presenting a bewildering maze of channels and straits with, to lend variety, inland seas which derive their nomenclature from adjacent insular territory.

THE PHILIPPINE ARCHIPELAGO

Altogether there are included in the group no fewer than 7,083 islands, ranging from tiny mangrove-fringed islets, or treeless coral reefs of a few acres, to the

RHYTHMIC RICE-THRESHING AGAINST A STONE

Filipinos are fond of working to a rhythm and in setting the rice they sometimes employ a string band, those able to interpret the music most nimbly being in great demand Here the rice is held by constriction with a string and two sticks

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

quite imposing islands of Luzón and Mindanao, the former of which is almost as large as Cuba. The group is a great repertory of natural and largely undeveloped wealth.

Copper is found in most of the larger islands, extensive iron and manganese deposits have been located, coal measures are frequent, and gold has been mined for centuries There are also vast virgin forests of great potential value. But the inertia bred of the long spell of Spanish rule still prevails to a sufficient extent among the Filipinos to check enterprise Geographically, and to a great extent ethnologically, the Philippines belong to the Malayan sphere of influence, which in the days before the European appeared in Eastern seas extended from its home in Java and Sumatra through the Eastern Archipelago to the confines of China The great seafaring race, overrunning the islands, subjugated the aboriginal tribes and stamped upon them their racial characteristics and to a less degree their religion It is highly probable that the conquest was never complete the task would have been too onerous for a people whose home was principally on the sea and who instinctively clung to the littoral in forming their land settlements.

The colonisation, such as it was, resulted in the creation of a number of petty principalities of the familiar Malayan type Sultans or rajahs, seated in safety in some coastal stronghold, dominated the trade of the islands, and to a certain extent exercised an overlordship over the tribes of the interior. In the course of centuries the Chinese, with their unerring instinct for trade, found their way to the Philippines and in stolid fashion entrenched themselves in communities which ultimately gave them a notable place among the polyglot population of the group

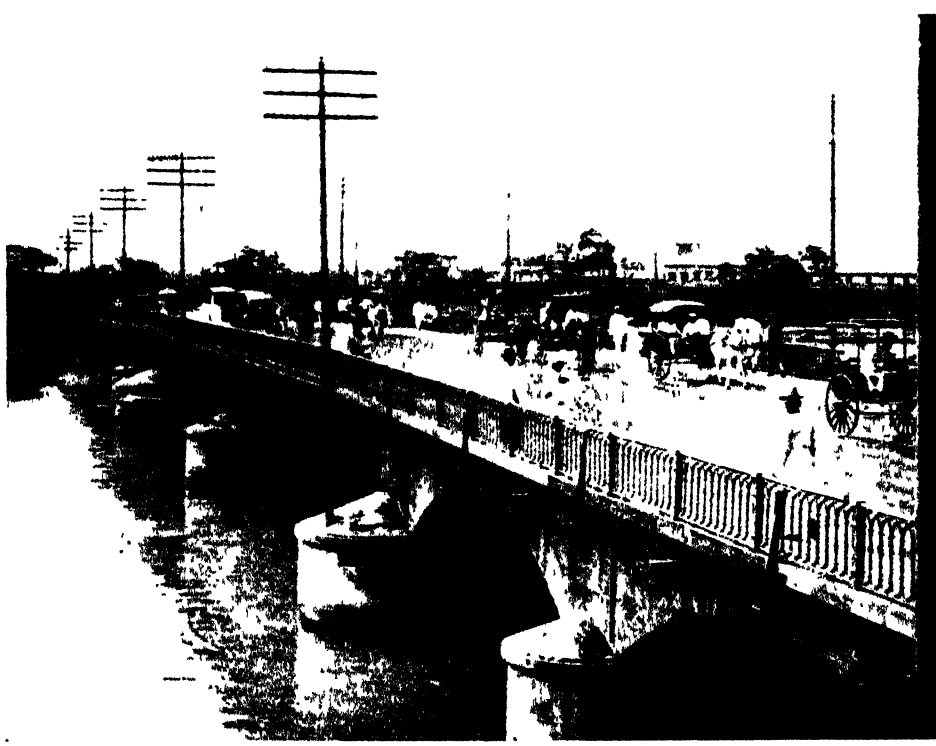
The life of the islands, judging from Chinese records which have come down to us, was not of the Arcadian order. Piracy appears to have been rife, and "the good old rule, the simple plan"

was everywhere much honoured. In spite of it all, the Filipinos of the ancient stock managed to preserve their traditional characteristics when the Spaniards occupied the islands.

Some of the tribes, notably the Igorots, were clever workers in metal, and understood and exercised the art of smelting copper after the Chinese method. They were also gold miners, and clever ones at that, judging from the character of old workings. Chinese influence is perhaps to be detected here, as it is elsewhere in Malaya where old mining operations are in question. Nevertheless, the best of the Philippine tribes were certainly very far removed from savagery when the first European set foot in the Philippines.

Probably the most interesting, certainly the most picturesque, element in the amalgam of races which is to be found in the Philippines to-day is that supplied by the non-Christian tribes. These, mostly hardy people driven by the advancing tide first of Malayan and then of European conquest to the mountainous regions of the interior, have maintained in their rugged homes a successful resistance to the influences, religious and secular, which have transformed the bulk of the inhabitants of the islands to the semblance, at least, of a Christian and civilized people.

Many of them are pagans of a primitive type, possessing no temples and few of the symbols of religious worship, and observing no rites apart from a few superstitious ceremonies associated with the laying of evil spirits. Their attitude towards Christianity is well illustrated by a remark made to a Spanish friar by a tribesman, who, after listening to a fervid discourse on



MANILA'S BRIDGE OF SPAIN THAT SPANS THE PASIG RIVER

With the Pasig rolling between, Manila is ancient upon the one side and modern on the other. The old town, enclosed within a sixteenth-century wall, has an aged cathedral and an archbishop's palace, but upon crossing this bridge, signs of the progressive influence of the United States appear. Modern houses, tramways, drainage and electric lighting contrast with the remnants of Spain over the water

the virtues of the Christian religion is exemplified in the life of S Augustine, coolly observed that no coloured man ever became a white man's saint!

Here no doubt we may catch a note of the bitterness aroused in the savage mind by the relentless system of propaganda consistently carried out by the

jet black piercing eyes and thick curly hair arranged in one perfect ball are pleasing and picturesque

To see the Negrito girl at her best one must view her as visitors to a Negrito settlement occasionally do playing vivaciously the leading part in a wedding ceremony In this primitive

BEVY OF KALINGAS OF EVERY AGE AND IN EVERY COLOUR

Spanish military enterprise was never able to subdue the head hunting Kalingas who have now begun to step along the road to civilization under American rule Nevertheless the Spanish occupation has left a shadowy influence on Kalinga dress especially in the case of the woman in the right of the photograph But, in the main an unalterable desire for a clash of colours remains dominant

Photo Philippine Bureau of Science

Spaniards from the very earliest period of their rule—a system associated with persecution and general oppression of those who declined to undergo conversion

On the lowest rung of the Philippine racial ladder is the Negrito, a race of rudimentary development and little higher in the scale of civilization than the Australian aborigines or the Veddas of Ceylon Of low stature, extremely dark in colour, and with curly, matted hair, they are not impressive as types of humanity But the young damsels of the tribe with their

community marriage by capture is the rule, and the young bride is expected to dart hither and thither in the forest, to be pursued and brought back by the amorous swain who has designed her for his helpmate

The actual marriage rite is of the simplest, consisting merely of the drenching of the young couple with a vessel of water and the putting of the heads of "these twain" together by the wise man of the village After this they are free to leave on their honeymoon, which is taken in the mountains

BRIGHT-BEADED ADORNMENT

This girl of the Ilongots has a strong Mongol suggestion in her almond eyes. The former inaccessibility of this people is being overcome

WOMAN OF THE SUBUANOS

One of the chief traits of this forest people is that both sexes affect tightly buttoned clothing like this full figured lady

ILONGOT FOREST BEAUTY

Dwelling mostly in the thickest forest, the Ilongots live a wandering life. Like this girl many have in them Negrito blood

BEADS, BRAID, AND TATTOOING

Native workmanship is well seen in this Igorot woman's camisa or upper garment, from which appear her well-tattooed arms

Photos, Philippine Bureau of Science

KALINGA BLOUSE IN BRIEF

Kalinga girls of this tribe reveal themselves unexpectedly, and are fond of this style in which the bodice ends early and the skirt begins late

GLITTERING GAUDINESS

Old Spanish pesetas and other coins are the secret of this coat's success, giving a wink and a glitter to this Kalinga boy's jaunty walk

STURDY WOMANHOOD OF BENGUET

Situated among the highlands of Northern Luzón is the province of Benguet. Its park-like slopes are suitable for Europeans

WIFE OF A WILD-MAN CHIEF

Among the "wild men" of Luzón are the Tingians This is the wife of the head man in Balbalasan, a village on the Kalinga marches

Photos, Philippine Bureau of Science

COAST-DWELLER OF DAVAO GULF

In Mindanao Moros predominate, but other tribes have maintained themselves, among them the Bagolos, whence comes this woman

BAGOLO WARRIOR DANDY

With necklaces about his chest and bells upon his highly ornamented tunic, he combines a dashing appearance with a martial men

FEARSOME WITH FILED TEETH

Besides the disks that he and his fellow tribesmen commonly wear in their ears, this Bagolo has his front teeth filed to a saw-like semblance

Photos, American Field Museum, Chicago

MANDAYA IN WESTERN MODES

Except for the barbaric display of beads, this lady has adopted an almost European style in hairdressing and the cut of her clothes

Photos, Philippine Bureau of Science

WEARY WOMEN PORTERS' WAYSIDE REST

Among the Igorots the women have to do much of the heavier and more uninteresting work, and among their duties is that of porterage. Here a few have paused to squat and chatter by the roadside and ease aching shoulders of their heavy burdens

and lasts for five days. At different times, and notably of late during the American occupation, attempts have been made to civilize the Negritos, but without success. They appear to be entirely beyond the reach of reform as Europeans commonly understand the phrase.

Standing apart as a class among the uncivilized Philippine tribes are the Igorots and Ifugaos, both races of fine physical development and intellectually superior in every way to the Negritos and their conquerors among the mountain population. The former have in their veins a heavy infusion of Malay blood and to this fact may probably be due their addiction to head hunting. Until quite recent years the custom was fully honoured and in the early days of United States rule the American officers on entering an Igorot village often came across gruesome evidence of a head hunt which had been conducted against some offending neighbouring tribe.

Civilizing influences are now tending to turn the Igorots from their old sanguinary ways. They are even learning English under American teachers, with occasionally amusing results. Thus according to Mr. Dean Worcester, a member of the Philippine Commission who was charged with a special mission to the non-Christian tribes, at the first Igorot school the teacher, a Mrs. Kelly, taught the boys respectfully to salute her in the morning, and shortly thereafter American travellers in the vicinity were addressed by highly punctilious Igorots with the cheerful greeting "Good-morning, Mrs. Kelly!" A more practical outlet for tribal intelligence has been found in the construction of bridle paths throughout their country. With their natural ingenuity the Igorots have proved highly efficient at this work.

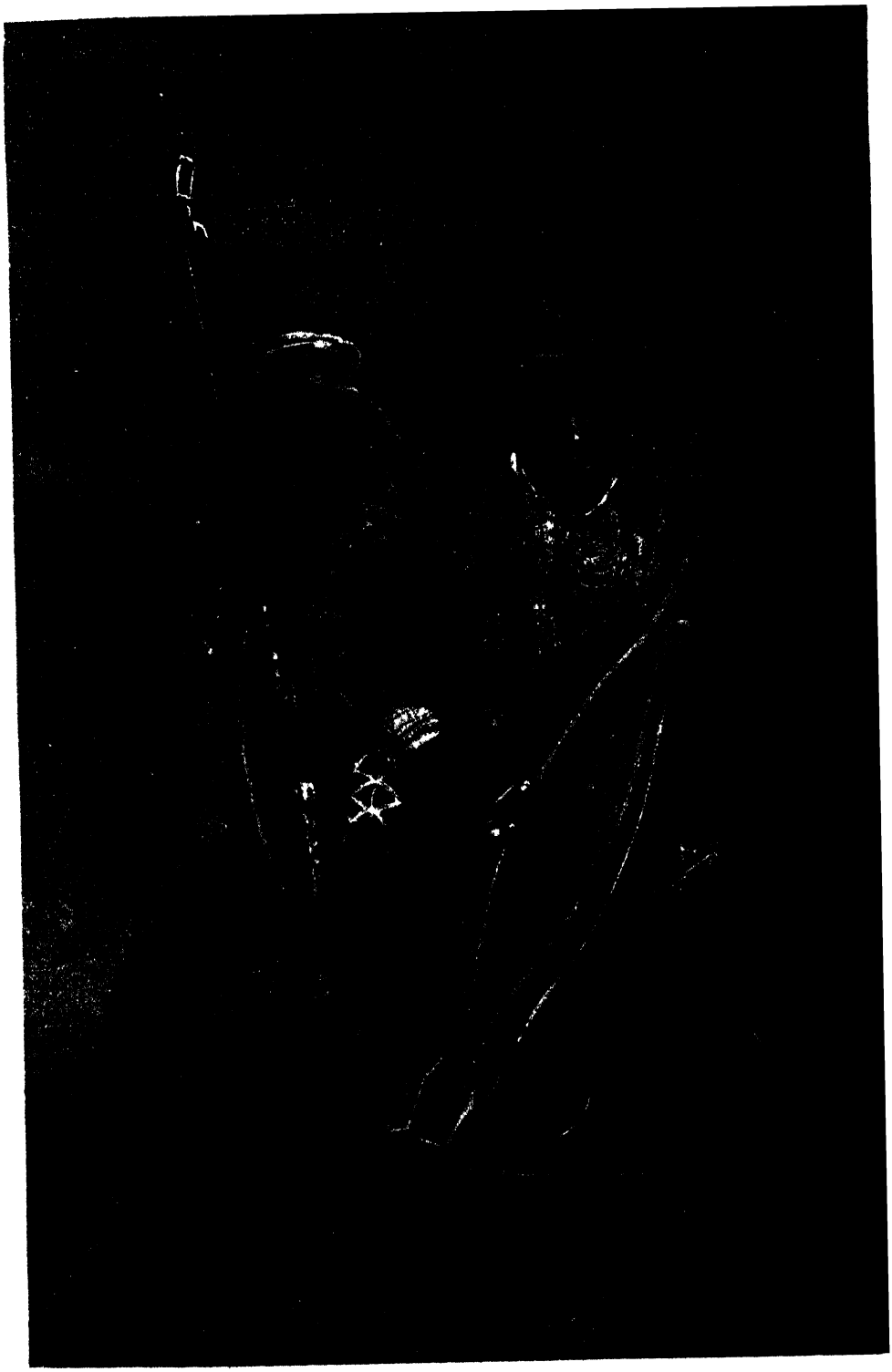
Like the Igorots the Ifugaos are — or, perhaps it would be more correct and respectful to their masters and

THE PHILIPPINES: A Panorama of Tribal Life

This oval-faced Kalinga girl has all the finery at her disposal in bright display, from the disks in her ears to her patterned shawl

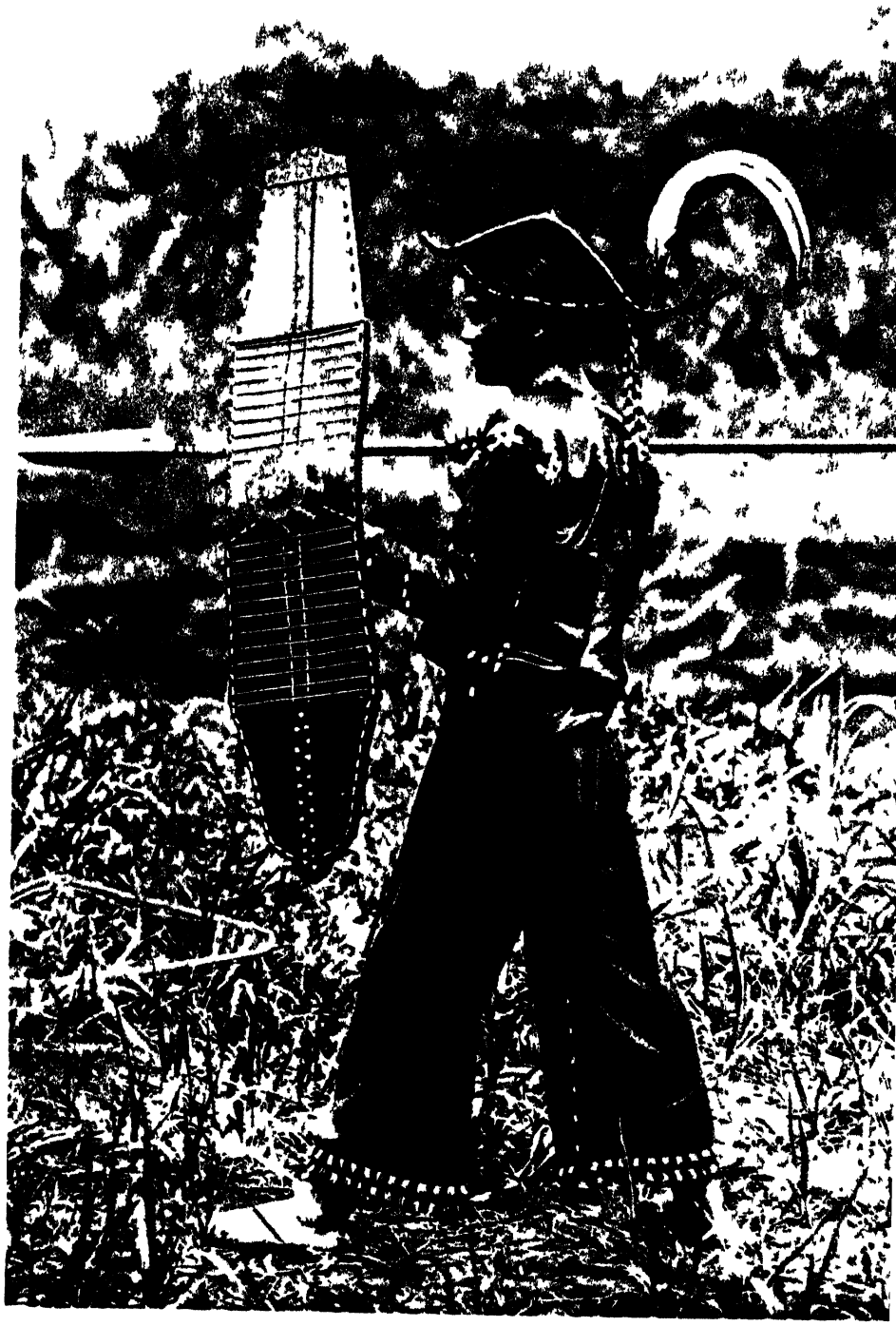
Photos pages 4089 and 4090 Philippine Bureau of Tourism

It well beseems the wife of a Kalinga chief to go dressed in her best, especially when accompanied by her lord in all his martial gear

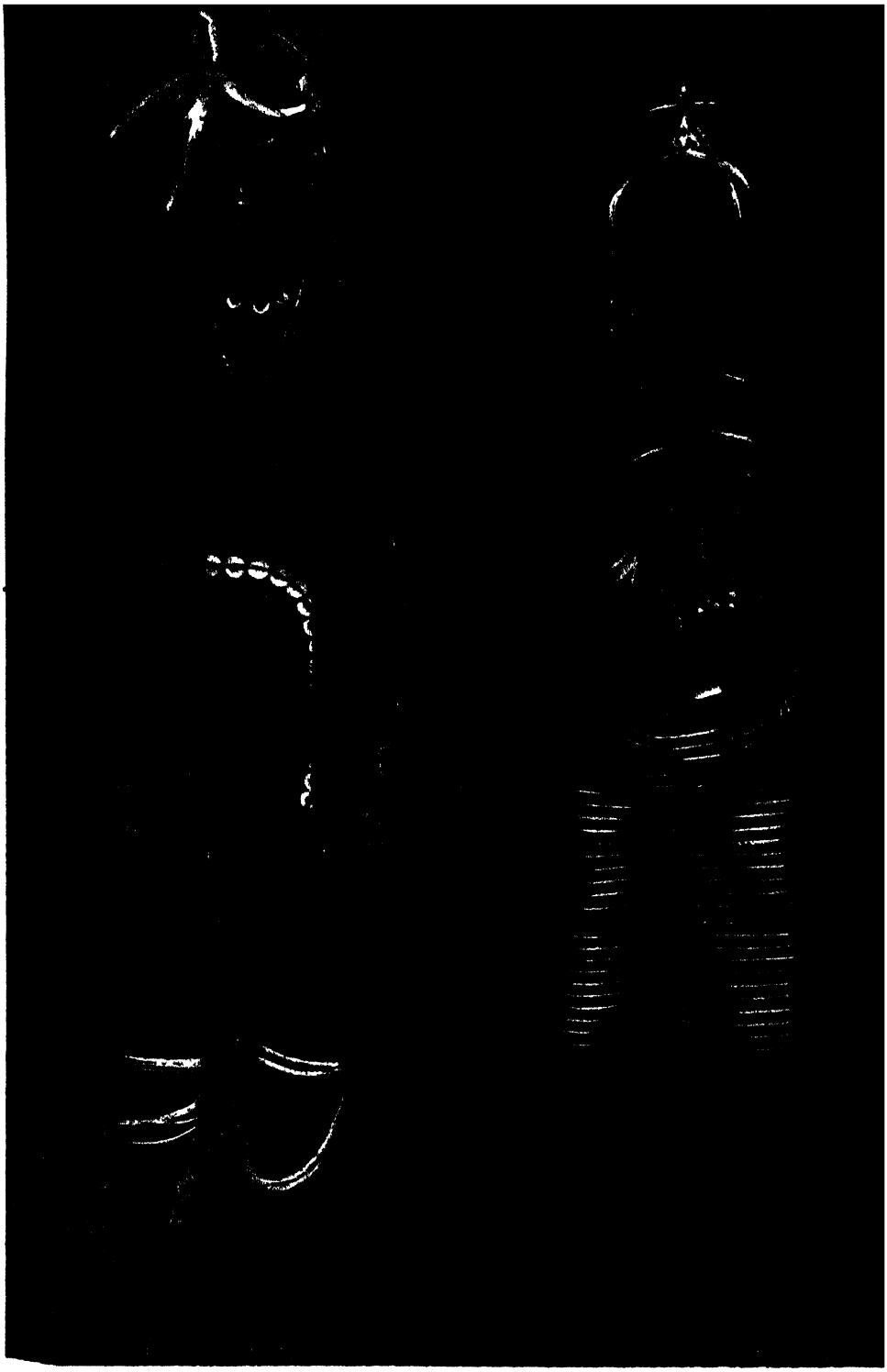


Gloom clouds the face of one of these gaily-clad musicians : perhaps because his fellow-duettist plays his strange instrument out of tune

This Hongot woman has two compensations—a fat cheroot and a head-band that, keeping her erect, prevents the ache of stooping



Posed with spear and buckler a Mandaya makes a quaint figure with trousers and curving plumes and hair dressed like a woman's



In the wild Philippines the marriage ceremony is often not nearly so elaborate as the costume. This well shows the charms of the bride

In the case of the Igorots true dandyism is not merely a question of the correct clothes, but also of a complete and efficacious armament

This wild-haired Melisande of the woods, with tattered skirts that cling, stands carelessly on just two bamboos to fill her catch bel

teachers to say, were– inveterate head-hunters. Living in villages perched in the mountains in almost inaccessible spots, they, in not remote days, waged continuous warfare, sometimes among themselves, but more frequently against offending neighbouring tribes. They have been tamed as the Igorots have been, and are in a fair way to becoming quite decent protegés of the Great Republic. When disciplined, they make splendid soldiers. They are brave, loyal, and intelligent, possessing a flair for mountain fighting which compels a comparison of their qualities with those of the Gurkha sepoys. The Americans have trained a number of them to act as a constabulary with admirable results.

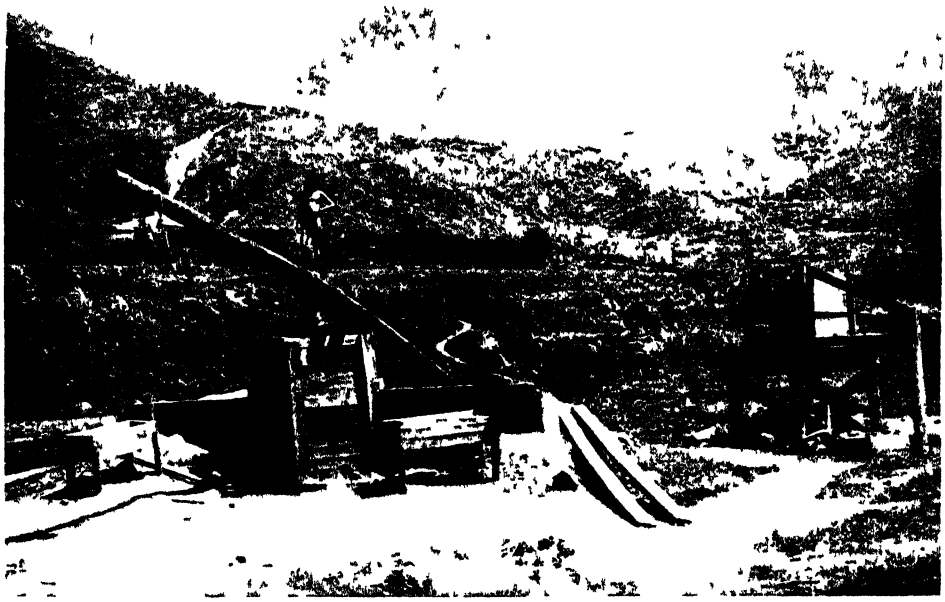
The Ifugao as a worker leaves something to be desired from the Western standpoint. He sets his women to till his fields while he lounges in idleness at home. But if he dislikes labour he and his are fond of play, and in the Ifugao villages almost any and every opportunity is seized for a merrymaking in which all the inhabitants participate.

The most distinctively Malay people and the element which is the backbone of Mahomedanism in the islands are the Moros. They are closely akin to the Malay colonists of Borneo, and do not differ very widely from the men of the same race who are under British sway in British Malaya, save that their predatory and fighting instincts are less tamed. Seated in villages picturesquely placed about the shores of Mindanao and the Sulu Archipelago, these hardy tribesmen have faced undauntedly successive conquests. They were a rare thorn in the flesh of the Spaniards, who never managed to get on to anything like equal terms with them until the closing days of their rule, when, with the aid of steam launches, they were able to overtake them on the open sea or pursue them to their coastal lairs and then to reduce them to submission with the aid of quick-firing guns.

TRINKETS AND TITIVATION

From the fringe down her forehead to the bangles on her wrist this siren of the Agusan valley is dressed to break hearts. A betel nut used as chewing-gum incarnadines her lips

The Americans have had their own troubles with them, and some of the most thrilling episodes in the history of their occupation have been supplied by encounters with recalcitrant members of the tribe. But as often happens in the case of the Malay when he has been worsted in fighting a foeman worthy of his steel, the Moros are now content to submit to the yoke of their conquerors. So close, indeed, has the relationship become that they have preferred a request to the Woods-Forbes Mission sent to the Philippines by President Harding to investigate the question of granting independence to the Filipinos, that their territory may remain subject to the United States. They consider, with good reason, that they are a race apart from the bulk of the islanders, and have no desire to be controlled by them.



PATIENCE ON THE SEE-SAW RAISING WATER IN THE BRICK-FIELDS

Perched upon the balanced pole at one end of which is a counterpoise stands an Igorot workman The town of Bontoc, capital of the province of that name was during the erection of its modern buildings supplied with bricks burned and laid by these once wild savages who have been so successfully tamed In the background of the picture rise the hills, which are their home

Photo American Field Museum Chicago

All these non-Christian elements of the Philippine population which have been brought under survey are, in fact, not strictly speaking Filipinos That term is usually applied to the mixed race, or races, which constitutes the great body of the population The languages spoken give a good key to the ethnography of the islands Although there are eighty dialects used in the archipelago, the mass of the population — eight millions out of about eleven— resort to only four languages They are Visayan, which four millions speak, Tagalog, which is the common tongue of two millions more, and Iloko and Bikol, each of which claims something like a million users among the rest of the inhabitants

The Visayans are largely of Malay origin, but unlike the Moros of the south, their interests are on the land and are very little concerned with the sea They constitute, in truth, the backbone of the Philippine agricultural community, cultivating their coconut plantations and their rice fields with a patient assiduity which makes them a valuable factor in the prosperity of the islands The Tagalogs, though numerically much inferior to the Visayans, are politically more advanced, and they are tending more and more to become the dominating force among the Filipino people

But a fact upon which most modern authorities on the Philippines lay stress, is that there is a growing approximation of the various sections of Philippines to one type In physical characteristics, dress, and customs there is little or nothing to distinguish one class from another, and a common religious creed tends to accentuate the substantial oneness of the community It is curious, perhaps, that though the Spaniards, during their rule, took special measures to encourage mixed marriages, the trace of European blood in the population is little marked The truth is probably, as Mr Foreman points out in his work on the islands, that " the increase of energy introduced into the Philippine native by blood admixture from

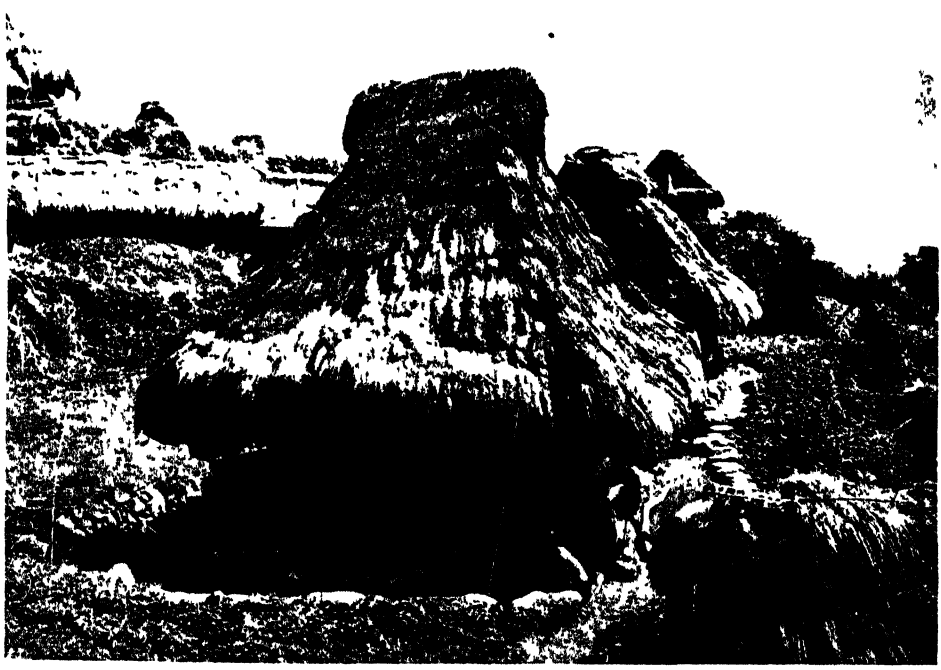
Europe lasts only to the second generation," because of the effect of environment on the later generations.

However this may be, the Filipinos are naturally a virile race and stand in no need of blood infusion from outside to maintain their fecundity. When Magellan visited the islands it is estimated that the total population did not exceed half a million. As late as 1800 it was no more than one and a half million. To-day there are nearly eleven million inhabitants in the territory occupied by the United States

The Chinese community must not be left without further mention As in British Malaya, so here, the Chinese occupies a highly important place in the local life It has been estimated that the Chinese do about eighty per cent. of the trade of the islands, and monopolise a greater part of their wealth. Although only between seventy and eighty thousand in number, they are everywhere in evidence, buying and selling wherever there is a dollar to be made. Some of the race are in high positions in the colony, but the bulk of them are content to plod their way in quite humble business positions, keeping before them the goal of a modest competency with a resolute determination, which is seldom baffled.

Here, as in the British possessions, the commercial integrity of the Chinese is proverbial. In the hemp-buying periods the local banks give huge credits to Chinese merchants on their word alone, and the confidence bestowed is rarely abused.

There has been a good deal of intermarrying between the Chinese and the Filipinos, but the descendants of these unions are not usually endowed with the good business qualities of their fathers. In fact, so little does the hereditary Chinese instinct for commerce reveal itself in Filipino



GRASS-ROOFED DWELLINGS OF A HIGH-PERCHED MOUNTAIN VILLAGE

Those of the wild tribes who are content to live a more or less settled life build themselves villages like this, either in clearings in thick jungle, well hidden and approached by secret paths, or else upon a hilltop, whence the view can command many miles of country. The curious appearance of these roofs is due to their being thatched with grass

Photo, Philippine Bureau of Science

TROPIC REFLECTIONS OF A LAKE DWELLING 'TWIXT PALM AND WATER

Shaded by the broad green fronds of palms and thick thatching stands this cool house mirrored in every detail in the lake where its foundations rest Space is somewhat limited for there is but one storey, and that not very extensive However, such a house is at least cleaner than many native huts upon land, for the lake provides a receptacle for all refuse

CLUMSY HOUSE CONSTRUCTION OF IGOROT DOMESTIC LIFE

Inhabiting the northern regions of Luzon Island, the Igorots are mostly in a retarded state of civilization. They come of an Indonesian stock, and are distinguishable by their wearing the hair in a fringe over the forehead The baskets somewhat resembling lobster pots probably once contained heads, forming a sort of museum commemorating victories Their head-hunting has been suppressed

Photos, Philippine Bureau of Science

AIRY MANOBO HOME LASHED TO A STOUT TREE-TOP

Along the forest grown banks of the river Agusan, a stream in places made perilous to the visitor by rocks and rapids, live the Manobos. This tribe was rescued from a state of wretched savagery, and, as can be seen, have built themselves, in their own way, healthful houses, complete with sheltered balconies. The families of this village have even taken to European clothing

Photo, Philippine Bureau of Science

VOLUNTARY VAPULATION FOR PAST DEFAULTING

In the Philippines there has been a recrudescence of the Flagellants During the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries votaries of this sect overran parts of Europe Here a native Christian kneels, his scourge cruel with glass splinters and iron

TORTURED TO EXHAUSTION

When flesh and blood can stand no more, a comrade takes up the spiked thong and continues the beating almost to the point of fainting

Photos, Leslie Dix

descendants that a saying, somewhat analogous to the Lancashire "in three generations back to clogs" is often applied to these cases. China, however, is near at hand, and the Manila Chinese will never be likely to die out for lack of efficient recruits

The Filipinos, in spite of obvious failings, not the least of which is a deficiency of self-control, are an attractive people. Kindly, hospitable, and polite, they are a pleasing contrast to the denizens of other Eastern lands, in which caste and custom intrude a heavy barrier between the European traveller and the native. The open door is the rule in many households—in the country districts at least—and the offer of payment for accommodation would give offence.

Intellectually, the Filipino is well equipped, and by the eagerness with which he has availed himself of the facilities for education, provided by the United States, has shown how greatly he desires to improve himself. Mr. David P. Burrows, the sometime head of the

KICKED PROSTRATE AS A LAST HUMILIATION IN THE FLAGELLANTS' EASTER PENANCE

Eastertide sees the consummation of this willingly suffered self punishment The devotees gather in the native cemetery, their heads swathed in leaves, an imitation of the crown of thorns The flogging done, each one in turn kneels his back a torn expanse of clotted blood and slashed flesh, and waits with wide stretched arms. Upon the gore soaked grass comes a shadow, whose symbolism is plain, and then a comrade kicks him to earth After some prayers, the sufferer washes himself and goes away clean, as he believes, of twelve months' sin In this way, an hour's torture brings a year's freedom from moral anxiety

Photo Leslie Dix

PRETTY WITCHERY AMONG THE WATER-POTS OF A PHILIPPINE HOME

House-building among the Filipinos is neither very complicated nor arduous. A ladder as seen behind this little maid is the usual form of approach to the elevated front door, while underneath is a useful space for storage. The plaited hat of generous width is necessary in the sunshine of these torrid isles

Photo, Kadel & Herbert

SWART TRESSES CROWN BRIGHT COLOURS BELOVED OF THE FILIPINO

Owing to recurrent invasions, both warlike and peaceful, an extraordinary medley of races is to be found on these islands, and especially in Manila itself There are a number of races, now known as native, though they are descendants of former invaders These have in some cases intermarried, and further blended with Chinese, Japanese, and European to produce a multiplicity of types and faces

NIMBLE LITTLE COLLECTOR OF TUBA, A TASTY COCONUT DRINK

It will be noticed that notches have been cut in the bark of this coconut palm These enable the climber to get a foothold in his precarious search At the summit the flowering stalks are tapped and the juice collected either in a tub, charged whenever a fresh incision is made, or in a vessel carried with the climber Tuba is usually not fermented, and so not intoxicating

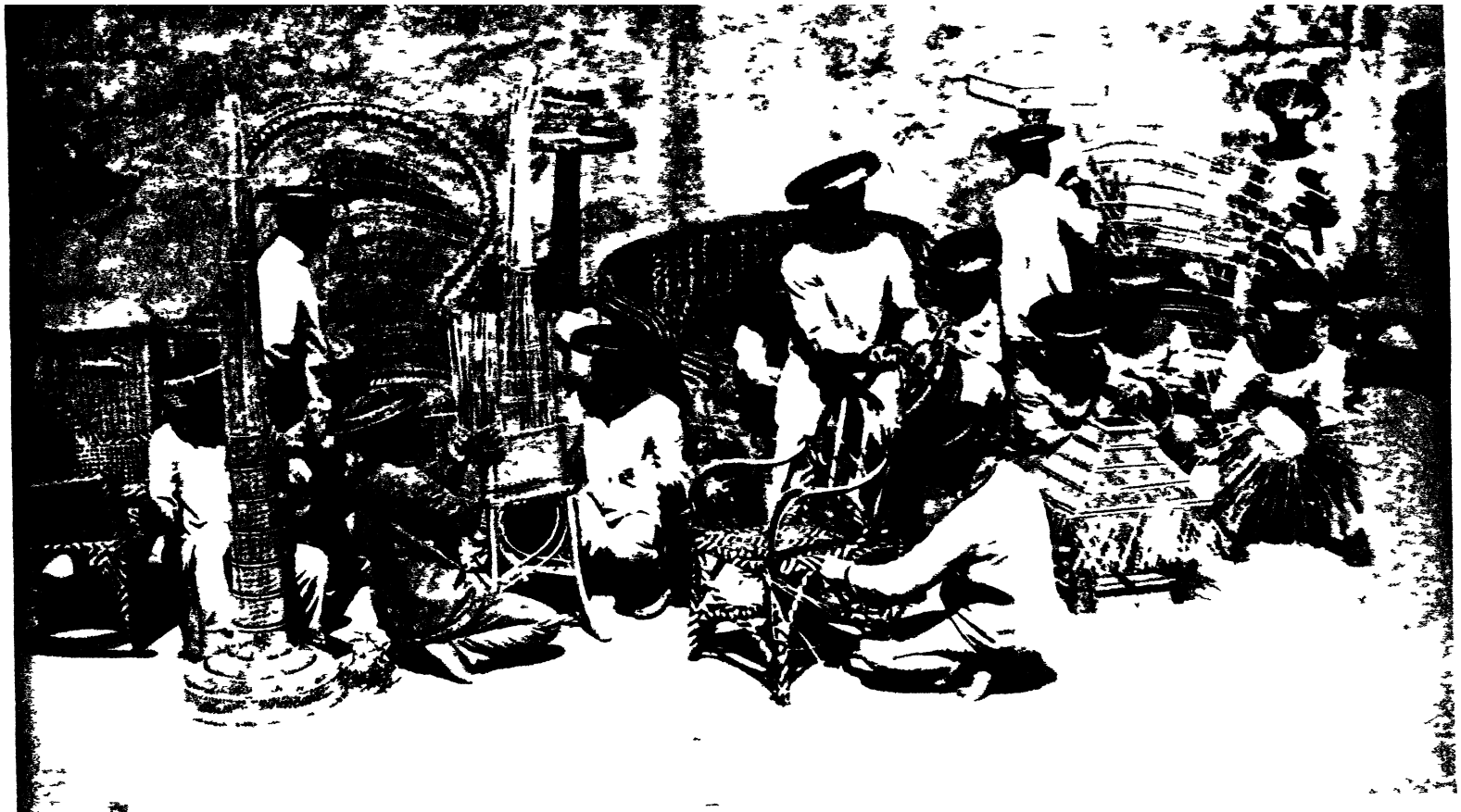
Photo, Kadel & Herbert

WIMPLED FILIPINA OF THE WOODS WITH HER BASKET OF FRUITS

Her striped and transparent sleeves are very well contrived to show off the pretty roundness of smooth arms, and her whole dressing is a triumph of careless art Many of the native women are very apt to learn, and under the American administration they are being trained as nurses and teachers This girl has the intelligence to avoid both the uncouthness of savagery and unsuited European costume

CACOPHONOUS WAR DANCE OF THE IGOROTS, REMINISCENT OF THEIR HEAD-HUNTING DAYS

Armed with sounding gongs and encouraged to furth r frenzy by the ecstatic shouts of the onlookers, the war dance goes its barbaric course One of the men has a fearsome head axe in his belt, for in the old days every accredited warrior was an expert in decapitation In the illustration at this bronze-skinned company no doubt a bleeding head with still twitching features lies within the circle of their dancing feet



BUSY FILIPINOS' NIMBLE FINGER-WORK WEAVING TASTEFUL CREATIONS IN BASKET-WORK

In the Philippines the bamboo, which grows everywhere abundantly along the banks of streams and in clumps amid the woods, takes the place of the osier in Europe These various pieces of household furniture, excellent both in design and execution are made almost entirely of bamboo, and are both light and very easily kept clean Armchairs, rocking chairs, and cane couches are under construction by these deft fingered coolies, each of whom has his number on his hat

STOLIDITY AND PENSIVENESS AT HOUSEHOLD DRUDGERY

Rice is the staple food of most of the Philippine Islands' native dwellers. Having collected a pile in her flat rush woven basket, the girl whose Mongol features wear a lack lustre look rests awhile what time her pensive seeming sister crushes the grains to flour with a circling movement of the upper stone. Years of drudgery and the sameness of their life produce these dull features.

DARK-FEATURED MILLINERS WHO WEAVE HEMPEN HATS

Swiftly these supple fingers twist to and fro, in and out, till from a shapeless conglomeration of tangled fibre the suggestion, then the embryo, of a neat, broad brimmed hat appears. The crown is woven round the shape or block seen at the worker's feet. On either side of it are two semi-completed hats, awaiting the final touches to their brims.

Photo, Kadel & Herbert

HANGING OUT HER LINEN

This commonplace occupation associated with the unloveliness of the backyard is transfigured by a dazzling kimono and a tropic garden into an altogether pleasing scene

American Education Department in the Philippines, has testified to the artistic bent of the Filipino in some interesting sentences

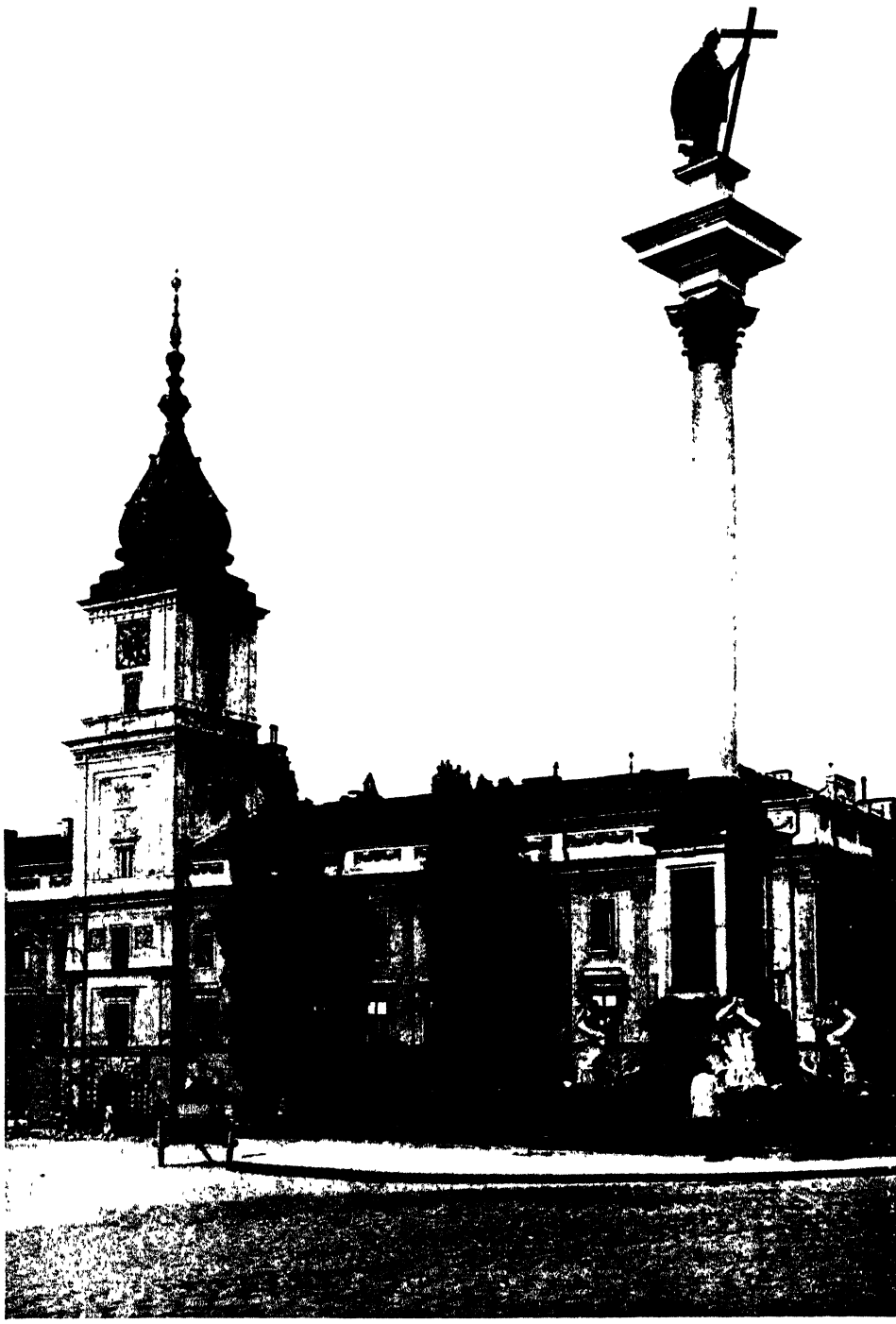
"His musical aptitude," he says, "is quite extraordinary Every village has its orchestra or band, nearly every home a piano, harp, or 'bandurria' Filipinos recognize good music and prefer it Years ago, when third-class Italian opera companies regularly spent the winter in Manila, one could see the great barnlike Teatro Zorilla packed to the roof with barefooted men and women, listening with delight to the music of Verdi and Donizetti The Filipino is naturally dramatic—he loves to act Every village festival has its dramatic representation or 'moromoro' High school theatricals embrace everything from Shakespeare to Bernard Shaw Fifteen years ago a school of Tagalog drama seemed likely to arise Well conceived plays were produced in Manila in the native tongue, full of amusing dialogue and social satire"

Altogether the Filipinos are a versatile and interesting people, well worthy of the efforts which the Americans are making to lift them in the scale of civilization although what standing they are likely to occupy in the Asia of the future is still uncertain

MORO IN CIVIC AUTHORITY

Headman of a Sulu village this Moro, whose coat is almost too tight to button, carries symbols of his office—a revolver in a convenient holster and a riding switch

Photo, Leslie Dix



WARSAW: FAMOUS STATUE AND OLD PALACE OF THE POLISH KINGS

For 300 years Sigismund III. has stood on his granite column near the ancient Zamek, holding in one hand a cross, in the other an uplifted sword. "When the sword of Sigismund points downward Poland will be free," so ran the legend. During the Great War the terrific shocks resulting from the dynamiting of Warsaw's bridges displaced the blade. The legend has become a reality; Poland is free

Photo, Donald McLeish

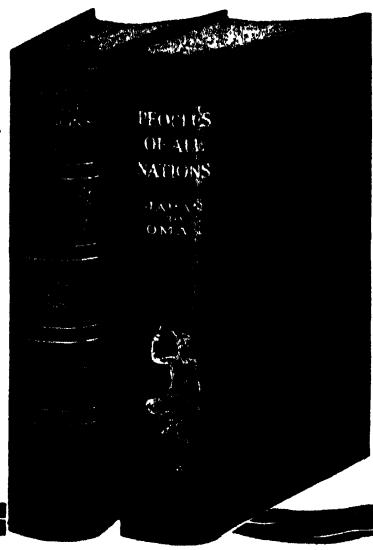
"Peoples of All Nations" is now more than half complete

In sending instructions all that need be done is to specify which of the following styles is desired:

(Style No. 1)—To bind the loose parts in the *Red Cloth* binding-case, with full gilt back, the top edges of the leaves to be "sprinkled." The inclusive charge for this will be 6/- (2/- for the binding-case and 4/- for the actual binding and cost of packing and carriage).

(Style No. 2)—To bind the loose parts in the beautiful *Blue Roxburgh* style, with full gilt back, heavy canvas grained end-papers, special cloth joint and burnished top. The inclusive charge for this will be 9/3 (4/6 for the leather binding-case and 4/9 for the cost of binding as specified, packing, and return carriage).

(Style No. 2a)—To bind precisely as Style No. 2, but with English gold top to the leaves. The inclusive charge for this is 9/9 (4/6 for the morocco grain binding-case and 5/3 for the work of binding, special gold top, packing, and return carriage).



TAKE ADVANTAGE OF THIS

SPECIAL BINDING OFFER

The Publishers of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS are prepared to undertake the actual work of binding the loose parts into volume form for those subscribers who are unable to get this done to their satisfaction locally.

Conditions which must be observed:

Only fortnightly parts in good condition—free from stains, tears, or other defacements—can be accepted for binding.

The parts to be bound must be packed securely in a parcel (seven parts constituting a volume) containing the name and postal address of the sender clearly written and posted direct to the publishers' binding department, or handed to a newsagent. In both cases the subscriber is liable for the cost of carriage.

The only instruction which the subscriber need give in forwarding the loose parts will be to specify which of the styles he desires, and to enclose a cheque or postal order for 6/- (Style No. 1), 9/3 (Style No. 2), or 9/9 (Style No. 2a), for each volume sent, which cheque or postal order must be placed in the envelope containing the order, and *not* in the parcel containing the parts. All cheques or postal orders must be made payable to The Amalgamated Press (1922) Limited, and crossed "Bank of England, Law Courts Branch." Address the package to

"Peoples of All Nations," Binding Department,
The Amalgamated Press (1922) Ltd.,
Bear Alley,
Farringdon Street, London, E.C. 4.

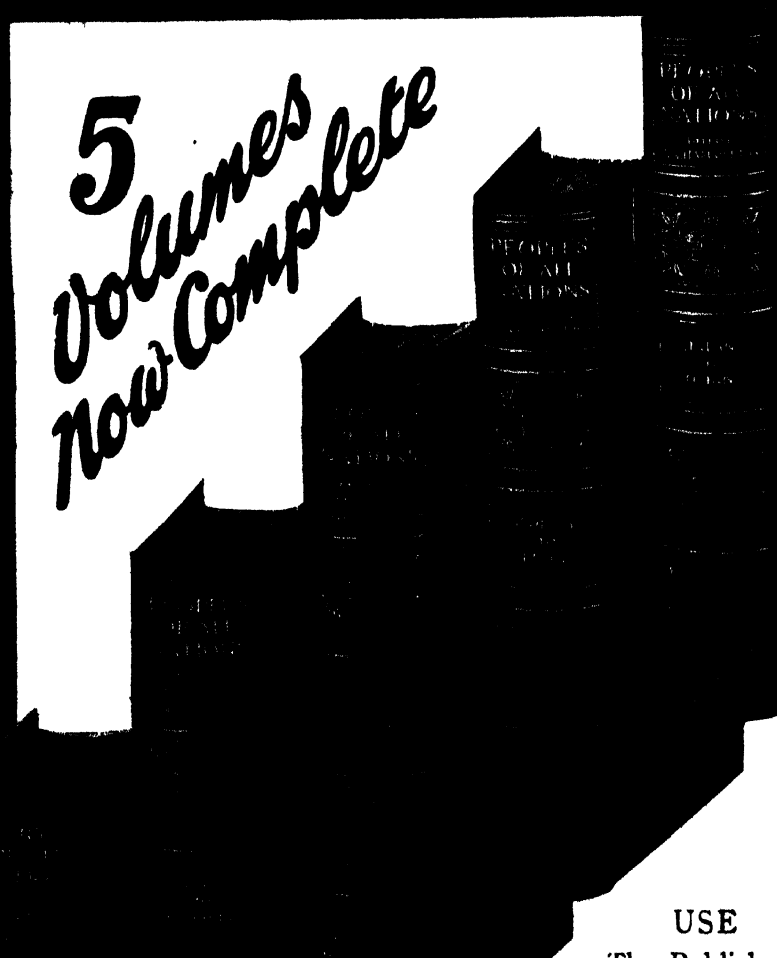
If the parcel is sent direct to the publishers, the cheque or postal order should be enclosed in a separate envelope, together with advice of the parcel and the instructions as to binding. Name and address of sender should again be clearly given. **The parcel and letter should be posted separately.**

ALL ABOVE PRICES APPLY TO GREAT BRITAIN ONLY.

Terms for the Trade *will be supplied on application to the above address.*

Part 38 PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS will be on sale everywhere Tuesday, August 14

5 Volumes Now Complete



USE
The Publishers'
BINDING CASES

BLUE LEATHER
(as illustrated) 4/6 each

RED CLOTH
Price 2/- each

These binding cases may be obtained from the newsagent or bookseller who supplies you with your Fortnightly Parts or direct from the Publishers, in which case 6d. extra must be enclosed to cover cost of postage and packing. All above prices apply to Great Britain only.

See overleaf for Particulars of PUBLISHERS' SPECIAL BINDING SCHEME.

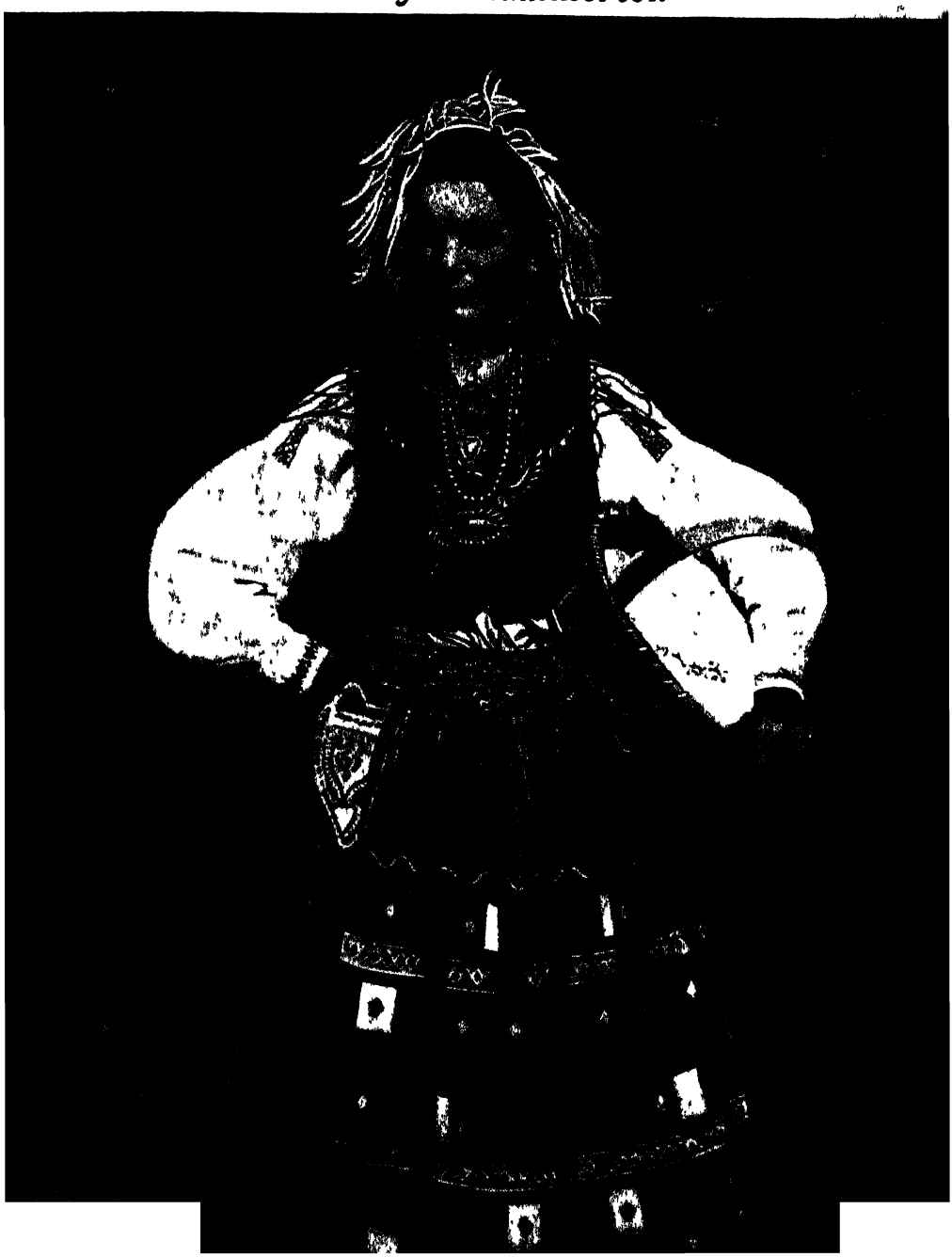
Printed and published every alternate Tuesday by the Proprietors The Amalgamated Press (1922) Ltd., The Fleetway House, Farringdon Street, London, E.C 4. Sole Agents for South Africa The Central News Agency, Ltd Sole Agents for Australasia Messrs Gordon & Gotch, Ltd., and for Canada: The Imperial News Co., Ltd. (Canada). Subscription Rates Inland and Abroad, 1s. 5½d per copy. July 31st, 1926
D26

Jelly No Longer—Bina Vol. 5 Now! PAGES

38

PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS

Edited by J.A.Hammerton



BACK NUMBERS OF 'PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS' CAN STILL BE HAD

Contents of this Part

POLAND I. The Polish People as They are To-day - 29 *Photographs* Florence Farmborough
,, II. The Epic Story of An Heroic People - 3 *Illustrations* - - F. E. Whitton
PORTUGAL I. Its Poets, Peasants, and Politicians - 36 *Photographs* - - George Young
,, II. The Tragedy of a Once Great Power 2 *Illustrations* - - Francis Gribble
,, III. Remnants of Its Colonial Empire - 9 *Photographs* - - George Young
RHODESIA. Its Native Peoples under British Rule - 14 *Photographs* - - C. Lestock Reid

PHOTOGRAVURE SECTION. IN PORTUGAL WITH THE PEASANT (16 *Photographs*)

COLOUR PLATE: Portugal: Warm Tints of Southern Charm

From the Editor's Desk

THE FLEETWAY HOUSE, FARRINGDON STREET.
LONDON, E.C.4

NONE of the other serial publications with which I have been associated has acquired quite so wide a popularity on the Continent as PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS. It is gratifying to notice the extraordinary diffusion of the work, not only throughout European countries, but in the most distant parts of the world, as illustrated by the contents of my post-bag. But there is evidently in Holland a particularly strong interest in what I may describe as human geography, as represented by PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS. From that country I have received more letters than from any other land outside the British Empire, and typical of these is the latest to hand, dated from Amsterdam, and signed by J. C. De Wet, who remarks that in Holland one can get PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS in almost every book shop. Here is an instructive fact which, in other parts of Europe and Africa, I have been able to test myself, as I found no difficulty in buying copies of the fortnightly parts in Paris, Marseilles, Barcelona, Valencia, Tunis and Algiers, during a winter holiday last year, and it is odd in view of such facilities for securing the work, to encounter friends who have never seen a copy and have been unable to get one in a London suburb. In such cases I am afraid there must be a lack either of observation or of that modicum of energy necessary to an inquiry at a bookseller's!

卐

Pictorial Documents of Indian America

MY Amsterdam correspondent is particularly anxious that when we come to deal with the United States of America we should dismiss as quickly as possible "the European life" there and concentrate chiefly upon the primitive peoples who are disappearing. There is much to be said for this method of treatment, and I do not think that my correspondent will be disappointed in the way the native tribes of United States territory will be illustrated, as a special section will be devoted to the American Indians, and the authorities of the American Indian Museum are putting their collection of pictorial documents at our disposal for that purpose.

卐

"European Life in the U.S.A."

AT the same time it is intended very fully to illustrate the actualities of what Mr. De Wet calls "European life in the U.S.A.," as the avowed purpose of this work is to present a complete survey of the nations of to-day in their habit as they live, and we are indeed more concerned with the actual life of our time than with the quainter survivals of the primitive peoples, although we cannot be accused of having neglected these. I doubt if it will be possible to enter into so much detail as my Amsterdam correspondent desires in regard to the American Indians by tracing their tribal movements with sketch maps. All the same, I feel sure that when we reach the part containing the United States of America, he will be more than pleased with it.

卐

Our Present Part

A WORD or two about the contents of the present Part of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS and the Part that is to follow it. Our chapters on Poland, by Miss Florence Farmborough and Lieut.-Col F. E. Whitton, C.M.G., will be warmly welcomed by all who are interested in that country and desire to possess within convenient compass the essential facts of its remarkable history, together with reliable impressions of its no less remarkable people. The photographs, for a number of which we are indebted to the courtesy of the Polish Legation in London, are, I think, very valuable as well as attractive. Portugal, England's oldest ally, is described in a notably sympathetic chapter by Professor George

[*Continued on page iii. of this wrapper.*

The entire contents of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS are protected by copyright in all countries signatory to the Berne Convention. The literary and most of the pictorial contents are copyrighted in the United States of America.

Poland

I. The Polish People as They are To-day

By Florence Farmborough, F.R.G.S.

Traveller and Writer on Modern History

IT is nearly a century and a half since the downfall of the Kingdom of Poland. To-day, however, as one happy consequence of the Great War, the destinies of the country are once more in the hands of a Polish ruler; while, high above the Zamek, the ancient palace of Warsaw, there floats tranquilly the standard of the Republic.

The decline and fall of Poland, once a mighty power of equal strength with Russia—though infinitely more skilful in the use of it, by reason of her Western civilization came about through her own internal weaknesses. Towards the end of the eighteenth century she sank deeper and deeper into slothful ways, lost confidence in herself, then hope and, finally, when set upon by enemies, found herself incapable of defending her own. Since that time her history has been one long-drawn-out record of sorrow and disaster.

With the hideous voracity of birds of prey which, after long watching, knew that their hour of triumph had come, the robber-states, Russia, Prussia, and Austria—implacable foes, knowing no mercy—swooped down upon Poland and did as they pleased with their hapless quarry. The infamous partitioning of this country is one of the most familiar events in history. No less than three times was Poland divided. On the last occasion, in 1795, its very name vanished from the list of free countries in Europe.

It was further deliberately planned that the extinction of nationality among the Poles should follow, and with it all hope of independence. But never were the expectations of tyrants more completely frustrated. The Poles constantly revealed themselves as consumed with a craving for the rehabilitation of their country, and along with this there went an almost incredible intensity of national feeling, efficacious in bringing about an extraordinary fusion of the people, a glowing and passionate

GORGEOUS BRIDAL HEADDRESS

This lofty headdress, gay with brilliant blossoms, is the prerogative of the Lowicz bride, and the multi-coloured streamers, each a gift of the peasant beau, tell their own happy story

Photo, Polish Legation

Copyrighted, 1922, by The Amalgamated Press (1922) Limited

PORTABLE DAINTIES FOR SWEET-TOOTHED POLES

Warsaw, the second most important industrial centre of Poland has numerous manufactures, and business is carried on both within and without doors At the fashionable confectioners the leisured classes find a limitless collection of dainties to satisfy the most fastidious taste, while here and there in the ancient streets a young sweetmeat vendor may be seen catering for the workaday world

Photo, Donald McLeish

unity. These were the darkest days of Polish history; nevertheless, every recital of the facts of that time only serves to show with what tenacity the Poles clung to their dreams and ideals. As from a fire unquenchable, the flame of freedom burned fiercely within them, and they were determined that it should be theirs

To hope till hope creates
From its own wreck the thing it contemplates.

It was hope that renewed their spirits even when the terrific blows inflicted by enemies seemed likely to bring about their annihilation. And Poland never succumbed. Though virtually non-existent in the eyes of the world, her ghost refused to be laid to rest, and through the years protested in anguish against the tyranny that oppressed her.

And it would be true to say that the world never quite forgot Poland. None the less the great nations of Europe merit reproach in that they ignored to such an extent their unfortunate "brother in exile," and allowed the glorious history and struggles of Poland to become but a dim memory among them.

The outbreak of the Great War thus found Poland broken up into three

parts—Russian, German, and Austrian—each part with a different legislative and administrative system, and each separated from the others by definite boundaries, and with distinct customs duties. These three divisions are now united, and Poland is able, after an interruption of nearly one hundred and fifty years, to resume her national and industrial life.

The country is called Poland, being Polonia in Latin and Polska in Polish, and signifying the country of the plains (pole -plain). Occupying a large area of the Mid European Plain, its name correctly conveys the idea of limitless space; or, in the words of the poet: "The Polish eagle has her resting place on the peaks of the Carpathians, and stretches forth her wings, one to the Baltic, the other to the Black Sea."

The political boundaries of the Polish Commonwealth did actually stretch from sea to sea. To-day, however, the southern frontier stops short of the Higher Carpathian range and skirts the northern border of Rumania. Thus situated, Poland, as a natural buffer-state, defends practically the whole of Western Europe from Bolshevist Russia. In this respect she has been compared to the great Wall of China, and forms a kind of political isthmus, against which continually beat, on the one side, the destructive forces of the East, and on the other, the relentless compulsions called into being by the economic crises of the West.

In this precarious position, the country has served not only as a highway for transit trade, but as a battlefield of conflicting races It is on the latter that

COUNTRY COSTUMES STAMPED WITH THE GRACE OF SIMPLICITY

One glance at the peasants of the Warsaw district is sufficient to assure us that both spinning-wheel and loom hold an honoured place in their cottage homes. Staunch to their homespuns, they seldom vary their attire, but modern footgear is an attraction difficult to resist, and high heels not infrequently flaunt themselves in delightful incongruity with the trim simplicity of the peasant dress

Photo, Polish Legation

LUSTY YOUNG LIFE THAT IS FULL OF HOPE FOR THE FUTURE

Despite the hardships of recent years, the younger generation thanks to the self denying devotion of adult relatives and the never failing benevolence of innumerable charitable institutions is rapidly developing into that sturdy material so essential to the upbuilding of a nation, and the character and determination written on this small face should augur well for the Poland of to-morrow

Photo, Donald McLeish

MILITARY POLICE IN THE INDUSTRIAL CAPITAL OF POLAND

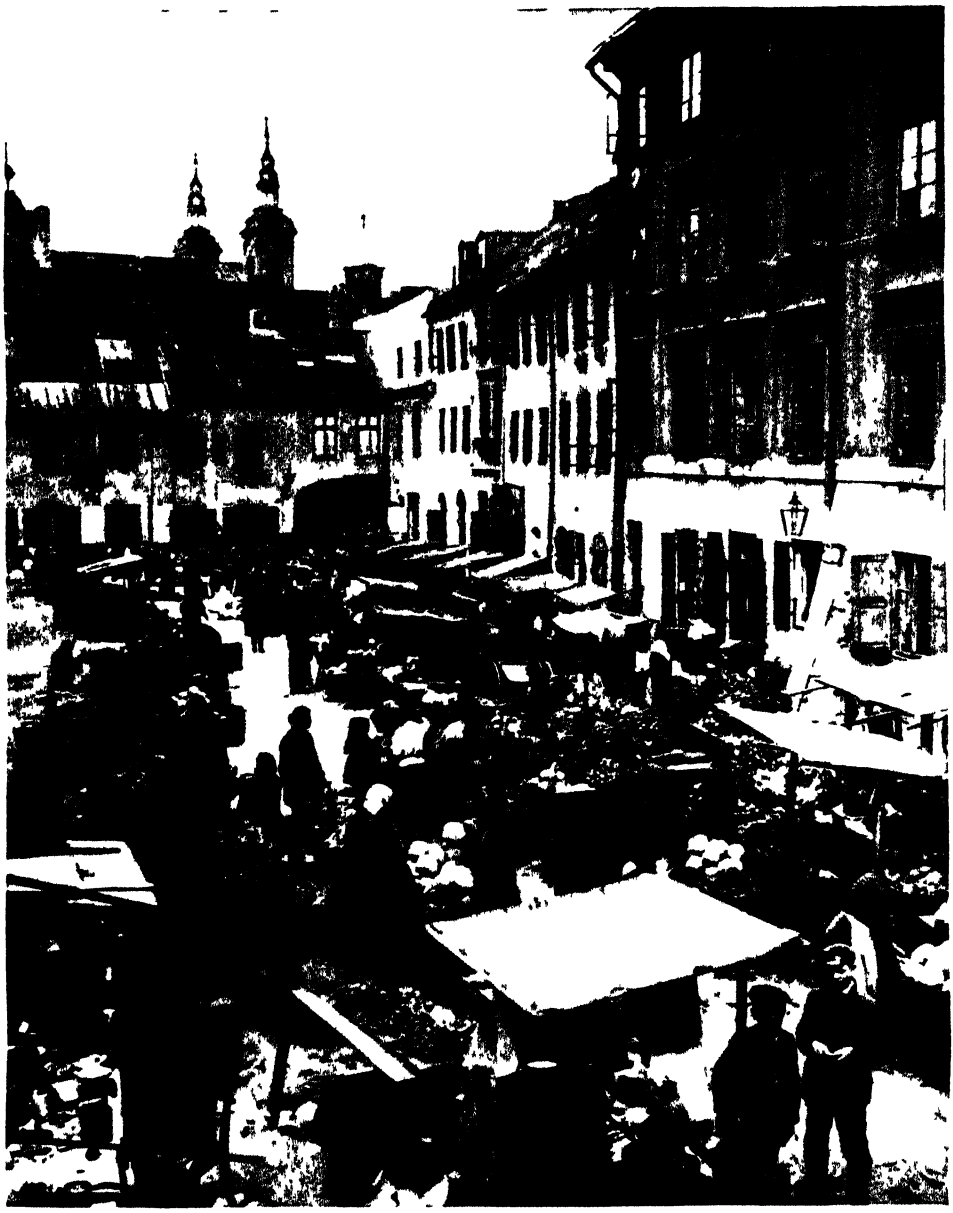
Lodz, the Manchester of Poland, is the headquarters of her textile industry The town, which consists of one main street, five miles in length, was, in the early nineteenth century, but a poor, straggling village To day the inhabitants number more than half a million, and, despite the devastating effects of the Great War, industrial enterprise has made a remarkable and rapid recovery

Photo, Donald McLeish

TYPES OF THE POLISH PEASANTRY ASSEMBLED IN A STREET OF ZYRARDÓW

The Polish peasantry in the towns present a more drab and unattractive appearance than those of the countryside who conservatives to the backbone wear unashamed their primitive and picturesque attire But the motley garb of this bearded water carrier, with breeches made from a coloured bed spread though owing nothing to ancestral tradition, would nevertheless suggest a vein of unabashed originality no whit inferior to that displayed by the woman on the left who like many another of her class, prefers to tramp the rugged roads with her boots, the indisputable voucher of respectability more often in her hands than on her feet

Photo Donald McLeish



JEWISH VEGETABLE MARKET IN THE GHETTO QUARTER OF WARSAW

The ghetto of Warsaw comprises numerous streets teeming with ill kempt Jews and closely packed with houses of a dreary, commonplace type, all discoloured and sadly needing repair A pleasanter scene meets the eye in its vegetable market, from which is diffused the clean, wholesome smell of vegetables fresh from the warm earth of country gardens

Photo, Donald McLeish

Poland has again and again poured out her life-blood The absence of any natural defences laid her open to the invasions of plundering neighbours. As a Polish writer of the sixteenth century has it: "In our hands only, in our breasts and throats only, is our armoury —these are our mountains, our waters; these are the castles, walls, and ramparts of Poland."

The szlachta, or nobility, possessed brilliant qualities in plenty: heroism, chivalry, and an intense devotion to intellectual enjoyments. Though

CHARMING DAUGHTERS OF THE LITTLE TOWN OF ZYRARDÓW

Their home is in Zyrardow a town lying to the west of Warsaw Philippe de Girard, a noted French mechanician, brought his chief invention, a flax spinning machine, to that district in 1835, and from that time Zyrardów, as the small town was called to perpetuate the name of its founder, grew in size and prosperity until it became an industrial centre, famous for its excellent cloth

Photo, Donald McLeish

SMALL SONS OF ISRAEL RECEIVING TUITION IN THE OLD FAITH

In the Cheder or primary school the boys of the ghetto are taught their letters and the recitation of Scriptural verse. Here in this ghetto school at Warsaw an old Rabbi of venerable countenance is seen reading and expounding the Talmud to a few children whose expressive faces despite their tender years seem branded with the mark of antiquity and with the martyrdom of ages."

TILLERS OF THE SOIL OF THE NEW POLISH REPUBLIC

With indomitable energy the Polish peasants have countered much of the severe loss and distress occasioned by warfare. They are now replacing their stolen livestock, retilling devastated grainland, and rebuilding ruined villages. Their weapons of war have been superseded by those of peace, and their dream of land, and peaceful times in which to cultivate it, has been realized

Photos, Donald McLeish

SOME OF THE WORLD'S GREATEST ALIENS AT HOME IN POLAND

In Poland the Jew has never suffered persecution for his religious belief, and during the Middle Ages the country was known as the "Jew's Paradise." These bearded patriarchs of East Galicia, garbed in traditional costume, are enjoying Sabbath leisure by their street doors, and wrangling volubly in the Yiddish tongue over topics of the day or problems of their ancient faith

Photo, Florence Farmborough

worshipping independence and freedom to the verge of insanity, their utter recklessness and lavish modes of living, and the contempt in which they held severe and fatiguing labour, stamped them as unpractical and untrustworthy leaders. Blind to the future, they hardened themselves in their traditional habits and privileged indolence. Such lack of moral fibre as this stood for could ill compete with the stern civic and military qualities of their harsh and aggressive neighbours.

At that time there were but two classes of society in Poland—the nobility and the peasants, the landed and the landless, the owners of the soil and the tillers; and between them there existed a continual friction, a feud which occasioned incessant internal strife. A new element, however, came into being during the latter half of the nineteenth century, as a consequence of the growth of important industrial districts. This new element was the proletariat of the towns. Ignorant as the majority of them were, they did not omit to claim the rights of their class, and, above everything else, to agitate for the liberation of their country—for in truth the aspirations of all Poles were centred in the one word, Poland.

The Great War brought about the realization of their desires. Poland was freed! Then it was that a passion of patriotism swept over the whole land as never before, knitting nobleman, artisan, and peasant alike in one common brotherhood. The old-time aristocratic contempt for work is passing away, for all too long have the powers and abilities of the intellectual classes been held in restraint. Now that mind and body are slowly recovering from the numbing

effects of a long period of subjection to foreign powers, and the trials and miseries of the Great War gradually receding into the background, the Poles are beginning to appreciate the fact that the twentieth century stands to the national life for an epoch very different from the turbulent and tempest-tossed eighteenth century.

They are now quite awake and alive to possibilities; and though the urge of the idealist is still vigorous amongst them, they are, nevertheless, quick to seize any opportunity that may help to re-establish their country on a firm and stable basis. Every Pole feels himself to be a nation-builder, and every Pole is eager to air his views where politics are concerned—a remarkable and praiseworthy recovery, indeed, after the complete political paralysis to which they had been subjected for so long.

The wrongs and sufferings of Poland have in the past wrung but a reluctant sympathy from the outside world; but there has been no such hesitation with respect to the glory and genius which have won for that country a place in the front ranks of human achievement Scientists, both men and women, poets, musicians, painters, writers, have sprung up from among this people. There is no branch of Art or of Science in which the Poles have failed to show themselves pre-eminent. A number of Poles, profoundly national in feeling, have, by reason of the catholicity of their genius, endeared themselves to mankind in general to such an extent that one no longer thinks of them as bound by national limitations, but as belonging to the whole world. Thus, Mme. Curie, famous as the discoverer of radium, and Frédéric Chopin, supreme as a writer of romance music for the piano, are both Poles, whose names must live for ever in the hearts of all civilized peoples. Even the conquerors of Poland,

"THE MAGI" IN A SYMBOLIC REPRESENTATION OF THE NATIVITY

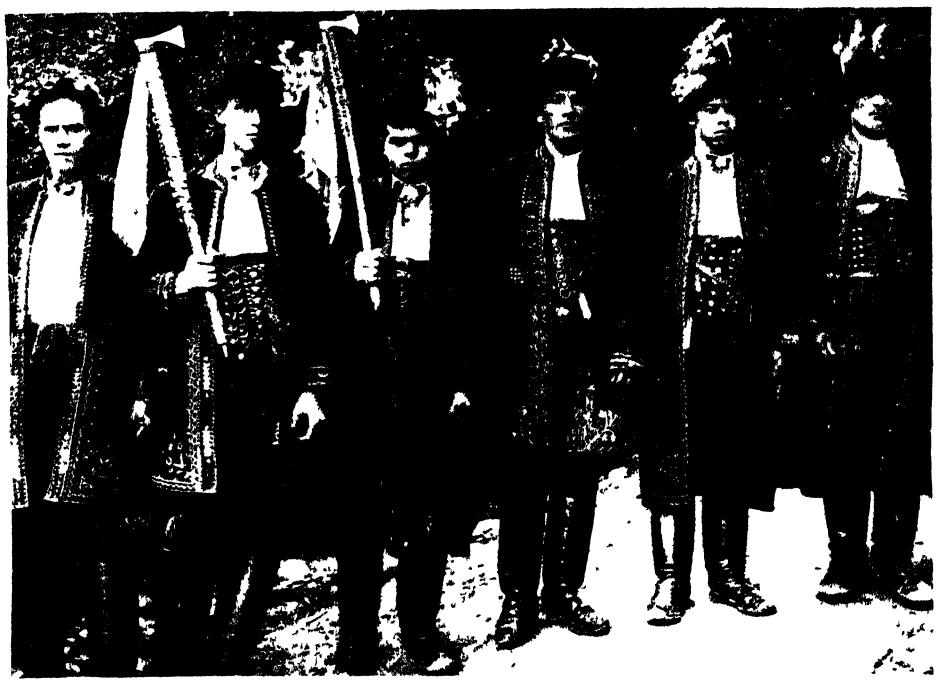
The representation is given in various Polish districts during the Christmas fortnight. Sometimes King Herod and Roman soldiers are impersonated, at other times three small boys represent the Magi, who, dressed in quaint, ritual clothing, go from house to house chanting carols—often carrying the szopka, a little paper shed, containing miniature figures of the Holy Family

Photo, Polish Legation

POLISH PEASANT BRIDE ATTENDED BY HER RELATIVES AND BRIDESMAIDS IN A VILLAGE OF THE PLAINS

A wedding is a very bright event in the village life of the Polish plains all neighbours take a modest part in the rejoicing and the cup of cheer brims for friend and stranger alike In these remote hamlets the peasants lead a hard working healthy existence much work and little play seems to have no ill effect on them Their heart is in their work, and the fertile land that supplies their daily bread evokes in them a gratitude which finds expression in a passionate devotion to the soil and an untiring zeal where its tending and cultivation are concerned

Photo Donald McLeish



COUNTRY EXQUISITES RESPLENDENT IN FESTIVE FINERY

These strapping peasant lads, in their gorgeous garb, are some of the merry makers at a Polish wedding feast. Their coats are sumptuously embroidered with beautifully worked designs, and colored braid, buttons, and beads are lavishly displayed, and even the mountaineer's stick is decorated for the joyous occasion. A broad leather belt completes the showy costume

Photo, Polish Legation

impatient as they were to depose her from her place among European nations, showed themselves, nevertheless, ready to claim as their own some of the most illustrious Polish names. For instance, Kopernik (Copernicus) was appropriated as the "great German astronomer," and Sienkiewicz as the "great Russian novelist." Yet these sons of Poland, as a matter of fact, never swerved in their allegiance to the mother-country, and one has but to study their life and work to understand how truly and wholeheartedly they were Poles.

Precisely as the Poles live, with all the might of their body and with all the fire of their soul, in and for the present, so do they remain ardent adherents of the past. They cherish the memories and revere the history of their nation, and tradition is with them almost a religion. All things that can recall the Poland of yesterday they treasure in their hearts with a genuine affection. But beyond every other appeal which the past makes to this people the most potent is found in their national heroes. Among these, Jan Sobieski, who, with a handful of men defeated the Turkish invader under the very walls of Vienna in the year 1683, thereby saving European civilization from a portentous fate; Tadeusz Kosciuszko, the friend of liberty, who fought for the independence of the United States of America, and later, in 1794, led his fellow-countrymen against the combined armies of Russia and Prussia; and Josef Poniatowski, the last of Poland's knights, who perished in the ill-fated battle of Leipzig (1813), are especially representative to them of the greatness and grandeur of their country.

The patriotism of the Poles has always been an astonishment to the whole world. To cheer and strengthen their invincible ardour there came from different parts of Europe, albeit somewhat intermittently, voices charged with sympathy and encouragement.

POLISH CINDERELLAS IN THEIR GAY FÊTE DAY GARB

Though beset with the usual household duties of cooking, sweeping, and washing, into which they are initiated at a very early age, the peasant girls of the Chelm, or Holm, district are not lacking in the amenities of social life, and high days and holidays find them ready and eager for the merry-making, and full of conscious pride in their multifarious frills and flounces

Photo, Polish Legation

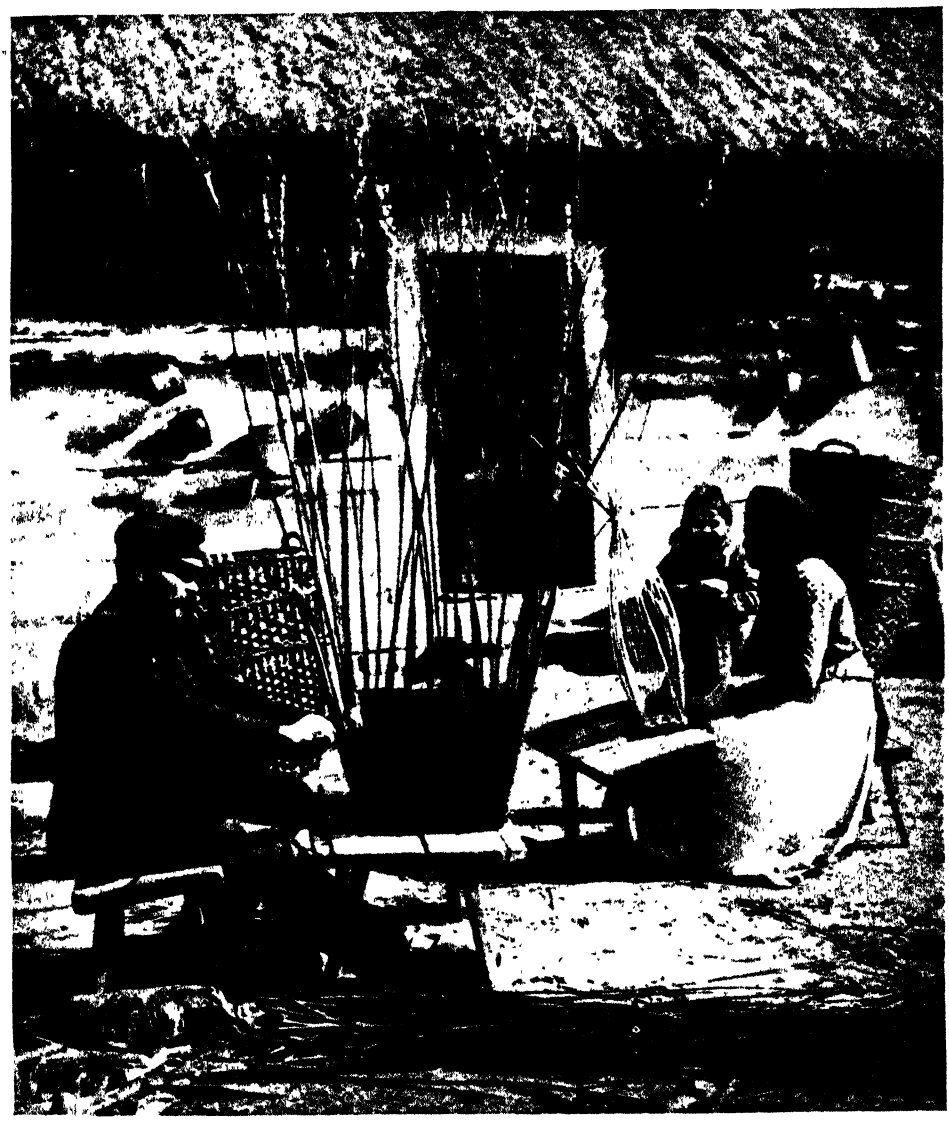
Among English poets, Byron and Campbell gave compassionate expression to the opinion of their countrymen. Many striking and forceful words were spoken, such as those by the Abbé Lamennais in his "Hymn to Poland," dated from Rome in 1832, full of prophetic significance, "Sleep on, O Poland, sleep! That resting-place they call thy tomb is but thy cradle."

The Poles repeatedly took up arms in the hope of ousting the usurper; in 1806, 1812, 1831, 1846, and 1863 their revolts were violently suppressed; but their faithfulness to the idea of independence lived on and, as an English statesman has said: "The Polish race has many gifts, but perhaps its enduring faith is its most remarkable characteristic."

The interminable life-and-death struggles which seemed to leave no stone upon another deprived the country of any traditional art. All national treasures were, again and again, literally swept away, and after each devastating war it was necessary to start afresh The present art of Poland came into being during the nineteenth century The first Polish painter to attain a European reputation was Juljusz Kossak (1824-99). His love of nature found expression in his beautiful sunlit landscapes and in his exquisite painting of horses, executed with extraordinary and powerful realism But Polish painting was triumphantly heralded into the great art world by Grottger and Matejko It was in the past sufferings of his country that Artur Grottger (1837-67) found his inspiration and poured out his soul in three series of marvellous pictures —"Polonia," "Lithuania," and "War."

Jan Matejko (1838-93) stands alone in his genius. The influence of no school ever fell upon him; nature was his sole and supreme teacher, and her he worshipped, and to his mind all beauty lay in truth and the powerful

characterizations of truth. Mastery of execution and wealth of colour are the distinguishing marks of the work of many another Polish painter who has won a place of honour among those practising the fine arts. That the new generation will continue faithful to the great mission of Polish art is not to be doubted; and already there are signs which promise well for the future. It is, however, in the national music of Poland that the soul of the people is reflected in all its individuality and manifold lights and shades, and that the originality and romanticism of Poland take form and expression. Splendidly gifted by nature with the musical temperament, the distinctive



PRACTISING A POPULAR HOME INDUSTRY IN A POLISH VILLAGE

Woodcraft, leather embossing, pottery, nothing comes amiss to the Polish peasant, who in his unostentatious way has developed many a crude, aboriginal industry into a finely-finished and expressive art. Basket-making, too, is much in vogue, for willows abound in most districts. From the young osiers, carefully selected, stout baskets are constructed that find a ready sale

Photo, Polish Legation

taste of the Poles in music has long been acknowledged, and the music of the country is as ancient as its history

The early kings of Poland were enthusiastic patrons of music They were greeted by music as they passed from town to town and hired musicians always formed part of their retinue In the dwellings of the nobles orchestral music was to be heard everywhere, and invariably accompanied their feasts, and during the seventeenth century there was scarcely a lord or high dignitary who had not his own theatre, orchestra opera, and even ballet But though music had been cultivated so ardently for such a considerable period, it was Frederic Chopin, one of the most interesting and fascinating of personalities, who won for Poland a far-reaching fame in the great world of harmony and sound His music, rich in forms and ideas, manifests an originality that knows no bounds, and inspired almost entirely by the mystery and sorrow of his own country, has been called the "flower of romanticism" The vein of melancholy that runs

HARD TOIL IN THE MIDST OF BEAUTEOUS AND BOUNTIFUL NATURE

A born agriculturist, the Ruthenian woman of East Galicia is in the fields during seedtime and harvest, and spends long hours in the fertile valleys fringed by the Carpathian highlands, reaping, sometimes single handed, that which she has sown, not, however, too engrossed in her work to exchange a friend's greeting, or bestow admonition or caress on the youngest born at her side

Photo, Florence Farmborough

through all Chopin's music shows how his country was ever in his thoughts After hearing the wonderful Funeral March, Liszt declared that 'A Pole alone could have written that funeral march, because all the inborn sublimity and introspect of a people cries out, through Chopin in that marvellous inspiration which seems the mourning cry of a whole nation following the bier of their dearest hopes"

Among other musicians of high distinction, belonging to the nineteenth century, must be mentioned Stanislav Moniuszko who although not the originator of opera in Poland was the creator of the National Polish Opera, and Ignace Jan Paderewski of world wide fame The latter is now known as the musician statesman, inasmuch as he renounced music for politics in the early days of the formation of the Republic and carried out with ability the strenuous duties of Prime Minister His foresight and careful judgement fitted him admirably for this position, as well as for that of first Polish delegate to the League of Nations

SHY BEAUTY OF RURAL POLAND

The conservatism of the Polish peasant is displayed in many ways and despite repeated incursions by fashion the costumes of both men and women in the Polish countryside retain the style favoured by earlier generations

Photo Polish Legation

It has been said, with truth, that since 1795, the date of the last partition, the soul of Poland has been kept alive by its literature, its language, and its religion The best literary works of Poland do, in fact, belong to this period, a tribute, if one were needed, to the intense vitality of the nation Of the poets of this time, three, who stand head and shoulders above their fellows, may be mentioned, Mickiewicz, Slowacki and Krasinski

To the credit of Slowacki and Krasinski stand innumerable achievements, varied and rich in mode of construction, and moving over a wide range of emotion and feeling But of the three, Adam Mickiewicz is indisputably the greatest, and exercised the most extended influence upon the

BARTER AND BARGAIN BETWEEN GENTILE AND JEW

The small town of Solotwina, in East Galicia, has been ransacked by warring hosts with none too light a hand, but members of the Jewish community continue with racial stubbornness to thrive and push a trade in the most tumble-down establishments—their chief customers, the Ruthenian peasants, of whom two stalwart, personable specimens are here seen about to transact business

Photo, Florence Farmborough

masses. Born in 1798 in Lithuania, the birthplace of the great patriot Kosciuszko, he wrote his most famous work, "Pan Tadeusz," the poem of poems, at the age of thirty-five. It has appeared in an English translation, and overflows with a passionate yearning for his native country, from which he had been driven an exile in 1824.

In the years of gloom which enveloped Poland after the great revolt of 1863, when the few privileges remaining to Russian Poland had been swept away, there arose Henryk Sienkiewicz, the novelist. Looking to the past for his inspiration, he exhibited to his troubled fellow-countrymen the treasures he had found through his studies of other times, and so extraordinarily life-like were some of the heroes and characters depicted by this writer that even to this day they live as actual historical figures, real beyond question. In the domain of history, his masterpiece is "Quo Vadis," a strikingly vivid picture of Ancient Rome, which has been translated into more than thirty languages.

Present-day conditions are so favourable, and the Poles are themselves responding to their new environment with such discretion, that they should be well able to hold their own in the

very forefront of civilization. Their mental apathy, a natural outcome of the external restraint to which they had been subjected for so long, is now vanishing and, with it, many defects and deficiencies in the general education of the people. Schools are increasing; higher education is coming more within the reach of those desiring it; while the Universities interesting historical buildings, Cracow University was founded in 1364—are open to all.

As a country, Poland has but few beautiful features. In East Galicia she is seen perhaps in her most picturesque aspect. Here in the Carpathian highland and intervening valleys dwell many Ruthenians, or Red Russians, a sturdy, handsome people, found more particularly among the rural population. Nearly all are Uniats, that is to say, members of a section of the Greek Orthodox Church which in 1595 united with the See of Rome, and they include a highly intelligent class, as well as a peasant, mainly illiterate, element. A gathering of the mountaineering peasant class always presents a brilliant spectacle, as a result of the multi-hued costumes and elaborately-embroidered sheepskin coats.

The Tatras, a central section of the Carpathians, are a mountain range of majestic beauty To many people their wild and unspoilt grandeur is calculated to call forth a more ardent wonder than does the "matchless glory" of the peerless peaks of Switzerland. The peasantry of the Tatra regions are distinguished by many delightful characteristics. They excel in coloured broideries and decorative leather-work, and are adepts at wood-carving—and this in spite of the crudeness of their implements. Specimens of their handiwork, in particular from the Zakopane district, may be found in many of the large towns of Central Europe

RED RUSSIAN WORKMEN ON THE OILFIELDS OF BITKÓW

The Ruthenian peasant plays no mean rôle in the petroleum industry of East Galicia. He assists in the erection of the derricks, and is well versed in the manipulation of the complicated mechanism necessary to the sinking of a well. He is a wiry, able-bodied labourer, and under sympathetic supervision displays fine powers of endurance and a remarkable aptitude for work

Photo, Florence Farmborough

With respect to the Austrian Poles, it should be remembered that they were not subjected to the same severity of treatment as were their compatriots in Prussia and Russia, but were allowed a fair amount of freedom and a measure of self-government. This re-acted favourably on the Poles in that part of the world, who set about organizing and developing their own societies. They were permitted also to have their own schools and their two Universities, and were not hindered from occupying certain official positions. On the other hand, the intellectual life of Russian Poland had to exist as best it could. In order to bring about the denationalization of the people the Polish language was proscribed. All instruction was carried on in Russian Even in their play hours, children were not allowed to speak their own tongue which is not unlike Russian, spelt differently, however, and written with Latin letters, and is distinctly of a more sibilant nature. One result of this attempted Russification of the Poles was a high percentage of illiteracy, since the people chose to be ignorant rather than read and write in Russian. As an example of the treatment measured out by the Tsarist regime, it should be noted that the Censor, established in Warsaw, saw fit to prohibit a wide range of books of such authors as Byron and John Stuart Mill. Not only was the reading of the works of Mickiewicz, Slowacki, Krasinski, and Lelewel (the national historian) forbidden, but the very names of these writers were not allowed to be mentioned. Even in 1905 Slowacki's great tragedy "Mazepa," was brought before the public as from the pen of a certain unknown J. S.

IN THE FAMOUS RAINBOW WOOL OF LOWICZ

Lowicz is renowned for its coloured wools, and Lowicz girls for their handsome rainbow costumes. The striped, quasi-crinoline skirt and neat bodice present a delightful medley of soft rich hues, enhanced by endless strings of amber or coral beads

Photo, Polish Legation

The Poles are one of the numerous subdivisions of the Slavonic race. Some twenty-five million of them live in Poland, and about five million are scattered abroad in foreign lands, the majority being in the United States. In the American settlements, Polish is spoken even more than English. Children are taught their own language, and all can sing the National Hymn

HOME LIFE IN AN OIL-PRODUCING REGION OF NEW POLAND

Petroleum has been found in considerable quantities at and about Pasieczna, a sequestered village lying among the Galician hills in the vicinity of Nadworna. The homesteads of the "oilmen" are built in simple style, generally of wood; and there is an alluring homeliness and a warmth of hospitality in these remote dwellings which make pleasant memories for the stranger

Photo, Florence Farmborough

of Poland: "Jeszcze Polska nie zginela" (Poland is not yet lost). Now that their faith has been justified, thousands of these voluntary exiles have returned to their newly-revived national State.

Though of medium height the Poles are a finely-built people, and an easy and a graceful carriage lends them a certain air of distinction as contrasted with other Slavonic races. They are for the most part fair-haired, but tend in the south to a somewhat darker complexion. Among other qualities, bravery, courtesy, and hospitality stand out conspicuously. The Polish women are often very handsome and gifted, and, in addition to beauty, they have a natural vivacity which greatly enhances their general attractiveness.

Roman Catholicism is the dominant form of religion, but there exist also numberless Protestants, Greek Catholics, Jews, Uniats, and a few Mahomedans. The Jews of Poland, the majority of whom inhabit the towns, and are most numerous in Warsaw, where they total nearly 37 per cent. of the population, should be reckoned as a separate people. The poorer class lead a life apart and take no actual share in Polish affairs; they attend their own schools, and among themselves speak their own language, commonly known as Yiddish, a jargon of medieval German mingled with Hebrew. Old-time customs, religious and secular, are carefully observed; while the gabardine and fur-rimmed felt hat of bygone generations are still in vogue. These, together with the long beard and side-ringlets, form the lineaments of the typical Polish Jew. Among the educated Jews, however, are many who by their energy and ability have risen to high positions in life, especially where commerce, industry, and the professions are concerned. Some of these take an active and efficient part in national affairs.

RADIANT RUTHENIAN GIRLHOOD IN THE ZALESZCZYKI NEIGHBOURHOOD

The Ruthenians or Red Russians in East Galicia form the mass of the labouring population and are for the most part a poor and backward people While young the peasant girls are exceedingly attractive and in their bright costumes cleverly embroidered and worn with multitudinous chains of corals and coins, impart a touch of romantic charm to the rustic surroundings

Photo Polish Legation

The industrial resources of Poland have been turned to great account during the last half century, and Lodz is a striking instance of what has been done Here is a town of some 500,000 inhabitants, a great manufacturing centre, aptly described as the "Manchester of Poland" Devoid of any particular interest from an architectural point of view, a certain dignity gathers about the city in consequence of its association with the ceaseless activities that go with important industrial undertakings

The mineral resources of the country exceed in value and importance even the manufactures A very considerable supply of oil, salt, coal, and iron is distributed to Europe from Polish territory Steel, zinc, and lead are also produced in various districts of the country, and mineral springs are numerous In the vicinity of Cracow are the famous salt mines of Bochnia and Wieliczka, mentioned in history so far back as the twelfth century Wieliczka has proved a great attraction to many foreign visitors, some of whom declare that the miners live in a veritable fairyland of glittering crystal, and, indeed, the magnificent ballroom,chapels with altars and statuary—all constructed from rock salt—are a sight not readily effaced from the memory In Galicia oil-fields are found, worked chiefly by foreign syndicates In 1912, petroleum was being exploited in 389 places, and an eminent Polish scientist has calculated that rock oil-bearing land in Galicia covers no fewer than 19,760 acres, which would contain many millions of tons of raw petroleum

The Vistula is Poland's largest and most important waterway; a river that

COAT OF MANY COLOURS OF AN EAST GALICIAN PEASANT BELLE

Worn in both summer and winter, the sheepskin coat forms the chief attraction of the Ruthenian costume When arriving at a marriageable age the young girl will often spend all her scanty earnings on a brand new sheepskin, usually beautifully ornamented with elaborate designs in coloured leather, which she wears with a variegated skirt, coloured kerchief, and glistening strings of coral

Photo Florence Farmborough

has always been closely associated with the history of the country When the kingdom of Poland was at the height of its greatness and prosperity, it formed the chief channel of communication, but declined in utility and worth when the kingdom fell, for Russia and Austria made no attempt on their part to improve it for navigation purposes As a French cleric observes "The Vistula was condemned to the humiliating role of general uselessness She, too, is a victim of the partition of Poland" Prussia, however, saw to it that her share in the great river should be utilized to some purpose Hence it was that Danzig (Gdansk), an interesting old town at the mouth of the river, and always a seaport of some importance, lost but little of its celebrity as a commercial centre To day Danzig (see page 1569) is a free port, the Prussian hold upon it has relaxed, and the Vistula may once again bring the riches of Poland's mines, fields and forests to the sea a fact of paramount importance, seeing that thereby the development of the economic life of the country is guaranteed The long awaited Constitution of the New

HOMELY BUT ARTISTIC PEASANTRY OF THE TATRAS

The peasants of the Tatra Mountains, the highest group of the Carpathian system, possess surprising vigour and intelligence They excel in all peasants' arts and crafts, building their houses and churches in a style all their own, producing carvings and embroideries of great beauty and originality, and even their workaday garments are not devoid of imagination and artistic taste

Photo Polish Legation

GAIETY OF SUNDAY RAIMENT IN A SUN-RAYED VILLAGE RETREAT

In this pleasing group of peasant women, assembled by a village shrine, the textile art of Lowicz is displayed in its brightest broad-striped beauty. Orange and rose mix with vivid purples and deep chocolate hues, presenting a rich, animated blur of colour, bright and gay, as though a coloured picture had stepped out of a story book and come to life

Photo, Polish Legation

Poland was duly proclaimed and ratified in March, 1921. In every large town a special High Mass was celebrated as a definite act of thanksgiving. It was an unforgettable sight watching the joyous throngs of people passing to and fro from S. John's Cathedral in the capital city. To these multitudes it was the "day of days" that had dawned. Ever since their complete liberation from the Triple Powers in 1919, they had dreamed of this event, which represented the culmination not only of their own hopes, but the hopes of generations of Poles before them. During those two years, the Sejm, or Diet, composed of the people's representatives, faithfully observing the spirit of the inspiring motto emblazoned in the Legislative Chamber of the Senate-house, "Salus Republicae Suprema Lex" (the welfare of the Republic is the supreme law), had laboured with untiring zeal for this greatest and most momentous occasion in the modern history of their country.

Strange as it may seem, this scene was little more than a replica of another which 130 years before took place in the same streets, for it was in May, 1791, in Warsaw—the "Heart of Poland," an ancient city of decayed splendour, rich in wonderful but terrible memories—that Poland proclaimed a Constitution in which the Polish nobles voluntarily relinquished many of their privileges. The Constitution, first in Europe to recognize the people's rights to self-government, preceding by only four months the final vote of the French Constitution of September, 1791, called

forth the admiration of Burke, Walpole, and many other distinguished men on the Continent But it was this political step that hastened Poland's downfall. Her enemies feared the effect which this new form of government might have when brought into juxtaposition with their own arbitrary and autocratic methods, and soon succeeded in breaking up the Polish entity.

SOLID LOWICZ RESPECTABILITY
With his healthy frame, good-humoured face, top-boots, broad-striped trousers, much-braided coat, and many-buttoned vest, he represents the burly genial youth of the Lowicz peasant community
Photo, Polish Legation

An illustrious warrior of our own day, not to be omitted even from a brief résumé such as the present, and one who was for more than four years the presiding genius of Poland's destinies, is Marshal Josef Pilsudski, ex-Chief of the Polish State. On the outbreak of the Great War, he gathered his legions together with promptitude, for the hope of regaining their freedom filled all hearts, and all through the horrors of war, amidst the openly or covertly hostile armies of Germany and Russia, he succeeded in preserving his legions to the end. Upon the defeat of Germany it was Pilsudski who organized the new national army and formed the first Government of Independent Poland. Stanislav Wojciechowski, who is well known as the leader of the Polish cooperative movement, was elected President in December, 1922.

Peace was first brought to Poland and amicable relations between herself and her neighbours were established in 1921. That, too, was the first year which saw the resuscitation of many ruined factories, and the initiation of new industries, aided by advances made from the Treasury. Although the country ran a grave risk in thus financing local industrial enterprise, as may be judged from the fact that since the beginning of 1922 a considerable shortage of money and restriction of credit have had to be recognized, the risk was more than justified by the splendid results in the strengthening of trade and commerce, and a most satisfactory increase in production.

As to agriculture, greater acreage has been brought under cultivation, and harvests are increasing, so that a large surplus can be placed aside for export. Thus it is plain to see that Poland is creating a new country from her devastated land, for there is hardly any other country in Europe that has been so ruthlessly wasted by fire and sword as

PIPER OF THE TATRAS
Although well - seasoned with five-score years, he can pipe as gay and tuneful an air as ever he piped in the heydey of his youth

Poland, and by giving fresh impetus to her industrial life she holds the future in her hands—a future rich with promise, zealously guarded by the proud White Eagle of her national standard.

The Poles are entirely absorbed in the national cause—the free exercise of the freedom of Poland. To them freedom is a most holy thing, and they move warily lest in their enthusiasm they should wreak injury to that which they hold most precious. During the relentless persecution by foreign rulers they strained every nerve in their struggle for national existence. There has been, in fact, no European war waged during the last century in the name of freedom in which the Poles have not taken part, for all who fought for freedom were to them as brothers. The Great War has hastened the issues, and the dream of independence and full political liberty has been realized by many a down-trodden, suppressed people. In the case of Poland, a glorious resurrection of the whole country has been witnessed: the passage from hope to magnificent reality; the movement from out of the depths of misery and despair to the heights of exultant joy; the transition from Poland fettered to Poland free.

THREE MINSTRELS OF THE MOUNTAINS
Among the sturdy mountaineers inhabiting the wild fastnesses of the Tatra regions are many born musicians. Each feast-day finds them at their glad task, delighting the listener's ear and filling forest and glen with echoes of their haunting melodies
Photos, Mrs. Fanshawe

WHERE THE POLES LOVE OF MUSIC IS MADE MANIFEST VILLAGE BAND AND CHOIR

The national music of Poland is of ancient origin and represents the individuality and romanticism of her people, which no fetters and no sufferings have ever been able to destroy History shows that the early Poles were devoted to music, a devotion that has developed through the centuries expressing itself in famous polonaises, mazurkas, and in many other characteristic compositions The band, sometimes assisted by a choir of young girls is the pride of the Polish village, its picked musicians being carefully guided through the intricate passages of spirited dance tunes or stately sacred music by the baton of a veteran conductor

Photo Polish Legation

Poland

II. The Epic Story of an Heroic People

By Lieut.-Col. F. E. Whitton, C.M.G.

Author of "A History of Poland"

THE early history of Poland is wrapt in obscurity, but the actual ancestors of the Poles seem to have been the Sarmatians, a tribe located more particularly on the banks of the Vistula, who revolted against the Roman legions led by Varus. From these tribes there slowly evolved a nation in spite of the steady pressure of its western neighbours Germany.

The Christian Germans were inclined to adopt a policy of interested evangelisation of their pagan neighbours, and the acceptance of Christianity thus became a political necessity for the Poles. In 965, Mieszko, Duke of Poland, received the rite of baptism. Unlike Russia, whose creed came from Byzantium, Poland received her religion from Rome, a circumstance which was to affect the history of the latter country.

The introduction of Christianity, although it alleviated, did not render Poland altogether immune from, the necessity of struggling for her existence against her powerful neighbours. The Duke of Poland had to acknowledge himself a vassal of the Emperor, and on the other flank Russia was slowly but surely expanding westwards. But the military talents of Bolesaus, the son of Mieszko, did much to restore the misfortunes of his country. Before his death Poland was a kingdom, containing over 200,000 inhabitants, and stretching from the Baltic to the Carpathians. A thoroughly incapable ruler followed, but the latter's son Casimir, "The Restorer," proved himself worthy of the confidence of his people.

Casimir died in 1058. Of his foreign policy the outstanding feature was the defeat he inflicted on the savage Prussians of the Baltic littoral. These pagans, however, continued to give much trouble until, in 1230, the Poles called in the aid of the Teutonic Knights, a German monastic-military Order which had come into being during the Crusades. The Knights carried out their mission by a war of extermination, and were soon followed by enterprising German traders. Repudiating their promise to evacuate most of the conquered territory, the Teutonic Knights consolidated themselves in their new possession, and Poland at the end of the thirteenth century found that she had as her north-eastern neighbour a powerful German state, half ecclesiastic and half military.

Meanwhile, Poland had been engaged in a series of struggles with Russia, Bohemia, and Hungary, efforts to escape from the strangling coils of the Empire; and in a conflict with Rome. The murder of the Bishop of Cracow drew from Gregory VII the thunder of the Interdict. The royal title was withdrawn, and the sovereigns of Poland reverted to their former status of dukes. For a time the incubus of Germanism was thrown off by the crushing defeat of the Emperor at Breslau, in 1110, but against this was the overthrow of the Poles at the hands of the Russians and Hungarians in 1139. Another evil for Poland was the Slav tradition of supreme power as a divisible heritage. Bolasaus III. divided his

THE REPUBLIC OF POLAND

dominions among his sons Thus opened a period of 150 years distinguished by the dissensions of rival princes, the decay of a once powerful nation, and the helplessness of Poland against the terrible Tartar invasions

Union of Poland and Lithuania

The monarchy was restored in 1320, when Ladislas (or Vladislas) the Dwarf was crowned king and took up anew the task of the unification of his country. The situation of Poland was still far from secure. Hungary, Bohemia, and the Marks of the Holy Roman Empire were still dangers; to the north were the powerful Teutonic Knights, whose headquarters had been shifted from Venice to the Vistula; while to the east lay the new and vigorous power of Lithuania. It was their relation with this power that did most to determine the future of the Poles. After the death of Louis, King of Hungary and Poland, his heiress Hedwiga, though betrothed at the time to William Duke of Austria, was persuaded by the Polish nobles to wed Jagiello, the Grand Prince of Lithuania. The latter embraced Catholicism and, as King of Poland in right of his wife, took the name of Ladislas II. A union between the two countries followed, but proved to be unworkable. Nevertheless, community of interests and the alliance of the royal houses brought about a lasting bond, and Poland and Lithuania were finally united by the Treaty of Lublin in 1569.

With the death of Sigismund II in 1572 the direct line of the Jagiellos ended. For nearly two centuries the kings of this great dynasty had guided the fortunes of the state. Under their firm and wise rule Poland had become great among the nations of Europe. Henceforth, until the disasters which extinguished her existence, the history of Poland is one of decline.

Disruption stayed by Sobieski

The Crown, always elective in theory, now became so in fact. A century of internal disorder was the result. There were also troubles from outside. In 1647 a great Cossack rebellion broke out in the Ukraine, and the Polish troops were severely defeated. Seven years later the Russians invaded Poland, and in 1655 Charles X of Sweden forced war on the country. The drain on the national exchequer was great, and owing to the persistent refusal of the Diet to vote adequate supplies, the king, John Casimir (1648-1668), was compelled to sell to the Elector of Brandenburg exemption from the duty of doing homage for his Prussian domains. In this reign the privilege of the "liberum veto" began to be used with pernicious effect.

Early in the sixteenth century the principle had been accepted that absolute unanimity was requisite for all enactments, and during the reign of John Casimir the veto was persistently used by recalcitrant members to explode the Diet. Disgusted with his subjects, the king abdicated. The decline of Poland was for the moment stayed by the military genius of Sobieski, who was elected king as John III. His relief of Vienna in 1683, when it was almost at the mercy of the all-conquering Turks, forms one of the most glorious episodes of Polish history. But after his death in 1696 the condition of Poland drifted into deplorable and increasing anarchy.

A survey of Poland as it existed in the middle of the eighteenth century reveals so many anomalies and inconsistencies as to make it difficult to decide whether it was a great or third-rate nation. For centuries Poland had withstood the growing power of Germanism. She had been the centre of the great Catholic reaction after the Reformation. She had played her part as the arbiter of the destinies of Central Europe. And it had been Poland that had rescued Europe from the tide of Turkish invasion.

At the Mercy of Powerful Neighbours

These are unquestionably the records of a Great Power. But on the other side of the shield the littleness of Poland is clearly visible. The country was unquestionably decadent. It was afflicted with the most vicious constitution conceivable; in the real characteristics of a state it was as lacking as the Holy Roman Empire. The elective system of monarchy was fatal to consistency and stability. The landowners formed a powerful and exclusive caste, selfish to a degree, and intent on magnifying its own importance. There was no real middle class. The lower class consisted of serfs or slaves. The king was a mere figurehead.

The country to a man resented taxation. In the words of Sydney Smith, "they preferred any load of infamy, however great, to any burden of taxation, however light." The system by which a single discontented senator could paralyse all legislation by the mere utterance of four syllables, "Nie pozwalam" (I do not assent), was the very negation of government; and the thwarted members were then wont to summon a rival assembly and to support it by force of arms. Such a country was bound to be at the mercy of powerful neighbours.

Unfortunately for Poland, on the death of Augustus III., in 1763, three neighbouring thrones were filled by exceptionally able sovereigns. Two of these, Frederick the Great of Prussia and

CORNER OF THE RYNEK IN THE ANCIENT CAPITAL OF ALL POLAND

Vivid memories of past glory still linger about the time-worn streets of Cracow Enshrined within the Cathedral sleep Poland's most honoured dead, while the rynek, or market place, witness of many a resplendent coronation pageant, contains ancient structures of great architectural merit, among them the twin towered Panna Marya, Church of the Virgin, externally plain and austere, but its interior glowing with dim rich colours, Gothic splendours, and historic treasures

HALE AND HEARTY HIGHLANDER

He is one with his rugged surroundings in the lofty Lairig to whose winter winds and summer suns he owes his stoutness of heart and sturdiness of frame

Photo, Polish Legation

Catherine of Russia, were land grabbers pure and simple The third, Maria Theresa of Austria, was of tenderer mould, but though she was always in tears, she always took her share"

Catherine and Frederick soon came to an agreement as to the king they would foist on Poland This was Stanislas Poniatowski, a young Pole of ordinary lineage who had once been one of Catherine's numerous lovers Although the new sovereign at first displayed a weak flavour of patriotism, he was really bound hand and foot to Russia A religious feud in Poland soon gave Catherine and Frederick their opportunity for further action The Roman Catholic party had got the upper hand, whereupon Russia promptly espoused the cause of her Lithuanian co-religionists of the Greek Church while Prussia took up the cause of the Lutherans

The Poles made the fatal mistake of appealing to Turkey, a non Christian power Filled with virtuous indignation Russia, Prussia and Austria hurled troops into Poland and in 1772 signed a Treaty of Partition by which Poland was deprived of about one third of her population Twenty one years later about one half of the remaining area of Poland was divided by Russia and Prussia, the lion's share falling to the former Power

Two years more and the sentence 'Finis Poloniæ' was pronounced for by the Third Partition what was left of the country was parcelled out between the three neighbouring powers Thus came about one of the most remarkable occurrences in history, the complete disappearance of a Great Power which was not so much defeated as enslaved not conquered, but partitioned removed from the comity of nations and divided up among her neighbours as a thing ownerless and dead

The Poles clung to the hope of recovering their independence by French aid and with a splendid loyalty remained faithful to Napoleon even after the disastrous Russian campaign Napoleon however, merely used Poland for his own ends and involved her in his ruin After the Congress of Vienna the restoration of Poland seemed as far off as ever Poland was now under five administrations There was still an Austrian Poland There was still a Prussian Poland The Lithuanian territories were incorporated as an integral part of the Russian Empire Out of the residuum there was set up an autonomous kingdom to be ruled by the Emperor of Russia as its king Finally, there was the microscopic republic of Cracow guaranteed by the Great Powers

In the century between the Congress of Vienna and the outbreak of the Great War Poland experienced the rule of three masters In Russian Poland the humane and liberal sentiments of the Emperor Alexander I seemed to promise amelioration, but when he was succeeded by his reactionary brother, Nicholas I, the Poles were ruled with a rod of iron Insurrections in 1830 and 1863 hardened the hearts of the Russian officials, and in 1874 the last claim of Poland to be considered a separate nation disappeared, for in that year the vice royalty was abolished and Poland became merely a Russian province

The attitude of Russia towards Poland may be summed up in one word, Russification But when the war of 1914 broke out the Russian commander-in chief, in a stirring proclamation informed the Poles that the dream of their fathers

and their forefathers would be realized and that the resurrection of the Polish nation was about to take place.

At first there was a genuine attempt by Prussia to conciliate Polish sentiment. The Polish language and nationality were officially recognized, and the white eagle of Poland was impaled on the black eagle of Prussia as the Polish arms In the year 1848 considerable sympathy was felt by the liberal doctrinaires of Prussia for the Polish cause. But the prospect of the rise of Poland under Russian protection and the importance of Danzig and the Vistula hardened the heart of Bismarck. He was perfectly frank in the matter. "The Polish question is to us a matter of life or death" were his words His policy became ruthless. Severe measures were taken to break down Polish nationality and to stamp out the Polish language. Even confiscation of Polish land and the substitution of German immigrants were resorted to.

As for Austria, her treatment of Poland was at first arbitrary and ruthless, but later a change became apparent. The reason is to be found in the long rivalry between Austria and Prussia, which induced the former to rally her Slav subjects to her side. After 1866 the claims of Austria for supremacy in Germany were for ever shattered. In her humiliation she had to look round for allies, and found them in the Poles. And the Poles were all the more welcome as they alone of all the Slav peoples were opposed to Russia. Concessions to the Poles were therefore the order of the day, and when the crisis of 1914 arrived a conference of Polish members of the Galician Diet passed a formal resolution affirming their loyalty to the House of Hapsburg.

The Republic of Poland was proclaimed in November, 1918, and under the Treaty of Paris, June 28, 1919, its independence was guaranteed. As far as possible it was reconstituted within the limits of the eighteenth century "Polish commonwealth." Danzig was made a free city, to which Poland was guaranteed access; while in the north and in the south-east the destiny of two areas was to be decided by plebiscite As for the eastern frontier, the defection of Russia from the Allies and her relapse into chaos had the effect of leaving this boundary undetermined and of exposing Poland to attack by Bolshevist forces.

French and British troops were sent to the country during the transitional period, the situation being still further complicated by an insurrection under the leadership of Korfanty, directed against the Supreme Council. As the whole of Eastern and Central Europe may be said to be still in the melting-pot, it is too early yet to prophesy the future which lies in store for Poland. But there is a strong feeling of sympathy in Western Europe for the most unfortunate and not the least noble of European peoples.

POLAND : FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Includes a considerable part of the Great European Plain, and is bounded north by the Baltic Sea and Lithuania, east by Russia, south by Rumania and Czechoslovakia, and west by Germany. It is drained by a number of important rivers, including the Vistula and Dniester, while in the south the wooded range of the Carpathian mountains forms a natural boundary. Total area, comprising former state of Posen, East Galicia, Russian Poland, and parts of German Silesia and Vilna, about 140,000 square miles, with an estimated population of some 30,000,000.

Constitution and Government

Except for government officials and the military, franchise is universal for both sexes at the age of twenty-one. Government republican in form. President elected by National Assembly for seven years, and has power to summon and dismiss the Sejm, consisting of Senate or upper house and lower house or Diet. He is not politically or personally responsible, must be a Polish citizen of not less than forty-one, and commands army, except in war-time. Republic divided for electoral purposes into sixty-four districts.

Commerce and Industries

Agriculture chief occupation of people. Some eighty-five per cent. of area is productive. All forests land are State-owned. Main crops include wheat, rye, barley, oats, and potatoes. Considerable numbers of livestock are maintained. There are iron and steel furnaces and rolling mills Very large mineral salt resources, while petroleum and rock oil are worked. In 1921, 2,027,835 tons of goods were exported and 4,745,264 tons imported. The zloty=one gold franc, has been sanctioned as national currency

Communications

Poland has about 10,000 miles of railway, all State-owned, and there are more than 30,000 miles of road. Some 51,600 miles of telegraph, and 7,600 of telephone line, and over 1,500 post and telegraph offices, with over 2,000 postal agencies. There are also about 1,800 miles of navigable waterway.

Religion and Education

No established church and all creeds tolerated. Roman Catholicism the religion of majority. Education free and elementary education obligatory. There are more than 25,000 elementary schools with over 2,500,000 pupils and 43,000 teachers. There are also universities at various towns, including Vilna, Posen, Cracow, and Warsaw.

Chief Towns

Warsaw, capital (estimated population 931,000), Lodz (451,800), Lemburg (219,000), Cracow (181,700), Posen (169,810), Sosnowiec (86,700), Czenstochowa (80,500), Bialystok (77,000), Lublin (94,500), Przemysl (48,000), Grodno (35,000).

PORTUGUESE FISHWIVES AT THE LISBON MARKET SECURING SUPPLIES FOR THEIR DAILY ROUNDS

On arrival at the quay the fish are unloaded from the boats and dumped at the market. An auction is then held at which the excitement grows with the clamour till both are at top pitch. Then when the goods are distributed, the fishwives, in their wide, short skirts and flat hats, on which they balance their baskets, set off to all parts of the city to cry their wares. Portuguese waters are prodigal of fish, and sometimes a hundred different varieties are on sale

Portugal

I. Its Poets, Peasants, and Politicians

By Professor George Young

Author of "Portugal: A History"

IT is five hundred years since Portugal discovered the modern world, and it is time that the modern world discovered Portugal. For there are few countries about which so little is known.

Looking at Portugal on the map we might suppose it to be a province of Spain that by some political accident and without any racial or regional raison-d'être had been made a state. This is wrong. Portugal is as distinct and different from Spain as Ireland from England. True, the mountains and moors of northern Portugal merge into those of Galicia, while the Algarves in the south, with their African landscape and climate, might be Andalusia. But Portugal proper, with its green meadows and wooded hillsides, its winding streams and sweet-smelling heaths, its soft sea breezes and warm showers, is the very opposite of the bare brown upland wheatlands and wastes of Castile, with their biting winds and burning suns.

Travelling to Portugal by rail the last Spanish town you pass is the university city of Salamanca—a plaster of red buildings on a yellow upland—and the first Portuguese town you come to is the university city of Coimbra—a pile of white buildings perched high over a blue river and green water meadows. Moreover, the frontier between the two countries - a no-man's-land of rocky mountains and stony "despobladas," dotted here and there with a "Villa Franca" planted for some political or strategic purpose, and only traversed by the two river gorges with road and railway—has been since history began as much a natural as a national frontier.

Not only have the Portuguese and Spaniards fought each other across it throughout their national histories, but it has been a sector of the general fighting front whenever Europe has been divided into two hostile camps. It was so in the wars of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries against French supremacy, and it was so in the Great War against German supremacy. And Portugal was always on the British side of the line.

The Late Latin poet Dracontius has a description of the delights of Portugal after the long dusty journey across Spain. As a guide book he is not yet out of

SOUTHERN GRAVITY

Raven tresses parted over the broad forehead seem to give a grave impression, belied by the dimples that begin a smile

LADEN WINE BOATS OF OPORTO ON THEIR WAY TO LEIXOES

Oporto city lies three and a half miles up the river Douro from its Atlantic port of Leixoes. The river being unsuited to navigation by sea going craft of any considerable burden, sailing boats are used for the transport of casks of the famous port wine to the sea. The steersman, high upon a rough platform, manipulates an enormous oar in place of a tiller

Photo, A. W. Cutler

date. For if the Roman temple at Evora has fallen rather out of repair, there is still much in this Virgilian countryside that Dracontius would have called old-fashioned. For example, take the pair of little mouse-coloured oxen you meet in the lane drawing an oblong box on two solid discs. Such a cart can be seen in Roman representations of the Celts on the "trek;" the mystic whorls and patterns carved on the yoke and the ear-piercing shriek from the ungreased axle serve still to keep off evil spirits, even in their modern form of motorists.

For Portugal can be very noisy—as, for instance, in a "revolution," when the mounted police are galloping about the pavements, unpopular newspaper printing presses are being thrown from fourth-floor windows, and a field battery and a cruiser are bombarding each other across Lisbon. Moreover, in its obscurer regions, it can be no less noisome. There is a world of meaning in the line with which Dracontius closes his catalogue of the odours of Portugal: "Una parens tellus non unum fundit odorem" (one mother soil gives forth more than one single smell).

But, after all, travellers who poke their noses into slums and politics should know what to expect; and to the tourist Portugal will come as a pleasant surprise—a land of coolness and cleanliness, of vivid colours and vital contrasts, a land with charm. Stand on the battlements of Palmella, the great rock fortress of the Knights of Calatrava, with the south wind blowing up over the orange groves of Setúbal. Drive through inundations of spring flowers, and enter a world of incomparable chivalry in the courts of Thomar or of incomprehensible mysticism in the cloisters of Alcobaça. See the sunset from the cliffs of Cascaes with an Atlantic swell spouting through the Bocca do Inferno, and the fantastic fishing boats running in over the Tagus bar. Walk through the crowd of medieval costumes in a country fair under the shadow of the grand Gothic cathedral of Batalha. Try to paint the kaleidoscopic colours

of the Lisbon fish-market or to photograph the grace of the fish-girls, as they glide over the cobbles balancing their flat baskets on their classic heads. And then admit that

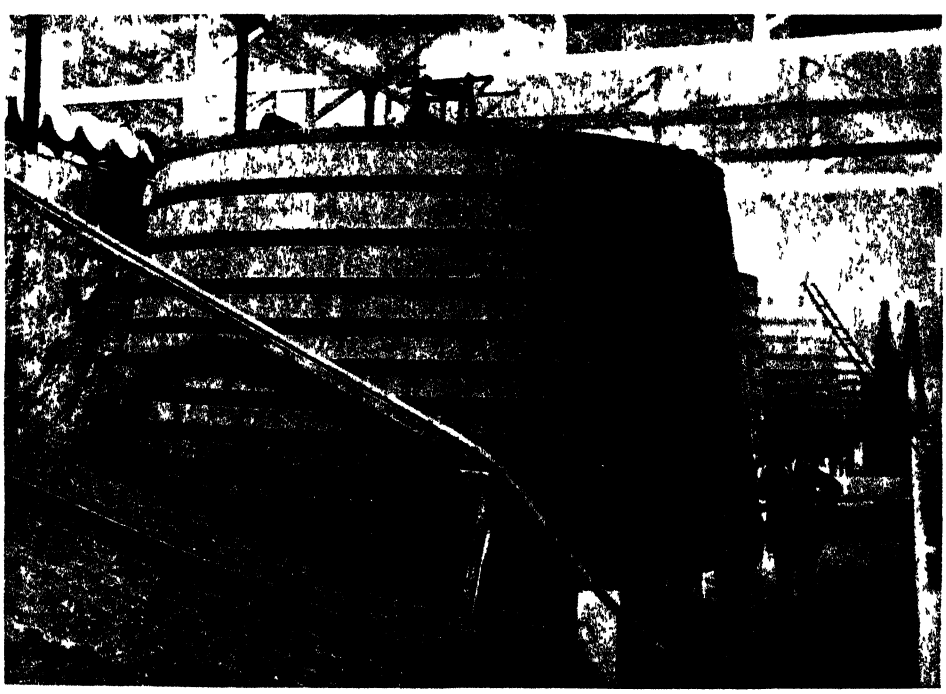
> Che nao ha visto Lisboa
> Nao ha visto cosa boa,

which may be rendered in English as:

> He who has not seen Lisbon
> has not seen a beautiful thing

It has always been a characteristic of Portugal to produce just one or two masterpieces apparently without progenitors or posterity in every form of national expression, and this is especially noticeable in art and architecture. Schools of Portuguese painting only exist for the expert; but occasionally a painting will be seen that will convey even to an untrained eye the hall-mark of merit and the handicraft of the race. Such a painting is the triptych by Nuño Gonsalvez in the Lisbon Museum, clearly inspired by the Flemings, but infused with a colour and a character wholly Portuguese.

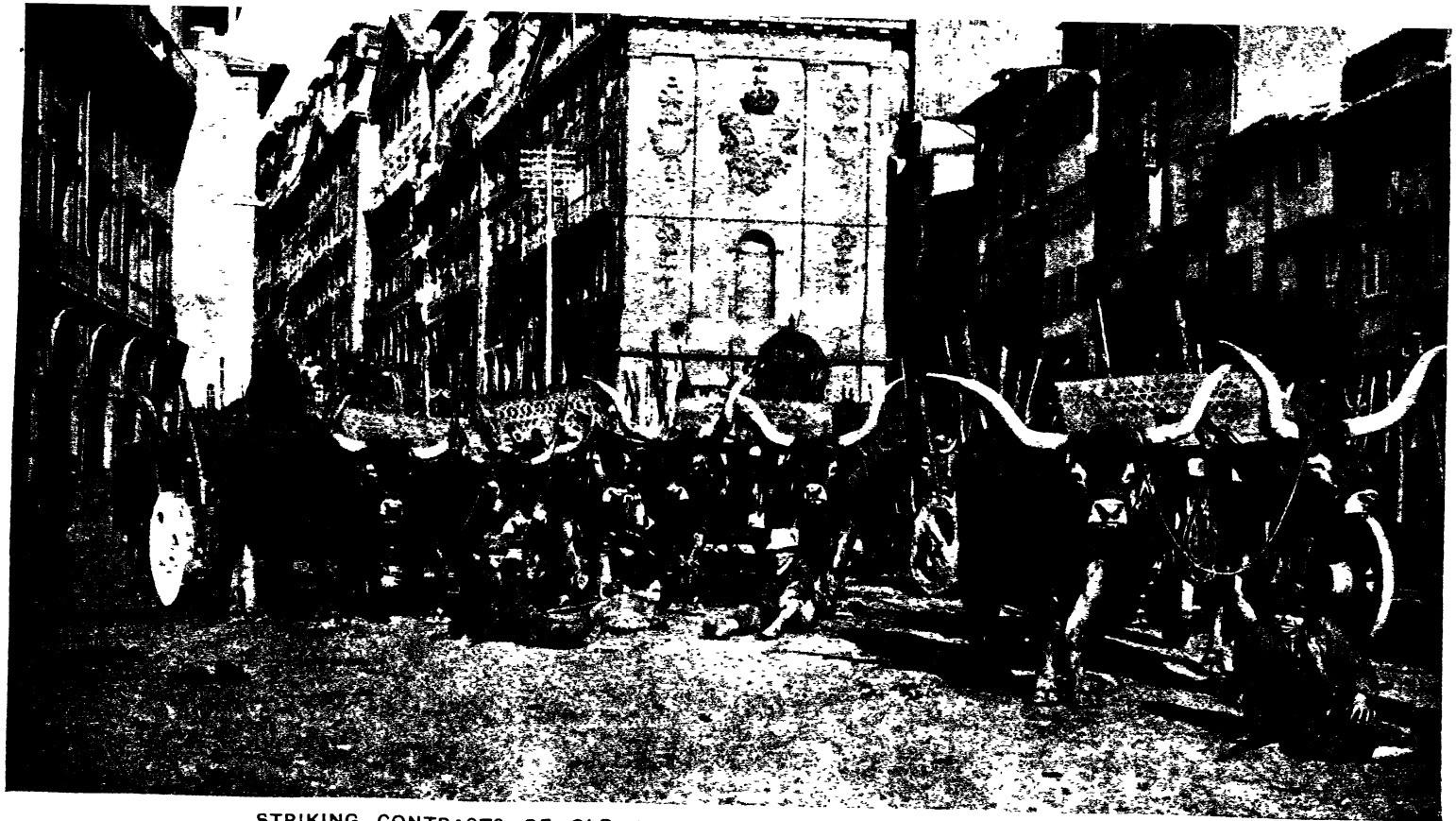
There is the same singularity, in the double sense, in Portuguese architecture. Where could you find a grander example of early Gothic or a national monument more expressive of the wars of liberation from the Moors than the great fortress church of Alcobaça? Where a more perfect specimen of English Decorated and of Portuguese symbolic sculpture than in the cathedral of Batalha, commemorating the first Anglo-Portuguese victory in their first joint war for Portuguese independence? Where could one find a more lovely work, inspired by the Sainte-Chapelle and the Taj Mahal, than the Convent of Belem, celebrating the conquest of India. Or later and lower yet, is there at Versailles or at the Escorial a more



VAST VATS OF PORT MATURING IN A WINE LODGE OF OPORTO

Only that wine produced from grapes grown in a certain district on either side the river Douro may be known as port. The vineyards are located upon the sides of the neighbouring hills, and the grapes are gathered towards the end of September or early October. When the wine has fermented, it is placed in these vats, whose capacity is more than a million glasses

Photo, A. W. Cutler



STRIKING CONTRASTS OF OLD AND NEW IN THE MARKET PLACE OF OPORTO

While these youthful bullock drivers take their midday meal the great-horned oxen with their yokes of Moorish design stolidly renew theirs and chew the cud The fine buildings of modern design, the ancient houses on the right, and the archaism of the clumsy vehicles with their clustered poles, afford striking contrasts. It will be noticed that in many cases the horns of each pair of oxen overlap, so great is their spread

Photo, A. W. Cutler

monstrous example of the megalomania and melancholia of "Grand Monarchism" than the monastery-palace of Mafra? Or has any country a scene more illustrative of its national history than the rocks and woods of Cintra, with the Peña palace, the dream of a South German scene-painter up above, the Crusaders, wall all around, the Moorish palace with its mysterious marble halls below, and "Vathek's" villa in the middle?

Portugal has not got the credit of its masterpieces just because they are unique, and for that reason unknown. Portugal, exploding as it does in a brilliant blaze that illuminates as in a lightning flash the European movement of the day at its most typical moment, achieves a masterpiece that as a rule is credited to Europe rather than to Portugal. The explanation is that Portugal and the Portuguese are both unusually receptive and reproductive. In them any foreign seed roots rapidly, blooms abundantly, and exhausts itself quickly.

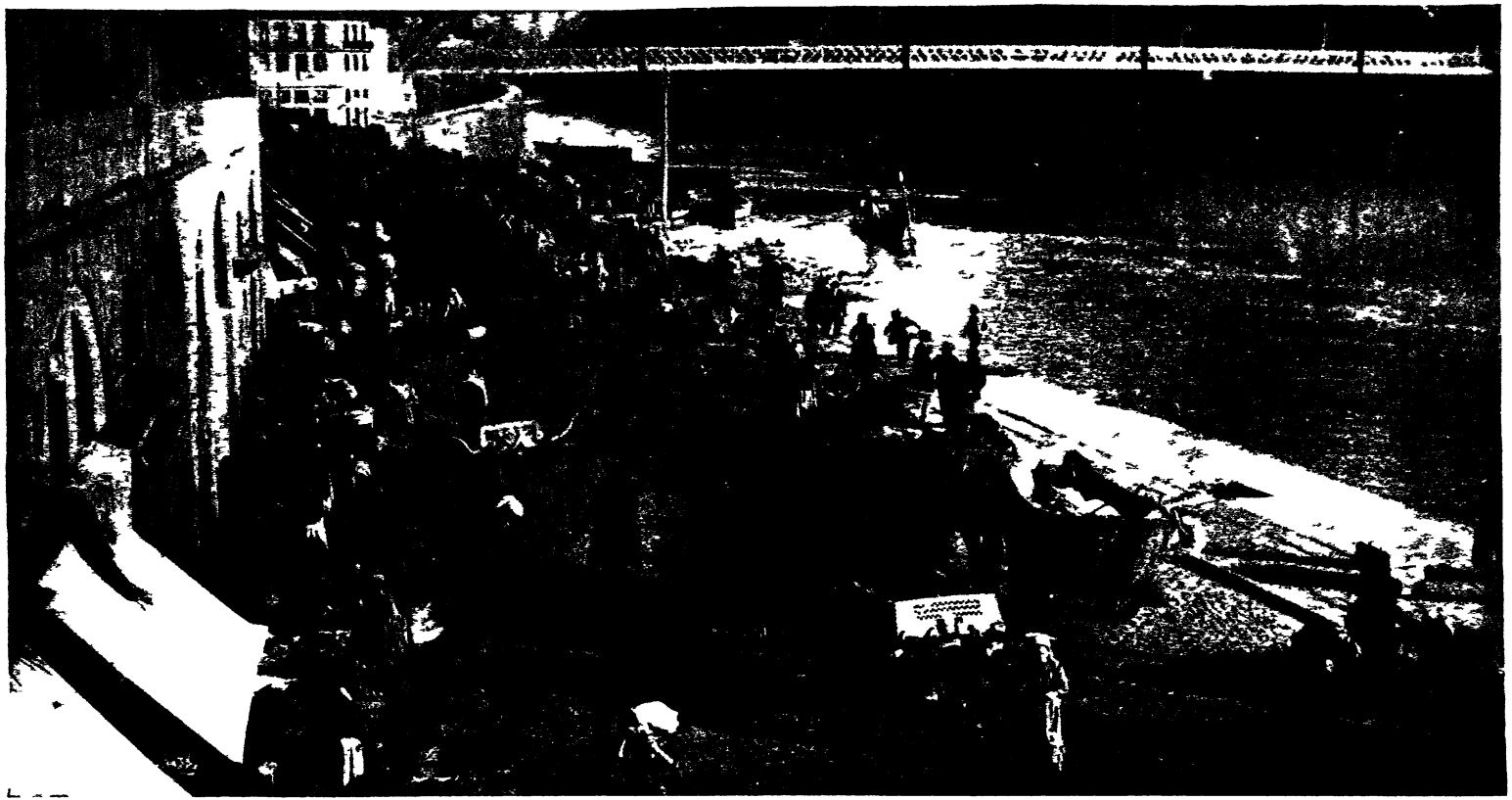
In medieval fiction the Portuguese was generally a hero—as, for example in the legend of "The Twelve of England," which relates how Portuguese knights were sent by John of Gaunt to teach manners to the Court of Windsor. In modern fiction the Portuguese is generally cast for the villain, or at best for a low comic: a fat, yellow, cunning and cowardly, ridiculous rascal. This caricature is, no doubt, inspired by impressions of half-caste cooks in India and of corrupt customs officials in Africa.

The Portuguese of Portugal is a large-boned, side-whiskered, frieze-coated

BABY WAKES FROM SLUMBER DURING A BREAK IN THE JOURNEY

Portuguese peasant women commonly wear a cloth disk upon the kerchief that binds their hair to mitigate the hardness of their various burdens. This rustic matron, whose naked feet are hard with tramping, has set down her cradle where the lapping of the Douro against the quay may soothe the slumbers of her menino who, waking, plays with her toil-worn hand

Photo, A. W. Cutler



ON OPORTO'S RIBEIRA, OR QUAY WALL, WHERE THE 'DOM LUIZ" BRIDGE CROSSES THE DOURO

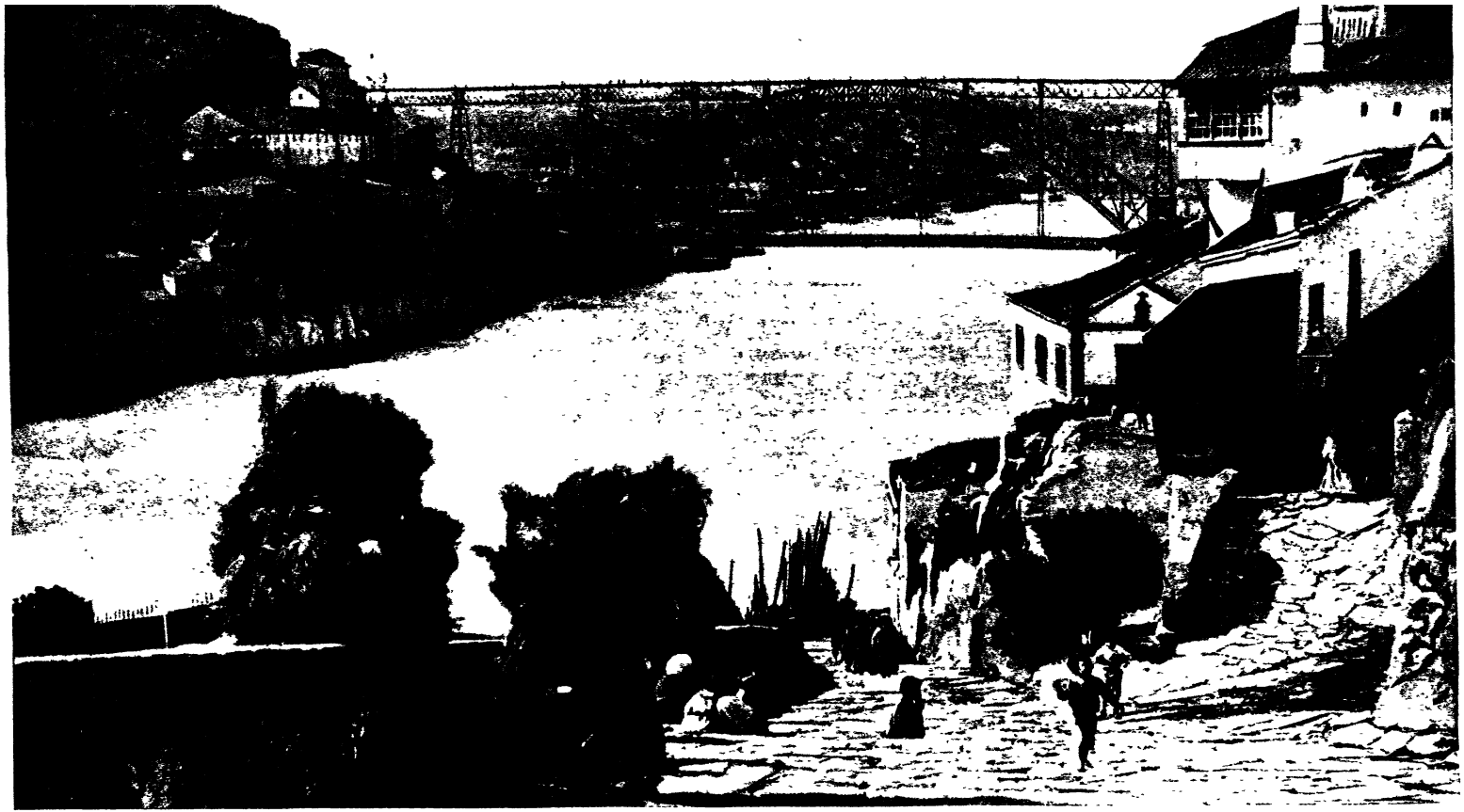
The great bridge that is here seen crossing the Douro is the famous structure named after Dom Luiz Its arch has a span of five hundred and sixty feet one of the largest in Europe It has two roadways, the one on the top of the arch being two hundred feet above the water On a week day morning the Ribeira with its cobbled road and paved quay is always lively with women going to and fro in bright dresses, carts rumbling, stall keepers bargaining and boats unloading at the wharfs

Photo, A H Cutler

OPORTO'S BUSY QUAY-SIDE CROWDED WITH SHIPPING ON THE ONE SIDE AND LADEN PORTERS ON THE OTHER

Commonly used as one word in other languages, in Portuguese Oporto's name is pronounced as two—O Porto, the port It is the second city of Portugal, Lisbon being its only rival in size and commerce Built mostly on the north bank of the river Douro, it rises in steep terraces of granite built, white plastered houses. To this wharf small vessels bring the freights from the ocean going ships which come no nearer than the bar at the river's mouth three miles away

Photo, A W Cutler



WHITE HOUSES OF OLD OPORTO THAT CLING WITH LICHENS AND ROCK-PLANTS TO THE CRAGS OF DOURO

Crazy-paved paths that coil steeply between irregular rows of huddled homes are the laborious routes which these hardy peasants must travel every day. Coming up the hill one of them is seen staggering under a load of hay, while children carelessly play upon a terrace, at whose edge is death. Beneath flashes the swift Douro, spanned by what, at this distance, seems a mighty steel tracery. It is the Dom Luiz Bridge, built by a Belgian firm in 1895

Photo, A W Cutler

countryman in a donkey cart—like a stage Irishman plus a large blue cotton umbrella, with humour, honesty, and hard work written large all over him. The Portuguese workman is industrious and ingenious. As a soldier and sailor the Portuguese is to-day as bold and hardy as when Grant's division of fighting cocks was rated by the Iron Duke as equal to the Light Divisions, or when the caravel of Da Gama beat its way round the Cape.

If in the Great War the Portuguese in both Flanders and Africa, made a bad impression it is because the efficiency and energy of the Portuguese to-day goes down as he goes up in the world. This may be explained partly by the Portuguese climate in which any stock that is not starved exhausts itself by excess, and partly by the Portuguese readiness to inter-breed with inferior races. In the fermentation of Portuguese town life the scum of these mixtures floats to the top either as a reactionary profiteer or as a revolutionary proletarian. And the economic evils resulting from such political pot boiling drive the true Portuguese off the land and out of the country. For many generations Portugal has been paying its way by selling the best blood in the country to the labour markets of Brazil and New England in order to pay for the extravagances of its ruling class.

The Portuguese not only fuse readily with alien race types, but also fix them immutably. Thus it is easy to recognize, not only the imported negro, but also a type generally confused with him, the aboriginal negroid Iberian. Greek or Phoenician colonists survive obviously in certain coast villages, the Moor and the Hindu appear sporadically, and, last but not least, the Jew permeates the whole urban population and predominates in some towns like Bragança.

When the pious King Joseph proposed an ordinance that all Jews be made to wear white hats, his prime minister, Pombal, appeared next day with

COIMBRA'S COURTLY CLERK

Secretary of Coimbra's ancient university he wears court dress beneath his academic gown and bands when bearing the university mace on occasions of high solemnity

two—one, as he explained, for Joseph, the other for himself. After the expulsion of the Moors, the Jews carried on the tradition of their civilization, not always, perhaps, with sufficient sympathy for the national genius. It was, for example, the chicanery of Jewish geographers that deprived Portugal of the crown of Prince Henry's labours in the voyages of Columbus and Magellan.

As for the Anglo-Portuguese association, it has long outlasted all other

ACROBATICS AMONG THE ORANGES : A WELL BALANCED PAIR

If stolen fruits are sweet, oranges plucked in this precarious manner must be positively luscious. One advantage of this method of gathering is that the basket, too large to carry down a ladder when full, is in this case sufficiently near the picker to prevent the bruising of the fruit when dropped. That this young girl can support so much on her head makes the feats of her elders less surprising

Photo, A. W. Cutler

political alliances and has on the whole contributed more than it has cost to either nation The political alliance originated in an economic association that was itself a necessary consequence of the geographic relationship of Portugal to England Portugal and England were natural customers of one another, and the sea was, in the Middle Ages and for two maritime peoples a bridge rather than a barrier Thus in the "British Policy," a rhyming commercial report of 1347 we find

Portugillers with us have troth in hand
Whose marchandie cometh much into England
They be our friends with their commodities
And we English passen into their countries

This economic interdependence partly explains why, throughout the five centuries between the first Anglo Portuguese Treaty of Windsor and the last, the friendship of Great Britain and Portugal has been broken only when Portugal for a time ceased to exist and became a dependency of Spain or France, also, why England once at least in each of those centuries, has fought in Portugal for its independence This friendship has, however, cost both countries something

Portuguese still die of the consumption introduced when British medicos sent their patients, like Fielding, to swift death in its soft, damp air, and some of us still suffer under the gout inherited from ancestors who took to drinking port But Portugal owes to British influence more than one recovery, such as those under the Aviz dynasty, under Pombal, and under Garrett while Great Britain owes to Portugal very useful assistance on occasions when the British have muddled themselves into a real mess "Com todo o mundo guerra, paz com a Inglaterra"—(War with the world, but peace with England)—is, and always has been, the whole foreign policy of Portugal

The Portuguese temperament is very religious, so much so that religious feelings and forms still survive in Portugal that have been submerged elsewhere Matters that, with the English, are left to reason or social regulation, are dealt with in Portugal by religious instinct.

PORTUGAL'S MILKMAID EQUILIBRISTS

How sturdy a figure is given by this strenuous exercise of carrying loads on the head can be well seen in the case of these buxom women The beggar next them wears the hooded cloak still found in Portugal, and like an Inquisitor's

Photo A W Cutler

CHAMPIONS, IN HEAD TRANSPORT FROM NORTHERN PORTUGAL GOING TO THE FAIR

To stand still and balance such prodigious loads as these would take no small amount of practice. But the Portuguese peasant women do very much more to get their great clusters of pitchers to the fair. They are prepared to tramp for miles in bare feet along roads whose surface is hardly kind to unshod soles. The only member of this party besides the donkey who has shoes is the little boy, and he prefers to ride

Photo, A. W. Cutler

Economy is elsewhere seldom seen going to such lengths, but in Portugal the custom of thus preserving one's shoes is common

Seen at a distance her load might be mistaken for a headdress instead of a basket of variously feathered fowls

For sheer skill in balancing, an exhibition like hers might make even a Covent Garden porter green with envy

Naturally, the woman porter who takes charge of the visitor's luggage, carries it like this, and it seldom suffers damage

FOUR COMMON FORMS OF FEMININE PORTERAGE

Photos, A W Cutler

This may be explained by the Portuguese having a larger element than any other European race of the " dark white " or Iberian aborigine.

Portuguese public festivals and family life are both full of primitive paganism. At Cascaes, a few miles from Lisbon, there may be seen every spring a very complete representation of the " thargelia " or human sacrifice of ancient Greece. An effigy, modernised as Judas, is burnt at a stake on the seashore, and the ashes are thrown to the wind ; at Setubal, further down the coast, the local idol, disguised as the Virgin Mary, may be met paying a round of calls on neighbouring shrines.

Portugal and the Inquisition

Portugal's early history was one long crusade. And this was followed by a longer struggle between the native Mosarabic Church and Rome. Rome won, thanks to an alliance between the Portuguese kings, jealous of the liberties of the Mosarabic municipalities, and the Spanish prelates, ambitious for supremacy at Madrid ; but, none the less, the Reformation is very clearly marked in the Golden Age of Portuguese poetry. It was not until Lollardry had been persecuted into becoming Protestantism and the unity of Christendom was thereby threatened, that Portugal renounced its humanism and humanitarianism and accepted the Inquisition. The plays of Gil Vicente preached Christianity so vigorously that they were put on the " Index " and practically suppressed for centuries.

Ruling Class Becomes Rationalist

Camoens, though he scorns the Protestant English, who " grow new kinds of Christianity," and " draw the sword against the Church instead of the Turk," none the less mourns the " grim and grievous sanctimoniousness " that was being forced on Portugal by Spain. The university of Coimbra continued the fight right up to the Spanish occupation. John III., who introduced the Inquisition, had been previously persuaded by the university to invite Erasmus to reorganize it.

Nowadays, there is a schism in religious ideals, dividing very distinctly the old Portugal of Crusaders and Conquistadors from the Young Portugal of Coimbrists and Comtists. A devout Catholicism has kept the peasantry subject to Rome and Royalism. The characteristic expression of this faith — " Sebastianism "—is scarcely yet extinct. The mystic belief in a Messianic monarch (Sebastian) killed in a sixteenth century Crusade in Africa, was, until lately, a serious moral obstacle to political reform. Democracy was impious to the Sebastianist, who believed that one day the miraculous martyr would sail out of a fog on the Tagus and inaugurate the millennium. When, however, in the latter part of the nineteenth century, the neo-romantic poetasters developed into radical republican politicians and came to power in the Revolution of 1910, the ruling class of Portugal became definitely rationalist, and the hold of the Church over education was finally broken by a drastic Law of Congregations on the French model.

Character of the Educated Portuguese

The religions of Portugal to-day are, among the peasantry, a Catholicism that has not yet definitely disassociated itself from political reaction ; and, among the professions and proletariat, a neo-Comtism that has, so far, resisted the communist revivalism of Moscow.

The educated Portuguese is the most urbane and humane of men, and any Portuguese would consider it less of an injury to rob you than to be rude to you. His conversation is Orientally overloaded with conventional courtesies. His moral codes, or rather moral conventions are also very different from those of the English. Thus, capital punishment has been abolished in Portugal for over a century, and murder for profit is rare. But political assassination and the " crime passionel " are both

IN PORTUGAL

With the Peasant

In the softly curved face, kissed by ringlets, and in the dark eyes over which thick brows meet are traces of some Moorish ancestor ——

With a long ladle the water-seller fills his great cask, presently to cry "Agua, agua" through the town, a happy sound in the dust and heat. The ox-cart is almost unchanged since the Roman occupation

Sturdy vineyard workers add the last tubful to the great vat of grapes on its way to the press-room. Behind rise the uplands of Torres Vedras, from whose fertile fields comes many a pint of ruby claret

Of the two women, she who sits has the more stable burden. Babies are usually carried on the head, so this one's exhibition is merely temper

Photo, A. W. Cutler

Portuguese women carry most loads without trouble on their heads; and it is a good way to manage menina and menino in their cradle

Photo, A. W. Cutler

Small sons go early into long trousers in Central Portugal, and a certain dignity attached to grown-up garb is visible in these meninos

Photo, A. W. Cutler

Jest and repartee enliven a deal in sardines. Thousands of these fish are caught each year, and are much appreciated in the inland towns

Photo, A. W. Cutler

Carrying weights on the head gives Oporto women a fine carriage. They rest while the fountain's metallic snakes gush water into their tubs

Photo, A W Cutler

Tired out, two small urchins find this stone seat drowsily warm in the sun, and sleep unperturbed by the pictured souls in torment above

Photo, A. W. Cutler

This little pig has come many miles to market with his mistress's switch behind him. She always dons her best for these visits to town

Photo, A. W. Cutler

Sheepskin leggings and the warm gold of oranges against a pretty white apron contrast in the morning meeting of a shepherd and his lass

Photo, A. W. Cutler

In Oporto's steep streets the ox-carts creak under great casks of port. The young idea is seen learning the care of his horned charges

Photo, A W Cutler

In a land where native costume is remarkable for brilliant colouring, Vianna do Castello, whence come these little folk, excels in vividness

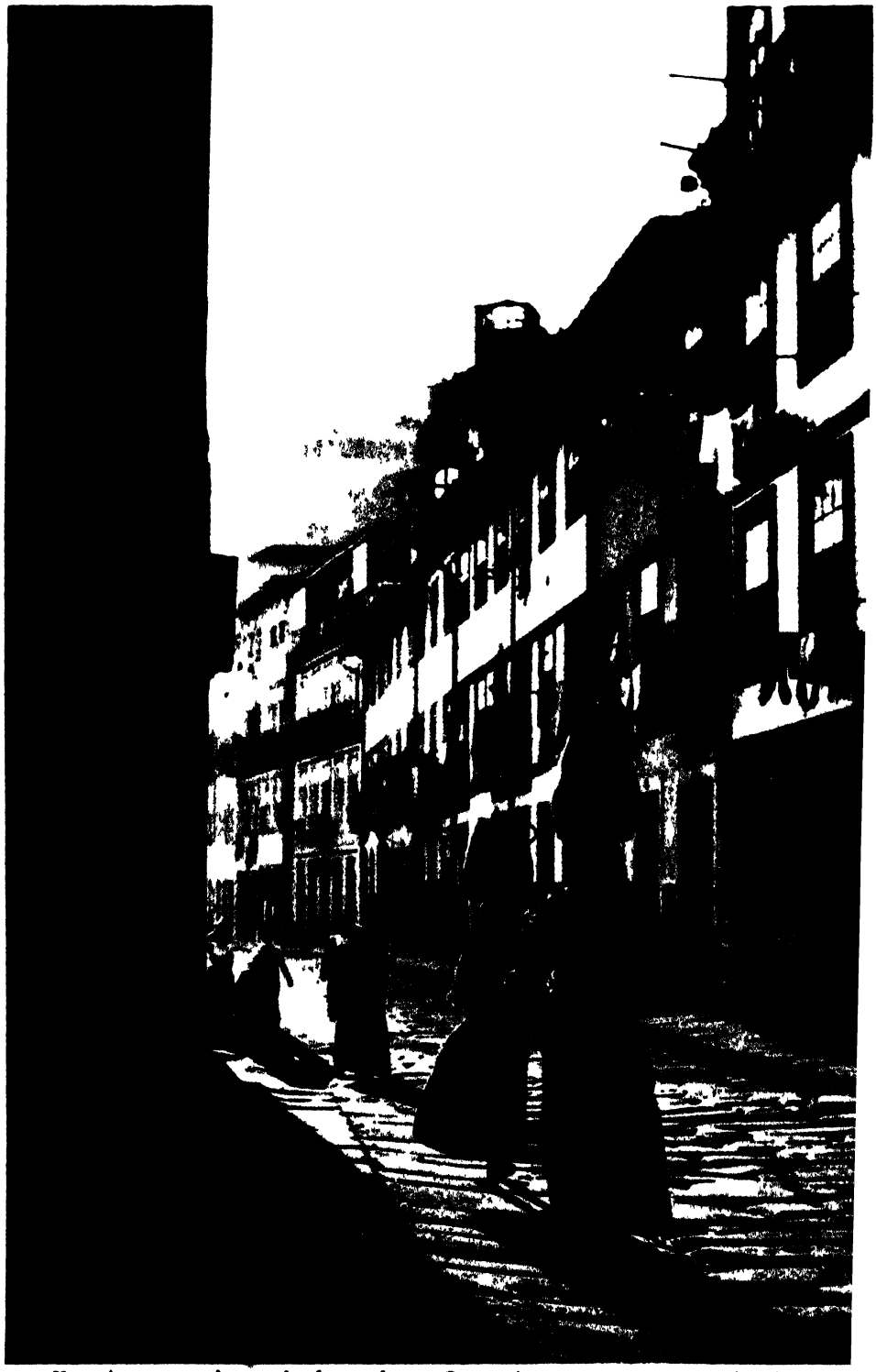
Photo, A W. Cutler

Especially in the north of Portugal the rainfall is copious and the countryman finds even this grass raincoat better than nothing

Photo, A. W. Cutler

To carry ten pitchers at once, including four in one hand, is no small feat, but it is made light of by this dame going to Leiria market

Photo, A. W. Cutler



Evening casts long shadows down Oporto's narrow ways and cobbled streets as the women troop home with the night's supply of water

Photo, A. W. Cutler

common. The murder of Dom Carlos and the young Prince was considered on its political merits and caused no moral reaction in Portugal; but, when a degenerate Portuguese murdered his mistress on a Royal Mail liner, and was condemned to death in a British court, the whole country went into a sort of humanitarian hysteria, and a reprieve became necessary in the interests of international relations.

Animals are not ill-treated in Portugal, which is in this case an honourable exception to every other Mediterranean State. A Portuguese bull fight is an entertainment as delightful as a Spanish bull fight is disgusting. The Portuguese cavalier, in his picturesque dress, splendidly mounted, circling and curveting with the bull in pursuit, and planting his darts between the blunted horns, is a real sportsman; while, for laughter illimitable, give me a fat Lisbon shopkeeper, in a floured face and a white sheet, posing as a statue on a pedestal in the ring, losing his nerve when the bull snuffles at his calves, when, bolting for the barrier with the bull behind him, he is hoisted head over heels into the arms of his family.

Difficulties of the Language

One of the bars to a better understanding of the Portuguese is the language, which is as difficult as Spanish is easy. Portuguese is not a dialect of Spanish. With its slurred consonants, nasal diphthongs, complicated grammar, and curious inversions, Portuguese is, both to the eye and ear, as unlike Spanish as two languages of common stock can be. It is even questioned now whether Portuguese is a dialect of Late Latin. The survival in Portuguese of archaic forms, such as the declined infinitive, unknown to the late Latin of the Roman occupation, suggests that in Portuguese we have the remains of a Romance language that was collateral with Latin, and subsequently coalesced with it. Meantime, though the foreigner can hardly hope to acquire a perfect pronounciation or expression of Portuguese, he can without much trouble pass through it into a literature that is as interesting as it is little known.

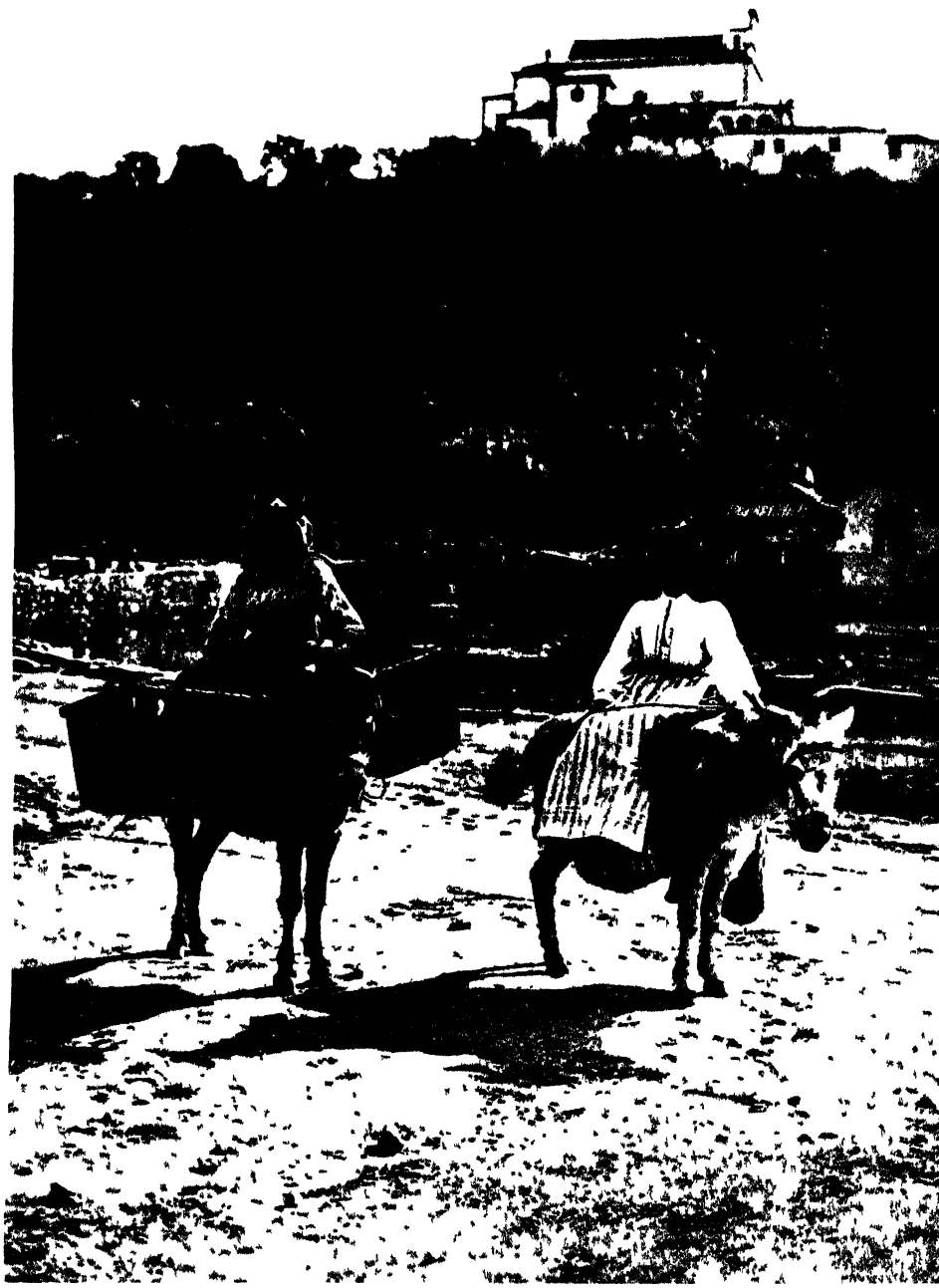
Survival of the Lyrical Tradition

One way to understand the Portuguese is to remember that he is a poet, one of a nation of natural singers. A "fado," or improvised lyric of the Lisbon taverns, can trace a direct descent from prehistoric poetry. Portuguese lyrics of great beauty appear in their earliest recorded form, in medieval collections such as the Vatican or Ajuda Song Books. They follow two main types, the "Cantiga de amigo" and the "Cossante." The former is a development of the Provençal lyric, with interesting peculiarities, and is typically Celtic. The "Cossante," or parallelistic song with alternating assonances in "ah" and "ee," is quite un-European. These litanies, degenerated to-day into love-songs or lampoons, are no doubt a ritual relic of the Iberian "dark whites"; but the lyrical tradition survives in a more literary form than that of the fadista. Its best modern representative is, perhaps, João de Deus, who showed the Francophil and Anglomaniac romantics of the nineteenth century that in order to write Portuguese poetry one need only be a poetic Portuguese.

In medieval epic poetry Portugal is now credited with "Amadis de Gaul," the most popular form of that most popular fashion, and the only epic which, in the opinion of the barber in Don Quixote, was worth preservation.

Songs of the Hills and Valleys

Coming next to the Golden Age of Portuguese literature in the fifteenth century, we find, first and foremost among these "quinhentistas," Gil Vicente. Gil Vicente became a courtier, but thanks to the medieval mixture of classes which still persists in



EVENING PEACE ENFOLDING LEIRIA'S HILL OF THE ANGEL

In respect of local colour, Leiria, capital of the district of the same name, is one of Portugal's most delightful places. The frequent markets are wonderfully picturesque, thronged with women wearing the distinctive local costume—a dark skirt with a deep hem of red, bright hued blouse and brilliant, usually amber, kerchief floating over the shoulder and clipped over the head by a small black hat

Photo A. W. Cutler

CARVEN CALVARY THAT GUARDS THE ENTRANCE OF A NORTHERN VILLAGE

Where the road begins to run through the village it passes this ancient emblem of the village faith About its twisted column stone cherubs link their arms, and below, upon a cloud of cherub heads, rest a Madonna and her Child From the height of its six steps a rustic meeting may be well addressed, backing eloquence with its symbolism, its silent reminder ever there at coming or going

Photo, A W. Culler

HAPPY CHILDREN OF THE STATE HOUSED IN A ROYAL MONASTERY

Twelve hundred boys are maintained and educated in the Casa Pia orphanage at Lisbon. The institution is now housed in the Jeronymos, the monastery of the Order of S. Jerome, founded by King Manoel at Belem in A.D. 1500, to commemorate the return of Vasco Da Gama after his discovery of the maritime route to India. The boys have the free run of the spacious and lovely cloisters

Photo, A. W. Cutler

Portugal, he could also remain what he began—a working jeweller and a man of the people. Many of his plays are special pleadings for the Commonalty against the upper classes and the Church, and, if Gil Vicente has less of poetic genius than Shakespeare, there is in him even more of the genius loci. Through him we can get, quite as enjoyably as through Shakespeare, that most excellent of literary enjoyments, participation in the "joie de vivre" of a joyous age—the age of "gai saber"

In these plays we find Portugal still in its first youth: the picturesque peasantry dancing and singing, the cavaliers crusading, and the mariner-

adventurers coming home from all the seas in golden gallcasses And through the singing and dancing, the amours and adventures, the essential elements of Portuguese national life, are brought out just as we see the bedrock of the Portuguese Serras cropping up through the grass and flowers of the hillside Thus, in such a pastoral as Gil Vicente's "Serra d Estrella," we find the ancient racial rivalry between Iberian hillmen and Celtic valleymen side by side with the more modern national rivalry between Portuguese and Spaniards Analyse the differences (even in translation) between the hill-song and the valley-song in this play, and you have two of the components of the Portuguese character Or take the dialogue with which it begins, and you have the clue to all Portuguese foreign politics to-day Says one peasant, on being asked if he is from Spain :

"Why the devil d'ye think I am a Spanish Don ?
Faith, I would sooner be a lizard, by Matthew, Mark, and Luke and John"

Or, take Gil Vicente's "Ship of Hell," a typical product of the Reformation spirit We find in it as bitter

PORTUGUESE COWBOY STARTING FOR A ROUND-UP ON THE LEZIRIAS
Bulls for use in the bull-ring are mostly bred on the plains of the Lezirias in the province of Estremadura This is a low tract of rich marshy alluvium lying between the Tagus and the Sorraia, protected against floods by embankments and intersected by canals Here the Portuguese cattlemen have a wide field in which to test the speed and courage of the bulls under their charge

SHEPHERD OF THE SERRA DA ESTRELLA

Humour honesty, and hard work are written all over the big boned Portuguese peasant With his shaven upper lip and whiskers, rough frieze jacket, and breeches buttoned at the knee, he reminds one of the conventional stage Irishman

attacks on the corruption and cruelty of the clergy and gentry as any that we can find in Piers Plowman Reading this play, we almost forget the allegories of the two ferries to the other world, The Ship of the Devils and The Ship of the Angels We see such a picture as we can still see on the shores of one of those still lagoons that run deep into Portugal—the "profundo braço do mar" of the stage direction.

Behind, the blue hills of the further shore and the flaming sunset, in front on the sand the two long boats of the ferry, upcurved at bow and stern, with a single mast and yard, the boat of all time In one are black-clothed, black-capped swarthy ferrymen, singing and joking Winding down through the low hills to the water comes a straggling file of wayfarers from the neighbouring market They haggle and argue with the boatmen and, after much hauling, shoving, shouting, and protesting, sail away across the smooth water into the sunset

Every one of the long procession of characters in these pages hidalgos, market women, gypsies, Jews, judges, children, peasants, witches, hermits, carriers—acts and speaks to the life, and the allegorical characters, the angels and devils, saints and localities, are all alive

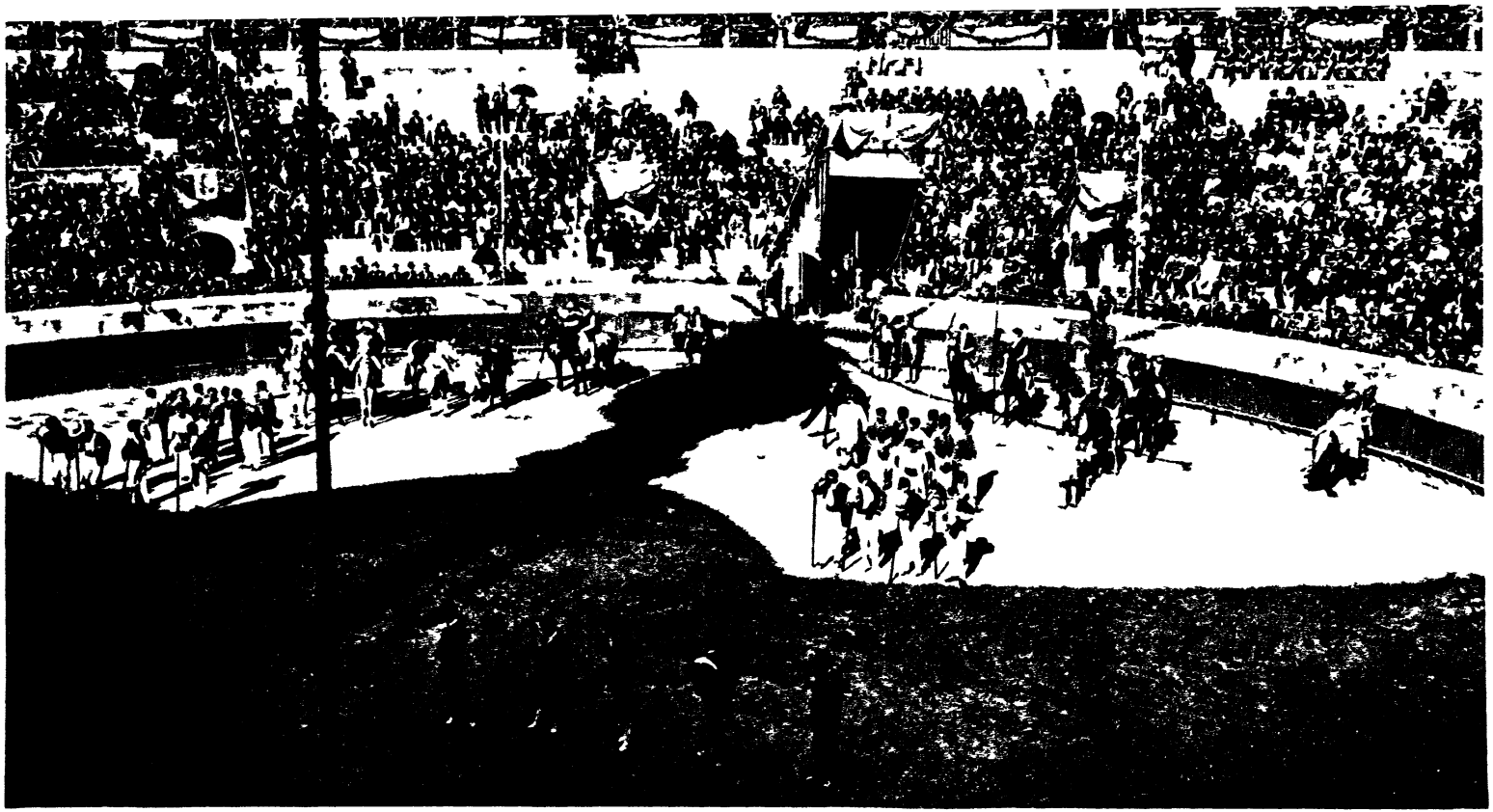
Again, in his "Auto da Lama," we have a more self conscious national allegory Portugal, personified in a poor goose girl, is courted in bad Portuguese by France, Italy, and Spain, and, after rejecting their proposals with scorn, is led off in triumph by Faith and Fortitude

I have chosen Gil Vicente as the exponent of the national spirit of Portugal, though he wrote four hundred years ago, because, in the first place, the national spirit of the country is in its essentials unchanging, and, in the second place, because the national character of Portugal reached its purest

CHILDISH COMPASSION FOR PORTUGUESE PRISONERS

Prisons or lock ups in Portuguese towns, where offenders are confined pending trial, are less sinister than similar institutions elsewhere Iron bars before the windows prevent escape, but permit the captives to chat with acquaintances in the street to receive gifts of cigarettes or fruit from sympathisers and even to take in supplies of food in the commonly worn bag caps

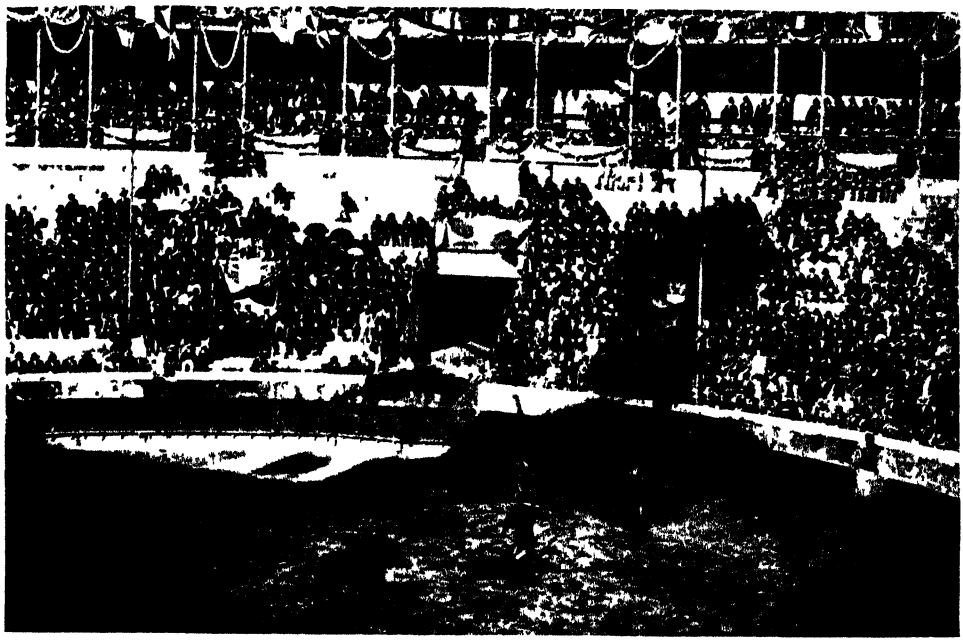
Photo A W Cutler



OPENING SCENE OF A BULL-FIGHT AT THE CAMPO PEQUENO, LISBON PARADE OF THE PERFORMERS

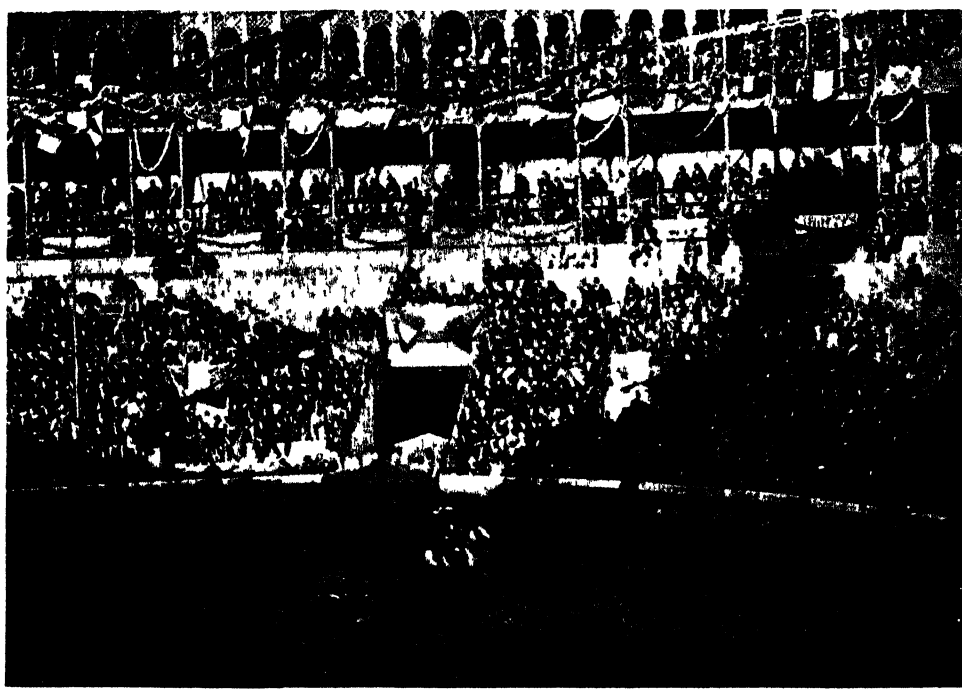
Bull-fights in Portugal are intensely exciting spectacles, and since the bulls are not killed but only irritated into fighting for about ten minutes are free from the sanguinary horror of their Spanish counterparts They open with a parade of all the performers when the protagonist the cavalheiro—here seen on the right —mounted on a superbly trained horse and clad in old Portuguese court costume—gives an exhibition of horsemanship solicits permission to begin the combat, and salutes the public This brilliant opening scene is called as cortesias do Cavalheiro"

Photo A W Cutler



A STERN CHASE IN THE BULL-RING—WITH THE BULL BEHIND

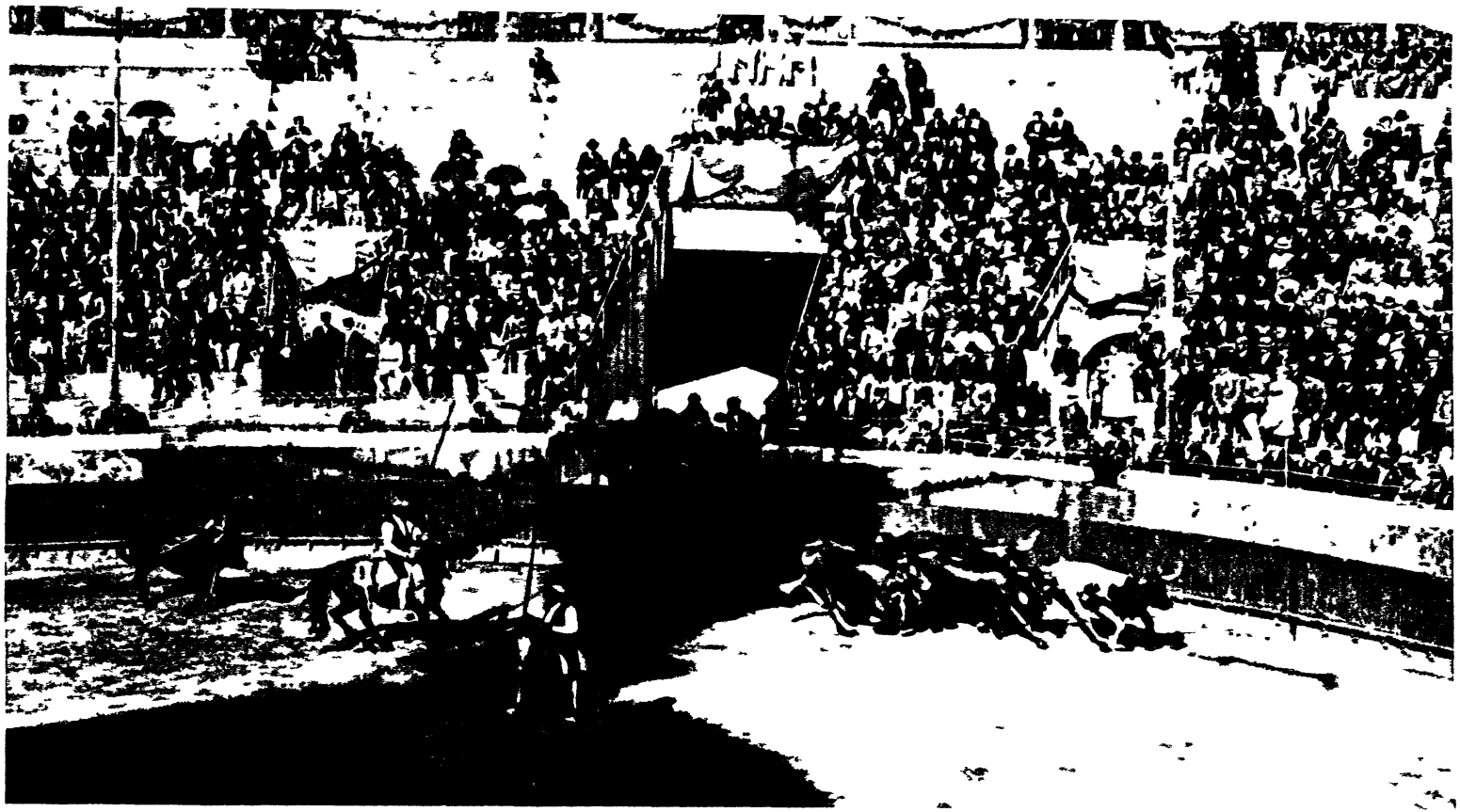
Bandrillos, on foot, infuriate the bull by placing barbed darts in its neck eluding its charges with astonishing dexterity Often, however, they have to take to their heels and make a bee line for the barrier with the bull roaring so close behind them that to vault the barrier is the only way of escape. If, as sometimes happens, the bull leaps the barrier too the onlookers are ecstatic



SUPREME TEST OF HUMAN MASTERY OVER THE ANIMAL CREATION

Nerve, courage, and perfect self command, together with horsemanship of the very highest order, are displayed by the Portuguese cavalheiros when engaging an active bull with plenty of fighting spirit The sport consists in their adroitness in placing darts, decorated with fluttering ribbons, in the bull's neck at the moment of his charge, and then reining back so that man and horse escape without injury

Photos, A W Cutler

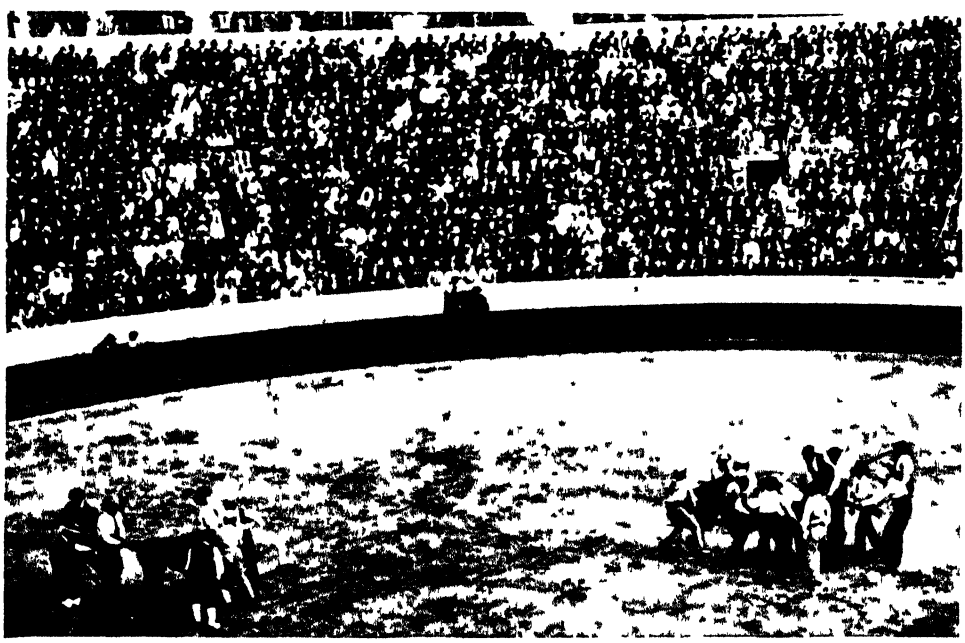


INGENIOUS DEVICE TO SOOTHE THE INFURIATED TEMPER OF THE FIGHTING BULL

After a bull has been irritated into providing sport for about ten minutes, a number of mild trained cows are driven into the ring with big bells jangling round their necks The bull soon becomes quiet in their company, and is persuaded to leave the arena with them Meanwhile men called campanos have come in with the cows, and these endeavour to pick the darts out of the bull's neck by means of long sticks with a clip attachment at the end Usually about eight bulls are put through the mill in the course of a Portuguese bull night

EPISODE OF THE WOODEN HORSE IN AN EPIC OF THE BULL-RING

Portuguese bull fights are diversified by comic interludes. Here, for example, a clown on a dummy horse awaits the charge of a bull newly admitted into the arena whose attention a nimble brother clown endeavours to divert from the too heavily handicapped mock cavalier to himself. Should he fail it would mean some bad bruises for the horseman, although the bull's horns are padded



WHEN BULL-FIGHTS ARE ON BULLDOG TACTICS ARE SOUND

Very striking is the concluding item of a performance in the Portuguese bull ring. Three fresh bulls are engaged simultaneously by a number of men on foot. Presently one of these seizes a bull by the horns and hangs on until, joined by his comrades, he overpowers the brute. Each bull is eventually mastered in this way, and all three are then branded with a hot iron

Photos A. W. Cutler

AGRICULTURE TOUCHED WITH ARTISTRY IN ALEMTEJO

After having been allowed to fall into a backward state, agriculture is again being developed in the ancient province of Alemtejo, once the granary of Portugal. New methods jostle old with odd effect, and alongside the latest cultivators and threshing machines one may still see the antiquated wooden ploughs and trimly shaped stacks of wheat, like these being drawn by oxen to the open threshing floors

and most perfect expression in chivalry and the Crusades. It was an age in which a people, however small, could take the lead as Portugal did, provided it was inspired with the spirit of the age as Portugal was.

Probably leads of this spiritual nature are generally given by the lesser peoples, though this is usually overlooked later. Gil Vicente himself was overlooked for several centuries. This was partly because, as is usual in Portugal, the lead he gave led to nothing greater. His many Portuguese imitators produced nothing nearly as good, and he survived mainly, as Professor Fitzmaurice Kelly has recognized, in the influence that he had over such Spanish masters as Calderon and Lope da Vega. In Portugal itself he was almost lost sight of after his plays had been put on the "Index" by the Spanish Inquisition. He was practically rediscovered by a German in the Gottingen library in 1805, and only restored to his proper place in Portuguese literature by Garrett at the revival of Portuguese rationalism and nationalism in the early part of the nineteenth century.

If Gil Vicente preserves for us the spirit of national Portugal, Camoens may be considered as the poet of Imperial Portugal. Camoens is, indeed, one of the great poets of the world and a true Portuguese. His lyrics, even his epics, are full of "saudade," the vague melancholy and misgiving which are almost a passion with the Portuguese, and he is a master of magniloquence, another national passion. But it must be admitted that the poetry of Camoens suffered through his banishment from Portugal. His imperial epic, "The Lusiads" (The Lusitanians), with its second-hand mythology and history, lacks vitality. The passages that appeal

most to-day are descriptions of personal experiences, such as a storm off the Cape, the sailing of emigrant ships, and so forth.

Gil Vicente was able to draw inspiration from the national life around him, but Camoens in exile was driven in upon himself. He is as subjective as Gil Vicente is objective, and he sees life through his own trials and troubles. His unhappy love affair with Donna Caterina Ataide was the cause of his banishment from Portugal. He went on a crusade to Morocco in the hope of retrieving his position, but only lost an eye in an obscure skirmish. Little is known of his career in the Indian colonies, but he is said to have been in prison at Goa when he heard of the death of Caterina Ataide, and wrote the famous sonnet to her. Finally, on his way home, he lost his savings in a shipwreck and came back to Lisbon, mortally ill, to find his country itself moribund. In his last illness he was supported by a faithful slave, and he died in time to escape being offered a pension by Philip of Spain.

The tragedy of Camoens might be treated as an allegory of that of Portugal—a child of the sea and land, like Portugal; ruined by courts and crippled by crusades like Portugal; a Conquistador who fell into poverty and imprisonment, like Portugal; a sweet singer who could get no hearing, like Portugal. One of the last stanzas of "The Lusiads" might indeed be Portugal itself speaking—

No more, Oh muse, no more—for my poor lyre
Is out of tune—my voice is out of tone.
I can no more make music—for I tire
Of singing to deaf ears and hearts of stone
The plaudits that inspirit and inspire
Are now no more for me—they all are won
By those who preach self-seeking and profess
A grim and grievous sanctimoniousness.

The restoration of Portuguese independence in 1641 was the work of

PLOUGHWOMEN OF THE NORTHERN COAST OF PORTUGAL

Portuguese peasant women share all the field labour with their menfolk. Until worn out by hard work and privation, they are of fine physique, erect, well-poised, deep-chested. Untrammelled by stays, or shoes and stockings, they carry all the burdens, drive the oxen, and guide the plough, and all the while face the world with a brave smile and fearless heart

Photo, A. W. Cutler

PORTUGUESE FORESTERS STRIPPING CORK TREES IN THE PROVINCE OF ALEMTEJO

Cork is an important source of wealth to Portugal the evergreen oak from which it is obtained covering over eight hundred thousand acres, mainly in the province of Alemtejo The trees are stripped every eight or ten years and live for a hundred and fifty years Rings are cut round the stem near the ground and below the spring of the main branches and between these longitudinal incisions are made down to the inner bark The outer bark is then removed in strips by inserting under it the wedge shaped handle of the knife with which the incisions have been made

SUMMER TOIL MID SYLVAN SHADE: PILING CORK IN ALEMTEJO'S EVERGREEN FORESTS

After the bark has been removed the strips are stacked by the foresters, pending their removal for the further treatment of scraping, cleaning, and flattening by heat and pressure, which renders them fit for manufacture. Cork trees are first stripped when about fifteen years old, then yielding the rough "virgin" cork used in tanning and for rustic work. The second barking yields cork used for floats, lifebelts, and so forth, and thriving under the repeated process, which is performed during the months of July and August, the trees yield finer cork at each successive stripping

Young Portugal It was at first Republican and accompanied by a literary renascence But after the restoration of the Braganças and of the Inquisition Portugal was again bound and gagged The Church had not only the censorship but the publication of all books, which was entrusted characteristically to the Blind Asylums It was not until the middle of the eighteenth century that Pombal freed the university of Coimbra and re-opened Portugal to French thought, while he reformed its government on British lines Even so, one poet, Da Silva, was burnt in an auto-da-fé in 1739, and another, Boccage, was imprisoned in a monastery in 1797.

Just as in the early youth of European monarchy Portugal produced the finest specimens of poet and crusader kings, so now in the early youth of democracy she produced one great Whig reformer, Pombal, and one great Liberal romantic, Garrett The plays of Garrett still live, but his political labours are mostly forgotten For liberalism, though we got the word from Portugal, never took root there Its last prophet was the poet Quental, who committed suicide in disgust at the Salisbury ultimatum Its place has been taken by republican radicalism, whose prophet was the poet Guerro Junqueiro Even as the Second Empire fell before the trumpet blast of Victor Hugo, so the Portuguese monarchy and the Rotativist factions fell before the jeremiads of Junqueiro

The spirit of the revolution of 1910, which was not only a political reconstruction but a national renascence, is best understood through his mystical miracle plays For those who prefer a more prosaic literature, the budgets of the financier of the Revolution, Affonso Costa, show how real was the reconstruction initiated in 1910 and interrupted in 1914

MORNING GOSSIP WITH THE MILKWOMAN IN VIANNA DO CASTELLO

A busy little fishing town at the top of the Portuguese littoral, Vianna do Castello has a population of about ten thousand of the industrious, self respecting men and women who are the most valuable asset of northern Portugal Courtesy is characteristic of them all, and milkwoman and housewife always have time to exchange friendly greetings when they meet during their morning work

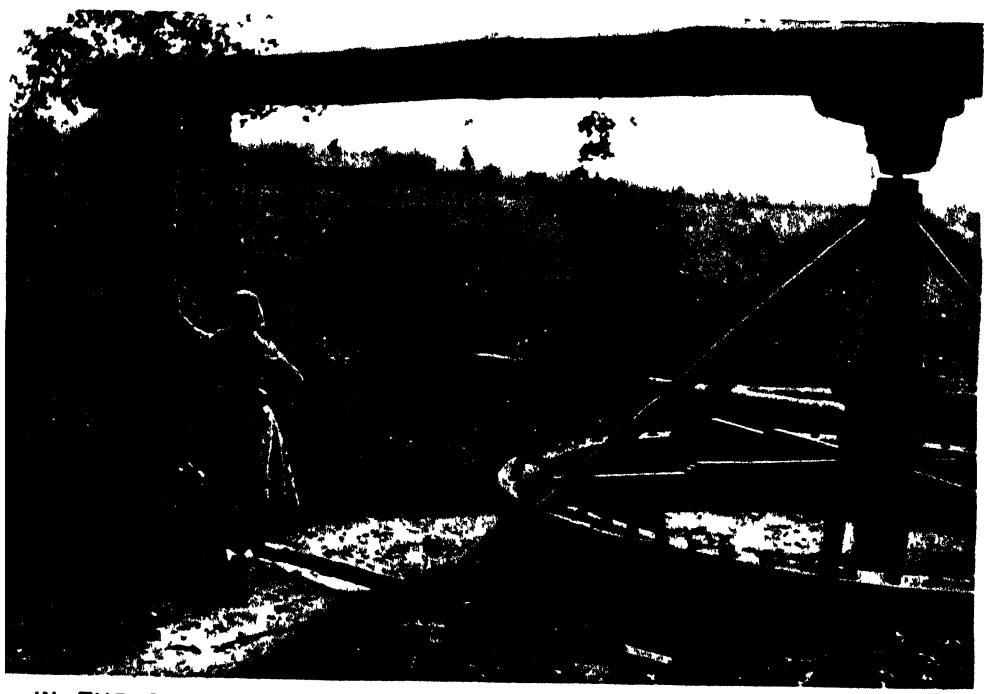
Photo A W Cutler

PORTUGAL WARM TINTS OF SOUTHERN CHARM

Upon the broad shoulders of the Portuguese peasant girl falls the burden of many tasks But her natural love of colour and pretty things finds charming expression in her gala dress

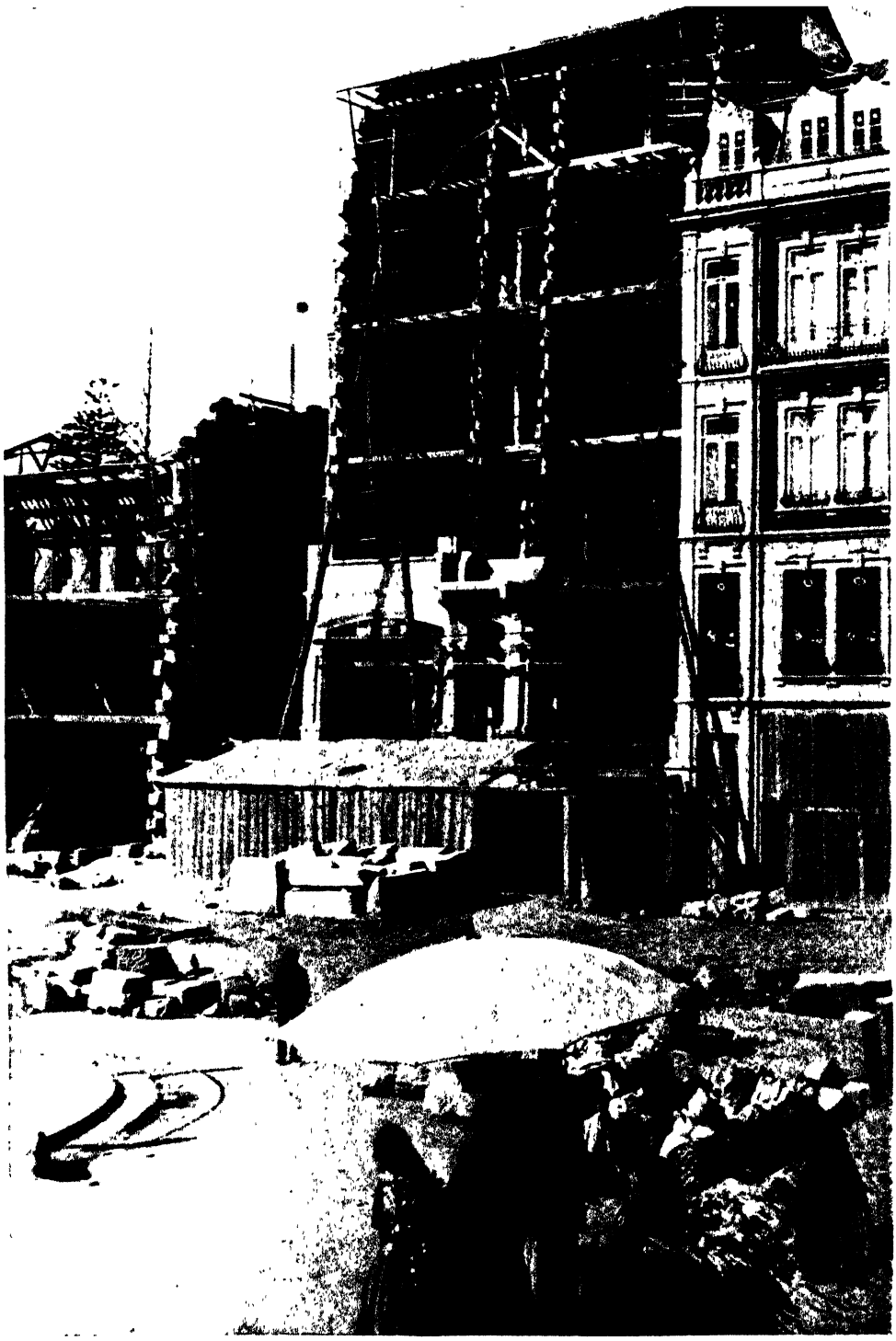
GARNERING THE MILLET, GOOD FOOD FOR MAN AND BEAST

Millet is one of Portugal's most useful cereals, yielding a white flour of good quality, while its stalks are used for fodder. It will grow well in light soil, and generally attains a height of over three feet. Above two healthy peasant women, fresh from the fields, are sweeping, one the plucked panicles of ears into the garner with a wooden shovel, while the other sweeps the stalks together for cattle food.



IN THE QUIET THAT COMES WHEN THE CREAKING WHEEL IS STILL

In many countries the gathered grapes are pressed by the simple expedient of being stamped on by the naked feet. A method more pleasant to contemplate is widely used in Portugal, the press consisting of rollers operated by a large wooden wheel. This is revolved by a burly ox, whose feet have worn a well marked path where waits this little country girl.



CURIOUS RESULT OF THE BUILDING LAWS IN PORTUGAL

In most countries house-building is controlled by regulations, parliamentary or municipal. Portugal is singular in that it is only for the construction of the fronts of houses that permission has to be obtained. In practice the application is always granted, and thus buildings are often seen with three walls and the roof completed, but awaiting official sanction before the façade can be supplied

Photo, A. W. Cutler

Portugal

II.—The Tragedy of a Once Great Power

By Francis Gribble

Author of "The Royal House of Portugal," etc

IN maps of the Roman Empire, Portugal figures as Lusitania. When the Empire fell to pieces, first the barbarians swooped down from the north, and then the Moors invaded the country from the south and remained in possession of it. It emerged however, as Portugal—a fief of the Kingdom of Galicia—in 1095. Count Henry of Burgundy, having married the natural daughter of the King of Galicia, was in that year, given a small strip of territory, together with a commission to take as much more territory as he could from the Moors.

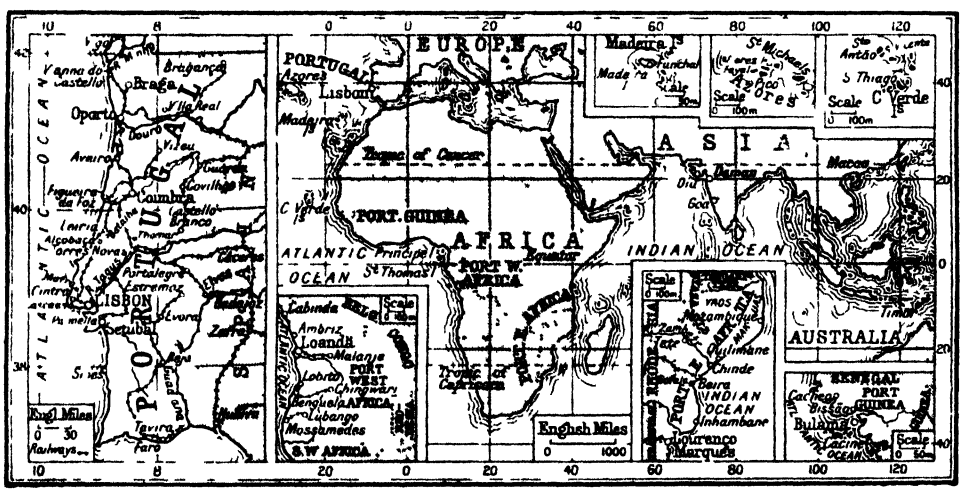
There followed a long series of wars for the recovery of what we may call Lusitania Irredenta, lasting for more than a century and a half. Lisbon was not taken until 1147, and the power of the Moors was not finally broken until 1249. Algarve was the last province to be conquered, and from it is derived the sonorous but perplexing royal title "King of Portugal and of the Algarves on this side and also on the other side of the Sea in Africa."

In some of these wars the Portuguese were helped by English crusaders who had put into the Tagus on their way to the Holy Land, and this was the beginning of intimate relations between the two countries. A commercial treaty was concluded between them in 1294. There was talk, though it came to nothing, of marrying Portuguese Infantas to King John, to Edward Prince of Wales, afterwards Edward III, and to Edward the Black Prince. In the year 1352, Edward III issued a proclamation enjoining his subjects "never to do any harm to the Portuguese."

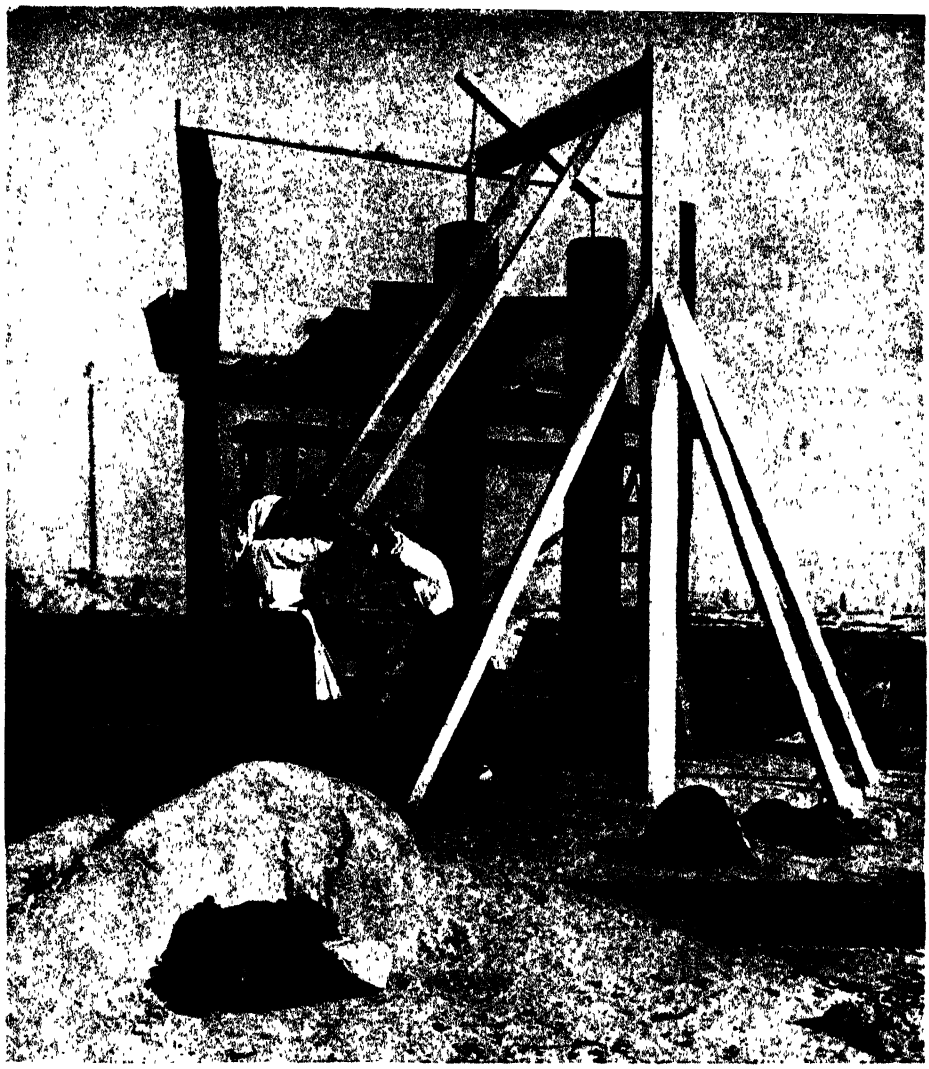
Meanwhile, however, Portugal, saved from the Moors, was involved in another struggle. Portuguese nationalism had to resist Spanish (or rather Castilian) imperialism, and then, again, England came to the help of the little country. Richard II supplied both men and money. English archers fought side by side with the Portuguese at Aljubarrota, in 1385, and a larger English force under John of Gaunt landed at Corunna in the following year, and marched through Galicia to the city of Oporto.

Thus English intervention secured Portuguese independence. Friendship was further cemented by the marriage of Dom John—the first foreign sovereign to be given the Garter—to John of Gaunt's daughter, Philippa, and the Treaty of Windsor (1386) declared England and Portugal to be for ever allied. The alliance brought a further English contingent to assist in repelling another Spanish incursion in 1398. The treaty was ratified, yet again, in 1403, and then, or very soon afterwards, the Golden Age of Portuguese history began.

It came because the Portuguese were among the first of the peoples to lean



THE REPUBLIC OF PORTUGAL AND ITS DEPENDENCIES



PUMP THAT SUPPLIES WATER FOR CLEANING THOUSANDS OF COD-FISH

With a rapid stride two sturdy peasant girls can keep up for a remarkably long time a constant to and fro movement at this giant hand pump. It supplies water to the cleaning troughs of the fish wharf on the river Aveiro, beside which is a ship whose mast can be seen on the left of the photograph. To the right are barrows used for carrying cleansed fish to the drying boards

Photo, A. W. Cutler

upon sea power, and acquire a colonial Empire. They began by taking Ceuta, with the help of English troops despatched by Henry V., in the year of Agincourt. Dom John's son, Henry the Navigator, organized the work of exploration and expansion which his death in 1460 did not suspend.

First of all his mariners proceeded, stage by stage, down the coast of Africa, occupying territory and hunting for slaves, whose importation introduced a bad strain into the blood of the Portuguese population. In the case of the Canaries, a prior claim on the part of Castile was recognized; but the Azores, discovered by Bartolomeo Perestrello, in 1431, were taken and kept; and so were the Cape Verde Islands, reached by Diogo Gomez in 1460; and St. Thomas, Principe, and some other islands, discovered by Fernando Po in 1471.

There were settlements, too, on the mainland as well as the islands, notably at Lagos, the centre of the slave trade, and Elmina, founded by Dom John II. as the capital of Portuguese Guinea. Diogo Cao discovered the Congo in 1484, and Angola in 1486. Diaz doubled the Cape of Good Hope in that year, and Vasco da Gama reached India by sea in 1497. In 1500 Cabral discovered Brazil. By 1520

Portuguese explorers had reached Japan, where they set up a factory, near Yokohama, in 1548, and China, where they established themselves at Macao in 1557. And it is also to the Portuguese that the world owes the discovery of Novaia Zemlia and Labrador.

Those were the great days. The Portuguese soldiers and sailors were then reputed to be the best in Europe. Their flag was carried to the ends of the earth, and trade followed it. Colonies were established alike in the East and in the West, at Goa in 1510, and at Tirma about ten years later; and there were great men among the colonial governors—Albuquerque, for instance, whom both Hindus and Mahomedans are said to have worshipped, after his death, as a god, "going to Goa, to his tomb, and making offerings of flowers and oil for his lamp, and praying him to cause justice to be done in their suits."

But the glory was not to endure. The outward show of it lasted for about a century and a half; but decadence had set in long before the expiration of that time. Not all the colonial governors were men of the stamp of Albuquerque. Too many of them had no higher ideal than that of "shaking the pagoda tree." Moreover, the Empire was too large for so small a country to handle. The finest and most adventurous spirits were attracted to the colonial service, and the mother country could not stand the drain. The rot began at the centre; and the collapse, when it came, was sudden and catastrophic. Its immediate cause was an ill-advised expedition to Morocco.

The Waning of a Great Power

King Sebastian, who was probably mad, insisted upon undertaking that expedition in spite of the fact that all his best troops were in the Indies. Statesmen tried to dissuade him; but courtiers egged him on, vowing that they would cut off the ears of the Emperor of Morocco, and fry them for their dinner. So he set out confidently, and fought one battle, at Alcacer-Kebir, in 1578. In that battle he fell, and his army was annihilated, only fifty men, out of a host of seventeen thousand, returning to tell the tale.

The disaster sounded the doom of Portugal as a European Power. Disputes as to the succession to Sebastian's throne gave Philip II. of Spain an opportunity of conquering the country, which he and his successors ruled for the period known as "the sixty years' captivity." An English expedition, fifteen thousand strong, sent against him, under Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Norris, proved an inglorious failure, in 1589; and it was not until 1640 that the Portuguese made their own effort, drove the Spaniards out, and placed John, Duke of Braganza, on the throne.

Even so, however, though they recovered their liberty, they were far from having recovered their old position among the Powers of Europe. That had gone from them for ever, as had also some of their colonies, taken from Spain by the Dutch. For them, as for their Spanish enemies, a time of decadence had set in; and the desultory, indecisive wars between them, which occupied the next quarter of a century, suggest the violences of two angry men wrestling on a slippery slope, and pushing each other down the hill. Portugal might have again succumbed if it had not been for English help; but Charles II., having married Catherine of Braganza, who brought him Bombay, Tangier, and Galle as her dowry, sent Schomberg to their aid, and the Spaniards were put to confusion.

In the Light of a False Dawn

Half a century or so later, the Methuen Treaty, with its important commercial clauses, brought the two countries into still closer relations, incidentally substituting port for claret as the general beverage of the English gentry; and then, after a period of worthless kings—a time of disaster by sea and land, culminating in the crowning catastrophe of the Lisbon earthquake—there gleamed the false dawn of another Golden Age.

Joseph of Braganza (1750—1777) was a philosopher king. In the Marquis of Pombal he had a philosopher for his Prime Minister. Pombal was exalted to eminence as a reward for the energy he displayed in coping with the consequences of the Lisbon calamity, in which 50,000 people perished, and property to the value of £20,000,000 was destroyed. He ruled the land in the spirit of an anti-clerical encyclopedist. He rectified Portuguese finances, and reformed the Portuguese army. He revived the agricultural and fishing industries. He expelled the Jesuits, braving the wrath of the Pope by burning a Jesuit alive. He established a Chair of Mathematics at the University of Coimbra, in spite of the anger of the clergy, who denounced that branch of learning as heretical. It seemed, for a season, that Portugal, under the direction of a benevolent despot, was leading the van of progress.

Napoleon Takes a Hand

When Joseph died, however, the clericals came into their own again. The kings and the country were once more contemptible. Everything was mismanaged. When the French Revolution sent new ideas coursing through Europe, Portugal was ready neither to accept nor

to resist them; and the clerical people who ruled in the name of Queen Maria II. sat on the safety-valve, without taking the precaution to make their seat secure. It helped them not a bit to turn the police loose on the "intellectuals," and banish a distinguished patron of science and the arts for the crime of offering hospitality to Necker's secretary. The eventual crash found them quite unprepared; and when Napoleon announced that the House of Braganza had ceased to reign, and sent Junot with an army to Lisbon, Dom John VI. embarked on a British ship and sailed for Brazil, leaving his country to look after itself.

Peninsular War and its Aftermath

There followed the Peninsular War, with Lisbon for the British base, and Portuguese levies, under Beresford, co-operating with the British army under Wellington. They were far more effective allies than the Spaniards, and could, at the end, safely be brigaded with the pick of the British troops

It is to be noted, however, that not all the Portuguese who fought were fighting under Wellington and Beresford. Others had fought under Napoleon in Russia and Germany. These veterans returned to Portugal at the close of the Napoleonic wars: and the rival soldiers, with their habits of violence and their clashing points of view, formed the elements out of which the future political parties of a devastated and impoverished country had to be constituted.

That was the trouble of the nineteenth century in Portugal. For some time England remained in control, occupying a position which might almost be described as that of a Mandatory Power; but the system was not popular and could not last. Presently British control was withdrawn; and then, as was inevitable in a ruined country full of disbanded soldiers, political crises assumed the shape of revolutions and civil wars Above all, there was a War of Succession, Dom Miguel and Dom Pedro (the latter acting on behalf of his small daughter, Maria da Gloria) contending for the throne.

Revolution and Counter-Revolution

It is a tangled story, too long to be told in detail; and it is disputable which of the claimants had the better right. There were coups d'état, repudiations of pledges, reigns of terror. Political leaders were hanged, garotted, and shot; others were publicly flogged and transported. Dom Miguel, during his reign, imprisoned 40,000 of his political opponents, and confiscated the property of 50,000 of them. Then Dom Pedro came to London, borrowed money, and recruited soldiers and sailors of fortune in a Threadneedle Street eating-house. Assembling his forces at the Azores, which had remained loyal, he swooped thence upon Oporto. Captain (afterwards Admiral) Napier commanded his navy; and Saldanha became his competent chief of staff. At last, in 1834, Dom Miguel, having been beaten, consented to be bought out; but Dom Pedro died in the same year, leaving his kingdom to his daughter, Maria da Gloria, then aged fifteen, who married Ferdinand of Saxe-Coburg, nephew of the King of the Belgians.

Her reign consisted mainly of revolutions—not dynastic, happily, but only constitutional. There were actually fourteen revolutions in fifteen years. That very Saldanha, to whom the Queen owed her throne, was the leader of one of them; but she was reconciled to him, agreed to be guided by his advice, and gained a quiet life by doing so. She died in 1853. Her eldest son being still a minor, Ferdinand reigned for a couple of years as regent, but he retired and lived happily with an opera-singer whom he had married morganatically

From that time onward the Royal House of Portugal was known as the House of Coburg. Its representatives were Dom Pedro V (1853), Dom Luis I., Dom Carlos I (1889), and Dom Manoel (1908) —all of them amiable but inadequate sovereigns.

Declaration of the Republic

Dom Luis, described by Queen Victoria as "a good, kind, amiable boy whom one must like," played the 'cello, and translated Shakespeare into Portuguese. Dom Carlos was a painter who was awarded a medal at a Paris Exhibition, and a patron of the drama who presented Mme. Réjane with a team of cream-coloured mules. He married Princess Amélie, daughter of the Duc d'Aumale, who lived a simple life, organized many charitable institutions, and earned the medal of the Royal Humane Society by saving a fisherman from drowning.

All through the two reigns, however, the trend of events was towards a real revolution; and in the second reign the pace perceptibly quickened. Portuguese finances were in a disastrous way. The Government was in the hands of the so-called Rotatives—two groups of politicians who fought a sham fight in Parliament, and took it in turns to thrust pilfering fingers into the public purse. Dom Carlos and Queen Amélie were both unduly under clerical influence. So a group of anti-clerical Republicans at the University of Coimbra resolved to overthrow them, and make a clean sweep for the renovation of

the country. There were warnings. A premature rising at Oporto was suppressed. An ill-conditioned person, said to be a lunatic, pelted the King with stones. At last, in 1908, assassins shot him as he was driving through the streets of Lisbon; and Dom Manoel, who succeeded him, was to have a very short run.

Constitutional opposition and secret conspiracy were working on parallel lines, if not actually hand-in-hand. Theophilo Braga of Coimbra arraigned the House of Braganza at the bar of history, declaiming that "the whole nation shudders with a nausea of disgust at the political system which is ruining us." The Secret Society of the Carbonari permeated the army, the navy, the civil service, the police force, and even the royal household.

The outbreak came in October, 1910. Dom Manoel, who had lived a life of gay diversion while the crisis was looming up, was shelled out of his own palace by his own ships of war. He tried to telephone for help while the chimney pots were falling about his ears, but the cutting of the wires interrupted the appeal. A letter from his prime minister, delivered by hand, exhorted him to take the road of exile. After a brief hesitation he took it, and the Portuguese Republic was forthwith established.

Naturally, there were attempts to overthrow it. Dom Manoel and the Pretender, Dom Miguel, met at Dover and concerted measures. Small bands of royalist adventurers assembled in the mountains, in Spain, close to the frontier, and made two abortive attempts at invasion; and there was also a rising, equally abortive, in Oporto. Subsequent revolutions have produced little result beyond the substitution of one group of political leaders for another.

Internal dissensions, however, did not prevent Portugal from playing her part in the Great War, though they detracted from the value of the effort which she was able to make. In Africa she was at once attacked, and at once despatched troops for the defence of her colonies. Germany, resenting her action in defending herself, formally declared war; and Portugal then prepared to wage war in Europe, Dom Manoel exhorting his own followers to set country above party and co-operate.

That was in March, 1916. Some time had still to elapse before the Portuguese Expeditionary Force was ready; but by July, 1917, there were 40,000 Portuguese soldiers on the Western front, and another 20,000 in Portugal, awaiting the call to reinforce them.

They were very welcome, for the line had been sadly thinned by the heavy toll of casualties, but fortune did not smile on them. Called upon to bear the brunt of a violent German attack on the Lys, they gave way before it; and one heard little more of them. Their claim, however, to take part in the Versailles negotiations and to share in the indemnity was established, their share of the latter being fixed, at Spa, at .75 per cent.

PORTUGAL: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Seaboard State on the Atlantic coast of Iberian Peninsula. Is the most westerly land on the European Continent and lies between thirty-sixth and forty-third parallels of north latitude. Coast mainly low and flat and indented by mouths of rivers, some of which flow from Spain. Mountain ranges chiefly continuations of Spanish systems and attain in Serra da Estrella over 6,000 feet. General climate temperate, and permits a wide range of European and semi-tropical vegetation. Total area including Madeira and Azores islands, 35,490 square miles with an aggregate population of some 5,958,000.

Government and Constitution

Since 1910 when monarchy was abolished Portugal has been a Republic. Constitution provides for a president and two chambers, a national council with one hundred and sixty-four members elected for three years by direct suffrage, and the second or upper chamber of seventy-one members elected by municipal councils. President elected once only for four years by both chambers.

Commerce and Industries

Agriculture not fully developed, though soil in many parts very fertile. About 17 per cent. of country is forest land, and bears pines, cork-trees, oaks, and chestnuts. Vine widely cultivated, wine being chief product. Mountain regions produce rye, goats, and sheep; northern states, maize and cattle; southern districts, wheat and pigs. Nearly 1,000,000 acres under olives, and tomatoes, oranges, figs, onions, and nuts are cultivated, and bees and silkworms reared. Wolfram the most important mineral, and there are deposits of gold, iron, lead, tin, and copper. Sardine and tunny fisheries are extensive. Exports for 1919 totalled £24,874,650, and imports £52,110,675. The standard coin the gold escudo of one hundred centavos and nominally worth about 4s. 5½d.

Religion and Education

Roman Catholicism religion of the majority, but there is complete religious freedom. Country with Azores and Madeira has three ecclesiastical provinces and an archbishopric at Lisbon. Church maintained separately from State. Primary education is compulsory and vigorously enforced. There are over 7,000 public primary schools attended by more than 170,000 pupils. There are over thirty secondary schools, and Universities at Lisbon, Coimbra, and Oporto. There are, besides, special colleges for commerce, naval and military training, and the arts.

Chief Towns

Lisbon, capital (estimated population 489,600), Oporto (203,000), Setubal (37,000), Braga (22,000), Coimbra (20,800), Evora (16,000).

PEACE AND PLENTY REJOICE THE HEARTS OF THE GOOD FOLK OF MADEIRA WHEN VINTAGE-TIME COMES ROUND

Prince Henry the Navigator conferred a priceless boon upon the Madeiras when he introduced the vine and the sugar cane from Crete and from Sicily unto an environment so suited to their growth Wine and sugar have been the staple production of the island ever since Vintage time on a quinta provides many pleasing pictures when the men in their linen shirts, tight breeches to the knee, and blue cloth caps and the women, in their blue or scarlet capes, are busy among the graceful baskets piled high with grapes black and white from which Madeira wine is made

Portugal

III. Remnants of Its Colonial Empire

By Professor George Young

Author of "Portugal: A History"

WHEN Islamic fanaticism and Turkish militarism blocked the direct routes to the East by Asia Minor and the Mediterranean, trade sought other indirect routes—northward round Asia, southward round Africa, or westward across America. Geography shows Portugal to be the best jumping-off place for both the East and West Indies, while history explains why Portugal was the first European people ready to jump.

The Portuguese have had to free their country from the Moor and hold their frontier against the Spaniard with the help of foreign allies from over seas. They have had to be as much sailors as soldiers. So that when Crusaders turned into Conquistadors, Portugal was well equipped to take the lead. The mixed coastal population of Portugal, with its Phoenician, Greek, Norse, Flemish, and English strains, supplied suitable captains and crews; while the accession of an Anglo-Portuguese dynasty in the House of Aviz gave the necessary impetus and guidance. John of Aviz owed his throne to the English alliance. He was the first European king to go into overseas empire as a business, and the able sons of his English wife made a very good thing of it. One of them, Prince Henry the Navigator, founded Portuguese colonial power by formulating the science of navigation.

But when the wealth of the Old World and the New began to pour into Lisbon,

HOW MY LADY TAKES THE AIR IN THE BEAUTIFUL AZORES

Shrouded in a sombre cloak and hood combined, strongly reminiscent of the Maltese faldetta, illustrated on page 999, this lady of St. Michaels, in the Azores, looks like some abbess interviewing the convent gardener, the patient ass contributing somewhat to the religious aspect of its rider. Her costume, however, is of the mode approved by all her sex in the little Portuguese archipelago

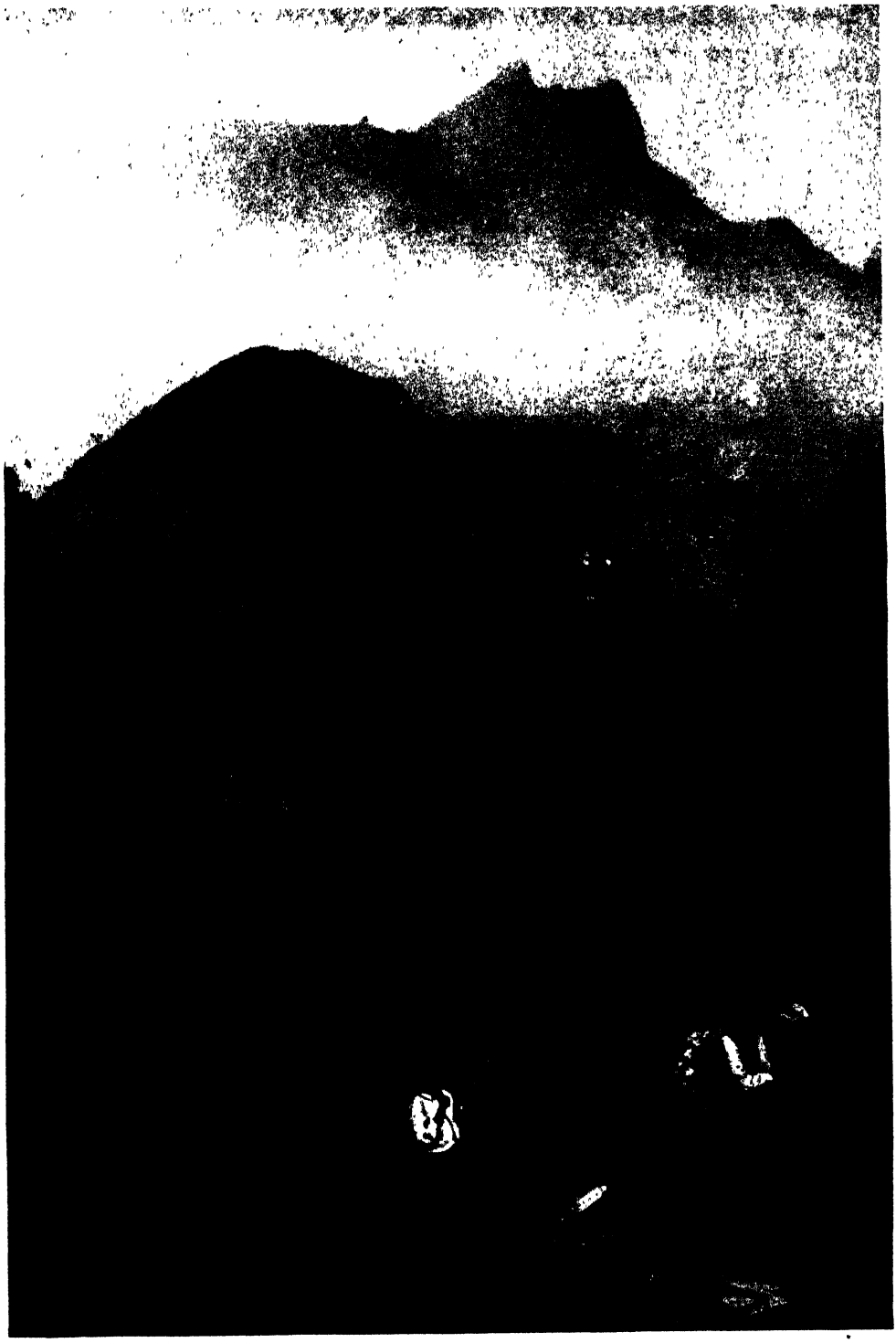
MADEIRAN GRACE IN LOCAL GARB
Gaily coloured gowns, topped by blue or scarlet capes, are the women's wear in Madeira. Both sexes affect the carapuça, a blue, funnel-shaped cap, worn pipe end upwards

neither the Court, whence the English element had disappeared, nor the Church, where the Spanish element was predominant, nor the country gentry, could put it to any profitable use. Worse still, when the Jews began to control and capitalise this stream of gold and to make Lisbon the banking and business centre of Europe, Court, Church, and country gentry combined to persecute them. "Golden Goa" was a worthy child of the "Golden Age" of Portugal. In its best aspects it was also an anticipation of the British Indian Empire. But the whole splendid structure had no sound foundation. It was, from the first, predatory and parasitic, and it became priest-ridden and profiteering. So, to-day, the Portuguese power in India survives only in a few enclaves on the map with names known only to history, and a few Eurasian clerks and cooks with names that once were known throughout Christendom. This latter feature suggests another reason why the Portuguese Indian Empire failed. It allowed the native stock on which it was grafted to overgrow the imported culture.

In America the Portuguese have been in some respects more successful than the British. For the United States of Brazil have had no war of extermination with native Indians, no war of independence with the mother country, no serious civil war between the colonists themselves. And the whole imported Portuguese culture has been so grafted on the aboriginal stock that the Brazilian of the future will not be merely a new Portuguese, a revised edition of a European, but a Eur-american, a new race with potentialities as vast as those of its territories. The world's future in music, art, and literature may well lie with the children of Portuguese culture in the Brazils.

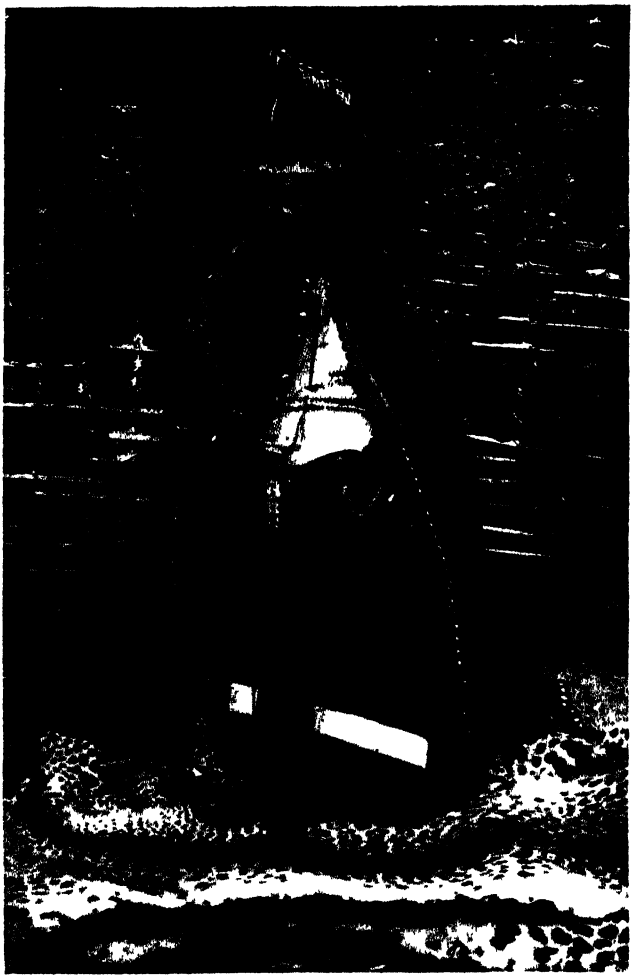
There remains, then, to Portugal its African Empire, those vast tracts of territory that represent Portugal's founders' shares in the European exploitation of the Dark Continent. Until quite lately these colonies were only a financial and political embarrassment. Portugal itself produces little, purchases much of its food abroad, and pays heavy interest on a disproportionate debt. To pay for all this, Portugal must export something, and has nothing available but the produce from its African colonies and its own countryside.

Thus, as the Republicans saw, if the exploitation and administration by Lisbon of the colonies were retained,



HAMMOCK TRAVEL AMONG THE PEAKS AND RAVINES OF MADEIRA

Except in the neighbourhood of Funchal the roads of Madeira are so bad that wheeled traffic is virtually non-existent. Transport of goods is effected by pack animals or on rough wooden sledges drawn by bullocks. Travellers in the island either ride on horses or mules, or in hammocks. These are made of stout canvas swung from a pole, and are carried by two bearers



A NEGRO NERO IN FULL PANOPLY

This aged negro, decked out in gorgeous trappings dear to the savage heart, became chief of Mabaya, in the Mbamda district of the Portuguese Congo. So bloodthirsty a tyrant was he that his own people put out his eyes

Photo, the Rev. E. Holmes

native labour, while Portugal had neither the money-power nor the man-power to develop these regions quickly enough to satisfy the European demand for their produce. This produce found its principal market in Germany. As Lisbon had neither the capital nor the credit for financing even such small exploitations as the cocoa islands, to say nothing of such costly enterprises as Portuguese East Africa railways or Portuguese West Africa copper mines, it was natural that this responsibility should devolve on the German consumers of Portuguese produce, and eventually be concentrated in the hands of German financiers in Lisbon.

Moreover, as these colonial enterprises were by far the most important financial business in Lisbon, they carried with them into German hands not only a direct control over economic developments in the colonies, but an indirect control over economic existence in the capital itself. And where there is economic control there is the power, at any rate, of political control. Before the Great War the Portuguese African Empire was rapidly passing into the control of Germany, and was carrying with it the Portuguese nation.

the colonies could not develop, and would in the end secede; whereas, if these profits were abandoned, Portugal and its government would soon be in difficulties. So, as a compromise, an instalment of self-government was given, the metropolitan control of all colonial commerce being retained by customs regulations. But the colonies are allowed a measure of financial autonomy, and the surplus of one colony is no longer taken to pay the deficit of another.

The next difficulty was that the colonies could only be exploited by

During the five hundred years from their first establishment on the east coast of Mozambique, and on the west coast at Angola, the Portuguese might well have consolidated their control along the Zambezi valley and over the healthy uplands of the interior.

But the "kingdom of the Congo" of the fifteenth century, and the gold mines of Monomotapa in the sixteenth century, came to nothing; and it was not until the partition of Africa became a "question d'urgence" in the nineteenth century that the Portuguese in the Zambezi region made a belated effort to join up the two colonies.

If they had had only to reckon with Europe, the Portuguese might have succeeded, for Paris and Berlin had recognized their claims, and London was prepared to do so; but there was now a new factor in the problem, the expansive energies of the British settlers at the Cape, supported by the profits of diamond and gold mines, and directed by Imperial idealists like Cecil Rhodes.

Such men were already seriously alarmed by the assignment to Portugal of Delagoa Bay by French arbitration in 1875, and by the establishment of Germany on the opposite coast in German West Africa. They knew that a combination between Germans with the money and brains, Boers with the lands and local whites, and Portuguese with ports and proprietory rights, would shut them in behind an insuperable barrier. But these Afrikanders have been fortunate and skilful enough to overcome each of these obstacles in detail as they forced their way along the central uplands, confining their opponents on either side of them to the coastal regions. They have been, however, greatly aided in this by the loyalty of the Portuguese to the British alliance. The defeat of Germany and its disappearance from Africa have made a new departure in the history of Southern Africa. The course of events in South Africa seems likely now to follow that in North America after the British and Americans in combination had finally defeated the efforts of the French to cut off their hinterland by joining Canada to Louisiana along the Mississippi. We have only to substitute for Americans, Afrikanders; for French, Germans; for the Mississippi, the

PLASTERING WITHOUT TROWELS

Most of the tribes of the Portuguese Congo are of the Bantu-negroid family. Like the natives farther north in Nigeria, illustrated on page 549, these Mbamba people use few tools, doing even their plastering by hand alone

Photo, the Rev. E. Holmes

GOOD WINE NEEDS NO BUSH

Palm wine, made from the fermented juice of a variety of the Palmyra palm, is the native drink throughout tropical West Africa. Gourds can be shaped into excellent decanters, and a thirsty man can dispense with wine-glasses

Photo, the Rev. E. Holmes

Zambezi; and for Canada and Louisiana, Mozambique and Angola, in order to see that the future of Africa now lies with the Afrikander.

There can no longer be any question of foreign partition, or even of penetration, in the Portuguese possessions. But it does not follow that these vast regions, with their valuable resources, will remain as hitherto, in economic dependence on Lisbon. The Republic has already recognized the right of Angola and of Mozambique to a modest measure of autonomy. But if these territorities are ever to have any more serious future than that of taking toll on the transit trade of the Afrikander interior, the present restrictions on their economic existence will have either to be relaxed or repudiated. It will then become possible for the Portuguese to settle the habitable uplands and thereby establish a pure-white Portuguese element in the Afrikander race, such as they are now contributing to the civilization of Brazil and to the cultivation of New England.

Having now considered the Portuguese Empire as a whole, it may be worth while to give a short note describing the peoples of the different possessions.

The Azores are a group of nine islands in mid-Atlantic. Uninhabited when occupied in 1431-51 by the Portuguese, they are to-day peopled by an especially sturdy Portuguese stock. Their activity and enterprise may be attributed partly to a strong Flemish strain, introduced when Fayal was attached to the Duchy of Burgundy. The islands have always stood for Young Portugal. Thus, in 1580, they rose in favour of Dom Antonio, against Philip II. of Spain, then occupying Portugal. During the Spanish occupation they served as a base for the English raiders against the Spanish treasure ships, as when "at Flores, in the Azores, Sir Richard Grenville lay." They again served as a base for Dom Pedro, ex-Emperor of Brazil, in his adventurous expedition against the tyrant Dom Miguel. While, during the Great War,

Ponta Delgada became a rendezvous and refuge for American transports and was bombarded by a German U-boat.

The destruction of the oranges by disease has caused an emigration from St. Michaels, Santa Maria, and Terceira to Brazil, and from Fayal, Flores, and St. George, to New England and the Sandwich Islands The settlers always do well and the Republic is trying to divert this emigration to the uplands of Angola. The population has trebled in a century, from 80,000 to 250,000. The islands are governed as a province of Portugal.

Madeira, the largest of a group of islands in the North Atlantic, first settled in 1419, is inhabited by a softer stock with a coloured strain. The island was colonised by Henry the Navigator, who introduced the sugar cane from Sicily and the Malvesia (Malmsey) vine from Crete The wine trade, as at Oporto, fell in the eighteenth century into the hands of a British factory, which eventually became strong enough to levy customs, construct public works, control commerce, and pay the Portuguese officials. This came to an end after the Napoleonic wars. By the Hohenlohe concession the Germans sought to oust the British and control the islands. The concession was commuted by King Manoel into a commercial treaty that gave German trade a preferential position in Portugal. To-day the sugar manufacture is the monopoly of a British firm. The island is administered as a Portuguese province.

The Cape Verde group of ten inhabited islands, discovered by the Portuguese in 1441-56, are volcanic islands with a population of 180,000. The islanders are of a handsome, hard-working type, speaking a Creole dialect, and two thirds of them mulattoes.

St. Vincent, with a good harbour, is a British coaling and cable station. The islanders are successful emigrants; especially in South American navies and North American fishing fleets. They have a sort of Crown Colony Government. Portuguese Guinea, an enclave in

"WIRELESS" IN THE AFRICAN WILDS

Among the many native African methods of rapid long-distance communication the drum plays an important part, a widely-understood code of drum taps being in use over immense areas. This is the mondo, or message-drum, of the Zombo highlands

Photo, Frederick Beale

French territory, is a vestige of Portugal's vast and vague claims in West Africa, based on the voyages of Henry the Navigator's explorers. It has a growing trade in oil, nuts, and palm kernels; and, since the revolution of 1910, its budget shows a surplus.

St. Thomas and Principe islands, in the Bight of Biafra, were originally

PROUD OF A QUAINT COIFFURE
Both sexes plait their hair in Zombo, northern Angola, intricate patterns being achieved with meticulous care upon their woolly heads
Photo, Frederick Beale

settled by Portuguese convicts and Jewish youths taken from their parents by the Inquisition. The present population consists of some 10,000 indolent dark-skinned Creoles, a settlement of as many more Angolares, or escaped slaves, and some 40,000 contract labourers. The islands were ruined by the transfer of sugar planting to Brazil, recovered again as an emporium of the slave trade, were again ruined by its abolition in 1876, and again restored to prosperity by cocoa planting. In 1913 they were supplying one-sixth of the world's consumption of cocoa; and though the British market was lost, owing to the Press agitation against contract labour, Germany took its place. The plantations came to be financed by Germans; and, as a consequence, German goods replaced British in the Portuguese markets. The island budgets show good surpluses, and their prosperity helped Portugal through the bad years before the revolution.

Portuguese West Africa and the Portuguese Congo (Cabindo), form a vast "terrain vague" of West Africa. Angola was founded by a grandson of Bartholomeo Diaz, about 1575; Benguela, in the seventeenth, and Mossamedes in the eighteenth centuries. These are open roadsteads and the only ports on the long coast are Loanda, Lobito, and Tiger Bay. Railways penetrate to the interior plateau from Loanda, Benguella, and Mossamedes, and are forming thin belts of white settlement. But the non-navigability of the rivers, the unhealthiness of the coastal regions, and the savagery of the Bantu tribes have delayed development. The colony is rich in mineral resources, especially copper and petroleum.

Portuguese East Africa, the earliest Portuguese settlement in Africa, was founded in 1508. The object of the early explorers was to organize an alternative trade route round the Cape, to avoid the Turks. To do this they had to effect commerce contact with the Arabs, who occupied the East African coast as far south as Sofala. Mozambique was, therefore, the junction between West and East. The gold export from the interior was another attraction; but the medieval Portuguese never discovered any mines of value.

The Spanish occupation of Portugal, and the establishment of other European powers in India itself ruined Mozambique. The Portuguese tried to restore it by removing all trade restrictions in 1671; but this bold innovation was abandoned in 1690. The introduction of Hindu traders was more of a success;

so much so that efforts were soon made to suppress them. These efforts failed, and the " Banyans " have to-day almost a monopoly of the retail and barter trade of East Africa. They are as indispensable as undesirable ; for they prevent white settlers from making a living by trade, except on a large scale, and they take their profits back to India. The Arabs are still the principal foreign culture influence, and they grade off into the natives through such semi-Arabised tribes as the Makuas and Yaos. Swahili, a bastard arabic on a Bantu basis, is the general language of the coast. The natives themselves are a chaos of races, as a result of repeated overflowings of natives from Central Africa.

The ports and railroads of the colony were fairly well developed by British enterprise, being little more than feeders for the Afrikander interior. Agricultural development, especially in Northern Mozambique and Nyasa, has made some progress in the hands of chartered companies, which have to some extent solved the difficulty of the Portuguese in interesting foreign capital without introducing foreign control. But, whether their peculiar system of land tenure and tax farming is good is still a matter of discussion. The Portuguese are beginning to recognize that the British system of encouraging a free native agriculturist is a possible alternative to servile labour on plantations

Of the remaining Portuguese possessions Goa, Daman, and Diu on the Indian coast, and Macao on the China coast, are mere monuments of the past, while the undeveloped island of Timor is as yet no more than a raw material of the future.

GRIM CELEBRANTS OF MYSTIC RITES IN PORTUGUESE WEST AFRICA

As already explained in the chapter on the British Empire in Africa, pages 673-899, the admission of young men into the full rights of manhood is the most important event in African tribal life These grotesque skirts and ruffs of frayed leaf, and white masks to conceal identity, are worn by celebrants of the initiation rites performed on the Zombo plateau of North Angola

Photo, Frederick Beale

National Academy
inistration, Mussoorie A
Acc. No . ...26.....

LENGTHY LIMBS THAT ONCE PACED THE DESERT JOINTS OF GIRAFFE MEAT DESTINED FOR DINNER

When they can get it, these natives devour giraffe with the height of gusto, averring that the meat is of very excellent quality The giraffe in its native state is found only in Central and South Africa, where it keeps mainly to the waste land in which it can maintain itself over long periods without water. Being exceedingly timid and its long legs giving it great speed, the hunter s task is not an easy one

Rhodesia

Its Native Peoples Under British Rule

By C. Lestock Reid, F.R.G.S.

Author of "The Zambesi to Khartoum"

"HAPPY," it was once cynically observed, "is the country which has no history," and, if this doctrine be true, Rhodesia should be the unhappiest of African states for, unlike most of the continent, it has a history stretching back to furthest antiquity.

The original inhabitants were the Bushmen, who have left their mark in the rock paintings found in the caves scattered over the country; but, unfortunately for them, a large proportion of their country was amazingly rich in gold, and a gold-bearing country has always been unhealthy for aborigines.

Some time before the days of Solomon there arrived on the scene one of the most fascinating races of early days the Arabs of Saba or Sheba—a branch of the Phoenicians—who dispossessed the Bushmen and themselves worked the goldfields with such success that they flooded the known world until "silver was nothing accounted of in the days of Solomon." They, too, left their traces—mighty forts, temples, and long-disused mines, the ruins of which constitute to this day some of the most interesting things in Rhodesia, and deserve a word to themselves.

The greatest is, of course, Zimbabwe (stone houses), in the Victoria District, the remains of a great city which once sheltered enormous populations, who worshipped in the Elliptical Temple with its walls of granite narrowing up to a height of twenty-five to thirty feet, its solid conical tower and its great parallel passages, and who strolled about in the streets of what is now the Valley of Ruins, and gazed up at the mighty mass of buildings on the Acropolis which protected their city from savage inroads. And now—

> The Lion and the Lizard keep
> The Courts where Jamshýd gloried and drank deep.

And the very name of the local Jamshýd is forgotten There are few more impressive or pathetic sights than

NORTHERN AND SOUTHERN RHODESIA

BRAVES OF THE TANGANYIKA FRONTIER IN THE TRAPPINGS OF WAR
To the north east of Northern Rhodesia lies Tanganyika Territory, formerly German East Africa, and on these marches wild tribes, mainly of Bantu type, hunt the game that still persists in these central fastnesses. The Bantus are highly skilled in the use of home made but deadly lances, and in dressing for the fray their exaggerated headgear adds height and terror to their appearance

Zimbabwe, especially by moonlight, when the soft light filters through the cracks and holes of those once massive walls and softens the ruined outlines of what may once have been one of the greatest cities in the world

Next in importance are the ruins on the Inyanga Mountains near the Portuguese border. Of a different character from Zimbabwe, they consist of stone enclosures, some as much as six miles across, on the hill-tops, open spaces probably used as temples below them, and pit-like buildings sunk in the ground with walls of huge stones and covered side passages. Probably they represent an earlier invasion of the same people as built Zimbabwe; while the Khami ruins, on the other hand, and those about Insiza, belong to a later period.

It seems fairly certain that the Sabaeans held sway over an enormous part of what is now Rhodesia from about 2000 B.C. to 1000 A.D., until they were ousted at long last—the process must have taken several centuries—by the invasion of Bantu peoples from the north.

The Portuguese arrived at Sofala on the coast in 1485 and penetrated inland, chiefly along the Zambezi, but their hold on the interior was always precarious, and their downfall came in

1760, to be followed by more than a century of savage inter-tribal warfare, lightened, towards the end, by the explorations of such men as Livingstone, who discovered the Victoria Falls in 1855, and died at Ilala in 1873.

Then came Cecil Rhodes, who built up the land which bears his name and added 440,000 square miles to the British Empire. In October, 1889, as a result of the treaty with Lobengula, King of the Matabele, a Royal Charter was granted to the British South Africa Company, by right of which the company ruled thereafter, opening up the country with roads and railways, buildings, farming and mining, until to-day the whole vast area is peaceful and prosperous.

Modern Rhodesia is bounded by the Transvaal to the south, by Portuguese East Africa and Nyassaland to the east, by Tanganyika Territory and the Belgian Congo to the north, and by Portuguese West Africa and Bechuanaland to the west, and is subdivided by the Zambezi into two administrative districts — Northern and Southern Rhodesia. The first-named has an area of about 291,000 square miles and a

LIKELY CREW OF CANOE-BOYS IN GOVERNMENT SERVICE

Fine watermen, knowing every trick and turn of the Zambezi, the North Rhodesian natives in the neighbourhood of the capital, Livingstone, compete eagerly for the honour of being employed as canoe-boys to Government House. They make an exceedingly workmanlike appearance in the white jumpers, white shorts, and sailor collars that form the official uniform

Photo, British South Africa Company

SUCCESSFUL SETTLERS ON ONE OF RHODESIA'S FRUITFUL FARMS

For those with a taste for the out of doors a little capital, and patience, the settler's life in Rhodesia bears comparison with that in any of earth's pleasant places The general land elevation is sufficiently great to make climatic conditions nearly always tolerable and often ideal for the European. The rains come during summer while winter is dry and bracing, and agriculture is well rewarded

Photo British South Africa Company

ASSEMBLED AT BULAWAYO FOR A TRIP TO THE MATOPPO HILLS

These motorists outside Bulawayo's Grand Hotel are about to make the eighteen mile excursion to the National Park in the Matoppos This is one of the popular trips from the town, which is Southern Rhodesia's commercial capital, and has some six thousand white inhabitants On a hill in the Matoppos called " The World's View " sleeps Cecil Rhodes, who built up the land which bears his name

ANGONI SPEARMAN, SON OF ONE OF AFRICA'S FIERCEST TRIBES

At various periods in the history of the Zulu peoples, there has been a tendency for sections to migrate northward and form powerful confederations. Among the most prominent of these separatists were the Matabele and Angoni, the latter famed for their bloodthirstiness and devastations. The Angoni warrior seen above with his tufted spear and hide buckler is a settler in Northern Rhodesia

Photo, British South Africa Company

DRUM AND BUGLE BAND OF THE BAROTSE NATIVE POLICE IN RHODESIA

Near the Victoria Falls Station, on the Cape Town to Livingstone Railway, and within a short distance of the awe-inspiring chasm, is a headquarters of the Rhodesian Police This force, formed partly of natives, with white officers and non-commissioned officers, has the responsibility of maintaining good order among the various tribes in the territory. The bandsmen in this case are Barotse, a people from what was formerly known as North-Western Rhodesia, now incorporated in Northern Rhodesia

native population of about 928,000; while Southern Rhodesia, which includes Matabeleland and Mashonaland, has an area of about 149,000 square miles and a native population of about 770,000, to which figures have to be added some 33,600 Europeans and a number of Asiatics.

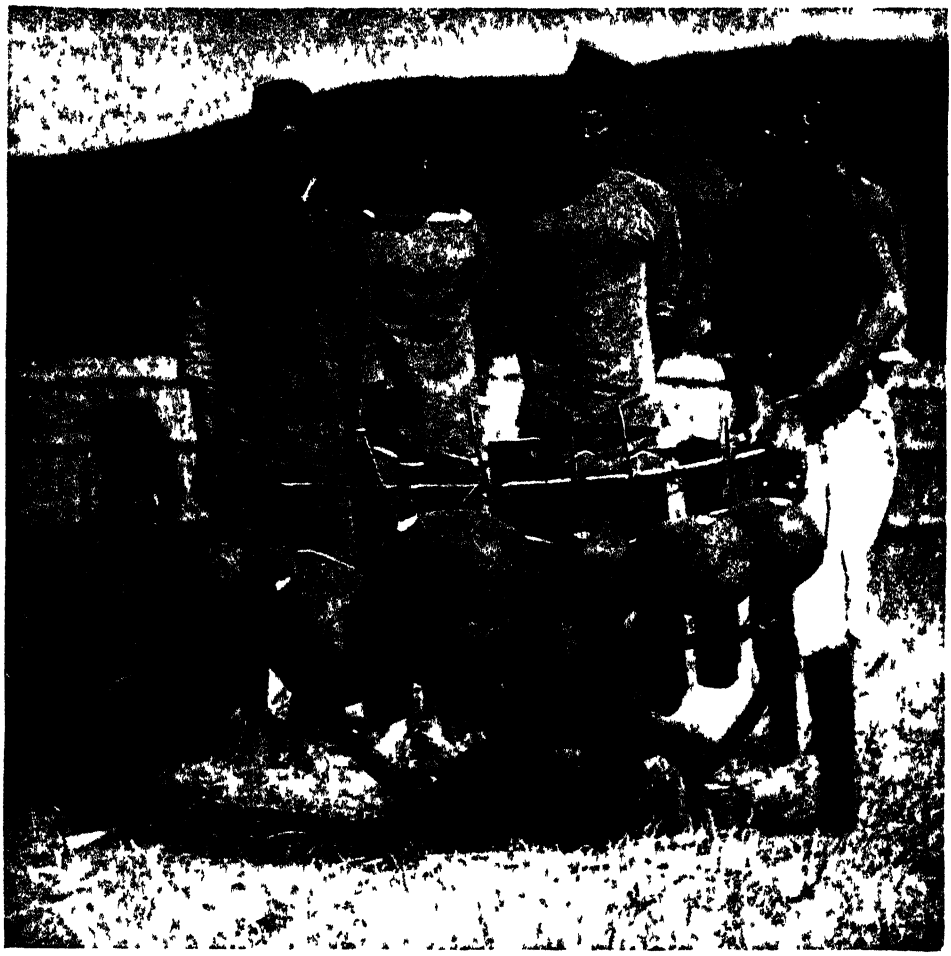
Practically the whole of this enormous area is a high plateau. It is extraordinarily rich in minerals —gold and coal being the chief—and large portions are suitable for farming, though as far as cattle are concerned the position in Northern Rhodesia is complicated by the presence of "fly-belts," the home of the tsetse, and over all nature has scattered her beauties with a lavish hand.

PHYSICAL PERFECTION OF NEGRO WOMANHOOD
Unlike women of the less civilized Asiatic tribes, who have a superstitious horror of the camera, African women are generally pleased to pose for the photographer, as was this handsome representative of the native womanhood of Northern Rhodesia
Photo, British South Africa Company

But Southern and Northern Rhodesia are two different countries; the one approximating to the conditions of the Union, the other, to those of Central Africa; the one a civilized land of railways, towns, and farms, the other, save where the Elizabethville railway bends its slow way northwards to Sakania on the Belgian frontier, real, untamed African bush.

While the towns of Southern Rhodesia are civilized and well-planned, those of Northern Rhodesia are little more than up-country stations; indeed Livingstone, on the southern border, and Abercorn, tucked away in the extreme north, are the only real towns it possesses. But, in Southern Rhodesia, Bulawayo, Salisbury, and Umtali are all places of considerable importance, with Gwelo and Victoria not far behind. Of these, though Salisbury is the administrative capital, Bulawayo is the largest town and may be taken as a type.

The first thing that strikes one on emerging, hot and dirty, from the wearisome railway journey up from Kimberley, into the brilliant sunlight of a Rhodesian morning, is the enormous width of the streets. The next is the way in which Rhodes dominates this commercial capital of the land he brought to birth. A very fine statue of him stands in Main Street "looking ever to the north"; his picture hangs in every club and house and hotel; and, less than thirty miles out, amid the rugged wilderness of the Matoppos, he sleeps his last sleep under a plain brass plate, bearing the inscription: "Here lie the remains of Cecil John Rhodes."



NATIVE MUSICAL INSTRUMENT OF THE FORT JAMESON POLICE

Long before the British Administration came to give the Rhodesian native his police uniform of fez and jacket, and the bandsman's bugle and drum, he had evolved an instrument of his own It consists of a number of wooden slats after the fashion of a xylophone and has gourd sound boxes like the more elaborate "piano" illustrated on page 723 It is found in Central Africa

Photo, British South Africa Company

let into the living rock, and guarded by eight to ten gigantic boulders Beside this tomb are Jameson's grave and the Shangani memorial to Wilson's men, and beyond, miles on miles of tumbled rocky hills of fantastic shapes and colour shimmering away into the blue haze of distance, combine to render this hilltop one of the most impressive on earth.

As in most African towns, the hotels of Bulawayo might be bettered, but the Club is beyond reproach, most comfortable and hospitable, and it is hardly necessary to add that it possesses a racecourse, athletic grounds galore, theatres, schools, hospitals, and taxies—indeed, all the paraphernalia of an English town, rickshaws being the only exotic touch

Even to-day the greater part of the country is Africa unsubdued For instance, one walks out of a really first-rate hotel, eighteen hours by rail from Bulawayo, and comes suddenly on that apotheosis of nature, unconquered and unconquerable, the Victoria Falls There is little doubt that these falls are the finest natural sight in the world, but their very magnitude makes them almost impossible to describe. Rows of figures—stating that Heaven

knows how many million gallons of water per hour fall 450 feet from a cliff a mile wide into a chasm about 100 yards across, that the spray thereof rises 700 feet into the air and the noise thereof can be heard ten miles away—will convey but little to the English reader; he will be more impressed if he realizes that the distance from one bank to another is as from the British Museum to the Marble Arch, and that the depth of the chasm is greater than the greatest height of S. Paul's; and this will give him no conception of the awful splendour of these titanic falls, of the fairy beauty of the myriad rainbows in the spray, or the roar of "the smoke that thunders" as the natives call it.

As one gets farther north, so civilization grows weaker, maintaining but a precarious existence along the railway and vanishing altogether in the marshes of Lake Bangweolo, along the "fly"-infested banks of the Luapula and in the uplands of the Tanganyika plateau.

The diversities of Rhodesian scenery are too great to admit of generalisation; and the same may be said of her peoples. For the frontiers of Rhodesia contain within them a vast number of Bantu tribes who, while having much in common, are yet unmistakeably separate entities. In Southern Rhodesia the most important of these are the Matabele. About a century ago a band of Zulus, wearied of the tyranny of their king, settled in what is now Southern Rhodesia, easily subduing the previous inhabitants and having it all their own way until the British came and subdued them in their turn, none too easily, as the Matabele wars of 1893 and 1896 prove, since when they have settled down well. In physique

BLACK AND WHITE CANOES FOR HUNTING THE HIPPO

Hunting the hippopotamus in the Zambezi has its thrills in the narrow native canoes. Like those of Lake Tanganyika referred to in page 662, these canoes are dangerously unstable. The superiority of the white man's "canader" itself, as illustrated in the photographs in page 1134, an improvement on the Red Indian canoe, is well seen in this photograph taken near Livingstone

IN THE SQUARE AT LIVINGSTONE, NORTH RHODESIA'S EMBRYO CAPITAL

Situated some four miles from the Zambezi river's left bank, Livingstone has replaced Fort Jameson as the administrative headquarters for Northern Rhodesia. It has, besides the Government buildings, a hospital and an hotel, the last seen to the left of the photograph. The railway from Cape Town to Elizabethville runs within a mile, this line forming part of the Cape-to-Cairo system. The houses seen above, with their corrugated iron roofing, are a common kind in this part of Africa, being quickly and easily erected

the Matabele, as might be expected from their origin, are a fine, upstanding, and courageous race; their language is practically identical with that of the Zulus, and they brought with them and have retained—subject, of course, to modifications imposed by the white man—many of the laws and customs of the parent stock. Children are always welcome, and birth-control, as a movement, is not likely to make much headway in Matabeleland. As in all African tribes, the women do the manual work.

In North-Western Rhodesia there is no outstanding tribe; the Barotse, away on the banks of the Upper Zambezi; the Mashukalumwa, unique in that they fight at night-time; the Bakonde, great hunters; the Balunda, up in the Northern frontier, all approximate pretty much to the ordinary Bantu type in its primitive state. They live in conical huts with a low door and no window, and spend their lives—here, again, the women do all the manual work—eating, sleeping, hunting, and talking, especially talking.

Native Life in Native Setting

As far as costume goes, nature clothes them—with the assistance of bark and skins; and though the natives are eager enough to acquire some cast-off article of white attire, particularly the, to them, entirely useless hat, their real pride is in their hair, which they shave, cut, and tease into various patterns, according to their tribes. Their feeding arrangements, too, are strange to English ideas, consisting usually of one meal per diem in the evening, generally merely grain. But the native loves meat and, given the chance, will gorge himself till he can hardly see, without apparent after-effects; nor is he particular about its condition or quality, as anyone who has seen a crowd of natives literally burrowing inside a long dead hippo can testify.

Their religion is practically confined to their fear of spirits, which they hold responsible for practically every ill that flesh is heir to, and propitiate on every possible occasion.

Among these tribes the Awatwa deserve special notice. They live in a sort of African Venice in the great Lukanga Swamp, their homes floating huts of reeds and clay, their sole method of transport the dug-out canoe, their intercourse with neighbouring dry-land tribes limited to the exchange of fish for grain. They are, indeed, amphibious to such an extent that, while the story commonly believed by the surrounding natives that they are web-footed is, of course, untrue, their feet are so soft as to be practically useless.

Former Lords of Tanganyika

In North-Eastern Rhodesia there is a similar tribe, the Waunga, dwelling in the deadly, tsetse-haunted swamps round Lake Bangweolo, though these are bolder and more independent than the Awatwa. But in this region pride of place belongs to the Awemba, who were, until the coming of the British, the undisputed lords of the Tanganyika plateau, ruling with a rod of iron and a very thorough organization.

Their king was one of the Wenang' Andu, chiefs of the Crocodile totem, and the system of succession was matriarchal; in other words, the successor must be born of the Nanfumu, princesses of the direct royal line, but the father was unimportant. These kings had a kind of privy council, the Wakabiro, in the capital, and delegated their authority to the Wasimupelo, Lords of the Barriers, and the Walashi, district officers, in the provinces.

An Epitome of All Africa

Much of this tribal organization and native law, improved and amplified, has been retained by the white administrators, and the Awemba, judiciously handled, have, like the Matabele and so many of the fighting races of Africa, settled down remarkably well under British rule. They, too, are a fine-looking race, brave and adventurous,

BRITISH JUSTICE FOR NATIVE PLAINTIFFS AT FORT JAMESON'S GOVERNMENT HOUSE

For the settling of disputes and the hearing of grievances, periodical 'indabas' are held at administrative centres. 'Indaba," a word of Bantu origin signified any conference of importance among the "indunas' or chiefs of Kaffir tribes. Since it has come to mean a gathering such as this to which natives come from far and near. Native confidence in the expectation of fair dealing rewards the Rhodesian Executive's administrative methods, which have demonstrated their superiority over the old tribal system, as these periodical gatherings indicate.

Photo British South Africa Company

making good porters (though the Amambwe are better station-workers), and are very intelligent; their extraordinarily elaborate language alone proves that. They are honest, too, like most unsophisticated Africans, with an honesty that puts the European to shame, and faithful. On the other hand, they are undeniably sensuous and cruel and, above all—the curse of Africa- utterly unambitious The native has no definite aim in life except the negative one of enjoying himself in his own way, with the result that his huts, foods, and customs have remained practically unaltered for centuries.

Besides black and white, there are other inhabitants of Rhodesia, though alas! rapidly becoming extinct—the game. Within the memory of man vast herds roamed over all the country; now one can travel for miles in Southern Rhodesia and not see a single head But in Northern Rhodesia game still abounds, and the system of expensive licences promises to save it from extinction. Elephants, rhinoceros, buffalo, hippopotami, lions, and leopards represent the big game, while among the smaller varieties, eland, zebra, waterbuck, puku, kudu, the rare sitatunga, sable, roan, and other antelopes, to say nothing of crocodiles, wart hogs, and wild dogs, are all to be found.

Rhodesia has something of everything. Within its borders the traveller may see civilization past and present, flourishing and unknown; dwell anywhere from a first-class hotel to a jigger-haunted native hut; pursue any sport, from golf to tracking a wounded buffalo through dense bush, and meet every kind of native from the sophisticated "boy" of the townships and mines to the timid savage of the Lukanga Swamp. It is, in short, an epitome of all Africa.

Rhodesia was to become a self-governing colony in the autumn of 1923

AMONG THE LOVELY PARKLANDS OF THE MATOPPO HILLS

Rhodesia is beautified by large areas of the parklands whose origin has excited the curiosity of many travellers in Africa. A single euphorbia succeeding in establishing itself in an arid soil casts a shade in which other vegetation springs up, radiating thence until, finally, there are large green expanses studded with clumps of trees resembling the parks that are a chief beauty of the English countryside

RUMANIA YOUNG HIGHLANDERS PERFORMING A COUNTRY DANCE ACCOMPANIED BY A GYPSY FIDDLER

A Rumanian national dance, almost as popular in some districts as the Hora, is the so-called De brâu, danced almost exclusively by men, though women can join in some of its varied figures The dancers usually have their hands on each other's shoulders or one hand in the neighbour's girdle it is a lively, vivacious performance, danced in a bow shape or a closed circle, in which foot and heel play is much in evidence The music is chiefly supplied by those wild children of nature, the gypsies, without whose strange, sweet melodies no feast birth wedding or death of the peasant community would be complete

From the Editor's Desk

(CONTINUED)

Young, who supplies, in addition, a graphic little survey of its present colonies and past great overseas empire. The historical section is in the capable hands of Mr. Francis Gribble, and our photogravure pages contain exceedingly attractive camera-pictures of peasant life in the Peninsula. Rhodesia is of special interest in view of its approaching grant of self-government, and Mr. C. Lestock Reid writes of its progress and possibilities with a highly appreciative pen.

卐

"Russia Before the Dawn"

THOSE of our readers who have watched at all closely European developments during recent years, will await with special eagerness the chapters on Russia. These will begin in Part 39 and be continued in Part 40. First of all there will be a full description of the country written by one who knows it well; this will be followed by a special chapter on Soviet Russia by Mr. F. A. McKenzie, the accomplished Anglo-Canadian journalist and traveller, whose new book, "Russia Before the Dawn," has been attracting so much attention. Much importance naturally attaches to the history of Russia. This has been specially written for PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS by Sir Bernard Pares, Professor of Russian language, literature, and history, University of London, since 1917.

卐

A Great Authority on Russia

PROFESSOR SIR BERNARD PARES, who was educated at Harrow and Trinity College, Cambridge, before taking up his present post at London University held a similar position at Liverpool. He has edited "The Russian Review," was secretary to the Anglo-Russian Committee in London, 1909-14; attached to the Russian army, 1914-17; and was awarded the Russian Red Cross and the Soldier's Cross and Medal of St. George. His publications include "Russia and Reform," 1907; "Day by Day with the Russian Army," 1915; and "Peace Questions," 1919. It should be added that this Russian section of our work will be very fully illustrated by up-to-date photographs, as will the preceding chapters on Rumania, in which Miss Florence Farmborough, one of the travelled members of our staff, who is also an expert photographer, will describe that country from first-hand knowledge. The historical chapter on Rumania will be written by another able contributor, Miss E. C. Davies.

Prof. SIR BERNARD PARES

Publishers' Binding Scheme

SPECIAL OFFER TO OUR SUBSCRIBERS

The Publishers of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS are prepared to undertake the actual work of binding the loose parts into volume form for such subscribers as are unable to get this done to their satisfaction locally.

Conditions which must be observed:

Only fortnightly parts in good condition—free from stains, tears, or other defacements—can be accepted for binding.

The seven parts constituting a volume must be packed securely in a parcel, containing the name and postal address of the sender clearly written, and posted direct to the publishers' binding department, or handed to a newsagent, in which case the subscriber is liable for the cost of carriage.

In a separate envelope the cheque or postal order should be enclosed, together with advice of the parcel and the instructions as to binding. Name and address of sender should again be clearly given. The parcel and letter should be posted separately.

In sending instructions all that need be done is to specify which of the following styles is desired:

(Style No. 1)—To bind the seven parts in the *Red Cloth* binding case, with full gilt back, the top edges of the leaves to be "sprinkled." The inclusive charge for this will be 6/- (2 - for the binding case and 4/- for the actual binding and cost of packing and carriage).

(Style No. 2)—To bind the seven parts in the beautiful *Blue Roxburgh* style, with full gilt back, heavy canvas grained end-papers, special cloth joint and burnished top. The inclusive charge for this will be 9 3 (4 6 for the leather binding case and 4/9 for the cost of binding as specified, packing, and return carriage).

(Style No. 2a)—To bind precisely as Style No. 2, but with English gold top to the leaves. The inclusive charge for this is 9 9 (4 6 for the morocco grain binding case and 5/3 for the work of binding, special gold top, packing, and return carriage).

The only instruction which the subscriber need give in forwarding the seven parts will be to specify which of these styles he desires, and to enclose a cheque or postal order for 6/- (Style No. 1), 9/3 (Style No. 2), or 9/9 (Style No. 2a), which cheque or postal order must be placed in the envelope containing the order, and *not* in the parcel containing the parts.

All cheques or postal orders must be made payable to The Amalgamated Press (1922) Limited, and crossed "Bank of England, Law Courts Branch."

Address the package to

"Peoples of All Nations,"
Binding Department,
7-9, Pilgrim Street,
Ludgate Hill, London, E.C.4.

The bound volumes will be despatched to subscribers in strict rotation according to the order in which the loose parts have been received at the publishers' binding department.

Terms to the Trade will be supplied on application to the above address.

Part 39 PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS will be on sale everywhere Tuesday, August 28

FIVE Volumes now complete

Publishers
Binding Cases

RED CLOTH
(1 Illustrated)
Price 2/- each

BLUE ROXBURGH
Price 4/6 each

These binding cases may be obtained through any newsagent or bookseller. If ordered direct from the publishers 6d extra must be enclosed to cover cost of postage and packing. All prices mentioned apply to Great Britain only.

SPECIAL BINDING SCHEME

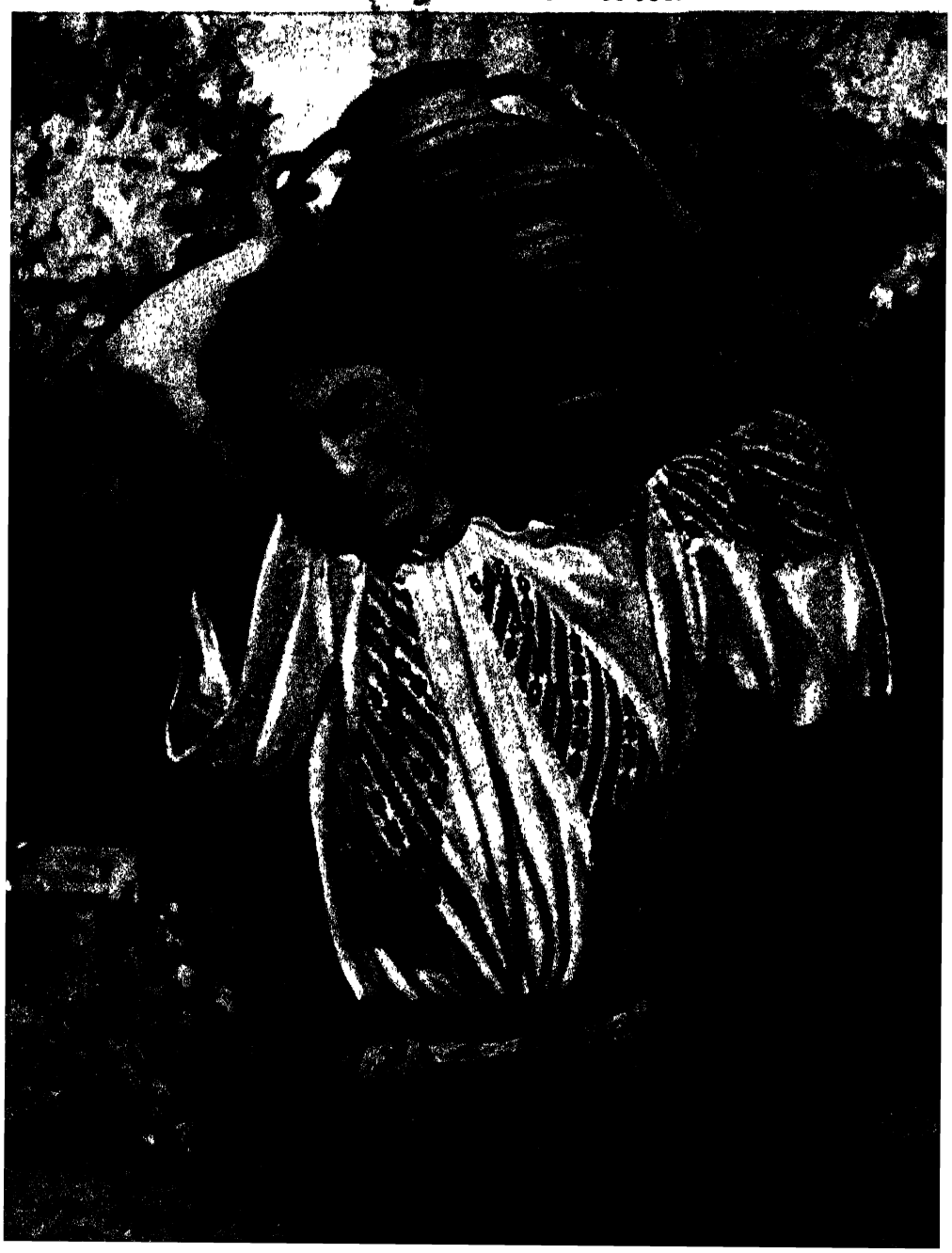
Send Post Card for full particulars of the Publishers binding scheme which relieves readers of all worry as to the effect binding of their volumes

ed and published every alternate Tuesday by the Proprietors, The Amalgamated Press (1922) Ltd., The Fleetway House, Farringdon Street on, E C 4 Sole Agents for South Africa, The Central News Agency Ltd Sole Agents for Australasia Messrs Gordon & Gotch, Ltd and anada The Imperial News Co., Ltd. (Canada). Subscription Rates Inland and Abroad, 1s 5½d per copy August 14th 1923

DW

39 PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS

Edited by J.A.Hammerton



ACK NUMBERS OF 'PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS' CAN STILL BE HA

Contents of this Part

RUMANIA I. Its Toil-Worn Peasantry - - 32 *Photographs* Florence Farmborough
II. From Roman Times to To-Day - 2 *Illustrations* - - E. C. Davies
RUSSIA I. The Genius and Simplicity of Its People 71 *Photographs* - - Hamilton Fyfe

PHOTOGRAVURE SECTIONS RUSTIC RUMANIANS *(8 Photographs)*
REAL RUSSIA *(8 Photographs)*

COLOUR PLATE: **Rumanian Peasant Maiden in Picturesque Attire**

From the Editor's Desk

THE FLEETWAY HOUSE FARRINGDON STREET
LONDON E C 4

TO those subscribers who have given a regular order to their newsagent to deliver every fortnight the new Part of this publication, there is, of course, no need to preach the value of the completed work against the fragmentary; but there is always a casual element among subscribers to these fortnightly publications, the result of which is that newsagents are often in doubt as to the exact quantity to order. For a work that is not obtainable "on sale or return," no newsagent can afford to carry large stocks in the hope of casual purchasers, and after the first few numbers have been published, the total circulation must be definitely ordered. Too many subscribers, unfortunately, are in the habit of buying one Part at one shop and the next Part somewhere else, instead of leaving a definite order with one newsagent. Supposing half a dozen casual customers of one particular agent should do this with the next Part, and he were to buy six copies in the hope of their coming to him, he might—except he benefited by some other casuals relieving him of several of these—find himself with six unsold copies; and the newsagent's business cannot be profitably conducted in this way.

卐

"PAN" and the Trade

I MENTION this matter because I have heard various complaints about this newsagent and that not being able to supply a copy of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS, and I hope that with the explanation I have given readers who have not placed a definite order with their newsagent will understand that the newsagent cannot deal in a publication of this kind as readily as he can in a morning newspaper. The trade as a whole are, I think, sincerely anxious to promote the sale of these educational fortnightlies, and give very valuable assistance to publishers in that direction, but readers can greatly help both publishers and booksellers by the simple process of determining to take the publication regularly from the same newsagent, and giving a definite order to that effect.

卐

"If it's Harmsworth's it's Good"

FOLLOWING my recent notes concerning the standard of value which the great publishing house that issues PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS has so long maintained in such serial works, it is particularly interesting, I think, to be able to print the subjoined letter, which came to hand before my notes had got into print, although after they had been passed for press.

Higher Elementary School,
Orbost, Vic.,
Australia.
May 8th, 1923

Dear Sir,—I would like to congratulate you on all the ventures you now have in hand. When the "Universal" was completed I was glad to see PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS make its appearance, for you will understand that, as a teacher, such a work is invaluable to me. Then again I have the reputation of being a handyman, so you will understand how I appreciate the "Household Encyclopedia."

To-day, when calling for my three Harmsworth's - I also subscribe to the "Children's Encyclopedia," edited by Arthur Mee—my bookseller told me of a new Harmsworth publication entitled, I think, "Wonders of the Past" Without hesitation, I asked him to place it on order for me, remarking, "If it's Harmsworth's, it's good." Number One has not yet come to hand, but I'm sure I will not be disappointed.

[*Continued on page iii of this wrapper*

The entire contents of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS are protected by copyright in all countries signatory to the Berne Convention
The literary and most of the pictorial contents are copyrighted in the United States of America

Rumania

I. Toil-Worn Peasantry of an Ancient Land

By Florence Farmborough, F.R.G.S.

Special Correspondent of "The Times"

RUMANIA means Roman. The Rumanians are descendants of Roman soldiers, planted out in Dacia, Romanised Dacians, and yet other Italian settlers drawn by the riches of the land for Rumania was the California of the second century. At a time when the ancient Britons were running wild and half-naked in the forests, their bodies stained with woad, their minds a prey to most degrading superstitions, the country of Rumania was civilized, possessing institutions, conveniences, and even the luxuries of a cultivated and well-ordered community.

After the invasion of the Goths and the collapse of the Roman system, the country enjoyed comparative peace until the sixth century. Thereafter Rumania became the battlefield of many races competing for the sovereignty of south-eastern Europe — Bulgarians, Greeks, Turks, Hungarians, Austrians, Poles, Russians, all in turn left their mark upon the country, the language, and the population.

At the present day, the history, tradition, and individuality of the country of Rumania find their deepest expression, not in the ruling classes, but in the masses, in the non-intelligentsia. Therefore, to describe the real Rumania it is necessary to describe the real Rumanians, viz., the hard-working, brave-hearted peasants. In the simple life of these toil-worn people, in their legends, superstitions, and songs—the wild fantastic lore of a wild fantastic folk; in their plaintive melodies called forth by ill-shapen hands from strange, ill-shapen instruments—one may trace the proud but solitary way the bands of wandering mountaineers, calling themselves Daco-Romans, have taken since those early days, eighteen centuries ago, when, as a handful of Latin colonists, their ancestors settled down in a corner of the Carpathian region of eastern Europe, henceforth to be known as Rumania, a country of the Romans.

Never have the Rumanians been a happy or fortunate people. From the time when Roman immigrants and Dacians became merged into one racial strain, they

ON HER WAY TO THE FIELDS

The long working days of the Rumanian summer are spent almost entirely in the fields, and thither this comely country lass is hastening with cooling drink for the thirsty toilers

Copyrighted, 1922, by The Amalgamated Press (1922), Limited

WEDDING BELLS IN PEASANT LAND

Apart from the nuptial finery which savours little of modernism, the faithfulness of the Rumanian peasantry to old usages is manifested in many wedding customs, to which bride and groom are obliged to submit according to prescribed formulæ

Photo Meri La Voy

have been unceasingly harassed by invaders of one sort or another Throughout the Middle Ages they suffered terribly at the hands of barbaric hordes that swept the land again and again, while later, under Turkish rule, their hardships and privations proved overwhelming This period, extending over several centuries, must be reckoned as deficient in progress—long, lean years, with hardly a trace of national development, and hopeless as regards freedom and independence But there was that in the soul of the people which refused to die, and which silently countered all misfortune and misery When, finally, the Ottoman regime relaxed its iron hold, the Rumanians emerged rising again from their own ashes, like the legendary Phœnix of their ancient Dacian heraldic device—a whole nation, scared and shaken in all truth, but secure and stedfast, an undoubted entity

The Russo-Turkish war of 1877-78, in which the Rumanians under the able leadership of King Carol I, played an important rôle, brought them independence It was the turning point in the history of the nation Since that day Rumania has maintained her place as one of the free nations of the world It is well known how gallant a part was played by Rumania in the Great War Her unreadiness for war, however, was the occasion of many disasters The Rumanian troops had a thankless task to perform, all they could do, so ill-equipped were they, was to delay the enemy, they could not keep him out of the country That they did delay the invasion for so long is a great testimony to their splendid courage and endurance In spite of the cruel fate that had befallen Serbia and Montenegro, their neighbours, they loyally adhered to the cause of the Allies, and carried on the campaign even when their physical strength was well-nigh spent, and their territory overrun by the armies of the Central Powers — misfortunes which

entitle them to the undying gratitude and affection of the Allies.

What knowledge Great Britain may possess about Rumania has come to her within the last half-century. Before the eighteenth century all political intercourse between the two countries was carried on through the British Embassy at Constantinople. Less than six years prior to the Russo-Turkish war, Rumania was little more than a name to most British people. It was at that time, for example, that complaints were made by the English Consul at Bukarest regarding certain letters addressed to Bukarest, which had been forwarded to India in quest of Bokhara. The same Consul cites an instance where a document destined for the same city was forwarded from London addressed to "Bukarest, in the Kingdom of Egypt."

Englishmen appear, however, to have visited the country in earlier times, and to have published their impressions. These works, in spite of the fact that they contained genuine descriptions of the Rumania of those days, composed of the Danubian principalities of Wallachia and Moldavia, roused little or no interest. Worthy of mention is the fact that writers of the seventeenth century more than once expressed their astonishment that among the Slavonic and Turkish races of south-eastern Europe there should be found a people distinct in language and customs, a "friendlie people" according to William Lithgow, who tells us he found "the very vulgars speaking frequent Latine."

During the millennium of their sojourn among the Carpathians, the Rumanians led a nomadic pastoral life. The old Roman civilization steadily waned with the years, and, finally, under the severe pressure of Slav, Turkish, and Greek domination, died out, leaving little behind it except the language, and that strongly corrupted by foreign influences, together with a few customs and usages, easily identified with those of the ancient Daco-Romans.

IN A LAND OF VIVID CONTRASTS

The rich hues of picturesque Rumanian costumes and the attractive, sun-browned faces of their peasant wearers blend harmoniously with the rustic background, on which nature, the great artist, has spread the colours from her palette with lavish hand

Photo, L. G. Popoff

The Rumanians are still essentially children of the soil their heart and soul are in the land and rightly so, since the land has been the mainstay of their very existence Scattered about the hills and mountains the people learnt to read the great truths of nature's book with the result that even their habits and superstitions took on a new form and received a new moulding The rugged character of the Rumanian peasant of to day is marked by the old time stubbornness and endurance and a fine, sturdy devotion to open spaces and far off distances The mountains says a Rumanian writer are the creators as well as the cradle of the Rumanian nation "

Although the masses of the people were brought up as shepherds and cultivators for nearly two thousand years very little of the land belonged to them This was no fault of theirs For many centuries past they never desisted from their demand for land More than half the available area of the country was owned by wealthy proprietors who paid but scant attention to the humble folk that toiled for them year in year out That a certain antagonism should have existed between the labourers and their masters was not, in the circumstances surprising The labourers understood that their toil stood for nothing The dire poverty experienced by their father and their father's father was theirs, too endless toil without reward, sowing but never reaping The bitterness which naturally resulted from such a condition of things was expressed by the poet Cerna, one of their own countrymen, in the following words, filled with pathetic yearning

The years go by in vain, for the house we build is not ours, the land for which we cry and suffer only buries us "

Rumania is a country of rocky heights and rolling plains, with fertile soil, and richly endowed by nature In the mountainous districts timber, salt, and petroleum are produced, while on the Dobruja steppes, about the delta of the Danube, sheep and cattle are raised in large numbers Before the Great War Rumania stood

DILIGENT AS WELL AS DAINTILY DRESSED

Though resembling a gay butterfly, her thoughts are not all centred in her many coloured raiment, for this pretty girl of Curta de Arges can cook, spin, and weave with the most industrious housewife in the land

LOVELY VARIETIES OF THE RUMANIAN NATIONAL COSTUME

In both prince and peasant of Rumania a love of the beautiful is a marked characteristic, and textile fabrics and household utensils bear eloquent testimony to their exceedingly well developed artistic taste. The everyday dress of the peasant, though prettily worked, is simple enough, but the gala dress is elaborate in the extreme, each garment glowing with brilliant embroidery

next to Russia and the United States of America as the third agricultural country in the world; her present production of wheat and maize is surpassed only by the United States. In summer vast stretches of land are coloured for hundreds of miles a burnished gold by the ripening corn, while the extensive maize crops add a cool and delightful contrast by their vigorous waving greenery.

Although the quantity of grain exported has always been enormous, the poverty of the people remained unalleviated; and with patience they awaited the day when a just and proper share in the products of their fertile land should fall to their lot. The Great War was the chief factor in promoting this agrarian reconstruction, for when the Rumanian territory had been freed from the invading armies, it was found that the psychological condition of the peasantry was such as to render impossible all hopes of continuing the cultivation of the estates in accordance with the old system. Realizing the importance of this great internal problem, the Government proceeded to bring about energetic and far-reaching reforms which affected all the big land estates without exception, including even the king's domains. Many privileges have already been granted to the people,

COSTUMES BOTH HOMELY AND HANDSOME THAT EXPRESS THE ARTISTIC PERSONALITY OF THE RUMANIAN PEASANTRY

Young and old among the peasants delight in bright colours, and their vivid costumes, entirely characteristic of this beauty loving nation are worn with inherent grace and dignity. Far into old age the women carry their aptitude for fine needlework, and the big painted chests which as young brides they brought to their new homes filled with the outfit of wifehood, contain beautiful specimens of their industry—a welcome legacy for posterity. Though the embroideries and colour scheme in general are Slavonic, they are richer and daintier than the Bulgarian or Serbian, and show a distinct Byzantine influence

Photo, Rumanian Legation

but a number of these privileges still require to be established on a recognized and stable basis, otherwise the status of the landowner is not likely to be permanently improved.

The Government has admitted the justice of the demands of the landless peasant, and has introduced an extensive agrarian reform by means of which large areas of land have been expropriated in the public interest, due compensation being paid, and distributed in lots among the peasants. The work of expropriation is being carried on in the newly-annexed provinces, as well as in Old Rumania, where many thousands of peasants are in possession of small holdings. This reform assures the cultivation of the country's whole area. With their economic independence and their security of tenure guaranteed, a vast improvement in the domestic, intellectual, and political condition of the peasantry should be evident, resulting in the strengthening of the race and the consolidation of the state.

Most of the better-class Rumanians are a mixed race, and could with truth take to themselves a variation of the British formula and say: "Turk and Greek and Armenian are we!" Neither must the German influence, imported into the country by Prince Karl of Hohenzollern (Carol I.), be overlooked; nor yet the British influence, gentle and tactful, brought to bear upon her devoted subjects by Queen Marie, daughter of the late Duke of Edinburgh and wife of the ruling King Ferdinand, a nephew of King Carol.

But notwithstanding the numerous races that have intermingled with this people, the language remains indisputably Latin, and has much in common with Italian. It was not held in high esteem, however, and was practically left to the masses. In recent years some signs of the formation of a literature have shown themselves, and this is leading up to an awakened interest in the vernacular of the country. No people are richer in proverbs and folklore than the

FINE RUMANIAN NEEDLECRAFT
Deft fingers and exquisite fancy have attained the zenith of artistry in the choice embroidery displayed to such dainty advantage by this lady of Rumania
Photo, Rumanian Legation

Rumanians. The late Queen Elizabeth, King Carol's wife, a remarkably gifted woman—authoress, painter, musician, and linguist—known under the pseudonym "Carmen Sylva," translated a number of the popular stories into English; and Queen Marie, also endowed with literary talent, has translated some of these fascinating tales. The peasants, too, delight in telling them, and in singing traditional songs about the former days of their country's greatness and prosperity.

The Rumanians possess many fine qualities. They are self-confident,

VANITY FAIR IN TRANSYLVANIA

Of her winter Sunday costume the richly-ornamented sheepskin is the chief feature, while the quaint jampot shaped hat, handsome lace apron, and glittering trinkets, proclaim her a staunch and well to-do adherent of Transylvania's traditional dress

serious, and steady. Unfortunately this cannot be said of the upper classes without considerable qualification. As already intimated, they are a mixed breed, with more of Greek in their composition than any other strain; and the admiration and respect which is due to the Rumanians generally cannot be accorded to these classes in particular. The Turks employed Greeks to govern the country for them, and during the eighteenth century Greek was the prevailing language of the educated and wealthy. It became a common proverb that "He who is a cake-maker in Greece may be a prince in Rumania." The nobles followed Greek modes of dress, Greek social customs, and imitated them in every way, besides intermarrying with them.

The outcome of all this seems to be that the present nobility have no settled tradition of public service. They go to France for their education, and their ambition is to be as French as possible in their habits. After all, not an unnatural turn of mind for a Latin race! In the capital, French is as much spoken as Rumanian, and everywhere the educated Rumanian knows something of that language. Bukarest, the chief city and railway centre for the whole country, is known as "the city of enjoyment," or as "a little Paris"; it has, however, merely the surface show of its model, the appearance of gaiety and pleasure; the hard core of effort and seriousness which underlies the social life of Paris is not to be found in the Rumanian capital.

On the other hand, it must not be assumed that all better-class Rumanians are pleasure-loving and indolent. Many among them are vigorous, hard-working, plain-living people, not a whit inferior to those found in other countries. The difference, if any, lies in the lighter heart of the Rumanian At the base of his nature he has a charmingly gay humour. Like most Southerners the Rumanians are a warm-hearted, hospitable people, delighting in the

HOUSEWIFELY PRIDE IN A BRAND NEW BARGAIN

The tub will serve for many household purposes, and in it this peasant wife will probably prepare the mamaliga, or maize porridge, the principal food of herself, her husband, and the children The peasant's food at all times is simple and not too abundant, and the numerous fast days—some two hundred in the year—rigorously observed, find mamaliga ever on the table

Photo, Rumanian Legation

YOUTHFUL RUTHENIAN AGRICULTURISTS CARTING THEIR HAY CROPS IN THE HIGHLANDS OF BUKOVINA

Agricultural methods are decidedly behind the times in many parts of the Rumanian territory the ploughing is chiefly done with the old fashioned implement and it is probable that the wooden plough is still extant In hay time and harvest the reaping is accomplished by the poorer peasants with scythe and sickle, and the crops are carted to their destinations on low wagons drawn by sedate slow moving oxen The soil is rich and possesses considerable natural resources and though they are backward in adopting improvements the pirit of progress is not lacking in the peasantry

Photo, Florence Farmborough

entertainment of friends, never so happy as when they can be of service to the stranger within their gates.

The "open-house" system is put into practice most strikingly. Good manners and an attractive personality combine to make the Rumanians agreeable and charming hosts. And yet these same well-to-do Rumanians trouble very little about those living outside the sphere of society in which they move and have their being. This indifference may well have been a chief factor in establishing the gulf between the peasant and the wealthy classes. Still, common to all, to the low-born son of the soil and to the aristocrat of palatial surroundings, is a certain pride of race; and the peasant exhibits this pride none the less emphatically because of its being held with restraint.

Character of the Rumanian Peasantry

Craving sympathy, he will nevertheless abstain from any attempt to draw it to himself; and an innate reserve forbids him to pour out his woes to the stranger, and still less to the moneyed folk of his own country, whose habit it was to hold the poor in contempt. So he plods through life somewhat sadly, with few hopes and an almost child-like submission to a hard lot. When the crops are good he rejoices; when drought withers the grain before it has had a chance to swell in the ear he meets his bad fortune with the apathy of an inveterate fatalist. In years when the earth scarcely yields the value of the seed put into it the outlook becomes dreary enough, for thrift is not conspicuous among the peasant's virtues. His own proverb might have taught him better: "Gather white money for black days" (Strânge bani albi pentru zile negre). This he will not do; he has an improvident nature, and money that comes his way is soon disposed of.

Many pretty customs, superstitious in origin, and stamped with the charm of antiquity, are still kept up for old sake's sake; and the festivals of the Christian year are observed as important holidays and celebrated with elaborate ritual and ceremony. The religion and beliefs of the Rumanian have come to him largely by oral tradition, being handed down through generation after generation from father to son. These are accompanied by a professed simplicity, but the peasant usually insists, nevertheless, on a certain amount of rather ostentatious display in practice.

Symbols of Popular Faith

Like the Russians, Greeks, and Bulgarians, the Rumanians belong to the Eastern branch of the Orthodox Church, but the services are everywhere conducted in their own tongue. "Icoane" or icons, sacred pictures of Christ, the Virgin Mother, or some wonder-working saint, are hung up in their houses, and suspended in front of them is the lighted candela, a little lamp with olive oil and a floating wick. Quaint old crosses are met with about the countryside, some of painted wood, others of carved stone; impressive symbols of a people's Faith, and well in keeping with the melancholy and originality of the land. Beautiful monasteries, convents, and churches, many hundreds of years old, lie hidden among the mountains and valleys in secluded spots of beauty; venerable, stately sanctuaries, strangely picturesque, whose origins are wrapt in a veil of legends.

Priestly Influence on the Masses

The priests, generally called "popas," are not regarded as the shepherds or teachers of their parishioners, but rather as magicians or conjurers possessing supernatural powers, to be paid for, when needed, at such solemn moments as baptism, marriage, or death. As a rule they are ignorant and somewhat rapacious, but there are among them honest men, simple, kindly Christians, who do their best for the people in their care. As a whole their influence upon the masses has been but slight, and their teachings have been so marred by

BELLES OF BUKOVINA IN THEIR BRIGHTEST AND BEST

Many and varied are the costumes in vogue among the peasants of Bukovina, where the country maidens deck themselves in brilliant homespun, hand-worked garments, never averse to striking a note of originality when possible, as is exemplified by the headdress of the girl to the left, from which long skeins of bright red wool depend, falling about neck and shoulders like luxuriant tresses

Photo, Florence Farmborough

their ignorance and vicious practices that the peasant refuses to attach special weight to their authority. He is not without some insight, and for long years past, despite his lack of education, has been trying in his own unobtrusive way to solve the mighty problems of the world, seeking for answers to the eternal Whence? and the no less absorbing Whither?

Towards the priesthood his attitude is for the most part respectful. In order to meet the fees required for various religious rites, he will willingly deny himself; but with this readiness to comply with Church usage goes a subtle kind of scepticism and superstition, especially when dealing with the priestly brotherhood "out of hours." A chance encounter with one of the clergy inevitably gives rise to misgivings of such force that the man will throw after the priest's retreating form some small twig, straw, or other object, accompanied by a suitable imprecation guaranteed to ward off evil. A common saying in the country is "Great is God, but clever is the devil" (Mare-i Dumnezeu, dar mester e si dracul), and the peasant's fear of the one is by no means weakened by his faith in the Other. In Transylvania (a part of the Roman

province of Dacia under the Emperor Trajan, whose name is still held in honour in Rumania) the priests are more in sympathy with the people and more trusted by them This is partly because many of them acted as leaders of a movement fanned into activity by Hungarian oppression When in 1868 Transylvania came for the second time under Hungarian rule, the Magyarisation of the province was carried on with a cruel persistency Although the Rumanian element was by far the larger, no adequate representation was allowed, while their language and religion were neither recognized nor respected

These tribulations are now over, and the Rumanians of Transylvania are re united with their blood relations in Moldavia and Wallachia They will probably prove the strongest influence in Rumanian affairs being more vigorous and enterprising than the people in the older provinces They are also better educated, some million and a half having been brought up in schools maintained by Roman Catholic religious orders

In the formal Note in which Rumania intimated to the Austrian Government her entry into a state of war (August, 1916), it was mentioned that the decision had been taken because Austria-Hungary, hostile to all domestic reform that might ameliorate the life of the people she governed, was as prompt to sacrifice them as she was powerless to defend them against external attacks Now that Rumania has received back her former provinces and independence, and is setting herself to bring about an internal reform similar to that emphasized so strongly in the aforesaid Note an era of glorious progress should

LIGHT-HEARTED VAGRANTS WHO CLAIM THE FREEDOM OF THE ROAD

Though their capability as masons and tinkers, their magic, and their wild and beautiful music bring them into constant contact with the Rumanians, the gypsies, or tzigani, are still looked upon as a despised race Tattered and unkempt, but of graceful build and handsome features, they pass their days in the untrammelled fashion characteristic of their race from time immemorial

Photo Sir H H Johnston

DANCING BEAR OF A RUMANIAN GYPSY NOMAD.

The ungainly pet is captured as a cub, often with great risk to the gypsy captor, and is reared and tamed by him with no little trouble, then, attached to a strong chain, it is led from village to village and put through its paces in every courtyard, where its performance invariably meets with some reward, as it is considered unlucky to turn away a dancing bear

Photo, Rumanian Legation

STALWART FOLLOWERS OF A LONG FAMOUS MOLDAVIAN INDUSTRY

Cattle breeding has long been an important business of the Rumanian, and in past years large numbers of Moldavian oxen were exported, their widespread renown being responsible for much successful bargaining on the part of dealers who, towards the end of the seventeenth century, could dispose of the oxen in Danzig at a price ten times higher than the figure paid for them in Moldavia

FASCINATION OF THE PASTORAL LIFE

Many Rumanian peasants—men like this sturdy trio—desert agriculture in favour of pastoral pursuits, preferring the freer life of the shepherd to the more arduous existence of those whose workaday life is spent in tilling the soil

be confidently expected. Since 1913 the Rumanian territories have more than doubled, and it is of interest to compare the seven and a half millions of nationals found in Rumania in 1916 with present numbers, now that most of her children in the restored provinces of Transylvania, Bessarabia, Banat, and Bukovina, are once more safely housed within her frontiers. Out of the seventeen million inhabitants of the present Kingdom of Rumania, about fourteen million are pure Rumanians—85 per cent. of whom are peasants—while a considerable number still have their homes outside the country's boundaries. Among the latter are the Vlachs; and certain communities of these may be found roaming in Albania and Thessaly, as well as in the regions lying towards the Adriatic coast. Restless shepherds, ever wandering over hill and plain, they were marked out by David Urquhart long ago as "these hardy mountaineers, nowhere fixed, but always to be found where the wolves have dens and the eagles nests" ("The Spirit of the East," 1838). In East Transylvania a vast colony of Hungarians still remains, and among other alien citizens are Jews, a numerous and not unimportant section of the population, most of the retail trade being in their hands; also a sprinkling of Germans, Bulgarians, Greeks, Turks, Tartars, Serbs, Poles, Ruthenians, Ukranians, with a number of Russians, chiefly refugees.

The gypsies, or t/igani, must also be reckoned as a distinct race. They are very numerous, some of them living in settlements, others leading a nomadic life. To pass a gypsy encampment is a strange experience. The men with long hair floating round their shoulders; the women prematurely old, with brown, wrinkled features at twenty-five, wearing brilliant shawls and kerchiefs; the elfish children with bright eyes and thieving fingers. They look like some tribe that has been sleeping since the Middle Ages, and has just awakened to new life.

The Rumanians, though musical by nature and often skilled performers on violin, cobza, flute, and other national

RUSTIC RUMANIANS
Their Artistry & Industry

She has tilled the earth and sown the seed, and now, sickle in hand, this Rumanian lass reaps with pride the reward of her past labour

This Rumanian dairymaid fulfils a double task as, plying with busy fingers the universal spindle, she guides her cattle home at close of day

Photo, Rumanian Legation

Her nimble fingers have been busy for many a long day that she may face the world resplendent in this—the Sunday costume of her choice

Photo, Kankovsky, Budapest

In the Eastern Carpathians women's tasks are long and arduous, yet this girl's sweet face stands surety that discontent is to her unknown

Photo, Kankovszky, Budapest

Among the folk of rural Rumania are many young girls who, lovely of face and of figure, would make perfect models for the artist's brush

Photo, Rumanian Legation

Their gay costumes adorned with multi-coloured embroideries glow like rich jewels in the soft verdant setting of the Dobruja countryside

Photo, L G Popoff

Embroidery and ornamentation have always had pride of place in the Rumanian wardrobe, and this yeoman family is no exception

Very loyal is the Rumanian peasant woman to time-honoured customs; to-day spinning is still one of her distinctive occupations

Photo, Kankovszky, Budapest

instruments, are excelled and supplanted by these tzigani. The latter have a wonderful, natural talent for music, and many make it their business in life The "lautari" (gypsy musicians) are in great request for Sunday dancing, weddings, and feast days of the peasantry These musicians are even welcomed in aristocratic circles, at entertainments in Bukarest and in Jassy some of them are known to command from 200 to 300 francs for a few hours in the evening The gypsy music of Rumania has a distinct strain of melancholy running through it very different from the wild and fiery music of the Hungarian wanderers

The Carpathian mountains lend to the land great beauty especially in Bukovina and their lower slopes are rich in pasture and in cultivated ground To the traveller the plains seem unattractive endless, and dusty, but to the husbandman they are all that can be desired The sea coast is short, but there is an excellent port, Constantza, which is also a seaside resort, thronged in summer with merry pleasure seekers At Cernavoda, between Bukarest and Constantza, the railway crosses the Danube, by means of the famous bridge over ten miles in length No river could be more valuable as a highway in peace, or more strategically useful in war than the Danube

GUARDIAN OF A HIGHLAND SHEEPFOLD

Among the higher slopes of the Rumanian uplands he leads a lonely existence sheep and dogs his constant companions, the long vigils relieved by his piping which filters like a plaintive fairy melody through the silence of the mountain solitudes

Contemplating the broad, slow-moving current, the imagination is stirred at the thought of all the history that has been made on its banks Ever since men combined to form tribes and nations or were merged into races, they have fought and struggled for the possession of this mighty river The territory of the Dobruja, situated between the Danube and the Black Sea, has been the scene of battles innumerable, but never one so great, so sanguinary, or so decisive of the largest issues as the struggle in the autumn of 1916

Though almost entirely without schooling, the Rumanian country-folk are shrewd in many matters, especially those relating to their well-being Of

NOMAD SHEPHERDS OF THE SOUTHERN CARPATHIANS

None knows the foot tracks winding about the pathless mountains as the Rumanian shepherd who with his flocks and fierce sheep dogs wanders among the maze of heights sharing the solitude with the agile chamois and the eagle that wheels and circles overhead As winter approaches he descends with his sheep into the plains, only to return to the highlands at the first warm breath of spring

SIMPLE SUMMER SHELTER OF THE RUMANIAN SHEPHERD

The hut of the shepherd is a primitive little structure chiefly made of branches and brushwood Here he passes the night on his bed of bracken, and as dawn breaks dons his sheepskin, calls his dogs, and guides his flock to the day's pasture ground A simple solitary life, yet true to the sacred tradition of the original pastoral ancestors of the Rumanian race

FAMILY LIFE AS SEEN IN RURAL RUMANIA

The peasant's log-house is often very quaintly built, with massive walls over which a thick thatch protrudes, and a veranda running the length of the small home Within, the scene, though poor, is not without comfort, and a touch of warm colour is given by bright rugs, woven by the peasant mother whose clever fingers are responsible for the picturesque appearance of herself and family

Photos, Florence Farmborough

THREE GENERATIONS OF RUMANIAN RUSTICS AT THEIR TIMBER HOME

While a young husband will sometimes be able to afford a new house for his young bride it is quite common to encounter grandparents living under the same roof with their children's children though in the larger shanties for peasant houses are little more the younger generation may occupy an outhouse Even in her leisure moments the Rumanian housewife is seldom seen without her distaff

nature they have a bountiful knowledge, and are keen observers of weather signs. They can rival the English farmer in trenchant complaints about the uncertainty of their climate, and are equally competent to make a forecast of the weather. In the national diet, maize forms a large element. It is eaten in all manner of forms, even raw when young and freshly-gathered from the reed-like stems. Boiled or baked, the

OLD-WORLD VINEGAR PRESS IN A RUMANIAN VILLAGE HOME

By dint of industry and ingenuity the peasant is able to provide himself with no mean array of creature comforts. Many a husbandman is his own carpenter, wheelwright, bootmaker, cobbler; builds his own house, makes his own stove from home manufactured bricks, and fills in any free time by preparing cheese, vinegar, and tzuica—an alcoholic drink distilled from plums.

young cobs may be seen on all peasant tables. When ripe the hard kernels are ground to powder and used for making cakes, or, as is more customary, porridge, known as mamaliga—similar to Italian polenta—and eaten either hot or cold, sometimes with branza, a cheese made from the milk of sheep. Butcher's meat seldom finds its way into these humble homes; the chief table delicacies are poultry and pigs, which usually form part of the peasant's livestock.

Vegetables are grown in plenty. A special fondness is shown for pepper pods, known as ardei (in England called chillies), and extremely unpalatable to the untrained taste. On reaching maturity these pods become a bright red, so that the custom of stringing them like onions and hanging them on the walls of the huts is a singularly effective one. Against the dark, weather-stained beams, or the spick-and-span whiteness of a cottage exterior, these brilliant splashes of colour are very pleasing to the eye. Before the Great War vegetables were supplied everywhere in Rumania by immigrant Bulgarian market gardeners—vegetable gardens being known as "bulgarii." They are now slowly picking up their old occupation, for Rumanians in towns must have vegetables, and the peasants are not the people to take up a new trade suddenly.

Over and above the house and land work, which appear to absorb most of their time, the women and girls occupy themselves with embroidery, and their exquisite productions are renowned throughout Europe. Family garments are made generally by hand; the

SOAKING THE FLAX IN THE JIU RIVER NEAR CRAIOVA

The Rumanian peasant woman works her hemp and flax through all the various processes from the very seed up to the eventual linen fabric. In the stream or shallow water the retted straw is soaked and then pounded and worked until it becomes soft and pliable when a large comb is repeatedly drawn through it, leaving it in a fibrous and stringy condition ready for spinning

STACKING AND CARTING THE FLAX ON A SANDY RIVER BANK

Women take special pride in tending, bracking, combing, spinning, and weaving their flax crops, and after the large bolts have been bleached in fashioning the fabric into the numerous articles of which the peasant's wardrobe and household linen are comprised. The linen garments are then beautified by the exquisite embroidery for which the women of Rumania have long been famed

Photos Georg Haeckel

growing, spinning, and weaving of flax constitute in Rumania an industry of many centuries' standing. For Sundays and holidays, every girl has an embroidered blouse to wear, with a pretty kerchief to arrange over head and shoulders. Gay colours and ornaments are the delight of both young and old. The men's gala costume makes them look like the brigands of a comedy opera. Their sleeveless sheepskin coats are worn with the leather outside, with much coloured sewing to brighten it up Sandals of goatskin are worn in summer, high boots in the cold weather; these they frequently make for themselves; in short, nearly everything necessary for wardrobe and for household use, including even the stoves, is of home and hand construction.

While dancing is the chief amusement and favourite Sunday pastime of the younger generation (the national dance is the Hora, a round dance, popular all over the Balkans), drinking may be said to be that of the men more advanced in years. Although during the week the innkeeper rarely has a customer, the peasant is seldom without some alcoholic drink in the public-house on Sundays. Here he meets with friends with whom he may pass the time in a sociable manner, forget the hardships of his troubled existence, and laugh and drink until perhaps he even forgets the wisdom of that saying of his: "Drink, but do not drink thy sense" (Sa bei, dar sa nu-tzi bei mintzile)

Spring in Rumania is of short duration. Summer, however, begins in April, and the hot weather often lasts into November. The winter is less severe than in Russia, but snow lies upon the mountains from December until March. In the plains, unless there happens to be a wind blowing, it is seldom very cold. Harvest comes early, and on good land it is possible to take two hay crops—sometimes even three. Women take more than their fair share of work in the fields, and are considered more laborious and painstaking than their men folk. Short-lived though the spring may be, it is a time of wonderful beauty, transforming the countryside into a fairy-land of delicate pink and white blossoms. On all sides fruit trees abound; they fringe the roadsides, line the hill-slopes,

YOUNG HOUSEWIFE OF SILISTRIA

All the fine stitching is the work of her hands, and the delicate designs, enhanced by shining sequins, speak of a refined taste and an unparalleled industry

Photo, L. G. Popoff

SORTING THE MAIZE COBS MAMALIGA IN ITS CRUDE FORM

The maize harvest is a busy season in Rumania for the maize fields are numerous and extensive but willing hands are not lacking during the garnering of the mature maize cobs The golden kernels, separated from the woody core, are ground into powder and prepared by the housewife in various forms, one of which is mamaliga a kind of porridge, the principal dish of the peasantry

TESTING THE YOUNG COBS IN A RUMANIAN MAIZE PLANTATION

Before the sixteenth century when maize was imported into Europe from America, millet was the chief food of the Rumanian Now maize constitutes his staple diet, and there is scarcely a peasant holding that does not possess its miniature plantation When quite young the maize cobs make a palatable dish, boiled or roasted, and while still green the kernels can be eaten raw with much relish

Photos Florence Farmborough

RUMANIA PEASANT MAIDEN IN PICTURESQUE ATTIRE

In the capital city of Bucharest and throughout the Kingdom of Roumania the native skill in handicrafts is manifested in the elaborately wrought costumes

cluster about the plains, encircle and intersect the hamlets in picturesque confusion. That their fruits are not always of a cultivated or even a palatable order is of no great consequence to the peasants, who make use of them to suit their needs. A favourite beverage of theirs, called tzuica, is prepared from plums, and, if carefully distilled, makes a light, tasty kind of plum brandy.

For splendour of colour the early autumn is supreme over every other season. When the harvest is at its height Rumania may be seen in her most attractive and most brilliant aspect. Then it is that the fruits of the earth are gathered in, and the wide fields of grain are stained here and there by the vivid, bright-hued costumes of the peasants. With skin healthily bronzed by long exposure to wind and sun, their movements full of easy grace and vigour, one may watch them without weariness by the hour, for, in truth, harvesting is carried on with a glad energy that would cast a spell over the most sullen and unresponsive disposition.

YEOMAN COUPLE OF TRANSYLVANIA

The lives of the Transylvanian peasantry are spent in an unremitting round of toil, but their love of independence keeps them faithful to the land, and they prefer tilling the earth to acting as servants in the towns

Frequent laughter of children and constant cheerful chatter can be heard, while every now and then a voice will fill the air with the quaint lilt of some well-known folk-song; this will be taken up in the chorus by other voices, some perhaps even old and quavering; for the golden time of harvest, with its soothing influences springing up from the rich, ripe earth, seems to knit all hearts in kindly concord. Not far off, and generally alongside a highway, some tall tree or a cluster of trees will denote a well. Here the workers will come at intervals to fill their earthenware jars with cool water, or it may be to rest awhile in the grateful shadows of the overhanging foliage.

Sometimes a stone or wooden cross stands near, a memorial to someone who had passed away, and whose last thought had been to bequeath a well to the thirsting, travel-stained fellow-creatures he was leaving behind him. Only when evening is fast approaching will the workers lay down their implements. Then the horses, little, lithe, unlovely things, with large bones and elongated necks, or usually a pair of

WAITING TO STREW FLOWERS BEFORE THE ROYAL PROCESSION AT THE RUMANIAN CORONATION AT BUKAREST

Rumanian festivals are never lacking in colour or illumination and the royal procession which took place in the capital on the day following the coronation of King Ferdinand and Queen Marie at Alba Iulia presented a typical scene. Away in the background people gathered to watch the pageant to which an extra bright touch of beauty was added by groups of young girls who dressed in picturesque costume, many of them with national dress—blazing with colour and rich embroidery, held armfuls of the flowers with which they strewed the royal route.

PEASANTS FROM TURNU SEVERIN ATTIRED IN READINESS FOR THE PERFORMANCE OF AN ANCIENT DANCE

Among the numerous amusements of the Rumanians are many theatrical performances one of the most interesting of which is the dance of the Calusare, or Calusheri said to be of ancient Roman origin Groups of young men are initiated into the mysteries of this dancing brotherhood and, having undergone a special training assemble together on certain days of the year, chiefly Trinity Day to give performances at the various houses They journey from village to village and from district to district but these dancing tours never last longer than nine days

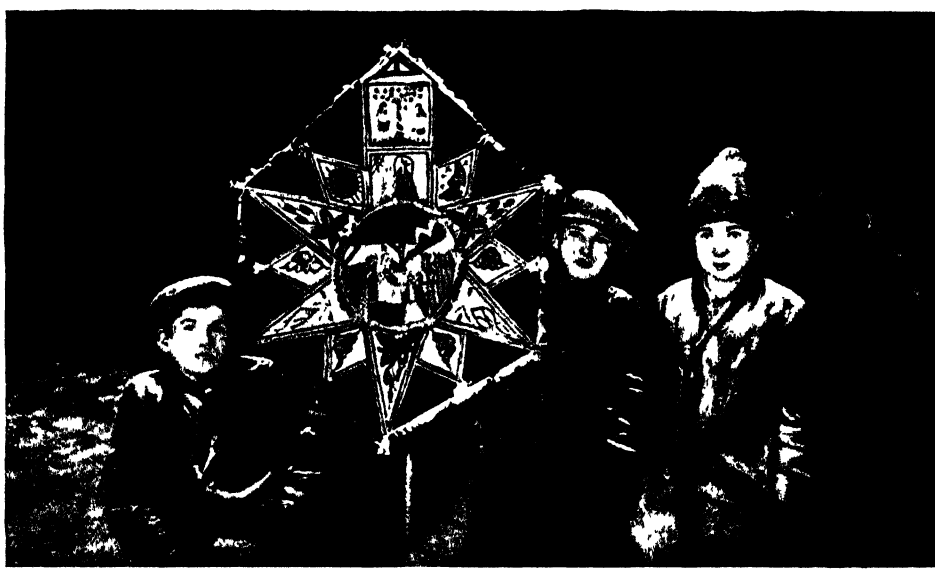
COUNTRYMEN OF THE BANAT MARKETING THEIR GARDEN PRODUCE IN A SUBURB OF TEMESVAR

Rumania is now more than twice as large and twice as populous as it was before the Great War The old state has expanded all round from the Black Sea to the Danube, except along the Danube itself, which still remains the frontier between Rumania and Bulgaria The Banat, formerly Hungarian territory, is one of the new additions, its capital, Temesvar, consisting of the city proper and several suburbs Despite the vicissitudes of recent years, life flows smoothly in its streets, and peasants barter and bargain with the old time commercial vigour

oxen—ungainly, mouse-coloured, soft-eyed creatures—will be harnessed to a long, low cart, and the little cortège will begin its homeward journey down the endless straight road, thick with white dust which rises in clouds and envelops cart and all as with a filmy grey veil.

Ofttimes the sunset—and the autumn skies of Rumania are almost unequalled in their fiery brilliancy at eventide—spreads its warm radiance upon the toil-worn workers like a heavenly blessing, softening the landscape, promising great things for the morrow, and giving a sense of restful peace to those whose long day's work is over.

From a short distance away the villages look neat and comfortable, but many of the homes are almost unfit for habitation. The better cottages are, however, whitewashed, and stand snugly in small gardens. The roads are very fair, and the country generally has a civilized appearance; but the more intelligent among the people complain that very little is done to improve or civilize them. A strangely-enduring, reserved people, these humble landsmen encounter every hardship with a stoicism almost fatalistic. It is this very resignation that invests them with a dignity and a nobility all their own. Inaccessible to foreign influences in the mountains, their fathers guarded the ancient traditions of their race; to-day, in the plains, the peasants still hear the prophetic voice of the past. Between them and nature there exists a communion intimate and profound; the lore of all the countryside is in their keeping; from it they deduce their philosophy, their serenity, their simplicity. A well-known Rumanian statesman once alluded to them as: "The peasants—the most numerous and most interesting part of the Rumanian people." He was right. The peasants of to-day are even as the peasants of yesterday, whose ancestors were numbered among the legionaries of the Emperor Trajan. They stand for all that Rumania stood for in the past, all she stands for in the present. They are unchanged and unchangeable. "Romanul nu piere!"



CHRISTMASTIDE CUSTOM IN RUMANIAN VILLAGES

A great event at the Rumanian Christmastide is the appearance of this resplendent Star of Bethlehem. Made of wood, in the centre of which is a representation of the Holy Family and the Three Wise Men, covered with gilt and painted paper, and decorated with paper frills and little bells, it is carried through the villages by schoolboys who sing carols relating to the birth of Christ

Photo, Underwood Press Service

PICTURESQUE CEREMONY OF BLESSING THE WATERS IN A COUNTRY VILLAGE OF RUMANIA

This religious ceremony takes place annually on January 6 by the riverside in many country districts of Rumania and also on the bank of the Dimbovitza, the river on which Bukarest, the capital, is built Crowds attend the ceremony, dressed in their best, and devoutly follow the religious service conducted by the head priest It is customary for the Metropolitan invoking the blessing on the waters of the Dimbovitza, to throw a large cross into the river, and the person who succeeds in bringing it ashore receives a monetary reward from the King

Rumania

II. From Roman Days to the Present Time

By E. C. Davies

Author of "Tales of Serbian Life," etc.

LONG before the Roman eagles marched into the Carpatho-Danubian territory known to-day as Rumania, a civilization having its roots as far back as the neolithic period was already in existence.

The essential unity of that primitive civilization is shown by the similarity of weapons and tools, tumuli, and remains of early dwellings from Transylvania to the Black Sea; and thus the conquest by Trajan of the last king of the Dacians, lineal descendants of this primitive Thracian people, was an incident in the life of a nation rather than a creation of a new race as many would have us believe.

The genius of Rome, however, succeeded in welding conqueror and conquered closely together, and the Roman culture left a lasting impression upon the people. For nearly two centuries Rome governed the Daco-Roman people which resulted from this colonisation, and the rich towns with their temples and amphitheatres, basilicas, and mosaics seemed the epitome of the stability of the Latins. Yet the territorial unity of the Carpathians and the Danube lands was destined to perish for a while; after long fighting against the Goths the Emperor Aurelian led his legions out of the country, and in a few years' time Rome and the power of Rome had passed before the coming of the barbarians.

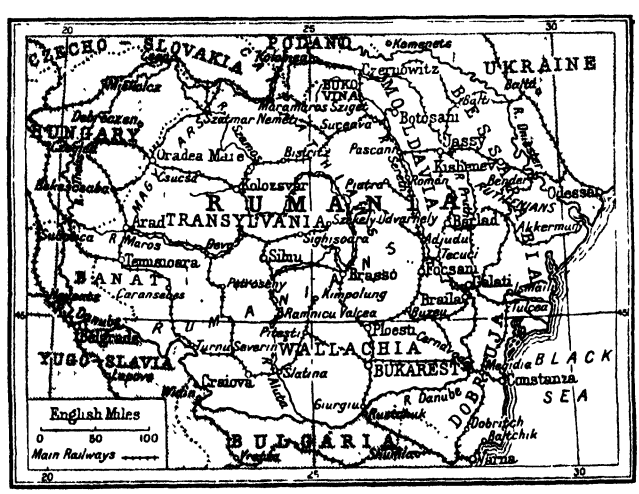
With the disappearance of the administration of Rome went also all that was of value in the economic development of the country; the roads were no longer safe, the fine towns were destroyed, and the culture of Rome, though not forgotten, sank into abeyance.

Yet though the domination of the people of the Steppes, Goths and Vandals, Huns and Avars, lasted for several centuries, it left strangely little trace upon the life, manners, or language of the Rumanians. On the contrary, this people, descending from Dacian shepherds, Roman soldiers and Italian farmer emigrants, remained truly "Homo Romanus," indissolubly linked to the ideals and to the authority of Rome.

Only the Slavs, through the medium of agriculture, succeeded in leaving traces of their own tongue on the essentially Latin Rumanians, who for the most part remained jealous of all foreign infiltration, impregnated by a profound ethnical instinct of unity which, though it did not for many years find an outward political expression, yet stood them in good stead against the Catholic feudal power of Hungary, which throughout the whole of the tenth and eleventh centuries was the dominant factor in Rumanian life.

Magyar and Saxon alike—the latter colonists given special privileges in Transylvania with the object of weakening Rumanian unity—endeavoured to institute feudalism as an order; but the Rumanians clung tenaciously to their ancient Latin laws and customs.

The invasion of Hungary in the thirteenth century by the great Tartar chief Jenghiz Khan stopped this enveloping movement, and broke the power of the Magyar. Under the powerful Jenghiz the lands from Central Asia to the Carpathians formed one economic and political whole; and the Rumanians, whose territories were crossed by trade routes leading from north and west to Akerman and Braila—which town was the principal Danubian port as far back as the year 1300—began to derive great benefits



THE KINGDOM OF RUMANIA

TWO STALWART MEMBERS OF A DANCING BROTHERHOOD

The dress of the Calusare dancers differs but little from the Rumanian national costume, but is decorated with coloured strings and flowers, and a heavy fringe of coloured string with bells, which tinkle gaily at each movement, is hung below the knee These men, who enjoy the reputation of professional dancers, are now to be found principally in West Wallachia and South Transylvania

from the commerce which passed to and fro along their borders.

It is possible, too, that the gradual gathering up of the Tartar power towards Russia proper may have stimulated the political development of the Daco-Romans, that autonomous Christian people which had hitherto lived under its judges and voyevods (or district governors) apparently incapable of forming a strong political organization on its own account; It was in that district which had known Tartar domination most intimately that we hear of the rise of Bassarab, founder of the first national dynasty, and known as " The Great Voyevod of all the Rumanian lands." Yet that principality, possessing a " frontier sense " for the first time in its existence since the days of the Romans, would have vegetated so far as its economic life was concerned had not the basis of this been laid by the Tartars some half-century before.

Two events contributed to the tardy development of the Rumanian state at this period: the recrudescence of the political activity of the Magyars under their new Angevin dynasty and the advent of the Ottoman Turks. For another century the Rumanians were buffers between these two powers, hurled from the Carpathians to the Black Sea in the course of the never ending combats, mutilated, separated, prevented from taking any advantage of the stability of government and self-development which the close of the Middle Ages might otherwise have granted them.

Union of Wallachia and Moldavia

Yet perhaps this division helped them to survive as a national entity; and in 1352 Hungary, for her own ends, created a definite Moldavian territory under a Rumanian, Sasul, which presently entered into that rivalry with Wallachia which was to last until the final union of the two principalities into the Kingdom of Rumania. That Moldavia developed more quickly than Wallachia is probably due to the fact that the great trade routes down the valley of the Sereth rendered necessary the establishment of a stable political order in the eastern principality.

On the death of Janos Hunyadi, great champion of Christendom against the Turks, his mantle fell on the twenty-year-old shoulders of a Moldavian prince who as Stephen the Great carved out for himself a lasting shrine in Rumanian history. For nearly half a century Stephen ruled with exceptional bravery and political wisdom, fighting a long succession of battles against the Turks, replacing the old wooden buildings by strong stone castles, building over a hundred churches, and entering into negotiations on equal terms with the princes of the Christian League.

The treachery of a Wallachian neighbour brought about his defeat on the borders of the " White River," where the flower of Moldavian nobility perished in 1476. Stephen fled to the mountains and there maintained a desperate guerrilla warfare which lasted until he felt himself again sufficiently strong to attack the Turk; and in 1481 he had reconsolidated his power until he was ruler from the Pruth to the Iron Gates, and from the Carpathians to the Danube.

Turkish Pressure and Rumanian Decadence

It would have seemed that all danger from the Turks was over; but a caprice of the Turkish Janissaries forced another war, and in 1484 the Turk was master of the key ports of the Danube. Had the Christian League given help to Stephen all would yet have been well; but the peace signed in 1487 between Poland and Turkey sealed his hopes, and though after his death the empire he had created held together for nearly a century the hand of the Turk waxed heavier, and the purely Rumanian civilization suffered decadence during the end of the sixteenth and a considerable part of the seventeenth century. Perpetual rivalries for the throne left the provinces in a state of turmoil, and there was a continual pressure on the part of Turkey.

The emigrations of the persecuted boyars or landowners into Transylvania proved a potent factor in bringing together the scattered members of the race. To this end also contributed the traders who came and went across the mountain passes, and the shepherds who, following their eternal custom, migrated from the mountains to pasture their flocks on the plains during the winter, and who by their wanderings kept alive the Rumanian traditions and tongues in outlying districts where these might otherwise have perished.

Exploits of Michael the Brave

Other influences were at work, subtly modifying the simple character of the Rumanians: traditions of Byzantium, the influence of the Eastern Church, the peregrinations of the Slav monks, the Turkish love of luxury and jewels, ostentation and intrigue, the last most specially fermented by the Greek-Levantines who swarmed in Constantinople and were presently to invade Rumania like locusts.

One of the greatest figures in Rumanian history is the Wallachian prince Michael the Brave, whose memory is still worshipped in Rumania. Michael at the head of his boyars waged glorious combats against the Turks, and sword in hand

drove them from the land. Like Stephen the Great, he had his White River, and was obliged to seek refuge in the wooded heights of Transylvania; like Stephen he returned at the head of an army and was again victorious.

The Sultan made overtures of peace, and Michael should perhaps have stopped his victorious career at this point, resting content with the peaceful development of his principality, for treachery was at work among the "most Christian" rulers. Political events, however, called him to Transylvania, where the Rumanian population received him with open arms, and where by political sagacity he was able to gain over Saxon and Szekelers alike.

Strife under the Shadow of the Porte

After a brilliant invasion and conquest of Moldavia he returned to Transylvania; but treachery was again too much for him, and he was slain by the Walloon soldiers of that emperor, Rudolf II., to whom in the monastery church of Dealu he had sworn allegiance three years before, and where his severed head was secretly carried by faithful friends after his murder in 1600.

After the death of this, perhaps her greatest prince, Rumania was again torn by faction; and a long line of undistinguished princes ruled under the shadow of the Porte. The incessant strife which the boyars waged against their rivals made for the honour and glory of the great families, but only enhanced the sufferings of the unfortunate peasants and serfs. Yet it was at this period that the first beginnings of Rumanian literature had their birth in the forms of chronicles of chivalry—which were the source of a great future movement towards a national renaissance.

Saved by the French Revolution

There was nothing left of the chivalry of Stephen and Michael; instead, in the days of Phanariote domination the rulers were pliant and submissive, diplomatic and peaceful, the best type of these being represented by such a prince as Constantine Brancovan, who during a long reign carried on the traditions of architecture, letters, and religious organization begun by the great warrior princes. Under the Phanariote princes who followed this ruler Rumania during the eighteenth century became the prey of Austria and Russia, whose rivalries were to be added to the deadening hand of Turkey already stretched out over exhausted Moldavia; and only the coming of the French Revolution and the necessity for joint action against the French armies saved Rumania from her neighbours.

Western education and theories were gradually permeating the minds of the boyar class, but the condition of the peasants sank lower and lower. The first awakening of the national spirit was felt in Transylvania, where an attack on their religious liberty and martyrdom of the leaders roused the dominant nationalism of the Rumanians of that province. The bourgeoisie, attracted by the ideals of the French Revolution, studied philosophy and the "Rights of Man"; the youths who had studied abroad brought back a new spirit and the idea of a "National Rumanian assembly" grew apace.

Napoleon, however, succeeded the Republic, and under his domination Rumania was again forced to submit to alteration of her frontier. Only his defeat of Russia at Borodino in 1812 saved Bessarabia from the covetous hand of the Muscovite power, which was again stretched out in occupation the moment Europe became preoccupied over the Greek question.

Russia was for the time being the dominant power in Rumania in lieu of Turkey; and the agitations of the boyars could not escape the notice even of the Muscovite, so that in 1829 a semblance of a constitution was granted to the principalities. So far from satisfying Rumanian aspirations, however, this mock constitution merely fanned the flame of nationalism; and teachers, priests, and writers began to prepare the way for revolution.

Rumanian Independence Guaranteed

The events of 1848 gave a fresh impetus to the spirit of nationalism, and though the first revolts were harshly suppressed by the Turks the outbreak of the Crimean War gave Rumania her opportunity for freedom. Napoleon III., in his desire to create a strong State on the Danube which should oppose the Russian thrust to Constantinople, brought about the Constitution of 1858, drawn up at the Paris Conference, which guaranteed the independence of Rumania. Prince Couza became the first elected ruler of Wallachia and Moldavia, and by the year 1862 there was one united Rumania.

During the long reign of Prince Charles of Hohenzollern (King Carol I. of Rumania) the foundations of the new kingdom were well laid, and the country made great strides on the path of progress.

The struggle between Austria and Serbia in 1876 was at first regarded with indifference by Rumania. But when Russia intervened and her troops began to pour into Rumania that country began to be seriously alarmed. First declaring her independence, she offered aid to Russia, though tempted by Austria with the offer

of the return of the Dobruja, reft from her some time previously. This Rumanian assistance, though at first contemptuously refused by Russia, was afterwards accepted. Rumanian soldiers materially aided in the victory of Plevna, but Russia, instead of showing gratitude at the conclusion of peace, browbeat the San Stefano diplomatists until she had succeeded in obtaining the province of Bessarabia in spite of all the Rumanian protests against the theft.

The natural effect of this policy was to draw Rumania and Austria more closely together, thus aiding the schemes of Germany, which Power was at that time preparing the Drach nach Osten (drive towards the East), as her policy of Eastern penetration is called.

In 1912, when the Balkan League attacked Turkey, the fruits of the long nationalist campaign were seen in the eagerness of the Rumanian soldiers to fight for their own territory in the Dobruja; and in 1914 the declaration of neutrality, in view of the adherence of the King to his German traditions and the general fear of Russian motives, was actually a gain for the Allied cause.

The agitation for the adhesion of Rumania to the Allies would not have led to decisive action had not the mass of the people been behind it; but by her entry into the Great War on the side of the Entente Rumania has reaped a great reward, and to-day the scattered provinces, Transylvania and Wallachia, Moldavia and Bessarabia, the Bukovina, the Banat, and the Dobruja are freed from aggression and united into one harmonious whole.

RUMANIA: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Lies in south-eastern Europe between western coast of Black Sea and twentieth parallel of east longitude. It is bounded north-east by Ukraine, north by Poland and Czecho-Slovakia, and west by Hungary and Yugo Slavia. Bulgaria borders Rumania to the south. Great ranges of the Carpathian Mountains traverse country in curve from north to south. Section of country east of this range and containing Moldavia, Bessarabia, and Bukovina is mainly hilly and watered by numerous rivers flowing to Danube which forms a large delta before entering Black Sea somewhat north of central point of coastline South of this river is the region known Dobruja, hilly in north and marshy along coast. To west of Carpathians is Transylvania, a mountainous district intersected by river valleys. Southern portion of country largely occupied by great Wallachian plain. Total area of Rumania about 122,000 square miles with an estimated population of over 17,000,000.

Government and Constitution

Rumania is a limited and hereditary monarchy. Executive power of crown exercised by council of ministers appointed by sovereign. Parliament elected by universal suffrage, and consists of Chamber of Deputies and Senate. Every tax-paying Rumanian citizen over twenty-one an elector. A number of the provinces are divided for local government purposes into districts.

Defence

Service in army universal and compulsory between ages of twenty-one and forty-six, for two years in infantry and three in other arms, and afterwards in reserves. Peace strength of army about 200,000. There are flotillas on Black Sea and Danube mainly composed of monitors, gunboats, and torpedo boats.

Commerce and Industries

Agriculture extensive, especially on Wallachian plains. Main crops are maize wheat, barley, oats, and rye. Forestry carried on especially in Carpathians, there being about 16,918,000 acres of forest as against some 30,715,000 acres of ploughed land. Large numbers of livestock; tobacco is cultivated in Transylvania. Petroleum wells and salt mines are worked, and other minerals include copper and iron ores, lignite, and coal. Flour milling and brewing are important industries. Total imports for 1920 were valued at £276,077,608, and exports at £137,355,937. Standard coin the gold leu, nominally worth one franc.

Communications

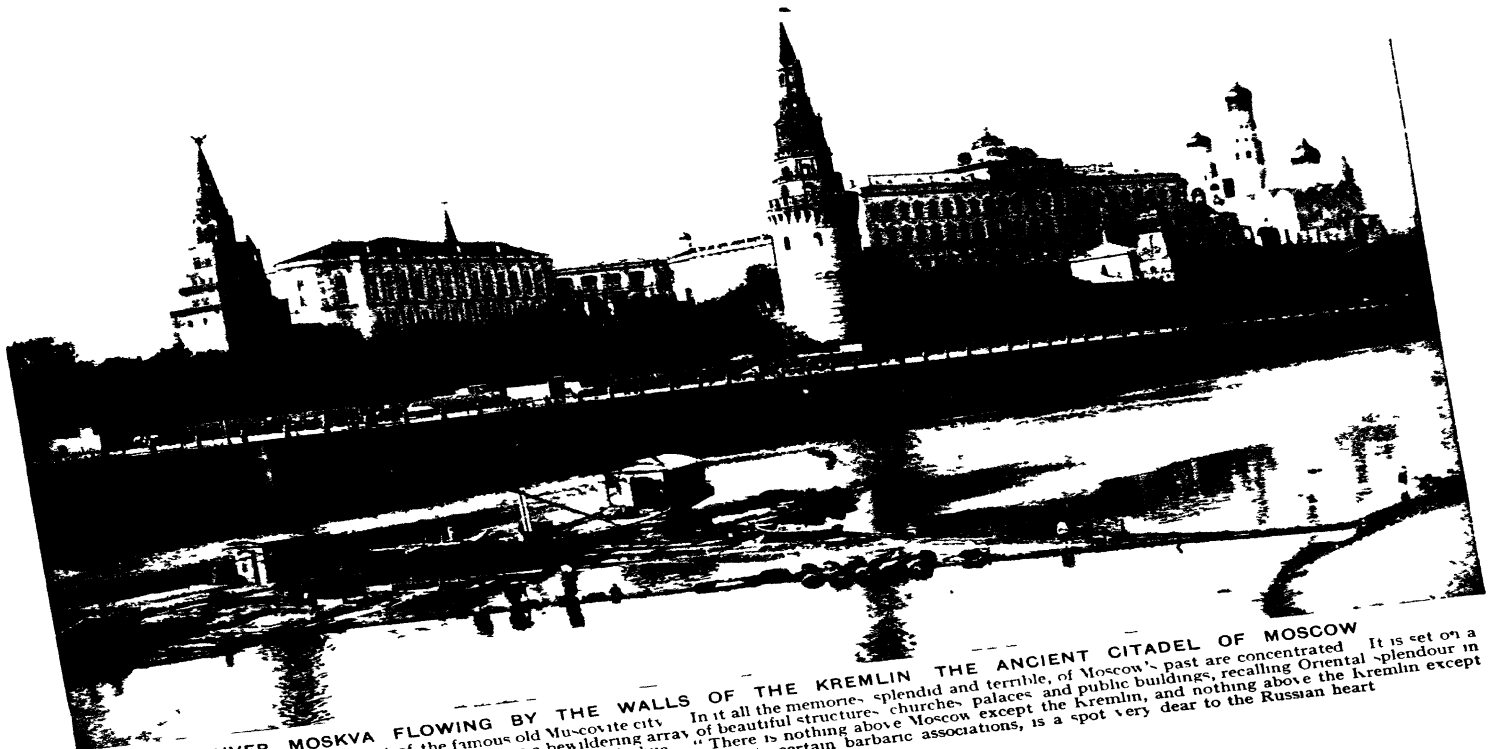
There are in Rumania over 7,000 miles of railway all operated by State, and considerable telegraph and telephone systems. State has service on Black Sea and Danube for commercial navigation

Religion and Education

Bulk of population belong to State Church, namely Greek Orthodox, with liturgy conducted in Rumanian language. There are also representatives of the Roman Catholic, Protestant, and Armenian Churches, and a number of Mahomedans and Jews. State maintains clergy of National Church and grants subsidies to those of other denominations. There is complete religious freedom. Where there are schools education free and obligatory. Elementary schools total more than 5,700 with over 692,000 pupils. There are more than 100 secondary schools, many State operated, and agricultural, professional, and commercial schools. Universities at Bukarest, Czernowitz, Kolozsvár, and Jassy.

Chief Towns

Bukarest, capital (estimated population 308,000), Kishenev (110,000), Jassy (76,000), Galati (73,500), Temesvar (74,000), Braila (66,000).



RIVER MOSKVA FLOWING BY THE WALLS OF THE KREMLIN THE ANCIENT CITADEL OF MOSCOW

The Kreml, or Kremlin is the heart of the famous old Muscovite city In it all the memories, splendid and terrible, of Moscow's past are concentrated It is set on a hill, dominating the whole of the city, and contains a bewildering array of beautiful structures, churches, palaces and public buildings, recalling Oriental splendour in the brilliance of golden domes and cupolas of every imaginable hue "There is nothing above Moscow except the Kremlin, and nothing above the Kremlin except Heaven," runs an old proverb, and, indeed, the Kremlin, despite certain barbaric associations, is a spot very dear to the Russian heart

Photo, Florence Farmborough

Russia

I. The Genius & Simplicity of Its Peoples

By Hamilton Fyfe

Special Correspondent of the "Daily Mail"

"THE East in Cold Storage!" That was the phrase fashioned to describe Russia by a clever Englishwoman who paid a short visit to the country. It was not entirely true, but there was a great deal of truth in it. The most easterly nation of Europe could hardly escape the influence of the Oriental character. But while the Russian is the most eastern of the western nations, so it is also the most westerly of those which are habituated to Eastern habits of thought

This gives the Russian character an interesting duality. It is vastly more attractive than the Polish character, which is pure Slav. The Tartars, who are indigenous to the country, and the Mongols of Chinese race who overran Russia in the thirteenth century and stayed there in large numbers, introduced a definitely Asiatic strain. Some districts are still inhabited by Mongols or by Tartars of unmixed ancestry, who have preserved their racial traits. But these have not affected the general Russian character, the Oriental aspects of which are due to the mixture of races. The Slavs are a white people, quite distinct from Turks, Mongols, and Semitic races. They appear to have been in Southern Russia from time immemorial. They became civilized as soon as they adopted Christianity (988), and would, so far as one can surmise, have advanced at the same rate as the other nations of Europe but for the Mongol invasion. This checked their development and they have never made up the lost ground. The part of the Russian people which reproduces most clearly the Slav element is that which inhabits the central and southern regions, and is called the Little Russian. The Great Russians are a mixture of Slav and Finn with Tartar influence. They became the dominant section after the Mongol invasion of the thirteenth century. Moscow was then made the capital instead of Kiev, and it remained the capital until Peter the Great built Petersburg, known since the Great War as Petrograd, and moved the machinery of government there.

NURSE OF YOUNG RUSSIA

Modest and unassuming, the nyanya, or Russian nurse, stands as a symbolic figure of honest service and whole-hearted devotion towards the children placed in her care

It was Peter who put Russia back

politically among the nations of Europe, and tried to regain for her the place which she had lost when the Asiatics attacked her. She had to fight them for centuries, and in the end she drove them out, excepting those who had settled down in the country. Thus she saved the rest of Europe from being overrun by them, and for this service she has suffered ever since. It ill becomes the rest of Europe, therefore, to deride her for being behind it in certain developments of civilization.

RUSSIAN PEASANT ON HER WAY TO MARKET
In normal conditions young pigs thrive in the houses of the poorest Russian peasantry, petted and spoiled like members of the family, but a day comes when the porker, comfortably proportioned, is borne to market in the manner shown above

Peter was a man of boundless energy. He was ready to follow advice from anybody, to pick up ideas anywhere. Unfortunately, he followed as often as not the wrong idea. Russia was as much damaged as benefited by his reforms; perhaps the hurt was even greater than the advantage. When, for example, he decided to Prussianise his system of government, he inflicted an injury upon the nation from which it is still suffering acute discomfort and loss. That act of his led directly to the Revolution, and because the men who first came into power after the deposition of the Tsar were men brought up under the influence of the Prussian system, the country slipped into a lamentable condition of general chaos.

Peter wanted the state to be all-powerful, all-pervading. He increased enormously the number of officials; he put them all into uniform. Up to the end of the Tsardom, Cabinet Ministers had to wear an absurd-looking suit of office when they went to see the Tsar. Even Russian schoolboys used to have their little uniforms. Petrograd was a city of tchinovniks, as officials are called. Peter created an official aristocracy. Fourteen tchins, or grades of nobility, were invented, each with its military as well as its civil side. This gave the servants of the state an incentive to work hard and struggle up the ladder of rank. Those who reached the upper rungs were held in high respect, although they had in reality little power.

Many of the stories of Anton Tchekov, who illustrated every side of Russian life with the insight of genius and delicious humour, are about tchinovniks and their ambitions, their incompetence, their efforts to win advancement. One tells of a clerk in some public office who coughed down

GROPING FOR LIGHT UPON THEIR DISCONTENTS

Men such as these are to be found by the thousand in Russian country districts, abandoned to their ignorance, prejudice and superstition Totally illiterate, they were kept in mental darkness, because it was deemed inexpedient and dangerous to give them opportunities of acquiring knowledge, nevertheless, with blunted minds they sought incessantly for the meaning and cause of their misery

the neck of a general sitting in front of him at the theatre. He asked pardon immediately, again during the interval, again next day, and at last annoyed the general so much by his grovelling apologies that he was told angrily to go to the devil. He goes home and dies!

Another story is about a tchinovnik who borrowed a decoration to wear at a dinner party given by a family which thought a great deal of such things. When he sits down at table he sees opposite to him a colleague. All his pleasure is killed, he cannot eat any dinner, he is obliged to keep his hand over the decoration so that his colleague may not see it and denounce him as an impostor. This misery is endured until the colleague is asked by the host to pour out a glass of wine for a lady. He then shows his chest, and there hangs a higher decoration to which he has no right! He had borrowed a plume also.

The most famous comedy on the Russian stage is a satire on officials by Gogol. It is called "The Inspector," and although it was written in the early part of the nineteenth century, the fun is still keenly appreciated, for the ways of inspectors have changed very little. Thus, while the well-to-do Russian people respected the officials of the Tsardom, and the poor feared them, all enjoyed seeing them made fun of.

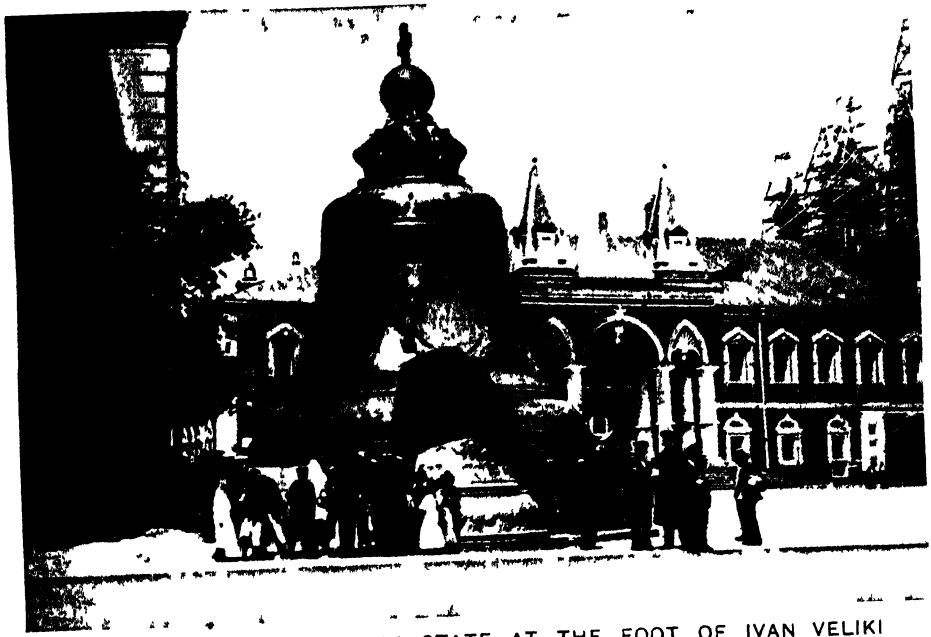
At their fussiness with regard to official forms and ceremonies, at their laziness and disregard of the public interest, at their taking of bribes, the Russians only shrugged their shoulders. What could they do to improve matters? It was better to pay bribes and be left alone than to make a fuss and have the tchinovniks against one. No good complaining. Nitchevo!

Here we come upon one of the Eastern features of the Russian character, its

WITHIN THE PRECINCTS OF THE MONASTERY OF NEW JERUSALEM

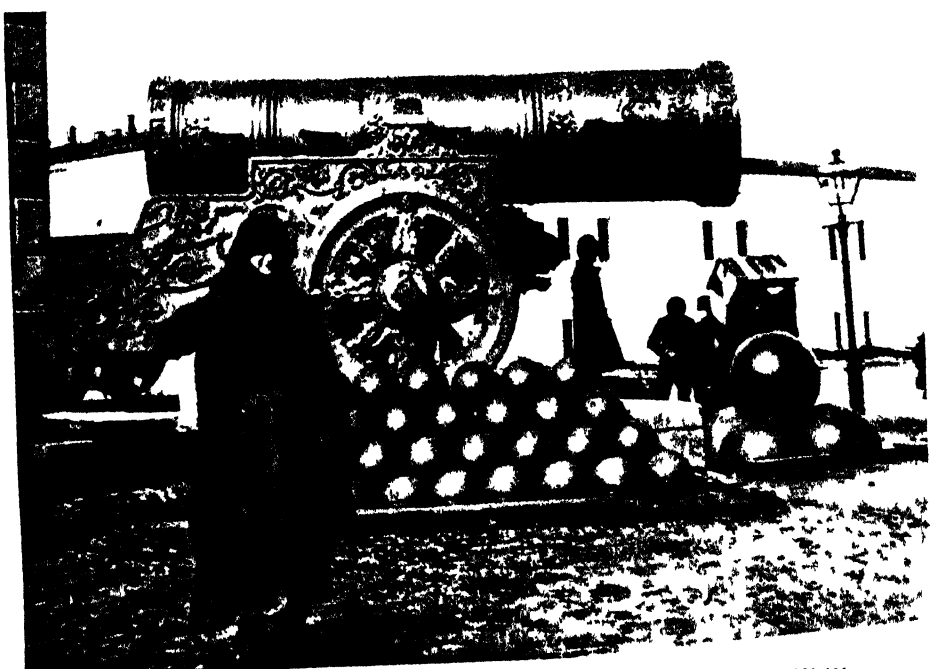
Situated near Moscow, this far famed monastery is eloquent of an important page in the ecclesiastical history of Russia. The beautiful church, copied in the minutest details from a model of the Holy Sepulchre at Jerusalem, was begun about 1657 by the Patriarch Nikon, and the greater part of it was completed by him during his retirement from Moscow after his quarrel with Tsar Alexis

Photo, Florence Farmborough



TSAR KOLOKOL' LYING IN STATE AT THE FOOT OF IVAN VELIKI

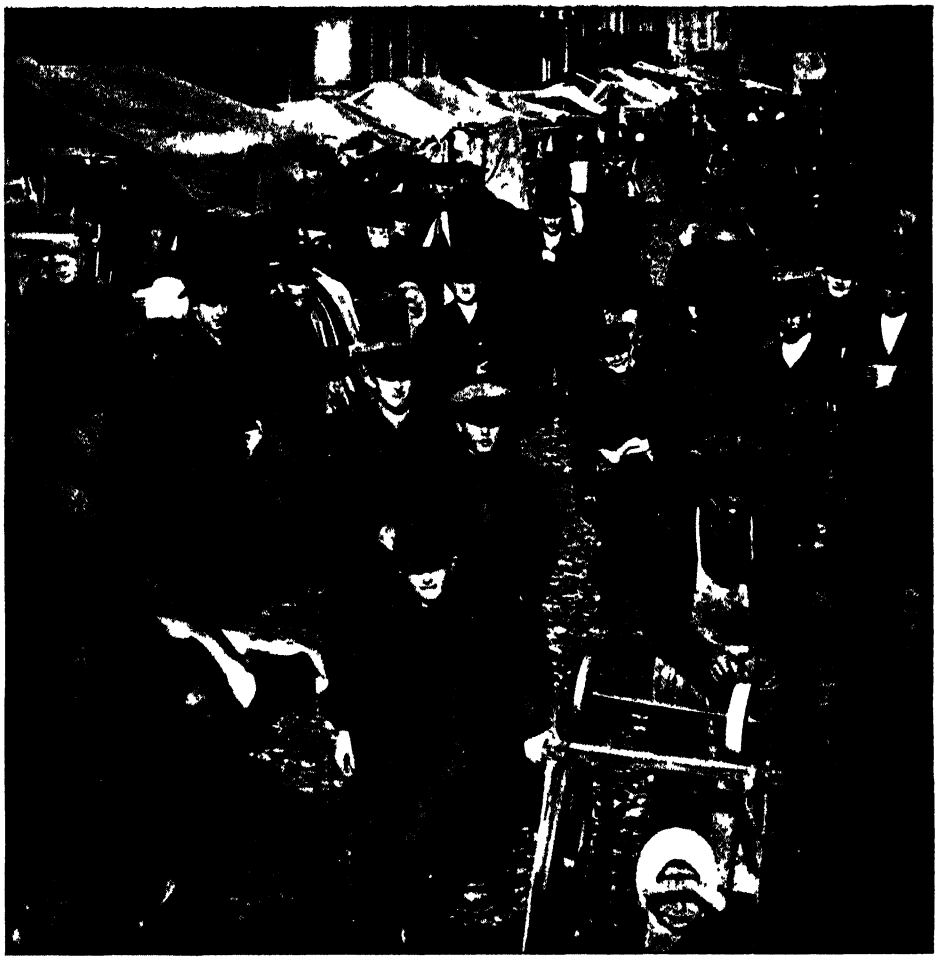
The largest bell in the world Tsar Kolokol of Kremlin fame measures 26 feet in height 66 feet in circumference and weighs 200 tons According to the inscription it was cast in 1735 at Moscow and later during a fire a piece weighing about eleven tons was broken off The bell lay embedded in the ground until 1836 when by order of the Emperor it was raised to its present position



COLOSSAL ORNAMENTED CANNON OF THE MOSCOW KREMLIN

At one corner of the row of many old fashioned cannon which line the main façade of the Kremlin Barracks stands Tsar Poushka an enormous cannon which was cast in 1586 and is 17½ feet long and 38½ tons in weight The immense bell weighed nearly two tons Tsar Poushka ' and Tsar Kolokol," the enormous bell, have been considered not the least important of the Kremlin sights "

Photos Florence Farmborough



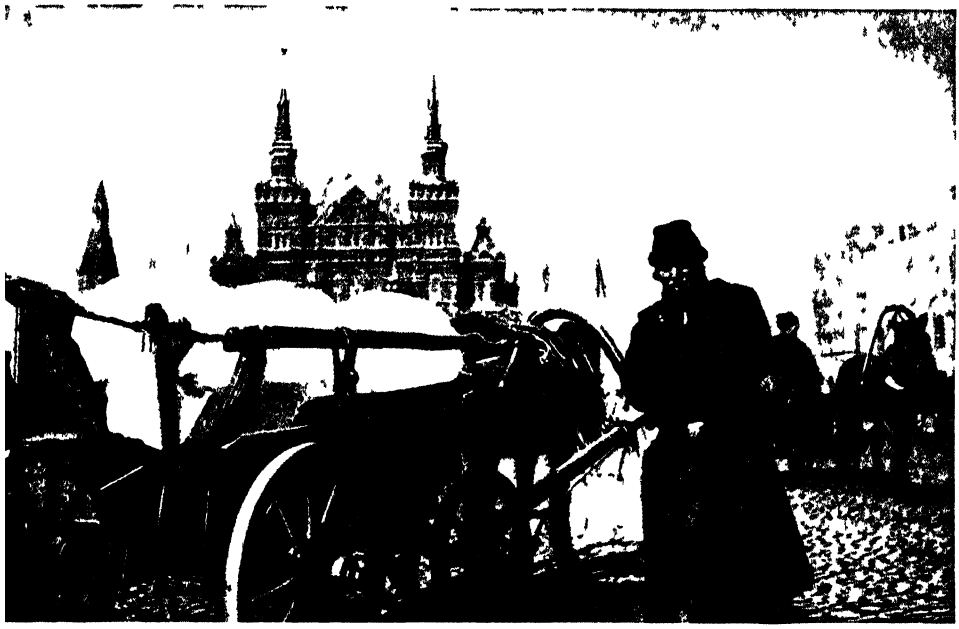
HATS FOR SALE IN A BUSY STREET OF MOSCOW'S CHINA TOWN

Among various hats favoured by the Russian "man in the street" the kind known as the fourazhka is evidently the most popular in this neighbourhood. It is a rather more easy going form of the Russian military cap. It will be noticed that while venders of other goods in this quarter, known as Kitai Gorod, or China Town, are presiding over booths, the hat sellers are walking among the crowds

Photo, Underwood Press Service

fatalism, its disinclination to make any effort, its willingness to endure authority which it dislikes, but which it will not exert itself to get rid of. Nitchevo, literally "nothing," has many meanings besides "It doesn't matter," but that is the one most often attached to it.

This word expresses one whole side of the Russian nature. It is a nature which rises superior to the smaller worries and vexations of life. It adopts the wisdom contained in the French proverb, "Si on n'a pas ce que l'on aime, il faut aimer ce que l'on a" (If one hasn't what one likes, one must like what one has). The Russians admire a "wide nature." They like to see people who can bear good fortune and ill fortune with an equal mind. They believe in spending money, in getting all the enjoyment possible out of existence. They will work hard when they know there is a certain reward to be won, as, for example, during the short northern summer, when they are in the fields from sunrise till sunset; or in war, when the troops dig trenches for shelter with alacrity, even with enthusiasm. But they do not admit the pleasure of working for work's sake. They prefer to be idle for the sake of idleness. Least of all do they admire the



PEASANT ICE-MERCHANT GOES HIS ROUNDS TO A TOWN CLIENTÈLE

Many a firm in Russia has been able to amass a small fortune by trading in ice and even the peasant has been known to carry on this business in an unostentatious way In the early months of the year hacking from the frozen rivers great blocks of ice which are preserved in underground storage to be distributed to town customers during the torrid days of summer

MIXED MEMBERS OF MOSCOW'S STREET PEASANTRY

The town peasant is as far removed from the land peasant as the North Pole from the South He delights to ape the mannerisms of the merchant, and is well versed in all the wily ways of the commercial class When his land brother, slow witted and thinking no evil, makes an appearance, he is the first to bid him welcome—and not always the last to fleece him

Photos Florence Farmborough

MORNING ACTIVITIES IN ONE OF MOSCOW'S GREAT OPEN SPACES THE LOUBIANSKI SQUARE

In the foreground several droshkys or cabs ply for hire and behind and to the left a rude water cart a mere barrel on wheels takes in water at the large circular fountain, with its railings and flight of steps In the background is an archway called Vladimir Gate and an icon can be seen on the wall directly over it On one side of this arch is a notice proclaiming that the booth under it sells tobacco Down the hill trams run to the Theatre Square where stands the magnificent Opera House or Great Imperial Theatre one of the largest in the world

PRINCE AND PEASANT PASSING OVER THE COBBLES OF THE FAMOUS RED SQUARE IN MATOUSHKA MOSKVA

Moscow is essentially a city of contrasts, and all the diverse characteristics and peculiarities of the Russian race are abundantly obvious in this ancient modern "Heart of Russia" The Krasnaya or Red Square lies between a battlemented wall of the Kremlin and the so called Trading Rows, composed of many hundred offices and shops, before the façade of which stands the monument bearing the bronze figures of Minin and Pozharski, Russian heroes responsible for the defeat of the Poles at Moscow in 1612 In the background on the left is seen the massive building of the Historical Museum, containing many valuable collections

Photo Florence Farmborough

WOULD-BE WORKERS OF UNWORKMANLIKE ASPECT

The Moscow town peasantry are not an attractive people, and the commercial lower class offers but one type—a short, thick set individual of drab appearance and with a slouching gait, accentuated by stout high boots, usually a couple of sizes too big for him His burly form, enveloped in the workman's apron, was formerly seen lolling about the market places, quite contented to be "waiting on business"

Photo Florence Farmborough

POLYGLOT PURCHASERS SWARMING IN THE OLD SMOLENSKI RUINOK

In the market places of Moscow every imaginable article or class of goods could formerly be purchased, and in some quarters beautiful old icons and second-hand jewelry were to be found lying side by side with sweetmeats and coils of rope In and out of the rows of booths the people pushed their way; a distinct undercurrent of Oriental life providing a certain charm best appreciated by the ethnologist

plodder—the man who just goes on doing his duty from day to day, year after year, without any excitements to help him along. They pity him, they also despise him for a poor creature. They must have excitement to keep them going. Not for them the middle course, the golden mean of steady industry, and moderate opinions, and emotions held in leash. They are always at one extreme or the other.

They believe readily the most fantastic stories. They indulge their tastes, passions, and fancies with a cheery disregard of consequence that leaves stolid Britons gasping. They have little sense either of time or of exact statement. Their acts follow their feelings, not any process of reasoning. To fight against impulse they consider wrong; it deforms the soul. "Do whatever you feel inclined to do." That is their creed.

Russian novels have given foreigners the idea that the Russians are on the whole a melancholy race. That no one who knows them would admit. Yet they do seem to need stimuli to cheerfulness. Cultivated minds find company and conversation sufficient. Those who are less intelligent fly to champagne and tziganes, if they are well off; to vodka of the cheapest, most poisonous description, if they can only afford a few pence for their dissipation.

The tziganes, or gypsies, provided a most popular form of entertainment for those who had dined well and wanted some diversion more thrilling than opera, ballet, play, or variety performance. Everyone tried the gypsies as an experiment. Many found them fascinating and became devotees. The music they make is to the non-Russian ear usually monotonous, even annoying.

CORNER OF HISTORICAL MOSCOW GIVING ACCESS TO THE KREMLIN

A bridge connects the Troitskiya Vorota, one of the five famous gates of the Kremlin, with an outer tower, and divides into two parts the Alexander Garden which, with its fine avenue of lindens, laid out by Alexander I, runs along the west side of the Kremlin walls. Facing this ancient gate, in the Mokhovaya street, rises Moscow's seat of learning, the Imperial University, the oldest in Russia

Photo, Florence Farmborough

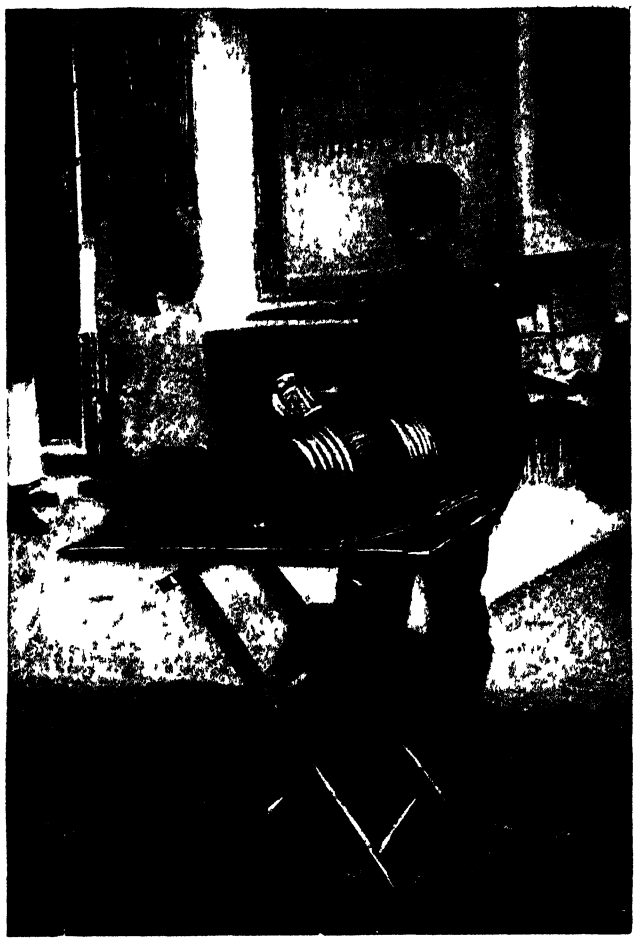
HAWKERS AND HUCKSTERS RETAILING SMALL WARES ON A RAIN-DRENCHED MARKET PLACE OF MOSCOW

In the extreme heat of summer and Arctic cold of winter Moscow's street trade has been famous for its activity. The traders—mostly drawn from the poorer merchant class, the bulk of them illiterate, and able to make out their calculations only with the help of their fingers and the abacus, or reckoning table with sliding balls, the inevitable companion of the peasant shopkeeper—appeared to be entirely indifferent to all personal comforts, content to stand the livelong day by their stalls or to tramp around with their wares slung over arm and shoulder, until night had driven all possible customers from the streets

Photo, Florence Farmborough

They sit in a circle with a guitar player in the centre, who acts as conductor. To every song there is a solo part and a chorus. They do not sing particularly well, but there is a wild, haunting quality in their songs which satisfies some craving in the Russian nature. There is some chord in the Russian's imagination which is thrilled by the melodies of the vast steppes that make up so large a part of the country, and he is ready to pay handsomely for it.

The stimulus which the well-to-do found in champagne and gypsy music the peasant and the town artisan or labourer drew from vodka, from songs that he hiccupped out himself, from performances on the balalaika and concertina, from the mechanical melodies of the penny-in-the-slot pianola, melodeon, or gramophone. In the villages vodka was drunk in large quantities at marriage feasts, at Easter, when the "great fast" came to an end, or when any landowner driving a bargain with the villagers threw in a barrel of spirit to clinch it (and very likely to get better terms than ought to have been given him). Men and women drank together, drank "as if there were no hereafter." But their excesses had the excuse, if it can be called an excuse, of conviviality.



PEDLING PRUNES AND FRUIT DRINKS

Ordinarily, there is a good market for dried fruits in Russia, and this young vender is seen also dispensing a drink, a variety of kvass, made from them, and, in former times, probably not innocent of a little vodka to enhance its selling powers

In the towns the drinking was generally no more than a means to an end. The desired end was intoxication: warmth inside, and then forgetfulness. It was common enough to see men go into a dram-shop, buy a tenpenny bottle of vodka, the cheap and poisonous kind, knock the neck off, drink it straight away, then, after a hundred yards or so, fall down and lie unconscious. If such a man were in danger, some kindly hand rolled him into safety. There he lay until he recovered.

The harm done by vodka was largely increased when, towards the end of last century, Count Witte made the distillation and sale of it a government monopoly. He saw in it a source of easy revenue. Why should not the state profit by a popular habit, even though it was a bad one? There was no thought in Count Witte's mind of forcing drink upon the

ALL-ROUND HANDYMAN
A once indispensable figure in Russian town life, the dvornik, or yardman, who served as porter and general handyman to the inmates of the houses bordering his yard

nation with the object of drawing more and more revenue from it. But under the bureaucratic system, which smooths away personal responsibility, the agents of the Ministry of Finance were soon engaged in pushing vodka by every means in their power. The number of drink shops steadily increased. The revenue from this source rose from fifty millions to one hundred millions Drunkenness became a disaster.

By the spring of 1914 the conscience of the nation was stirred and the evil was explained to the Tsar. He was for once well advised, and issued an edict repealing Count Witte's measure and ordering that efforts should be made to fight against the vice of intoxication, "which was diminishing the energy and natural good qualities of the nation."

The outbreak of war made it possible, and indeed necessary, to take a further step in the national interest. The sale of vodka was entirely forbidden. At once the useful consequences of this action were seen. In 1904 General Kuropatkin had deplored the "drunken mobilisation." He asked the authorities to shut the liquor shops along the route taken by the troops going to the front against Japan. They refused, and the result was that "never before in all history was there presented such an indecent and disgusting picture." In 1914, according to a statement made by General Polivanov while he was Minister for War, recruits and reservists joined the colours in an orderly manner and a self-respecting frame of mind

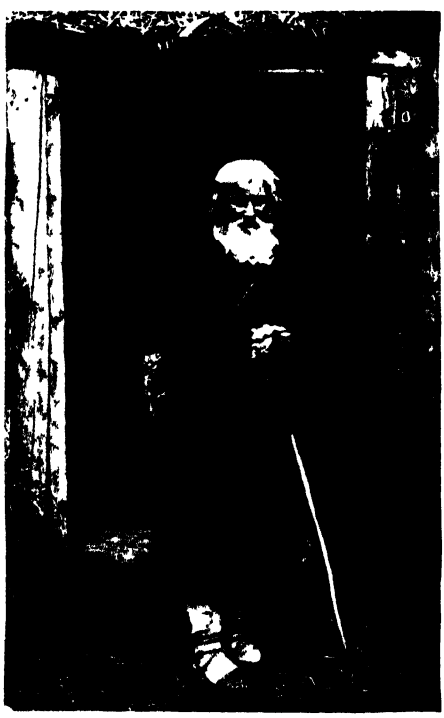
Later the benefit which accrued to the population generally from the suppression of drunkenness became apparent in many directions. The savings bank deposits increased fifteen and twenty-fold. In the villages the women and children were better dressed and better fed. Large purchases of farm machinery and implements were made by the peasants More work was done. Beggars disappeared Forest fires,

WHERE THE SAMOVAR REIGNS
After his tenth cup of hot weak tea, the Moscow merchant has turned his cup upside down on its saucer, signifying that he has finished—for the time being

caused usually by the carelessness or deliberate incendiarism of drunken men, became fewer in number. The nation grew vastly more prosperous and was able to support more easily than it could have done before Prohibition came into force, the expense of the war.

A good many people tried to find substitutes for vodka—furniture polish, methylated spirit, and the like, but on the whole there was a feeling of gratitude to the Tsar for his Prohibition edict. This was peculiarly Russian. It was not uncommon to hear peasants say: "We know we displeased God and injured our health by getting drunk, but we could not break ourselves of the bad habit. It was necessary to break us of it by force. Now that we cannot get drink, we see that we are much better off."

That illustrates a side of the Russian character which it is important to keep always in mind, and one which it is



ONE OF THE MULTITUDE

"I was born, I suffer, and I shall die," is his stoical motto, and that of thousands of other homeless pilgrims; and certainly Russia does not grudge him his death

POLISHER OF THE PARQUETRY

Most Russian houses have parquet floors, for the care of which it was customary to employ a man who, brush on foot, gave each week a lustrous gloss to the wooden surface

hard for those who have not lived among them to appreciate. When they do what they know will injure others or themselves, they do it knowing that it is wrong, and knowing that they will be sorry for it afterwards. Their great novelist, Dostoïevski, has shown us this strange, childlike duality of mind and tried to explain it. "In all the Russian people," he wrote, "there is not one swindler or scoundrel who does not know that he is mean and vile." Dostoïevski suggested that this was the result of the struggle between the Russian nature and its unpropitious surroundings.

Throughout the whole history of Russia we see that the Russian has been at the mercy of all kinds of depraving influences. He has been so abused and tortured that it is a miracle he has preserved the countenance of a man. But he has done more than that, he has preserved his beauty.

The Russian people must not be judged by what they are, but by what they are striving to be. The strong and sacred

TROIKA OF A WELL-TO-DO RUSSIAN LAND-PROPRIETOR

The three horses fine well groomed creatures when the photograph was taken are seen yoked abreast, their silver studded harness adorned with jingling bells A high arched wooden douga decorated with silver stars on a sky blue ground is borne by the middle horse which was made to trot rapidly while the horses on each side gallop d with their heads turned outwards

Photo Florence Farmborough

HOME-MADE SIEVES FOR SALE IN A PROVINCIAL TOWN

Although his tools are primitive, the moujik is wonderfully dexterous in their manipulation, and during the dreary winter season when field labour is out of the question, far from wishing to hibernate, he and his womenfolk were wont to employ their time in making numerous useful articles, such as wooden bowls, spoons, sieves, and agricultural implements for sale in the nearest town

Photo Georg Haeckel

BACKBONE OF THE ARMY DURING THE TSARIST REGIME

Inured to the life of hardship and endurance which was his in time of peace, the moujik was excellently fitted for the privations and perils which he encountered in warfare. Though his diet was scanty his shelter—if any—of the poorest nature, his military winter coat but a shabby sheepskin, he was ever stolid and uncomplaining, and endowed with all the qualifications of the true campaigner

Photo, Florence Farmborough

COUNTRY FOLK MEET IN LEISURED NEIGHBOURLY CONVERSE

Market day in the provincial Russian town sees an influx of peasants from the neighbouring districts. Some are intent on buying goods, others come to dispose of their wares, while many prefer the role of onlooker, and stroll about the streets, wrapped warmly in sheepskins, thinking with regret of "the good old times" in the traktir, or public house, when vodka and cheery companionship were plentiful

Photo, Georg Haschel

NOVO DEVITCHI CONVENT: A FAMOUS BUILDING OF GREAT HISTORICAL INTEREST

The Novo Devitchi Convent, lying in the environs of Moscow and facing a long range of the Sparrow Hills, was founded in 1524 to commemorate the reunion of Smolensk with the principality of Moscow. It was the scene of many sanguinary conflicts with the Poles, and was partly burnt down, but was finally restored by Tsar Michael. It comprised several buildings, including a fine cathedral and a lofty bell tower, and is surrounded by a massive wall furnished with towers, battlements, and loopholes. The convent was visited by Napoleon in 1812, and during the retreat of the French only the intrepidity of the nuns saved it from destruction

SOLDIER OF THE GREEK CHURCH WHO FELL ON ACTIVE SERVICE IN THE PERFORMANCE OF HIS DUTY

The priest of the Greek Church has been ever a familiar figure throughout Russia Many of these men have played a very gallant role in the turbulent times of the past decade, and thousands of them accompanied the troops when on campaign in many instances the soldiers of the Orthodox faith seeking the blessing of the priest before they would venture to attack the enemy Nor did the priesthood shirk danger many a one laid down his life in the thick of the fight, and then, dressed in the vestments of his high office, was laid to rest side by side with his brother soldiers

Photo Florence Farmborough

SACRED BUILDING IN THE HEART OF A MOSCOW BUSINESS CENTRE

The innumerable churches of Moscow have always been a source of unlimited attraction and interest to the stranger. " Forty times forty " is their approximate number, and seen at a distance the face of " Holy Moscow " glows with the splendour of her myriad golden cupolas. These sanctuaries, varying from cathedrals to miniature chapels, are found in all streets and even in busy market places

Photo, Florence Farmborough

CATHEDRAL OF S BASIL, FAMED FOR ITS FANTASTIC ARCHITECTURE

Situated on the Red Square at Moscow is the Cathedral of S Basil Grotesquely irregular in appearance, this remarkable structure presents a conglomerate mass of minarets, towers, and domes, no two of which resemble each other in colour or design Tradition reports that the eyes of its architect were put out by Ivan the Terrible in order that it should neither be equalled nor surpassed

PEASANTS AND WAYFARERS BOWED IN HUMBLE HOMAGE BEFORE A HOLY ICON IN A RUSSIAN TOWN

The religion of the Orthodox Russian enters into all the events b th trivi l nd important of his daily life nd the s n or sacred picture hung in a corner of his house in the old days received devout homage In the streets churches wayside chapels nd small shrines—pass ng before which even a driver of a r hsw would cross himself—are numerous icons and in t em and before them a odly company of humb e believers was ever n its knees makin the sign of the Cr ss repeatedly, giving thanks for mercies received and praying for forgiveness or for help on the morrow

ideals which have been their salvation through ages of suffering are deeply rooted in their souls By these ideals their souls have been endowed with simplicity and honesty with sincerity and with a broad receptive good sense

Do not judge the Russian people by the atrocious deeds of which they have often been guilty but by the great and holy ideals which they keep before them even in their depravity

Now to most European ears that sounds very much like nonsense The European mind judges by results It has more patience with the man who says Evil be thou my good and deliberately chooses to do harm ready to accept the consequences whatever they may be than with those who commit crimes or folly from sheer weakness of fibre, wishing to keep to the straight path but unable to resist temptation to turn off it now and then One who is a determined wrongdoer may change so the argument runs and become a good citizen The really weak however can never be relied upon Whether they do good or evil they will be a feeble folk a nuisance to others and a burden to themselves That is the European attitude The Russian feeling towards weakness in human nature is altogether different It is a feeling of pity of sympathy of readiness to forgive 'even unto seventy times seven Far better to have ideals and fall over and over again in reaching towards them than go through life without any

Some who have observed Russian life and character have doubted whether the great Russian writers, who are the interpreters of it for the rest of the world, really understood it themselves Turgenev who lived mostly in France, was reproached during his lifetime with describing it from a distance" and being out of touch with the people he so closely described

A Russian commentator on Tolstoy has brushed aside the notion that he knew the soul of the people "He belongs to the gentry he can think and feel only as a gentleman not as a peasant" Gogol used to complain that he could not get 'local colour" for his books and he begged his friends to send him hints,

MONKS OF THE ORTHODOX GREEK CHURCH

While always wearing the beard and hair long in order to resemble the Christ as closely as possible the black monks, with all their outward display and formal ritual are more noted for their vices than their virtues

Photo Florence Farmborough

AN IMPORTUNATE VAGRANT

This vagrant monk has found begging "for the love of God" remunerative, the "bulge" in his costume indicating that charitable Russia had turned no deaf ear to his prayers

observations, anecdotes. There certainly was a great gulf fixed between the educated, cosmopolitan, easy-living Russian of the towns and the mass of the people, toiling always, mostly unable to read or write (that has changed lately; now they mostly can read and write); enslaved by superstition. There was not the same tie which there has always been in England, and to a certain extent in France, between the owner of broad lands and the tillers of the soil. Many Russian villages have no persons of education living in or near them, for it may frequently happen that the priest is as ignorant and as superstitious as his parishioners. Whether he can rightly be called educated or no, he is not likely to have much influence. There have been and there are priests of the Russian Orthodox Church as worthy of respect and admiration as any in the world. But in general they are looked upon rather as conjurers than as spiritual guides.

The peasant believes that unless the blessing of the Church upon children in baptism, upon marriage, and in the hour of death, is sought and paid for something unpleasant will happen—he is not clear what. The priest must therefore be employed on these and certain other occasions. A new house, for example, must be blessed. Holy water must be sprinkled in every corner of every room. The same rite is necessary when a new shop or office is occupied. And each year this must be

BOUND FOR A DISTANT SHRINE

He limps through life on blistered feet, pledged to the Open Road, but is happy enough in his restless existence, for the pilgrim's heart is strong and his faith stedfast

Photos, Florence Farmborough

FOLLOWING THE PRIEST ON HIS HOUSE TO HOUSE VISIT

During the hot months in Russia, as in other countries, those who could afford it migrated from the towns to their country houses. This exodus began about the end of May, and was the signal for the local priests to form a great procession with banners and icons and visit the newcomers in each house, blessing their sojourn there. For the villagers this was the great event of their year

Photo, Florence Farmborough

repeated. The fees demanded by the priest must be paid without grumbling, like insurance premiums. But the idea that the exercise of these powers entitles the priest to reverence is foreign to the peasant mind. In his vestments he is gifted with mysterious magic, but at other times he is a mere man.

Certainly the people were attached to their Church services, and with good reason. On the spectacular side they are mightily impressive. The music is designed to stir emotion, and even in remote villages may do so with an irresistible force. Its deep and rolling harmonies, the haunting beauty of the responses in the Litany, the unaccompanied men's voices, now almost fierce in their vigour, now sinking to a melodious murmur, leave on the imagination ineffaceable impressions. Among the most vivid memories which one brings away from Russia must be counted the onion spires, green for the most part, but sometimes of many colours, as on the Church of S. Boris in Moscow and its replica in Petrograd, with slender chains connecting the crosses which surmount them; the Church festivals—Easter, with its midnight Mass and salutation, "Christ is risen"; Christmas, which brings out little forests of trees in the public squares to the delight of all children; the breaking of the fasts which must be kept in June and August; the sound of church bells from which one was never far away, solemn big bells, booming away in the bass, tenor bells with heady high notes, and the shrill, jingling, crazy little bells; crowded churches wreathed in the fumes of incense and oppressive with the smell of grease, every worshipper holding a

candle which must allow to gutter and to drop its fatness on the clothes of the unwary religious processions the Krestni Khod for instance (the Way of the Cross) in which famous icons (sacred pictures) and banners of rich beauty are followed by many thousands of men and women singing as they go

Whether the observances of the Orthodox communion will be so useful now that the link between Church and State is broken it is hard to say Already the practice of putting up icons in rooms as a protection against evil spirits and as a reminder to all who come in to cross themselves on entering and on leaving also has been dropped in Government offices and in many private houses Already there is a strong tendency to regard the Church as part of the old system which the Revolution swept away For this the Church has only its leaders to thank They made religion the servant of autocracy They set their faces perversely against wise modifications of the system which might have averted any violent break Pobiedonostzev who was so long Procurator of the Holy Synod an office which made its holder though a layman the real head of the Church held to his medieval views with comical energy and by damming back the waters of modern thought made disaster inevitable Peterim Archbishop of Petrograd during the last days of the Tsardom was one of the shameless gang that surrounded Rasputin It was this as much as anything that lowered the Church in the estimation of the people They felt the disgrace of the Rasputin scandal They knew that he was a dissolute rascal, and all over the country his ascendancy was talked about and

LONELY WOMEN PILGRIMS OF THE RUSSIAN HIGH ROAD

Women have figured conspicuously among the pilgrims traversing the lonely wastes of Russia. Many of them like these White Russians under the Tsardom have left behind them all ties of large families which between seedtime and harvest sell the solitude of their road and tramp mile after mile for days and weeks until their devotion rewarded they arrive at the Mecca of their pilgrimage

IN THE PENAL SETTLEMENT OF SINNING RUSSIAN CLERGY

Not far from the remote village of Khmovo in the Province of Vologda exists a remarkable religious community, known as the Brotherhood of Ten composed of priests who have betrayed their trust Ten well built chalets standing in a pine forest shelter these priestly criminals who are doing penance for almost every imaginable crime The heads of the community wear curious medieval cloaks

GIRL WORKERS OF A MOSCOW DISTRICT
They took up life's duties at an early age, and can guide the harrow, sow and reap the rye, make bread, butter, and cheese curds, for youth and health are theirs in abundance, and carry them smiling through the longest of working days

exaggerated, lying stories to the discredit of the Empress were told, and the authorities were blamed for not exposing and turning him out.

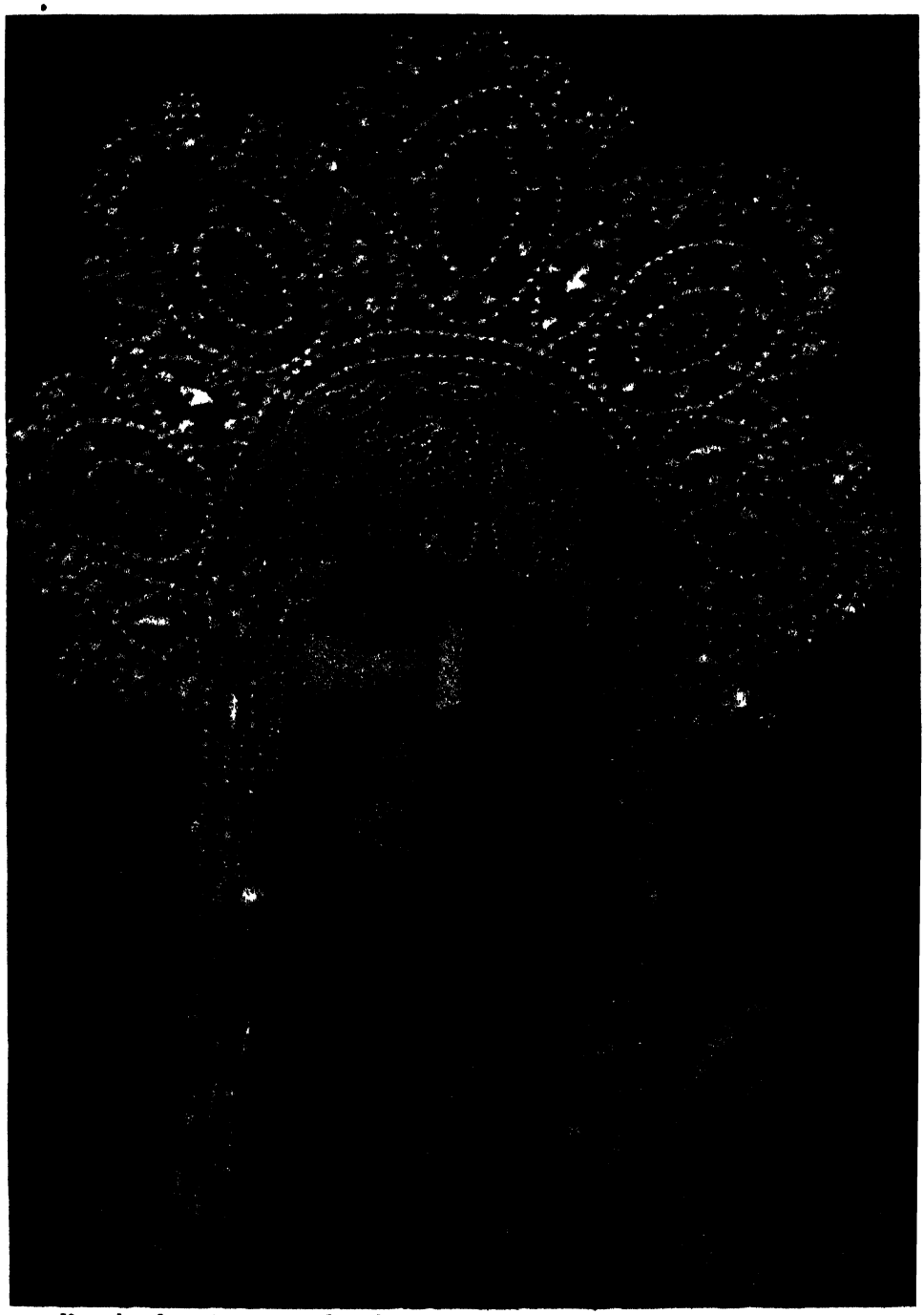
Here the indecision of the Russian character, which made it an agony even for men bred up in public business to make up their minds, brought misfortune upon the race. If the principal ministers had told the Tsar plainly what they said to each other, and to many besides, about the dangerous course affairs were taking, the danger might have been averted.

Much of the evil of the old system lay in the ridiculous reverence paid to the Sovereign. The more simple-minded of the courtiers and officials experienced a genuine awe in the presence of "the Lord's anointed." The others cynically simulated a respect which they were far from feeling. There was thus an Eastern atmosphere at Court, in which what was called Byzantinism flourished, that is to say, government by intrigue, mostly personal intrigue.

A perpetual struggle went on for the control of the machinery of administration, engaged in, not so much by the actual ministers and those who stood for the Tsar's advisers in the public eye, as by a little group of men who pulled the strings unseen, and appointed or dismissed ministers as children set up and knock down ninepins.

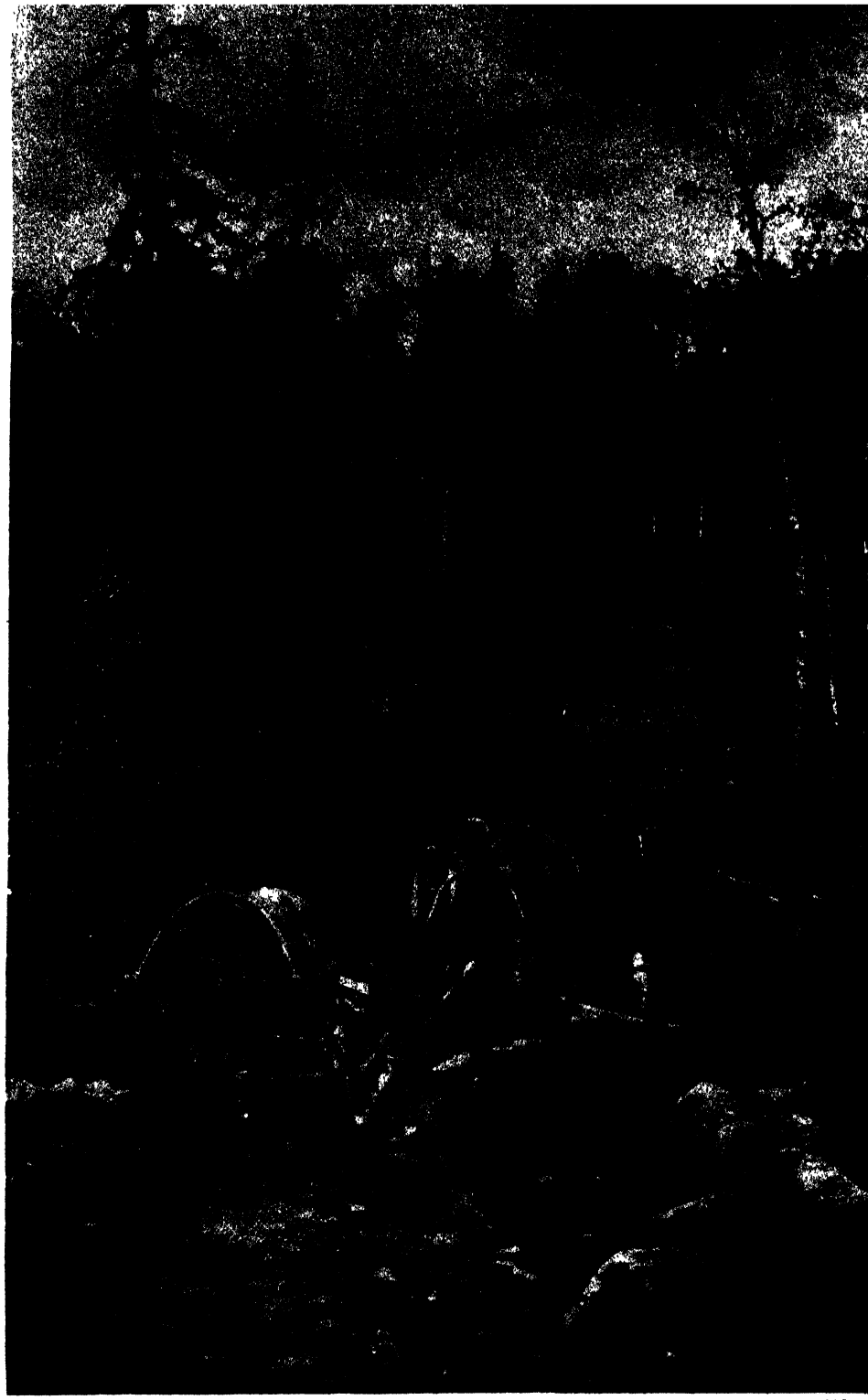
Until the Great War the mass of the people knew nothing of the methods of their rulers. They had a vague notion that the Tsar was endowed with superhuman powers, and that he governed in person. It was impossible for peasants who had never been in a city to understand the complication of the Government machine. The educated class, the intelligentsia, consisting mainly of those who had been through university courses, who had travelled, who either had private means or earned their living by the practice of medicine or law, saw clearly enough both the absurd and the perilous side of the old system. They laughed at it and stormed at it in private, but they knew that to take any part in public agitation would bring them into conflict with the secret police. The sequel to this would probably have been an order to leave for Siberia within

REAL RUSSIA
The Land of the Moujiks



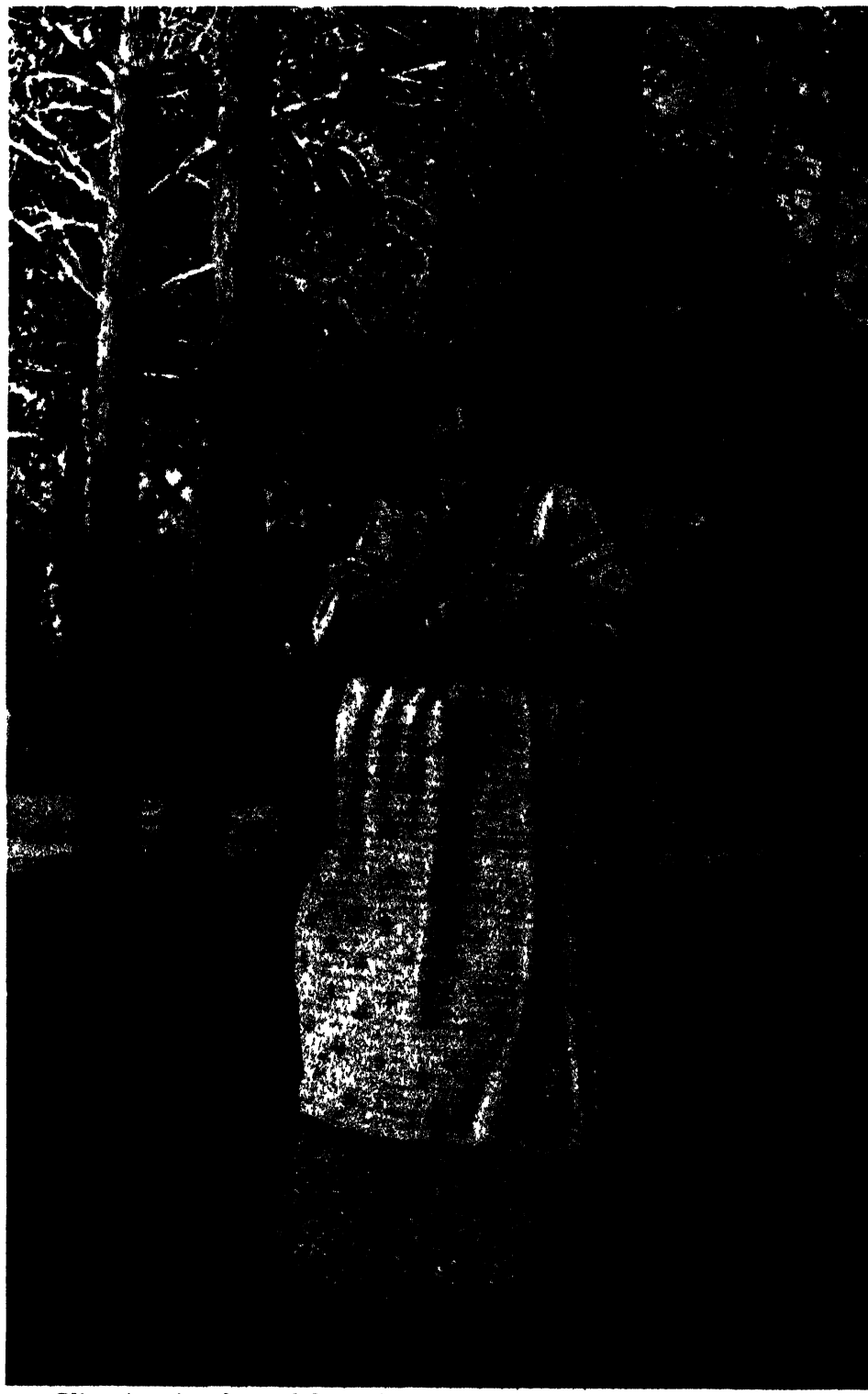
Resplendent in every detail is the Russian boyarski costume, crowned by the handsome kokoshnik—a high tiara set with many beautiful gems

Photo, Venera, Moscow



Though the high-road of life be rugged and stone-strewn, the moujik plods on. If the wheel fails him, he will make headway with a sleigh

Religion is life to many a poor woman of Russia, and whispered prayer during the daily round brings comfort and courage under all adversity



Glittering jewels and brocades are not hers, yet the peasant woman of Ryazan in her gay cottons presents a dainty picture to the artist eye

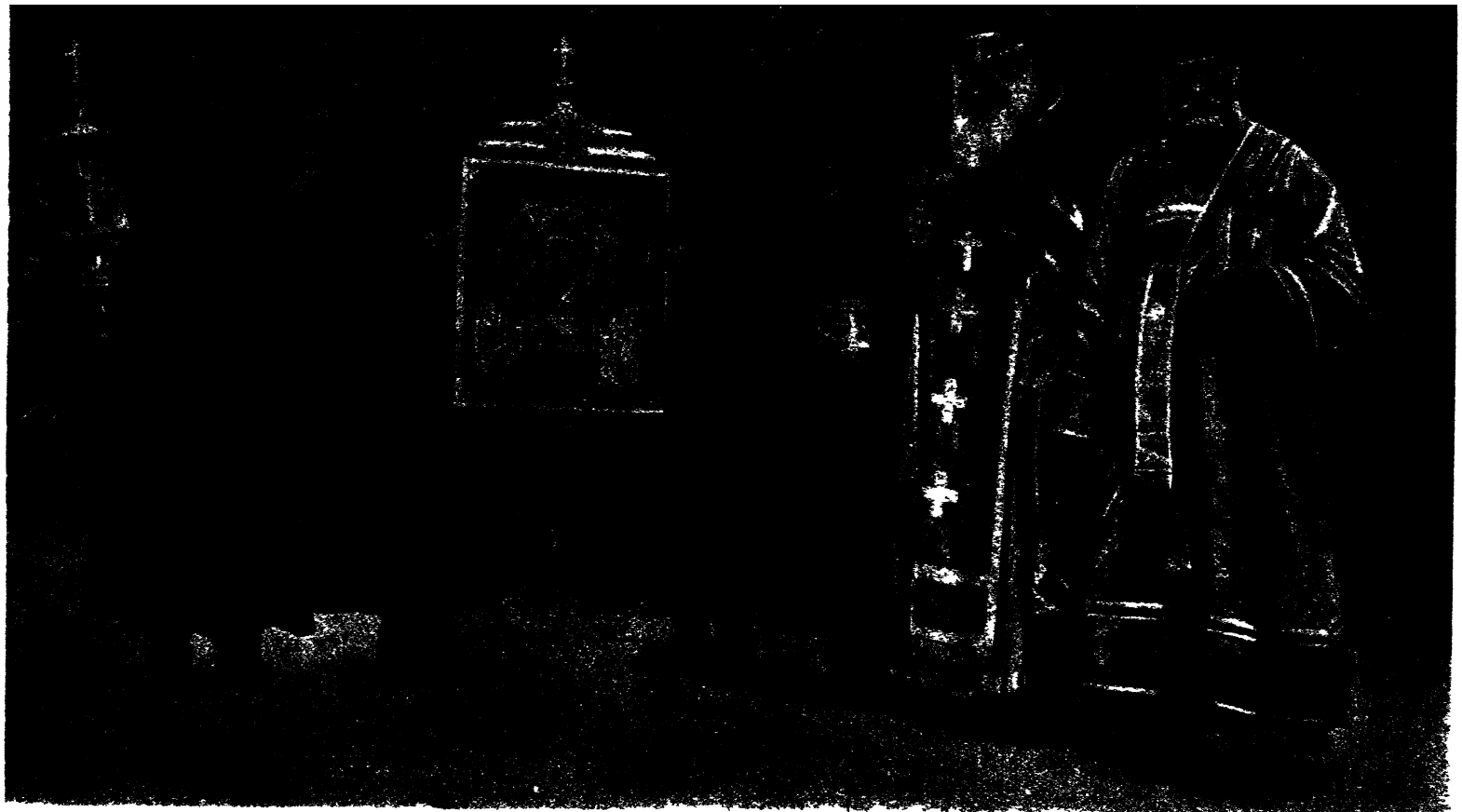
Photo, Florence Farmborough

In coloured sarafan she moves among a sea of flowers, for the fields are decked with a beauty incomparable when springtime comes to Russia

Photo, Florence Farmborough

Woodman by trade, hunter by nature, this Russian moujik is familiar with the wild life of the impenetrable forest, and his alert ear is strained to catch the sound that shall disclose the proximity of the much-desired prey

Photo, P. Brownlow Hughes



Before the Soviet war against religion, exquisitely jewelled icons, escorted by priests and worthy nuns, were brought to bless the Russian households. To "Holy Russia" the sacred icon was ever "God in the midst"

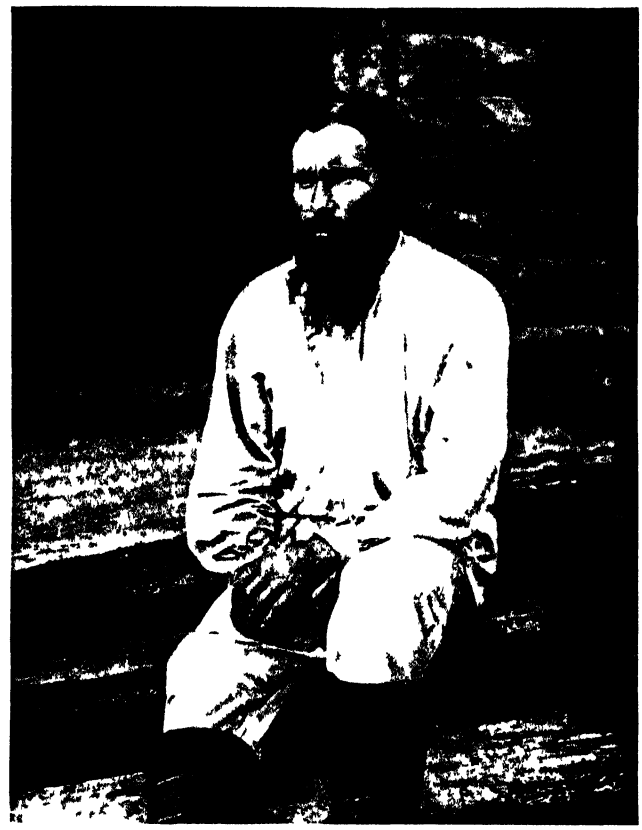
Photo, Florence Farmborough

In her desperate struggle against Germany, Russia welcomed every arm that could handle a rifle. Many a boy volunteer played a man's rôle

Photo, Florence Farmborough

a period of time scarcely long enough in the most favourable conditions to make the necessary preparations and sometimes so short as to prevent any arrangements at all from being made.

Apart from the annoyance of a forced uprooting however and the hardship of being separated from parents or friends who were too old to follow exile to Siberia was not a severe punishment for political recalcitrance. It had for a long time lost its terrors. Political exiles found in Siberian cities a society far more active-minded than that which they had left behind. They could as a rule earn their living without difficulty. Siberia is another Canada. It is immensely rich in possibilities and has already been developed on its agricultural and mining sides in such energetic fashion as to bring prosperity to its population. The only prisoners who during this century worked in the mines or were otherwise in penal servitude in Siberia were criminals sentenced for serious offences and they were sent away by train not in gangs condemned to make the long journey on foot. The political exiles, except for reporting themselves to the police, and not being allowed to return to Russia, were free, and they often preferred to stay where they were upon the expiration of their sentences.



KINDLY QUALITIES SURVIVE STAGNATION

Simple life in the Russian backwoods does not tend to mental development and this gentle giant possesses little more than a child's brain but the thoughtful face at least suggests his heart's regret that education and enlightenment have passed him by.

That the Russian bureaucracy was improved by the inflow of Western ideas among the people, especially among the intelligentsia, was shown by the mitigation of the cruelties which not so very long ago attended sentences of exile to the then barren and frozen land where the summer lasted a few weeks only, and where civilization had hardly set its mark. It was common to hear the intelligentsia ridiculed, even by those who were not in sympathy with bureaucratic methods, but their efforts to let in light upon places which the Government tried to keep dark, and their appeal from Byzantinism to the enlightened opinion of Europe and America, certainly had a useful effect.

They might even have been able to bring about a change of system without violent revolution and bloodshed, if the Tsardom had survived the Great War. When, hastened by the incompetence and the imbecility of those who were supposed to be managing the nation's

NEVSKY PROSPEKT, PETROGRAD'S LONGEST MOST FASHIONABLE AND MOST BLOOD-STAINED STREET

To dwellers in and visitors to the capital, the Nevsky was to Petrograd what Piccadilly is to London or Fifth Avenue to New York. It is one hundred and fifteen feet in width and nearly three miles long, running from the Admiralty to the Znamenskaya Square. To the right hand side of this photograph is a French cafe and the sign of the Siberian Bank. To this then the habitual thoroughfare of all that they hated came the crowd in the summer of 1917, shouting for bread and white-hot for murder, the crowd that has now spread throughout Russia and calls itself "Bolsheviki."

affairs, revolution broke out as a people's movement, the intelligentsia were not ready for it. It seems doubtful, when one looks back, whether the intelligentsia ever would have been ready. It was composed almost entirely of those who enjoyed dreaming about a perfect state and who, through no fault of their own, had no experience of practical endeavour in the political sphere. Outside the hierarchy of officials there was no opportunity to gain such experience save in the Zemstvos and town councils. The latter were filled up chiefly by merchants who looked after their own interests, and offered no attraction to the earnest reformer. The Zemstvos, on the contrary, gave opportunity for hard and valuable public work, and served as an excellent training-ground for men who hoped later to become politicians of the Western type.

Bureaucracy and the Zemstvos

Each province had its Zemstvo or provincial council, and there were district councils as well. The councillors were elected; as a rule, men of public spirit and ability were chosen. The doctors who worked for the Zemstvos were a fine body of self-sacrificing and energetic friends of the people. When the war revealed the wretched unfitness for their duties of almost all who were in high office in Russia, the Zemstvos asked to be allowed to take part in the national effort. The bureaucracy did its best to keep them out, accusing them of wanting to get hold of the machinery of government with the object of altering it in a democratic sense. They were told that national affairs were none of their business; these should be left to the official class.

It was, however, found impossible to refuse their aid, and the work they did was of the utmost value. When a prime minister had to be appointed in the first days of the Revolution, the choice fell upon Prince Lvov, who had been at the head of the Union of Zemstvos and had proved himself a very capable business man. His chief assistant in the Union offices was made Minister of the Interior. The Minister of Agriculture was M. Shingariev, for many years a Zemstvo doctor; from that he had worked his way into the Duma.

Fatal Results of Official Ineptitude

But while the new ministers were most of them capable and energetic, their lack of experience in governing became soon fatally noticeable. There were good speakers among them, but the ability of the new rulers was, for the most part, of the council chamber and business office order. They could explain measures and justify courses of action as they sat at a table, but they had had no experience of addressing mobs. It was Kerensky's power of moving crowds of uneducated men to agreement with whatever he said that accounted for his becoming prime minister in succession to Prince Lvov.

A Russian crowd is more susceptible to oratory than any I know, except a Mexican crowd. They can be swayed in anydirection if the orator is sufficiently passionate and wordy. They can be swayed in opposite directions within a few minutes. Russians are apt to be of the same opinion as the last person who happens to have been talking to them. They have not room in their heads for more than one thought at a time.

Problem of the Russian Character

If that be borne in mind, a great deal that is puzzling in the character of the Russian will become plain. His supposed "untrustworthiness," for example, has no deceit in it, as the term is understood elsewhere. It is merely instability; not shiftiness of moral nature so much as shiftiness of opinion. It is true that the result is the same whichever explanation be applied.

The Russian troops who fought under British officers for a time against the

RUSSIAN YOUTH UNDER THE LURE OF THE LIBERAL ARTS

It was once observed that " when the Russian was refined he was very, very refined, and when he was uncultured he was barbaric " Certainly refinement and culture have ever characterized members of the Russian intelligentsia, who, after careful instruction in finely regulated schools and universities, not infrequently continued intellectual pursuits throughout the rest of their lives

Photo, Florence Farmborough

Bolshevist forces and then decided to join the Bolshevists could not be blamed for deliberate treachery. They changed their minds and could only see the advantage of changing their allegiance. They did not stop to consider that they were betraying those who had come to help them, and condemning many of them to lose their lives. The thought of fighting with their countrymen instead of against them filled their heads. There was no room for any other thought.

Even the educated Russian will promise anything, with every intention of fulfilling his promises, but he cannot be relied upon to fulfil them. Either he forgets or else he says to himself: "Why should I put myself out, after all? I was a fool to promise. There was no need. There is no need now to do anything." So nothing is done.

The same unreliability appears in the conduct of Russian juries. In a case where an accused person had been found guilty of a disgraceful offence, he was recommended to mercy. One of the jurymen was asked what excuse there could possibly be for such a criminal. He replied: "I am not quite sure that he was guilty." Probably he had a defective notion of what extenuating circumstances were.

Here is another illuminating verdict of a Russian jury. A peasant who was proved beyond doubt to have set fire to a house was acquitted. The foreman told the owner of the house that they would have found the prisoner guilty if the sentence had been two years, but they knew that he would be sent to penal servitude for six years. This they considered excessive, and also it was such a fine day! How could they send a man to penal servitude when the sun shone so warmly? Two years afterwards the owner of the house returned after an absence to the village near which his house was. He was met by a deputation of peasants who welcomed him and congratulated him on the result of the trial two years before. He had been saved from sin, they told him. The punishment of criminals was not the business of man, but of God. If he had got the incendiary sent to prison, he would have offended against God. God, in the meantime, had done justice. The criminal had come to a bad end!

Thus the law, which was less severe than the English, was made more lenient

PERIPATETIC LOCKSMITH

Licensed to trade in the streets, as his metal registration plate shows, he goes along, his clinking, jangling assortment of keys and padlocks advertising his coming

by the indulgent feelings of jurymen. For murder the usual penalty was twelve years' penal servitude. The death sentence was fairly often passed, however, for stirring up trouble in prison, escaping from prison, or assaulting prison warders. Fraud was lightly punished. To some juries a swindle seemed a

Copyright National Archives

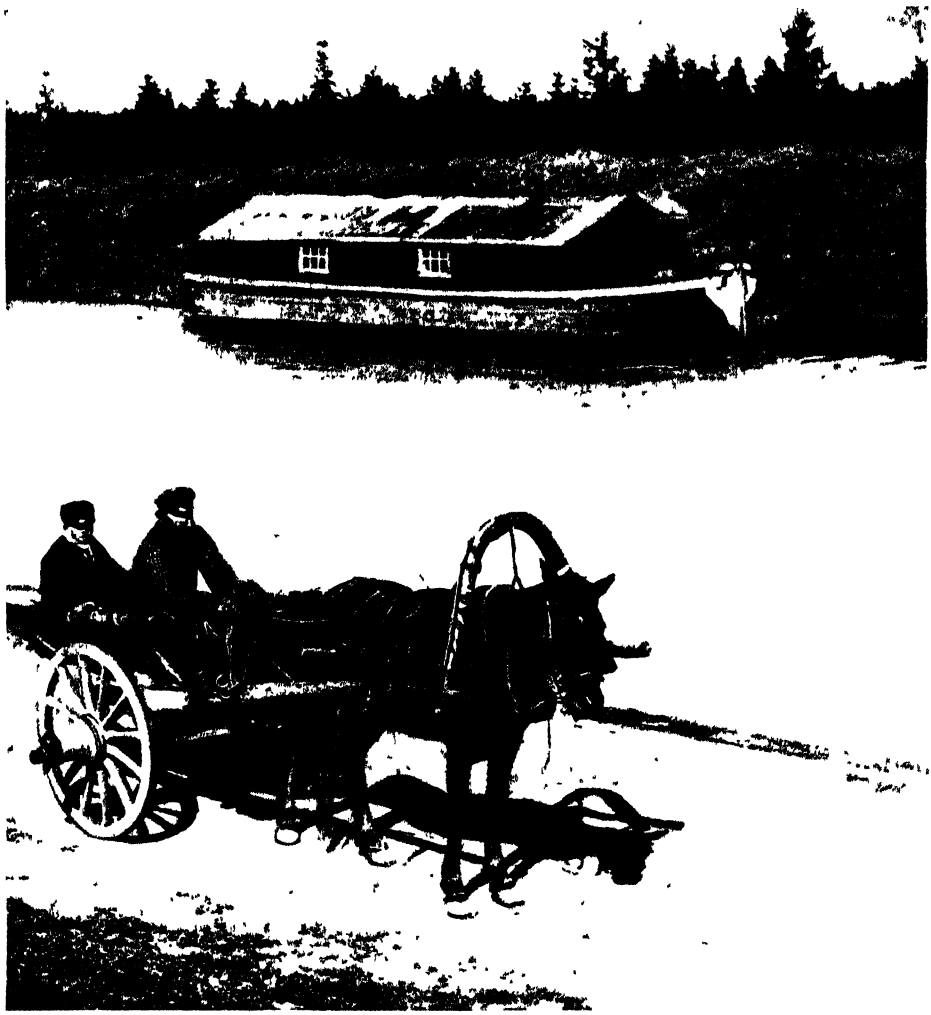
others laughed at it as a good joke The most impartial and sensible justice was meted out by the magistrates who tried simple cases in the police courts They heard each party speak in person. They examined them patiently and mostly with good temper No lawyers were permitted to intervene Often the magistrate was quite a young man, for the Law in Russia was entered in the same way as the Civil Service, and those who were some day to be judges had to begin by dealing with small disputes in the Courts of First Instance But young as they were, the people who appeared before them seem to have had confidence in them and their decisions were admitted to be generally sound

The peasants despite their simplicity in some directions, are shrewd and skilful in many others They work far better in groups than as individuals This is due no doubt to the communal life they have lived in the past Long ago, before they were made serfs, they had local self government in a most complete and interesting form The unit was the village The villagers chose their mayor (as they do still) who with a council of inhabitants to assist him, managed their affairs The influence of that ancient system is seen in the Russian habit of choosing a leader or foreman to give directions and obeying him gladly

If only three men are employed on some job, they will appoint one the foreman, the other two will take their instructions from him It saves them the trouble of thinking for themselves They get rid of responsibility The artel, or mutual guarantee society, is an institution peculiar to Russia Some of them have a large membership, but most are limited to men working at a particular trade or occupation in a particular spot Thus the porters on railway stations have an artel, so do the bank messengers, so do the artisans in towns The society is liable for any property stolen or damaged by any of its members

BLOCK ICE FROM THE NEVA FOR COLD STORAGE IN PETROGRAD

Russian summers in the capital are often very hot, and in the winter, which here lasts about five months, advantage is taken of the frozen river to hack from it great blocks of ice Most Russian houses, whether in town or country, have either an ice cellar or an ice cupboard in which to preserve the food during the burning days of July and August



ROUGH CARTAGE ON THE CANAL TOW-PATH NEAR PETROGRAD

One of the best known characteristics of Russian horse drawn vehicles is the huge yoke that arches itself over the animal's neck. This is called a "douga," and, according to the quality of the equipage, so it is ornamented. The one seen here is but modestly decorated as befits a poor moujik, but some of his richer neighbours like to have theirs painted in bright colours

Sometimes it accepts contracts for work to be done and shares out the payment.

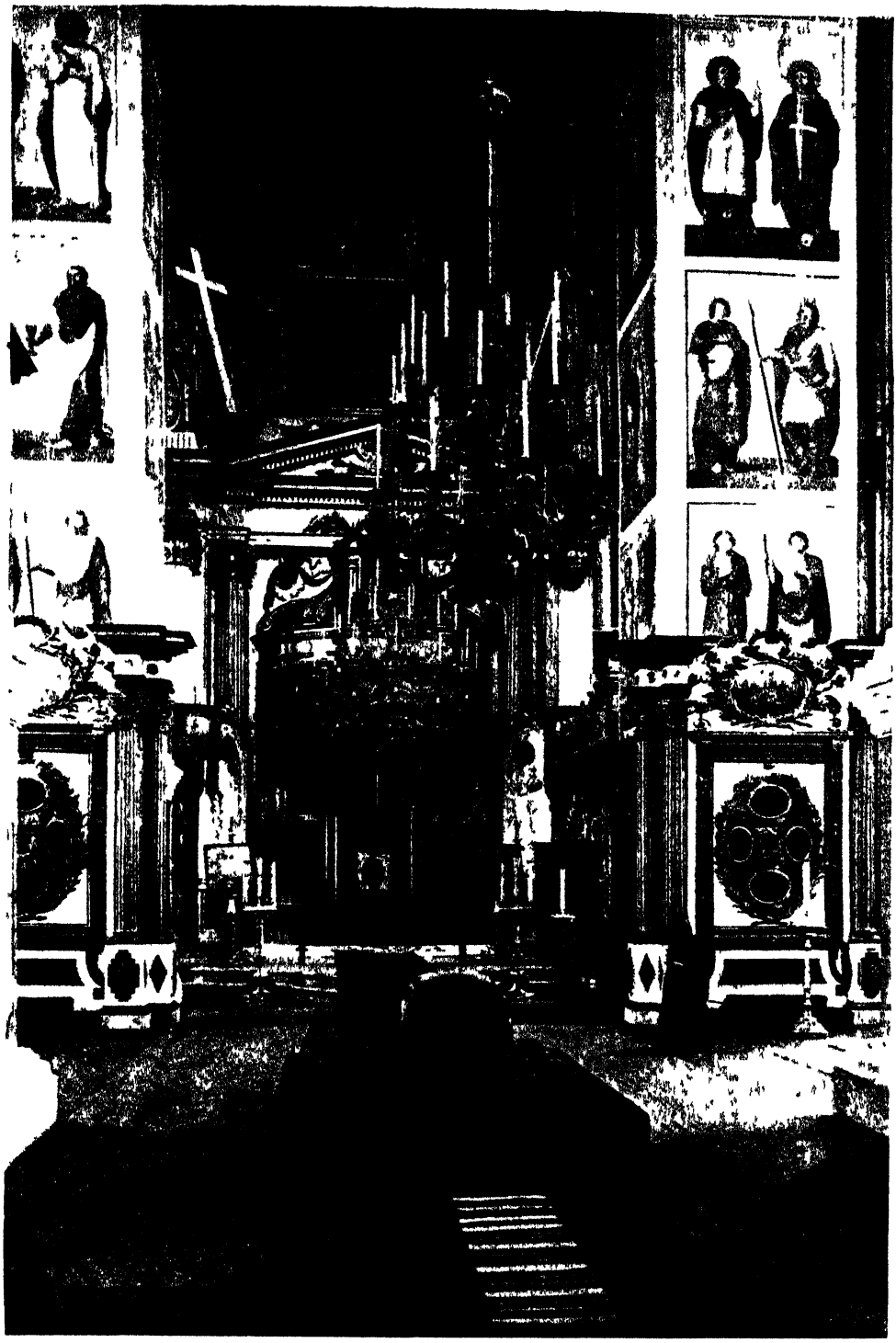
Now the word artel is used for the cooperative unions which have so large a membership all over Russia. The cooperative movement was taken up readily; some estimates put the numbers who benefit by it, enrolled in the unions, as high as twenty millions. Here, again, the Russian preference for acting in common came into play.

Sometimes still may be seen an artel of builders cutting down trees, fashioning logs and planks, and building peasant houses. The peasant is very clever in his use of the axe. He can do everything with it, plane and ornament, as well as swing it for tree-felling; "even shave himself with it," village jokers say. Using their axes only, three or four men will in less than a week construct a house and have it ready for the occupants to enter and live in.

Through the winter, when all that can be done is to feed the cattle, cut wood for firing, bring in water, and long for spring, the peasants in many parts of the country spend their time in making toys. Here, again, they show ingenuity and humour. The toys are

OLD AGE HASTENED BY A FULL MEASURE OF LIFE'S BITTERNESS

After youth has passed the Russian peasant woman is seldom of a prepossessing appearance Strenuous work in the fields and arduous home duties connected with the little izba where she, her husband, a large family of children, and perhaps several relatives, house together in cramped and unsanitary conditions, tell on her rapidly, ageing her irretrievably and often souring a naturally sweet disposition



INTERIOR OF A GREEK CATHOLIC CHURCH IN RUSSIA

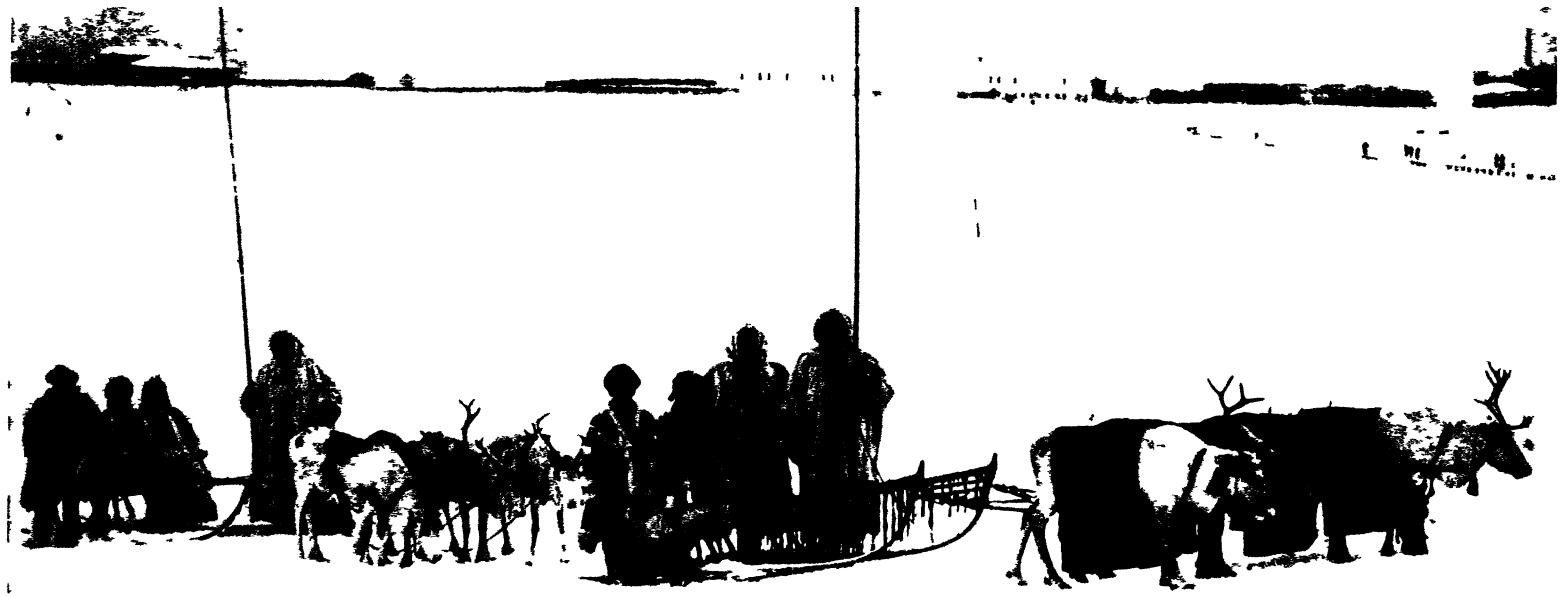
On all sides a profusion of gaudy and fantastic detail, painted in all the colours of the rainbow, meets the eye, but the screen which separates the Holy of Holies—in which no one save the priest may enter—is massed with sacred symbolism of an exceedingly ornate splendour The art of Byzantine decoration would appear to reach the zenith of perfection in the interior of a Greek Orthodox Church

Photo, P. Brownlow Hughes

LAPP COURIERS WITH THE MURMANSK MAIL BEFORE A BARRIER OF THE LONE WHITE NORTH

During the long months when the White Sea and its enclosing shores are in the frozen grip of winter, the ship gives place to the sleigh. From ice-bound Archangel fur-clad Laplanders set out over the congealed waters with the post for Murmansk, a town far over the mountains of the Kola Peninsula on an arm of the Arctic Ocean. The snow that is seen lying on the steep slopes, filling up cranny and crevice, gives a false effect of smoothness to their appearance

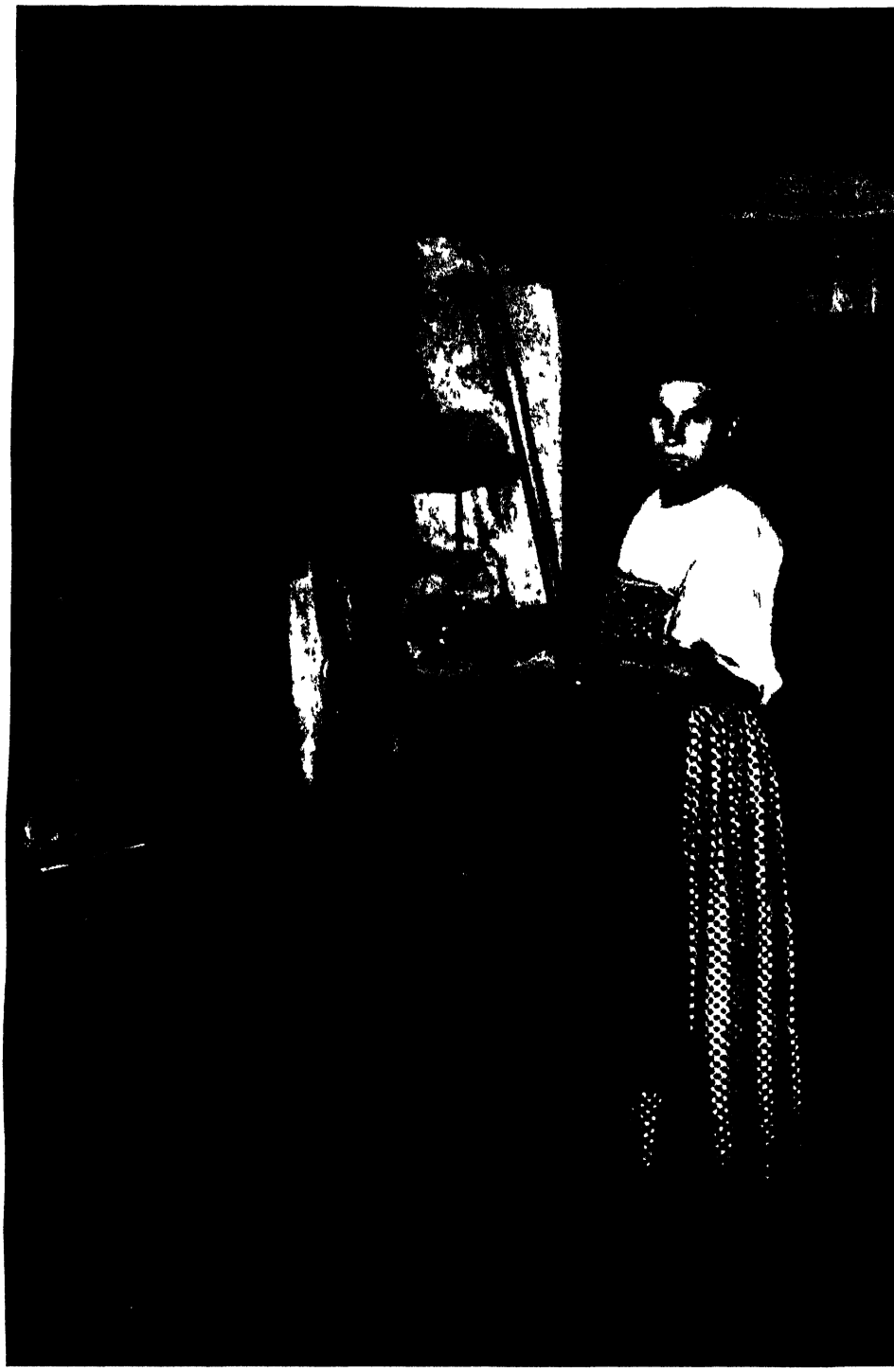
Photo, P. Brownlow Hughes



REINDEER SLEIGHS THAT MOVE LIGHTLY OVER THE DVINA WHEN WINTER COMES TO ARCHANGEL

Besides the winter sleigh traffic on the White Sea, there is considerable activity on the frozen surface of the great River Dvina that finds its way there by five mouths, near Archangel This is the Northern Dvina as distinguished from the Western Dvina further south Over the ice move the swift footed reindeer, bells tinkling and antlers nodding, and these picturesque creatures, together with the drivers' costume make the old Christmas stories of Santa Claus come true The long poles in the drivers' hands, also seen in the opposite page, serve for whips

Photo P Brownlow Hughes



MAKING THE MOST OF THINGS IN TRYING CIRCUMSTANCES

The Karelian housewife is an able bodied person, as she needs must be in a bleak and cheerless climate which demands much physical effort and energy before even the simple necessities and comforts of life can be obtained Arduous out of door labour falls to her lot, but home duties are not overlooked, and, in ordinary times, the family pot never lacks nourishing buckwheat kasha for her man and family

RAGS AND TATTERS OF POVERTY-STRICKEN RUSSIAN CHILDHOOD

In scanty threadbare garments they run wild about the environs of their village gathering vagodi for the woods abound in rich ripe berries of all descriptions—with which they walk long versts to the railway station to dispose of them to kindly travellers They know that only labour brings bread and hunger and hardship have already stamped their childish faces with resignation

WHERE MINOR DISCOMFORTS DO NOT MATTER

They know no other bed save the floor, or, as winter quarters the broad shelf of the stove The straw mattress and bolster are to them the essence of comfort, and though the floor may be engrained with the dust of years, and the " tarakan," or small cockroach, swarms around them, they will sleep as peacefully and dream as happily as pampered children under a silken coverlet

BABOUSHKA'S PET

"Not a village but has its own ways," is a true saying in Russia, where types, costumes, and customs are as varied as pebbles on the seashore, but on one point all agree—that baby is the most precious possession of the home

the sake of warmth in winter, and in the summer live out of doors. They make their principal meal off cabbage soup, with meat in it on special occasions, rye bread, and dry buckwheat porridge which is called kasha. They drink a great deal of tea, with as much sugar as they can afford, enough lumps to fill the glass up if they have plenty, and with a slice of lemon when lemons are not too dear. They also drink kvass, which is made from rye bread, fermented, and bottled. As made by the peasants, it has seldom any flavour at all, but it is refreshing in hot weather. Their amusements are dancing and listening to music. In towns the concerts given in parks by military bands are always thronged. In the

made by the men, as a rule, while the women are busy embroidering or making lace. Very beautiful work is done in the peasant izbas, work which is valued more in foreign countries than it is in Russia.

There might be a very profitable as well as a delightful furniture industry built up, but most Russians prefer to send to Vienna for gim crack chairs, tables, and "suites," and think they are getting better value for their money because their rooms look more showy. In the country and in the towns the peasant class lives in very much the same way. They crowd together in small, overheated rooms for

AT A COTTAGE CASEMENT

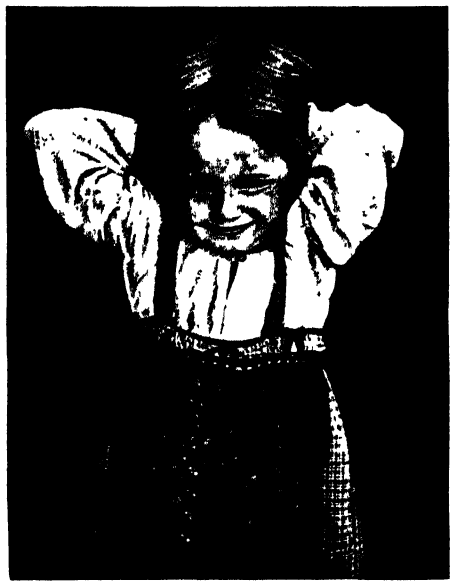
Massively built, the peasant houses of Karelia resemble ancient strongholds, and the happy face of this housewife would suggest that family affection is not lacking within these time worn walls

village performances on the balalaika or concertina give a great deal of pleasure. All Russians can dance. It is common in the country to see a party of girls and boys in the summer evenings amusing themselves by tripping in the roadway. They go through figures something like those of old English country dances, and then perhaps there will be individual efforts, which are always immensely energetic and often graceful.

The ballet, which is the one distinctively Russian form of theatrical art, has its roots in the national dances. It was artificially kept alive by payments from the Emperor's purse for the training of dancers, but it was always well supported by the more fashionable theatregoers. The ballet nights, two a week, were sure to find the Imperial Theatres in Petrograd and Moscow filled with their largest audiences. And, simultaneously, all over the country villagers sat round watching dancers, soldiers in their camps and barracks gathered in rings, and kept time by clapping hands for the performers in the centre. Thus the world of fashion and the mass of the people had a taste in common and the ballet could be called a national art.

STOICISM OF THE PEASANTRY

In Russia the thoughts of old age are long, long thoughts, but she reviews her seventy summers, fraught with countless sorrows, almost callously, indifferent to pleasure or pain



COY KARELIAN CHILDHOOD

In a village of Karelia dwells this fair-haired baby girl—a typical young Russian of the North, and the sunshine and pride of a humble moujik home

Opera is another form of entertainment which gave pleasure to all classes. In Petrograd there was a People's Palace, built by the Tsar Nicholas II., where the famous operas, Russian and foreign, could be heard for a few pence, and sometimes famous singers, too. The best Russian plays were acted here as well, and thoroughly appreciated. Indeed, the Russians, notwithstanding their backwardness in the political sense, are well ahead of the other European nations and of the Americans in the sphere of art. They love colour and melody and movement. They take an intuitive delight in beauty, though, when you see their homes, this is a fact that is sometimes hard to believe.

Plays and acting in Russia are both very good and very bad. At the Art Theatre in Moscow and at one or two theatres in Petrograd the performances

PARTY OF PICTURESQUE PRIZEWINNERS IN A RUSSIAN NATIONAL COSTUME COMPETITION

Each garbed in the characteristic costume of her particular province, these peasant girls are the pick of a large company of country folk who have donned the attire peculiar to their respective localities and assembled at Viatka as candidates for the prizes in a national costume competition. Despite the deeds of violence which have laid waste the countryside and destroyed the peace of Russia, Russian peasant women have not desisted from their homely pursuits and, in the midst of a world seething with chaotic strife, simply and tranquilly engage in such village industries as the unsettled conditions will allow

GROUP OF HARDY YOUNG TAMBOV LAND-WOMEN PLEDGED TO THE RUSSIAN SOIL

Little over sixty years ago the fathers and grandfathers of these finely built peasants were bowed under the heavy yoke of serfdom. Regarded as simple beasts of burden whose duty it was to perform a certain amount of manual labour, their condition was little better than that of the African slave. Though emancipation, introduced by Alexander II. in 1861, vastly improved the lives of some ten million Russian peasants, it did not destroy their affection for the soil, and among the peasants of the Tambov province there exists a genuine zest for landwork which, in normal times, had its reward in well stocked granaries

Photo, Lieut.-Col. A. P. Wavell

came near perfection The Art Theatre, in particular, by the cleverness of its company, and even more by the sympathetic skill with which plays were "produced," held easily the first place in the world

Outside this and a very few other theatres, however, Russian acting was unnatural and amateurish Good plays were scarce The commercial managers relied mainly upon translations from French and English farces, or from German dramas Production was haphazard, scenery poor, and the performers usually over-acted It was the discipline of the Art Theatre and the State Theatres which made the difference between them and the rest

Comparing great things with small, we find this same lack of discipline at the root of many features in the Russian character which separate it from the common character of the Western peoples Under serfdom the Russians were subject to tyranny, not always harsh, sometimes kindly and paternal, but on the whole inclining to the severe

The discipline of serfdom was too severe but when it was abolished, no other kind of discipline took its place The rule of the officials and the police bore hardly upon anyone who showed himself to be working or even hoping for a change of system It was hard upon the poor and lowly at such times as they came into collision with it But it could not implant in the nation a spirit of discipline (as the German bureaucracy did) for the reason that it was utterly undisciplined itself

A great part of the time of officials was taken up by intrigues against one another They had no more respect for authority and order than the mass of the population They allowed laws to be broken and ordinances to be defied

CULTURED FINGERS OF AN UNCULTURED PEASANTRY

The art of Russian peasant needlework is admirably portrayed in the costumes of these four matrons of Simbirsk Though their intellect has suffered not a little from the lack of education, their powers of imagination and artistic taste are well developed, and fingers which have never learnt to wield the pen, work out, in coloured silks and cottons, exquisite designs of unparalleled beauty and delicacy

HARVEST HOME WITH THE COUNTRY-FOLK OF TAMBOV

Early autumn sees the peasants active in the fields, cutting the corn with sickles, binding it into sheaves, and stacking the sheaves into shocks. Long lines of women and girls, gaily clad in their bright cottons, intersect the wide expanse of golden grain; and among them are many whose fine physique betokens the robust health that usually accompanies life in the open air

Photo, Lieut.-Col. A. P. Wavell

so long as they could make something out of it. When permission was applied for to build or make a road or put down water pipes, or construct a factory, there was a scramble for bribes. It was hard to find out all those who felt themselves entitled to share in the distribution. If anyone was forgotten, the whole business was liable to be held up.

Besides this, the conflict between authorities was so tiresome and protracted that it was usual to do the work first and then invite the officials concerned to inspect the plans and the building at the same time. Sometimes improvements would remain unsanctioned for a very long time. In the Government offices under the Tsars confusion and muddle reigned

It was a common thing for officials to ask for presents, for cigarettes if they thought nothing more valuable could be extorted, promising to see that the giver's business went through quickly. If an official said to you, "Come to my house where we can talk more privately," that meant he intended to propose that you should do something handsome for him. When they were well bribed, they put a good deal of energy into earning their money. Without that incentive they scarcely ever

TRANQUIL SCENE OF RUSSIAN RURAL BEAUTY HARVESTING THE HAY-CROPS ON A COUNTRY ESTATE

Before the Soviet Government abolished private ownership of land the country places were dotted with summer houses or datchas of the town gentry. Many of these estates comprised a fair acreage of arable and forest land, in the midst of which stood the datcha—usually built of wood in simple style except for the ornamental woodwork of the verandas. Very pleasant were these dwellings far removed from the turmoil of town life and surrounded by the ineffable charm of the remote countryside, where nature's exuberant generosity clothed meadow and wood with an unlimited profusion of flower and berry.

Photo Florence Farmborough

CARRYING GIFTS FROM THE FOREST, A NEVER-FAILING FRIEND

From the day he is born and laid in a wooden cradle until the day he dies and is placed in a wooden coffin the Russian woodsman is surrounded by the influence of the forest From it he draws his livelihood, his house platter, and spoon are of wood wood bakes his bread warms his home, the tree of the forest the pivot on which his whole life revolves

Photo Georg Haeckel

LIGHT HEARTS AND WILLING HANDS IN THE HAY-FIELDS OF RUSSIA

The Russian country is a delight to the eye in harvest time, when the ingathering of the abundant crops, for Russia was one of the world's largest granaries before the Great War, brings numberless workers—clad in the gay colours so dear to the peasant heart—into the fields, there to spend many happy hours wielding sickle and rake amid the delicious scents of warm ripe vegetation

Photo, Florence Farmborough

showed any initiative or enterprise. They had no encouragement to do more than follow the routine of their department, a routine which had very likely been followed for half a century or more.

The lack of discipline in Government offices was not noticeable as a rule in those of private firms. Many of these were German and therefore managed their affairs in an orderly

found necessary in other countries. Sometimes there would be a longer delay than usual; then one discovered that the documents were lying unheeded by the elbow of some clerk whose duty it was to initial or date stamp them. It was a good plan to follow cheque and cheque-book round, so that each person who handled them could see the owner waiting. This had a marked effect in quickening things up.

EVERYDAY LIFE IN AN IZBA SURROUNDED BY PENURY

The poor hut is little more than a hovel, and of home comfort there is none. In such wretched squalor despair must surely have the upper hand, yet the moujik's pessimism is tempered by thankfulness for the rude roof overhead and the crust of black bread which keeps himself and family alive; and he takes fortune's buffets with an indifference almost dignified in its Oriental fatalism.

way. It was amusing in some of the banks to see baskets of buns passed round in the middle of the morning, when glasses of tea were served also, and to watch all the jaws of all the clerks working while they added up columns or made entries in ledgers. But bank business was done in an orderly, if unhasting fashion.

It took the best part of half an hour to cash a cheque. There were precautions to be taken which are not

Another peculiarity in Russian banks is the use of the abacus, an arrangement of wires in a frame with coloured balls on them. The click of these is heard incessantly in Russian places of business. This is one of a number of features in Russian life which suggest the East. It is an Oriental trait, for example, to submit to authority so far as is prudent, and to remain undisciplined wherever authority cannot, or does not think it worth

RUSSIAN FORESTER'S QUIVERFUL OF THRIVING YOUNG LIFE

They belong to the forest whence come all their health, wealth, and happiness The great mortality among town children is unknown in their region where children spring up and thrive like young trees, versed to the finger tips in forest lore, and able to track the rabbit to its burrow, the fox to its hole, and to recognize the imprint of wolf and bear in the soft soil

HUMBLE HEADQUARTERS OF AFFECTION AND HOSPITALITY

The izba, though often of a small and crude type, is the centre of the moujik's affection Despite the difficulty to make ends meet, his large heartedness—an outstanding peasant quality—has suffered not at all, and it has been truly said that " the Russian peasants are the poorest and most illiterate people in Europe, and, withal, the least discontented, the most hospitable, and the most charitable "

Photos Florence Farmborough

while to penetrate The West draws no distinction between the people and the Government The people make the Government In a sense they are the Government The last has not arrived at this yet The people regard the Government as a force outside them and above them Therefore in their dealings with it they always keep something back They preserve a certain independence of thought and of action too They will obey the officials if they must, but they will deceive, or even defy them if they can

That was the Russian attitude towards the Tsardom and it will probably be the same towards any Government, so far as the mass of the nation is concerned for a long time to come

There have been two instants in their recent history when people and Government might have been united and for a time at any rate kept together as a single unit instead of two opposing interests One instant was that in which Father Gapon led a crowd to the Winter Palace during the miscalled Revolution" of 1905 6 That crowd was not in an angry or menacing mood They hoped the Little Father would come out and promise to remove their grievances Instead the Tsars advisers ordered troops to fire on the crowd killed many and sent the rest away sadly convinced that nothing could be hoped from the old system

The other moment which if it had been seized and advantage taken of it might have spread a feeling of solidarity through all classes was the moment following the Revolution of 1917 It was a time of immense and amazing happiness So a Russian who lived through those days in Petrograd described it 'The people were happy in a good, sweet way as though each had a solemn light in his soul, as they have during Easter prayer Everybody looked like that people of any class rich or poor Never did I dream there could be such friendliness in the world And I thought, 'Something great has really come Now a new force is in the world' It was one of those miracles which come to nations only at times of spiritual tension and uplifting joy 'If only such a mighty force could be guided right,' I thought, and spread all over Russia, out to every town and village!'"

To the older nations with their cynical minds, their disillusioned outlook, such a mood seems hardly

FARM HANDS IN AGRICULTURAL KAZAN

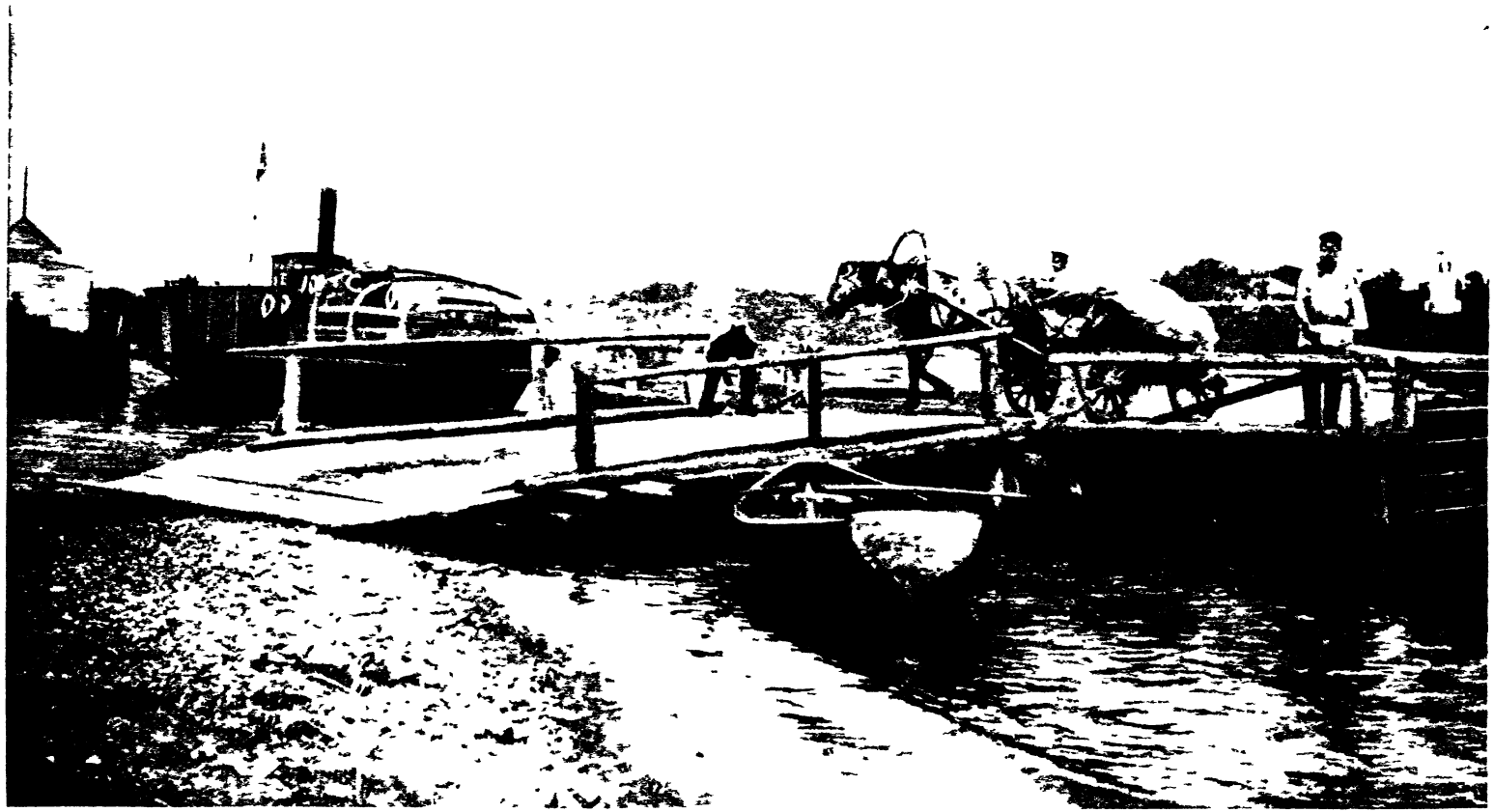
Physical perfection is not theirs, but self reliance thrift, and industry have stamped them as some of Russia's best workers at home or in the fields, and common sense and shrewd intelligence make up for their lack of schooling

BRAWNY BACKWOODSMAN OF NORTHERN RUSSIA AND HIS TIMBER HOME
In the domestic arrangements of this brawny feller of trees the number of articles not made of wood is reduced to a minimum An inspection of his hut shows it to be put together, though roughly yet with not a little skill During the summer the logs he has cut are floated down the northern rivers to Lake Ladoga and so to Petrograd
Photo P Brownlow Hughes

possible Nobody who knows the Slav temperament will doubt that what this Russian and many others related was true Whatever the Slav accomplishes must be carried through as the result of spiritual exaltation Perhaps that is why his excellent beginnings are apt to lead so often to disappointment Those who are capable of rising to the heights are capable also of sinking to the depths

The capacity for belief in the idealist nature of the Revolution was truly delightful, but it did not last long Politicians killed it If it had been possible for the people to be guided by men who were themselves idealists, men who shared the "immense and amazing happiness," the history of Russia might have been altogether different But, to quote again the Russian observer's narrative, "the real things were left undone The Government did nothing but talk"

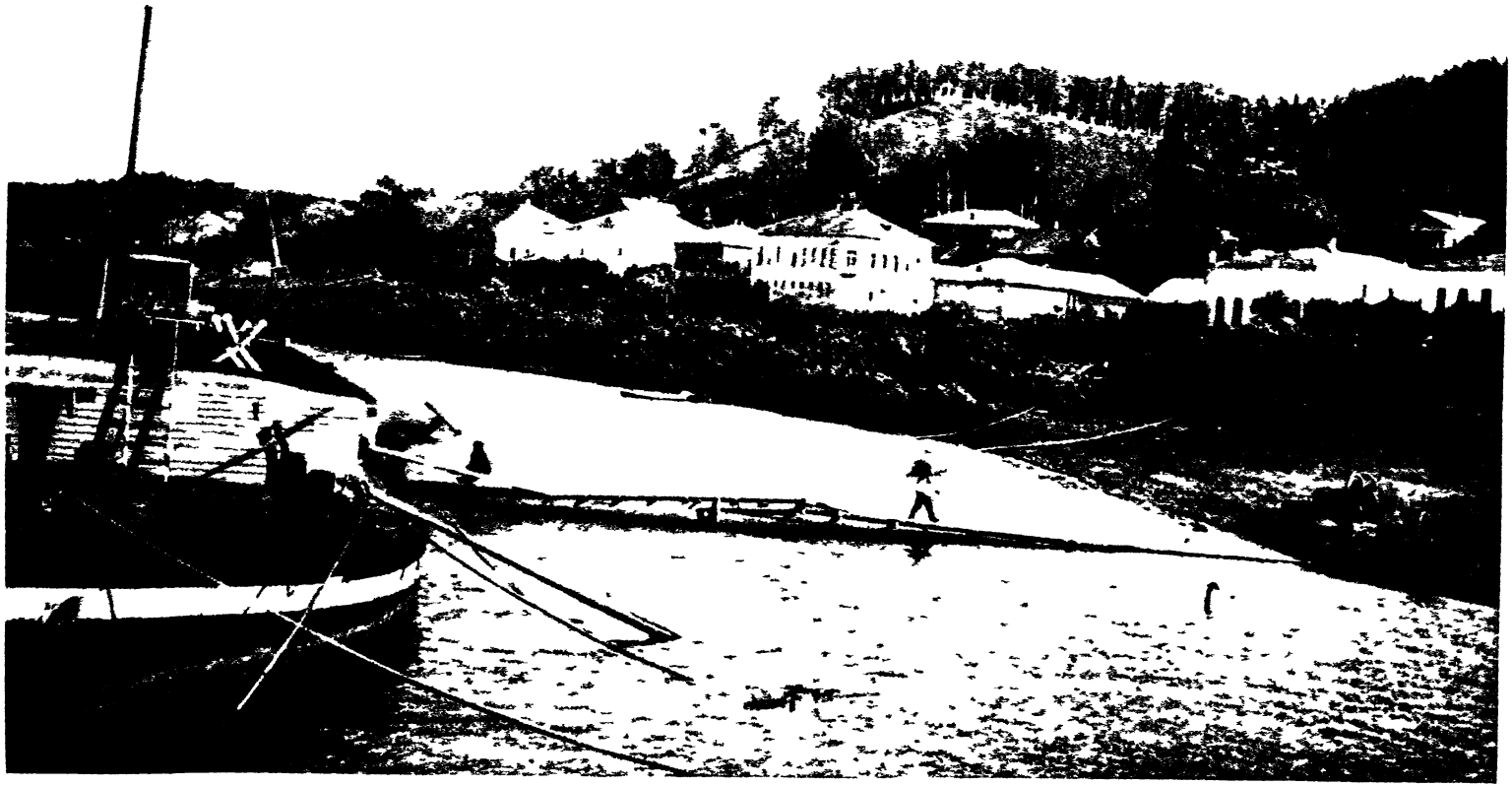
The people wanted peace and they wanted land If they had been assured that they should have land, they would have gone on with the war, much as they longed to end it But on the land question most of the new rulers sided with the landlords They never succeeded in winning the confidence of the people, and after they had abolished discipline in the army they had no chance of carrying on the government



OLD-WORLD HORSE AND CART FERRY ON THE UPPER REACHES OF RUSSIA'S FAMOUS RIVER

Rising in a lake in the Valdai plateau of Ever the Volga passes in its long course of nearly 2 40 mile many large t wns and enters the Caspian Sea through a d ta near Astrakhan The river is nav gable for nearly the who e of its c urse and many steamers boats and ratts ply it waters Formerly b ats were drag d up the river by burlaki, or river workmen thousands of wh m were employed in the strenuous callin This method of trac ion has disappear d but t e plaintive songs of these hard working people are still fondly cherished and sung t roughout the en th and breadth of the country

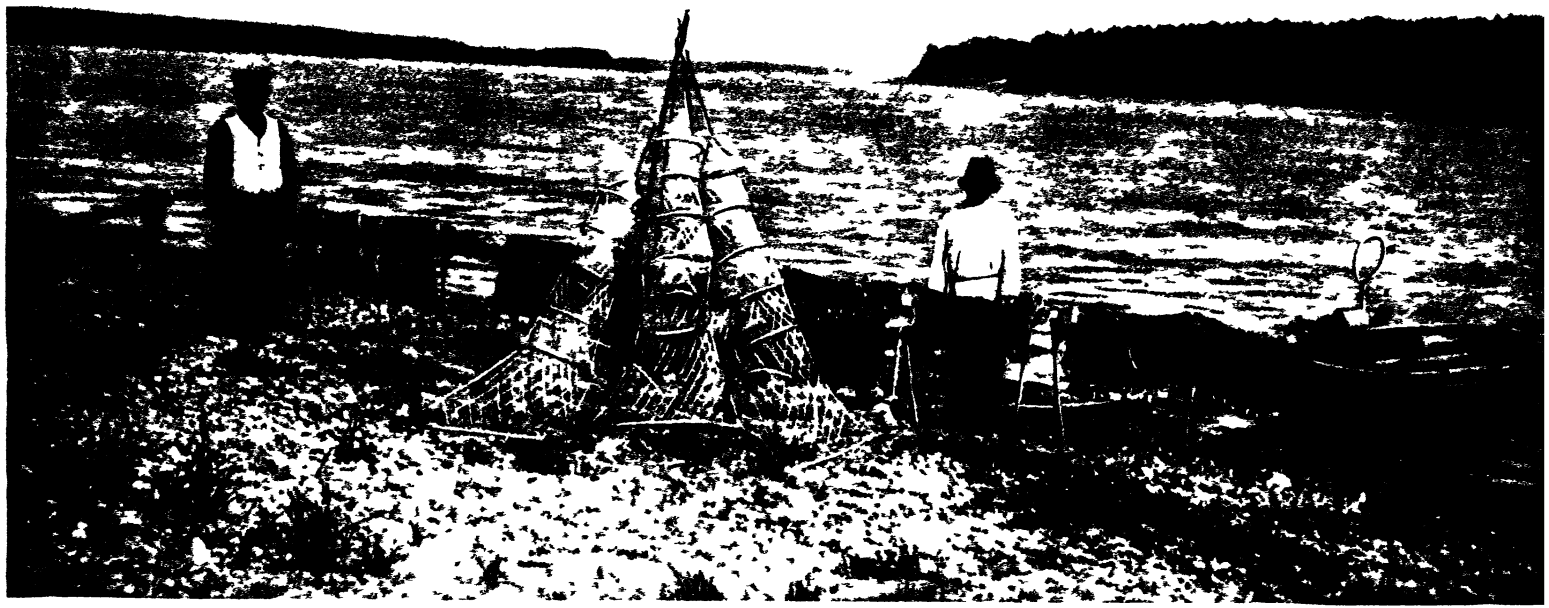
Photo Florence Farmborough



UNLOADING CARGO FROM A BARGE ON THE VOLGA, THE LARGEST RIVER IN RUSSIA AND THE LONGEST IN EUROPE

Matoushka Volga, or little Mother Volga, as the great river is known, is regarded with a deep and genuine affection by all Russians The scenery on its banks, though beautiful in some parts, especially Nijni Novgorod to Samara, is nowhere very imposing, but the simple landscapes are full of variety, and monotonous marshy plains alternate with sombre woods of pine and fir, and green meadows stretch round towns and villages, the houses and church cupolas of which arrest the eye with their bright colouring The traffic on this river highway is considerable, the chief freights being grain, petroleum, and salt, carried in large barges

Photo Florence Farmborough



FISHERMEN OF THE VOLGA TENDING THEIR TACKLE ON THE RIVER'S BANK

Fish abound in the waters of the Volga, particularly sturgeon carp, and pike, while roach trout bream lamprey, sterlet tench, and many other fresh water species are to be found in large numbers On the fertile banks of the river the fishing folk live, a harmless, contented people devoted to the river which supplies them with their livelihood, and familiar with its every aspect The fishing and caviare industries were formerly large and important, but degenerated in recent years owing to the pollution of the river by the oil fuel, masut, or petroleum refuse, used by many of the steamers

Photo, Florence Farmborough

without confidence, by the old autocratic methods. So they fell, and with them disappeared the hope of a united nation. The way was left open for men of extreme theory, men who were idealists, it is true, but also iconoclasts, who were for making a clean cut between the past and the new age.

Against them were soon banded together all who feared for their property, all who sought to win back their privileges and places in the ruling caste, all whose habits of thought impelled them to resist change. The moment so big with possibility had been allowed to slip by. There followed the usual episodes of revolution.

Now it may be a century, as it was in France, before a stable and permanent order is established in Russia, before the Oriental conception of government loses its hold.

Privileges of the Schveitsars

Oriental, again, were the troops of servants who ministered to the Russians of the comfortable class. In their country houses especially there was an embarrassment of servitors. In the cities the difficulty of housing them was greater. They slept in any odd corner, often in the kitchen, often in passages.

The most dignified of the servants were the hall porters or Schveitsars (Swiss) as they were called. They wore uniform in Government offices, most ornamental uniform, and they were well paid. Their duty was to relieve guests of their hats, overcoats, and goloshes. Everyone wears goloshes. The officers have special ones, with brass-bound openings at the back for their spurs. When it thaws the streets run with water and liquid mud. Even when the snow is dry and hard goloshes are needed, for the surface is so cold that the feet would be half frozen if they were not protected by rubber as well as by leather soles.

To enter any house wearing hat or goloshes is bad manners anywhere. But in Russia it is considered equally impolite to go into a place of business without taking off your overcoat. Nor is it only this which makes it necessary to take it off. The cold is so intense outside and the heat so great inside that it would be dangerous not to shed one's extra garments on entering a building and to resume them on leaving. This becomes a costly habit if one is paying many visits. For every time hat and coat and goloshes are left with the Schveitsar a tip must be given.

The Dvornik or Yardman

In private residences where there is no manservant of this dignified description, guests tip the maid who helps them on with their coats as they leave. This is a regular practice. Servants count upon it as part of their wages. Employers will sometimes say, "We entertain a great deal" as an inducement to a maid to take lower wages than she has asked for.

The yardman (dvornik) is the equivalent of the French concierge. He lives in a small lodge or on the ground floor of a block of flats, and he used to be responsible to the police for a knowledge of the goings-out and the comings-in of all who lived in the block. He is also supposed to keep the yard clean, to carry up coals to the flats, to receive messages, and so on. The dvorniks were a decent and obliging class, with exceptions; it was by the exceptions that they were too often hastily judged. If they were not tipped as generously as they thought they ought to be at holiday times, they would use their opportunities of being disagreeable, but this only happened to mean or thoughtless tenants.

Black Beetles "for Luck!"

Russian cooks are artists in a limited sphere. They can all make delicious soups. They can cook the small game-birds of which Russians are so fond to perfection. Their pancakes are excellent when they take trouble over them. They have next to no invention, but they do understand flavours. Apart

JOVIAL CONTENTMENT DRIFTING DOWN THE TIDE WITH THE DÉBRIS OF THE FALLEN FOREST

Large quantities of timber are floated at certain times of the year down the Volga On his log raft the woodman is quite at home and has fashioned for himself a little cabin from brushwood and sacking which provides a modest though serviceable shelter against the scorching rays of the noonday sun and the current slowly bears him and his raft—attached to many other logs—to their destination He finds the long journey neither monotonous nor irksome and will often beguile the time with singing for the Volga stands for much that is poetical to the Russian peasant and many famous songs are dedicated to the great river

Photo Florence Farmborough

from their cooking, however, they are difficult to deal with. They bring from the villages whence they nearly all come queer habits and beliefs which at times are apt both to astonish and enrage their employers.

For example, a new cook came to a flat occupied by some acquaintance of mine. Up to then no black beetles had been seen in it. From the moment of her arrival they began to intrude everywhere. It was supposed at first to be a coincidence, but in a little while the cook fell out with one of the other servants, who then disclosed the cause of the sudden plague. The cook had brought a box of black beetles with her from her last place "for luck!"

Oriental Aspect of Russian Streets

Eastern are the strings of carts (in the winter, sleighs) which are a feature of Russian streets. The nose of each horse just touches the back of the cart in front of it, so, if you are waiting to cross the road, you have to wait some time. This seems to me to be a survival of the caravan habit. It gives the streets an Oriental aspect which is heightened by the crowded state of those parts of cities where the masses do their shopping. The Syennaya in Petrograd, the chief market of the place, was always full. The crowd loitered and jostled and gazed just like a crowd in an Eastern bazaar. The pavements were uneven enough and dirty enough to keep up the illusion. The costumes of the people, too, lent colour to the fancy. Nowhere in Europe could be seen so many picturesque varieties of dress.

Whatever else they may be, the Russians are certainly not commonplace. It is this, combined with their friendly nature and the strain of otherworldliness in them, which explains the affection felt for them and their country by all who have lived in it. They provoke irritation in those who are accustomed to the cut-and-dried, mechanical orderliness of Western life, but they soon wipe out the memory of it by their charm and sincerity. There are no half measures in your sentiments towards them: you either want to kick them or to put your arm round their necks!

Music, Morals, and the Moralists

Listen to Russian village songs, or to the marching songs of the soldiers, and you will recognize in them the melancholy of the East. I have heard melodies that were pure Arab in cadence and monotonous fascination. Whether the morals of Russia as well as her music must be ascribed to Eastern influence, I leave to moralists to settle. Certainly they are different from those which form the standard of conduct in the Western world. One odious vice is absent, the vice of hypocrisy, and that seems to balance a great deal on the other side of the account. Relations which elsewhere are concealed are in Russia maintained quite openly. What individuals choose to do is not considered to be the business of anyone but themselves so long, of course, as they do not injure others.

Such a view of conduct strikes British minds usually as not only wrong, but scarcely credible. That a Russian housemistress should not be scandalised when her cook tells her that she and her supposed husband are not married since they could not afford the large fee which the priest asked for performing the ceremony, appears to the British or American house-mistress to border on atheism. Yet that is a not uncommon story, and there is seldom any reason to disbelieve it.

The Shadow of the Secret Police

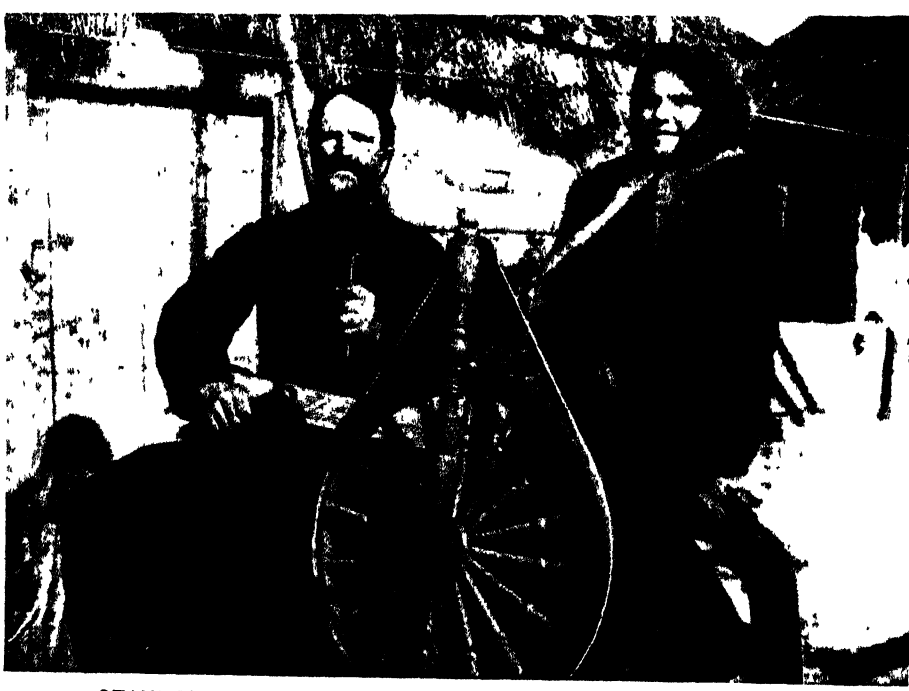
Another matter in which Russian opinion is quite unlike that of most other countries outside the Oriental influence has been mentioned already: bribery.

It was not original sin, however, which accounted for the lenient view which Russians took of bribery. They knew that a great many officials and

functionaries were so badly paid that they could not live without it. It was part of the tradition of the Government service. One often heard quoted a saying attributed to the Empress Catherine about a man who had remained poor and honest in that service. "We brought him to the water and the fool refuses to drink." Successive generations of rulers accepted this tradition and passed it on.

Sometimes the system of government in Russia was called autocracy. By others it was spoken of as bureaucracy. But neither the monarch nor the officials really governed the country. The most appropriate title for the muddled and incoherent attempts which were made at governing by authorities always at loggerheads with one another, always intriguing against one another, would have been anarchy—no rule. The most powerful man in the empire was the Minister of the Interior, or the hidden puller of wires who was behind him. For by the Minister of the Interior the secret police were controlled, and it is not too much to say that the secret police could deprive any Russian of his liberty without giving any pretext

All that Ministers of the Interior used their power for was to crush every aspiration for the gradual development of a constitutional system. Their aim and the aim of officials as a caste apart from the mass of the nation, was to keep things as they were. It was the fear of this mysterious organization known as the Ochrana, it was the all-pervading atmosphere in Russian life of suspicion and distrust, that held people back from joining together in a movement towards reform. They would not have been deterred by violence. Open legal proceedings would not have alarmed them. What did effectually paralyze them was the knowledge that at any moment their



STAUNCHLY ATTACHED TO OLD-FASHIONED INSTITUTIONS

They belong to the conservative, loyal-hearted peasant class of the Russian interior, and despise the communistic fanaticism that has wrecked their country. Rigorously adhering to old customs, with an unwavering faith in the Divine wisdom, their nature is simple and trusting, always more prone to good than to evil, and they stand for some of the best and truest types of the Russian race

Photo, Underwood Press Service

From the Editor's Desk—continued

In your editorial pages one frequently reads what are not fair criticisms. I would like to take this opportunity of stating that all whom I have spoken to re arding your publications agree with me that they are unequalled in quality and price. Such critic referred to above look for faults even if the Archangel Gabriel had edited the works.

Wishing you every success in this and subsequent ventures,

Yours very truly,

L. C. NIELSON.

Appreciation in Foreign Countries

THAT is a very pleasant letter to receive, and a testimonial whose value will not be questioned by anyone. It is a matter of real satisfaction to the publishers of this work that their efforts to provide the highest class of educational and useful literature in an inexpensive but attractive form should have met with so much appreciation. My readers may also be interested to know that our "Universal Encyclopedia" is having a most remarkable sale in its original form in Japan, where it is published by the firm of Maruzen, Tokyo, the most important publishing house in the country. It is the diffusion of such works as these in foreign lands where there already exists a considerable knowledge of English that is helping steadily to make our mother tongue a real world-language.

Fiume Once More

MY contributor who wrote the article on Fiume, which readers will remember produced a considerable amount of [illegible] in various quarters, and concerning [illegible] I have already printed some notes, will at least be pleased to read the following letter, recently received, which, in view of having published the others, I am finding space for here:

Dear Sir,—I was interested to note your remarks in No. 34, with reference to Fiume.

I myself was most certainly delighted with the article in question. Having spent a matter of a year or so in Fiume on the Headquarters' Staff of the Battalion of Occupation (British), I was able to make a close study of the life and ways of the city.

I am afraid any writer would have great difficulty in giving a faithful representation of the ways and customs of the peoples mentioned, for it is nearly impossible to conceive the cosmopolitan nature of the city of Fiume, which comprises Italians, Germans, Austrians, Hungarians, Serbians, Yugo-Slavs, with a sprinkling of other nationalities. The ways and customs of each of those peoples have been faithfully depicted in the various parts of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS.

I trust you will find a corner in your "Editor's Desk" for the insertion of this little tribute to the article much criticised by the Five Students.

Yours, etc., M. A. DANIELS.

South View, Mexborough.

Our Comprehensive Survey of Russia

OUR comprehensive survey of Russian life, character, and history—except for the special chapter on Siberia which will appear in Part 42 of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS—will be brought to a conclusion in Part 40, to be published on Tuesday, September 11. Following the general description of the country by Mr. Hamilton Fyfe, Mr. F. A. McKenzie writes on Life in Soviet Russia, and Sir Bernard Pares, whose high qualifications were the subject of a note in these columns in Part 38, tells the fascinating story of the great Slav state from its beginnings to the present day. I should like to draw special attention to the photographs of the Real Russia with which we are enabled to illustrate these articles. Fully sixty per cent. of these photographs have not been published before, and for most of these we are indebted to Miss Florence Farmborough.

Supplementary Features of our Next Part

IN addition to the high attractiveness, and I think I may justly add the importance, of the Russian section, Part 40 will contain four chapters devoted respectively to Salvador, by Mr. Hamilton Fyfe and Mr. Percy F. Martin; Samoa, by Mr. Frank Fox; San Marino, by Commendatore Melvill A. Jamieson; and Santo Domingo, by Mr. Percy F. Martin. These also will be illustrated by many original photographs; those of the people of Samoa being in the popular photogravure.

Of Special Interest to Scottish Readers

READERS north of the Tweed and the many Scotsmen resident in "foreign parts" who are among the subscribers to PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS will find in Part 41, ready on Tuesday, September 25, a very full account of their native land. Not since I first opened Dean Ramsay's famous "Reminiscences of Scottish Life and Character" have I experienced so much delight as in reading the characteristically racy, reliable, and intimate setting forth of the leading traits of his countrymen that Mr. Hamilton Fyfe has written for this work; nor do I know of any historical work that contains so much well-balanced and authoritative information as will be found by our readers in the summary given by Sir George Douglas, Bart., of his country's romantic history. Of the seventy pages or more devoted to Scotland, something like fifty will be devoted to illustrations from a carefully selected series of photographs, a large number of which have been specially secured for PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS.

Part 40 PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS will be on sale everywhere Tuesday, Sept. 11

HE KNOWS—DO YOU?

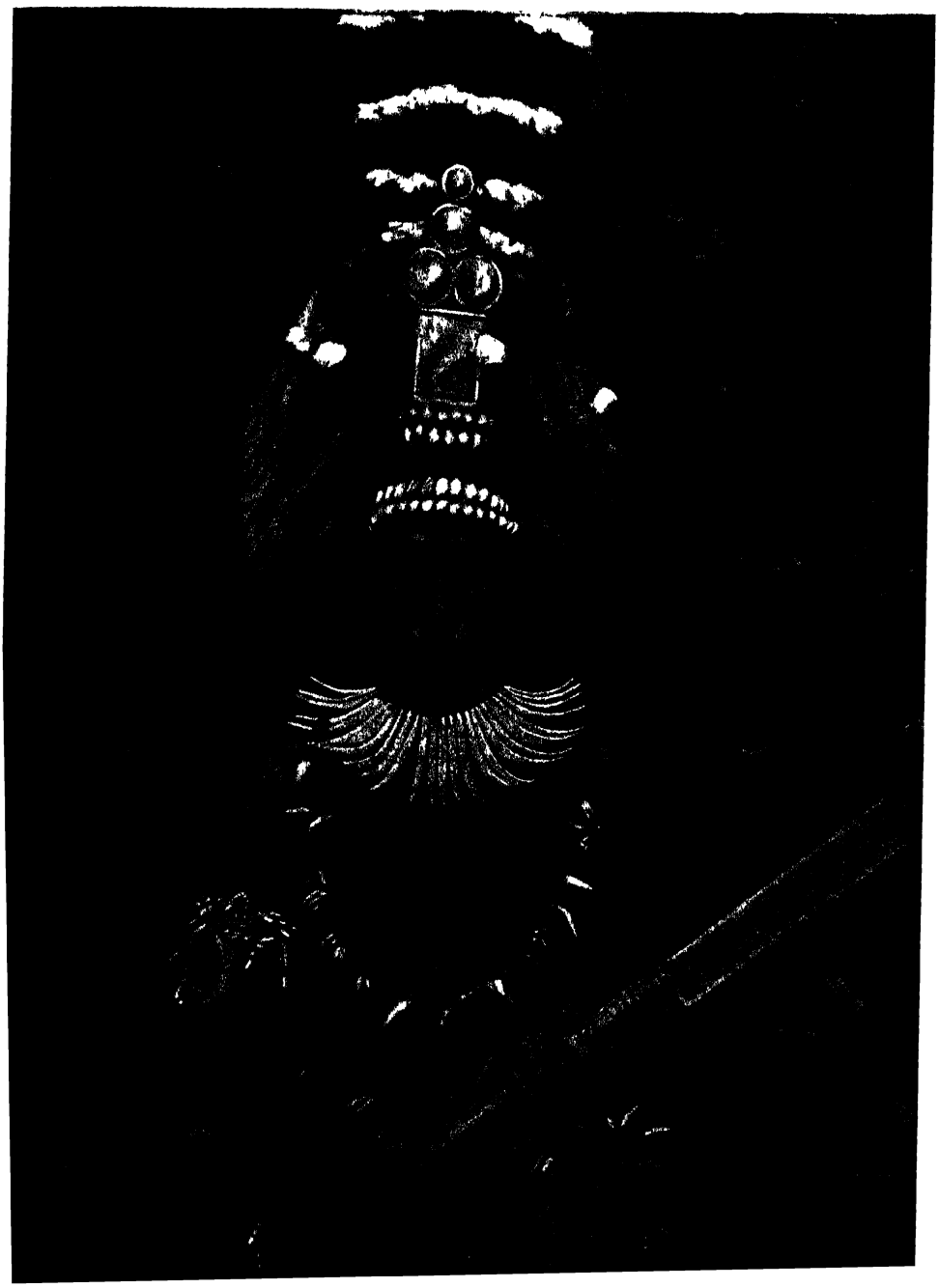
He Reads The Children's Newspaper

Ready Everywhere Every Friday

Printed and published every alternate Tuesday by the Proprietors, The Amalgam[illegible] (1922) Ltd., The Fleetway House Farringdon Street, London, E C 4 Sole Agents for South Africa The Central News Agency, Ltd. Sole Agents for Australasia: Messrs Gordon & Gotch, Ltd., and for Canada The Imperial News Co, Ltd (Canada). Subscription Rates: Inland and Abroad, 1s 5d per copy August 28th, 1923.

40 PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS

Edited by J.A.Hammerton



ACK NUMBERS OF 'PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS' CAN STILL BE HAI

Contents of this Part

RUSSIA I.	Genius and Simplicity of its People (con.)	12 *Photographs*	Hamilton Fyfe
II.	Life in Soviet Russia	15 *Photographs*	F. A. McKenzie
III.	Rise and Progress of the Great Slav State	2 *Illustrations*	Sir Bernard Pares
SALVADOR I.	A Vigorous Race in a Volcanic Land	10 *Photographs*	Hamilton Fyfe
II.	Four Centuries of Steady Evolution	1 *Illustration*	Percy F. Martin
SAMOA—	A Paradise of the South Seas	19 *Photographs*	Frank Fox
SAN MARINO—	People of a Tiny Republic	13 *Photographs*	M. A. Jamieson
SANTO DOMINGO I.	Islanders of the Caribbean	8 *Photographs*	Percy F. Martin
II.	Through Strife to Peace	1 *Illustration*	Percy F. Martin

PHOTOGRAVURE SECTIONS: SAMOAN ISLANDERS IN THEIR HALCYON HOME ***(9 Photographs)***
SAN MARINO: TOWERS, TOWN, AND PEOPLE ***(8 Photographs)***

COLOUR PLATE: Samoa: Island Warrior in Wartime Dress

From the Editor's Desk

THE FLEETWAY HOUSE, FARRINGDON STREET
LONDON E.C 4

WRITING recently to commend our companion publication, "Wonders of the Past," a correspondent in Amsterdam suggested that its plan of conveying a knowledge of history by describing culture rather than by amassing dates and recording wars was one that should be adopted in schools. In this connexion I am greatly gratified by the accumulation of evidence which shows that Harmsworth's educational publications are becoming increasingly popular with both teachers and pupils. For example, a Yorkshire teacher writes to me as follows:

> I wish you could see my collection of pictures which I have built up from the covers of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS. Before having my volumes bound I have taken off the covers and mounted them on white cardboard, thus forming a miniature picture gallery on the walls of my class-room. I should like to add that your publication is of the utmost value to me, and my class in addition gets the benefit of your splendid articles, which have been the foundation of numerous lessons to them.

卐

The Peoples of South America

ONE of my Welsh readers, who writes from Rhondda, and is interested in South America, asks if I propose devoting a section of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS to that progressive and remarkably interesting part of the Western world. As spokesmen for the Government at Westminster would say, "the answer is in the negative." And for the sufficient reason that all the peoples of the great American continent are being described and illustrated in our pages independently. Thus, under the heading of "The British Empire" we have included British Guiana and British Honduras. Canada has had one big section and the United States will have one also. There have been distinctive chapters on Bolivia, Brazil, Chile, Colombia, Costa Rica, Cuba, Ecuador, Guatemala, Nicaragua, Panamá, Paraguay, Peru, Salvador, and Santo Domingo. So far all the states of South America, save Uruguay and Venezuela—to be described and illustrated later have been dealt with. I know of no other work in which South America and its peoples are so well represented as they will be in the completed PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS.

卐

Nine More Fortnightly Parts

THIS brings me to another correspondent's question. "T. A. S." (Paddington) wishes to know how many more Parts will be issued before our work is complete. We are now approaching the end of Volume VI. The seventh and final volume will conclude

[*Continued on page iii. of this wrapper*

he entire contents of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS are protected by copyright in all countries signatory to the Berne Convention
The literary and most of the pictorial contents are copyrighted in the United States of America

houses might be searched without warrant, and they themselves taken to prison or ordered to live in Siberia, or, even worse perhaps, might be kept under constant surveillance, their letters opened, their movements shadowed, their business interfered with

Nothing illustrated the anarchical character of the system more vividly than the strange, comical methods of the secret police In order to persuade other authorities that they were indispensable, they made a practice of fomenting plots and disturbances Many of the most influential among the revolutionaries were in their pay Numbers of agents were employed to become revolutionaries so as to find out what was going on, and also to suggest activities if the genuine firebrands were not burning fiercely enough Some of these agents became revolutionaries in earnest, yet remained in the service of the Ochrana, and betrayed its intentions The operations of the secret police were carried on in a miasma of deception, treachery, cynical brutality, and scarcely believable muddle-headedness

Only a people with an Oriental readiness to bow to power could have endured such a crazy engine of despotism Could Russia have thrown up such men as Mazzini, Garibaldi, Cavour, they would probably have been able to rouse the latent energy of the nation, and to force upon the officials those changes which were indispensable to safety But no such men appeared Russia is suffering for this, and will suffer for a long time to come

In normal times the Russian is Oriental, too, in his business methods

First, it is necessary to establish friendly relations with him Talk about anything save business finds him responsive At the end of the first visit he says "Come again" Now it is politic to chaff him a little No one enjoys a joke more. When he has laughed himself into a good humour he may be asked to lunch or dine The more elaborate the entertainment, the better After this the next meeting will probably see negotiations started and a big order booked

THE LABOURER IN THE FIELDS
Many of the Russian agricultural districts are too poor to provide even horses for the reaping Peasant labour being cheaper and more plentiful, is rated lower
Photo, Lieut Col A P Wavell

In Moscow are to be found merchants of the most characteristic Russian type Many of them have begun life as peasants, or are but one generation removed from the village Shrewd in affairs, a match for the most insinuating of commercial travellers, they have little knowledge of the world, and their minds

Copyrighted, 1922, by The Amalgamated Press (1922), Limited

move in a narrow circle. When they take a fancy to you, these Moscow men of business are magnificently hospitable. Their homes are luxuriously comfortable. Many of them have taste as well as riches, and spend profusely upon the decoration of their rooms. One founded the finest collection of Russian pictures, called after him the Tretiakov Gallery. Another turned his house into a museum of art and made his name, Shchukin, known to connoisseurs everywhere.

The younger generation of merchants have almost all been educated in the modern way. They go to the university when they leave the high school, sometimes to a German university. Often they return home with a distaste for business. If they enter the firms which their fathers have built up, they soon show impatience with the methods to which their fathers cling.

The educated Russian has mostly a contempt for Russian ways. Those who have travelled speak of their own country as backward, and even barbarous. They profess a keen desire to see it adopt the ways of the countries they have visited. As a rule this remains a desire; they do nothing towards its realization. But the younger men of business do frequently try to "modernise" their methods, and not infrequently come to grief in the process. Their ideas are all of "progress," but their education has not gone deep enough to make them see that sudden changes are risky, and that old-fashioned habits of business may be the only ones with which old-fashioned people can be at ease.

The educated Russian has vastly more information than the educated Englishman. He appears to be vastly more intelligent. He can talk upon many subjects about which the Englishman knows nothing. He takes all learning for his province, and knows a little about everything. The merchants, who are now almost of the past, had little

COOL SUMMER QUARTERS OF THE TOWN-BRED RUSSIAN

The Russians are traditionally enthusiastic lovers of the forest, and when possible, set up their houses in the very heart of Treeland. The site of this datcha has been well chosen, for the silver birch forest, no matter which the season, possesses unique beauty and charm, and this lovely, graceful tree has been an unending source of inspiration to Russian poets and landscape painters

Photo, Florence Farmborough

CLUMSY BUT SERVICEABLE SLEIGH OF THE RUSSIAN PEASANTRY

Sleighing is an essential mode of locomotion in Russia for nearly six months out of every twelve, when wheeled vehicles are useless owing to the thick snow which covers the entire length and breadth of the country. The sleighs of the peasantry are of various shapes and sizes, usually clumsy contrivances, but admirably fitted for the hard wear and tear to which they are subjected

Photo, Florence Farmborough

education in the sense of book-learning and wide information. They were often scarcely able to write their names or to read more than was absolutely necessary. The habit still obtains of painting upon the outsides of shops specimens of the goods that are sold within. A gaily-coloured bunch of vegetables is the greengrocer's sign, the butcher has a Noah's Ark-like ox; the fruiterer, bunches of grapes and red apples. These signs were as much needed by the merchants as by the mass of the people.

They formed a class apart, and had to pay taxes according to their status in that class. They used, within the memory of persons still living, to wear a distinctive costume, a coat something like a frock-coat, only tight round the neck, trousers tucked into high boots, a peaked cap. They let their beards grow, and cut their hair straight across at the back of the neck. Their business was done, for the most part, in tea-houses, and this practice has lingered on. There was in Petrograd, on the Nevski Prospekt, a tea-house of the modern type, where delicious cakes were displayed, and where coffee with whipped cream in the Viennese style could be had, as well as tea; here a great deal of business was done up to the time of the Revolution, and in every city or town some meeting-place of this character is sure to be found.

But in Petrograd a large proportion of the trade was in the hands of foreigners, Germans, Swedes, and English. The German was the readiest to adapt

TROOPERS OF A SOTNYA OF ORENBURG COSSACKS MEN WHO ARE FAMED FOR GLORIOUS ACHIEVEMENTS

For many centuries the Cossacks of Russia rendered valuable services to the state and won widespread fame as warriors Each man provided his horse, uniform and equipment, and in return received certain state privileges At home in their stanitza or village they made excellent farmers, but were ever ready to renounce the placid life of the agriculturist for the hard life of the soldier Astride their sturdy horses the Cossacks displayed marvellous dexterity in the Djigitovka, performing prodigies of equestrian skill with the long, slender lance and formidable nagaika—a short handled whip carried by every Cossack

Photo Florence Farmborough

himself to the ways of the country. He had a smart, well-ordered office, and he would do business there with any who cared to call upon him. But he was quite ready to fall in with the tea-house habit. His commercial travellers could speak Russian well; they were given discretion as to the terms they should allow. Those who wanted long credits, which in Russia are customary, got them.

conferred by the Tsar. The Foreign Office was under German management, that is to say, the management of Russians from the Baltic Provinces, who possessed the German virtues of order, honesty, and industry, and were of Teutonic sympathies. Germany could, if she had applied her energies to this task, instead of aiming at an impossible world-wide dominion, have made Russia

MEN WHOSE TRADITIONAL BRAVERY HAS NEVER FLAGGED

The Cossack orderly was an acquisition that no Russian officer ever underrated, for he was the personification of the indomitable pluck and endurance of his warlike race. Devoted to his master and his horses, upon which he lavished untold care and attention, he would follow doggedly through thick and thin, willing to endure every hardship, and, if need be, to sacrifice life itself

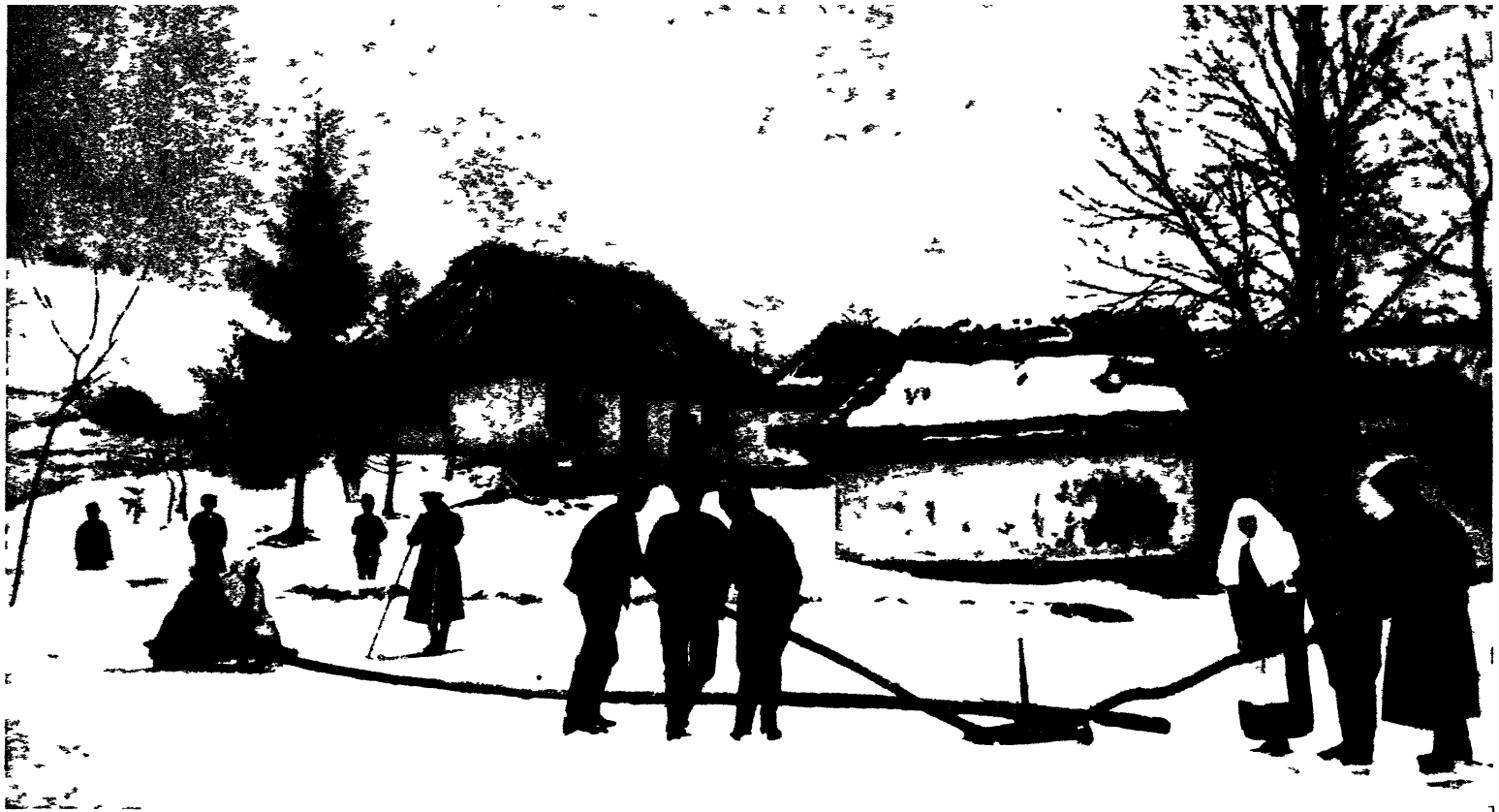
Photo, Florence Farmborough

Anyone who wanted something different from the firm's usual goods could rely upon being suited if it were possible to gratify his wish.

German influence on Russian trade was therefore strong. In most of the big shops of the big cities German was spoken. The notion that French was widely understood and talked was a stone of stumbling to many foreigners, who found that it was merely the language of diplomacy and diplomatic society. German etiquette was in force at court. German titles, such as Kammerherr, Kammerdiener, Kammerjunker, Stallmeister, Jägermeister, were

both her vassal and her milch-cow. Commercial penetration might have been followed by political alliance. The Russians might not have liked it, but they did not like many things which they, nevertheless, endured with a fatalistic shrug of their shoulders and a careless "Nitchevo."

The kindly and courteous side of the Russian character was seen more distinctly in Moscow than in Petrograd, for the reason that the ancient capital has remained truly Russian, while the newer capital built by Peter the Great became each year more cosmopolitan and never lost the Prussian air which



SOLDIERS PRACTISING A QUAINT WINTER PASTIME OF THE RUSSIAN PEASANTRY

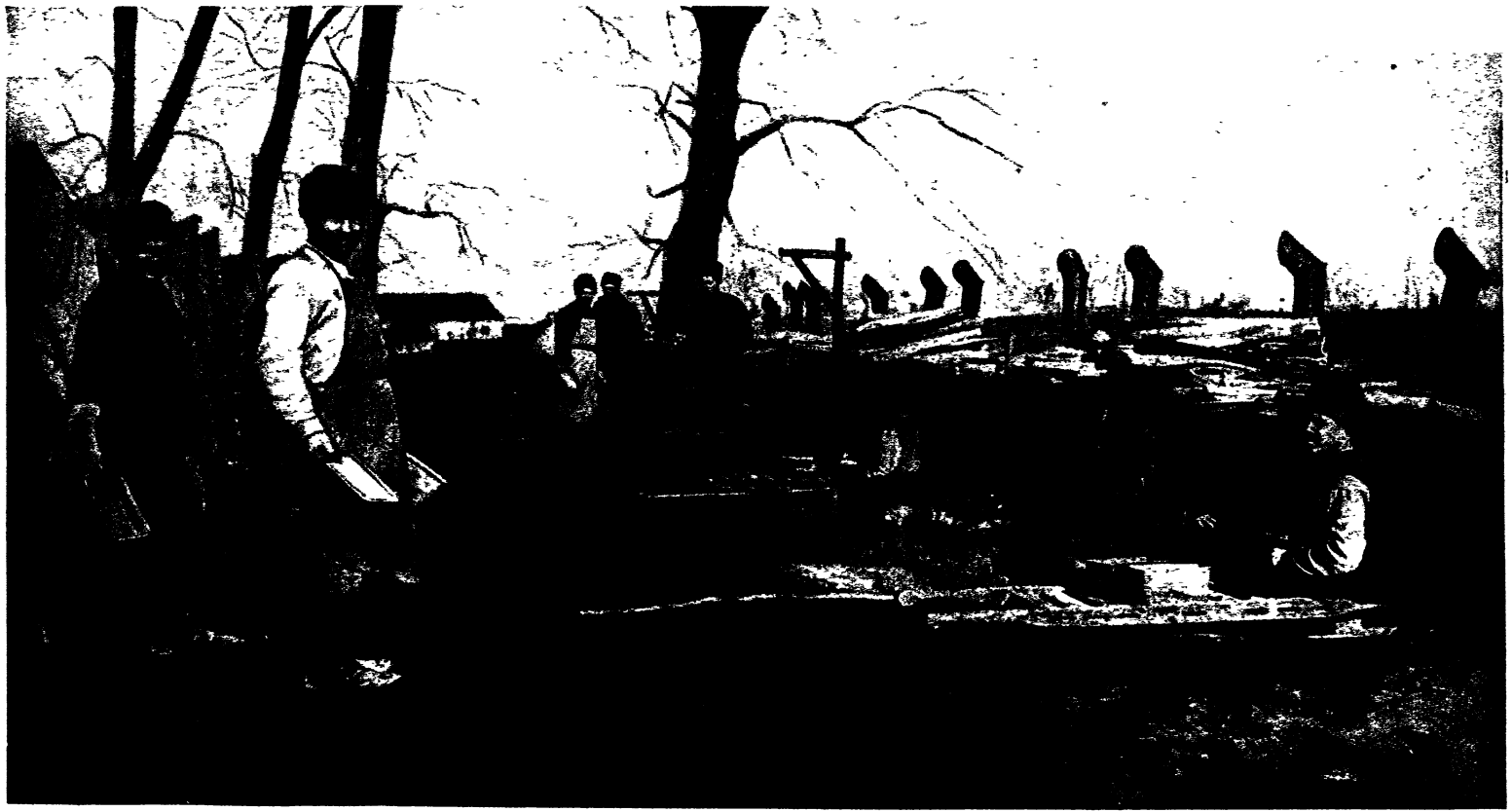
Virtually no games or recreations were provided for the Russian soldier who knew nothing of the fascination of cricket and football or other healthy strenuous outdoor sports, yet he was never at a loss for pastimes wherewith to beguile the leisure hour Village life offered many harmless amusements, ingenious enough in their way, such as this small sleigh, fixed to the end of a pole which is made to revolve round a wheel the axle of which is firmly embedded in the ground If the wheel be suddenly arrested by the guiding poles the occupants of the sleigh are precipitated into the snow

Photo Florence Farmborough

LIFE AND LAUGHTER AMONG THE MUSIC-LOVING MEMBERS OF THE RUSSIAN RANK AND FILE

Music and dancing have a foremost place among the pastimes of the Russians, and out of hours the Russian soldier invariably resorted to music and song as naturally as though they were his sole occupation in life In small groups they would assemble, singing in unison their melancholy old folk songs, then a balalaika or a concertina would make its appearance, and straightway legs and arms began to move as if by magic, and soon some favourite peasant dances would be indulged in with enthusiastic abandon as only the Russian can dance them—not with legs only, but with body, head, and arms

Photo Florence Farmborough



RYE BREAD, THE STAPLE FOOD OF THE RUSSIAN LINESMAN, BEING PREPARED IN NOVEL SURROUNDINGS

In comparison with the soldiers of the Western countries the Russian soldier was badly fed, but his meagre fare, consisting chiefly of "schtchi," or cabbage soup, smoked and salted fish, and rye bread, together with tea and kvass, poor substitute for the vodka which in former times helped to enliven his somewhat colourless existence, appeared to both satisfy and nourish him. When other accommodation was lacking, military bakers, with praiseworthy ingenuity, constructed open-air kitchens, and while half of the staff prepared the dough, the other half stoked the fires and were responsible for the baking

Photo, Florence Farmborough

Peter imposed upon it. Moscow strikes one as real, while Petrograd seems artificial still. The Kremlin seen from outside the red walls, with towers graceful and fantastic at frequent intervals, has the same beauty as a page in an illuminated missal of the Middle Ages. Inside, it is less interesting. The churches are rich with gold and silver icons, jewelled in honour of the Saviour who bade the wealthy young man sell all he had and give to the poor. The great bell is a curiosity. The palace is as dull in its furnishing and decoration as it is featureless and forbidding in its architecture.

One of the sights of Moscow which visitors do not often hear about is the huge market where it is said everything can be bought if you only know your way about. On a Sunday when selling is brisk one can find amusement there for hours. Markets and fairs lasted longer in Russia than in countries where communications were better developed. Although the Great Fair at Nijni Novgorod has altered in character, it survives, not only by force of tradition, but because a great deal of business is still done there. In Petrograd there are markets which have held their own against all changes. There is the Gostinnoi Dvor in the centre of the city, which is nothing but an Eastern market of booths made permanent and adapted to the rigour of the climate by brick and stone. There is near it the Jews' Market, which is filled with second-hand dealers' shops, and where the costliest and the most rubbishy articles are offered for sale side by side.

ONE OF RUSSIA'S FAMILIAR FIGURES

Large Tartar communities are scattered about many parts of Russia, but the physical type remains virtually the same, and where tastes are concerned, all share a common weakness—shashluik, or slices of savoury mutton roasted on a spit

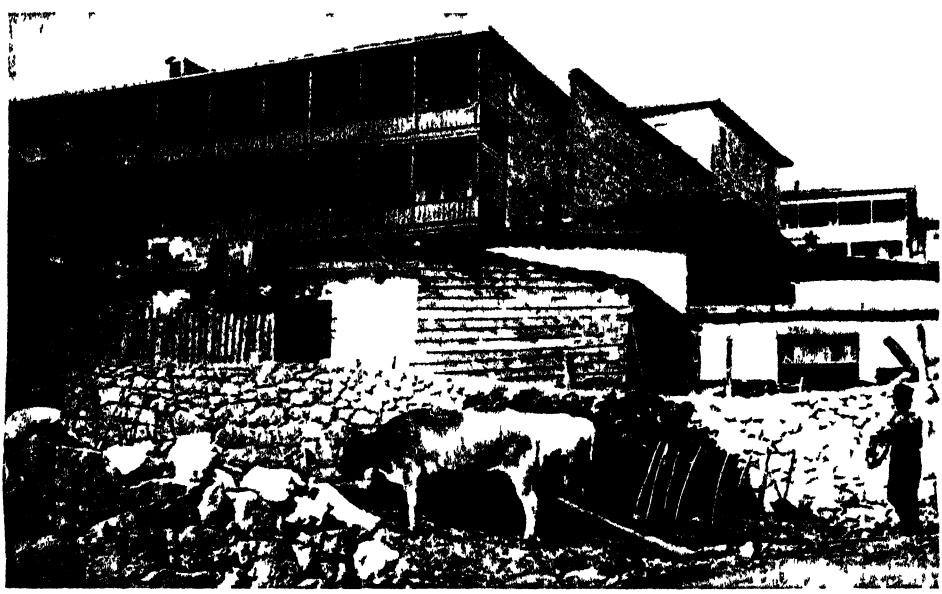
Photo, F. A. McKenzie

The canals of Petrograd redeem the city from the reproach of dullness. In summer they are inclined to be smelly, but they reflect the blue of the sky, and one catches fascinating glimpses of their waters through the leafage of trees. In autumn there is another sort of fascination to be found in watching the cold wind ruffle their dark surface into ice. Winter sees them frozen over many feet thick. On two of them skating-rinks were railed off, with

dressing-rooms, tea-rooms, and a band-stand. Follow the Fontanka Canal as far as you can, past the point where the Yekaterine Canal flows into it, and you come to a bridge beyond which you catch sight of masts It is one of the charms of Petrograd that so often you can look up a street and be aware of shipping and the nearness of the sea The majestic Neva, swift-flowing and magnificent under a northern sunset, pours itself into the Gulf of Finland very near the city As it does so, it forms the famous islands, over which all visitors to Petrograd are at once driven There used to be fashionable and fantastically expensive night restaurants on the islands, and a midnight drive thither with the temperature " twenty below " was a regular part of a winter night's pleasure

The islands, then, were to Petrograd what the Bois de Boulogne is to Paris, with this difference, that it is seldom possible in the Bois to experience such exhilaration as a walk on the islands gives on any fine day in January, February, or March Deep white snow all around, sparkling sunshine, cloudless sky, the trees outlined in crystals, the ice of the river and the gulf shining no prospect no atmosphere could be more enchanting

Up to December the weather is usually uncertain and sunless With the New Year it takes a turn for the better The snow melts and the ice begins to break up late in April or early in May Then for a month nature is still, the trees are black the earth shows scarce a sign of bringing forth its increase Then, with a rush of growth and a warm, sweet breath, spring changes the appearance of the land in a night almost Kept snug under the snow for half the year, the seeds germinate robustly, and in the strong sunshine the green shoots push rapidly upwards Flowers spring in the woods and meadows The trees are in a green mist one day, the next, it seems, their leafage is complete This sudden change from winter to



TARTAR CARAVANSERAI IN A COASTAL VILLAGE OF THE CRIMEA

Protected from the cold winds of the north by a range of mountains banked above them like a high screen the towns of the southern Crimea lie on the borders of the Black Sea glittering in almost perpetual sunshine under a sky of cloudless blue Luxuriant gardens orchard and vineyards dainty white villas and small Tartar villages all add to the indescribable charm of this beautiful peninsula

Photo Florence Farmborough

ON THE LOVELY SHORES OF THE CRIMEA, THE RIVIERA OF RUSSIA

To the majority of Western people the name Crimea is familiar only because of its associations with the Crimean War, yet the peninsula is one of the beauty spots of Europe, with exquisite scenery, favourable climate, and fertile soil. As a pleasure resort and watering place, the Crimea is well known, and the lure of the Sunny South attracted Russian wealth and fashion from the north

Photo, Florence Farmborough

HOMELESS RUSSIA LEFT TO RUN THE GAUNTLET OF FAMINE AND DISEASE

All the despair of the homeless and breadless multitudes of Russia is depicted on the face of this woman who, haunted with the fear of death for her children, sees stretched out before her the sombre dreariness of everyday life, only broken by fierce outbursts of Bolshevist passion. Like many other refugees they have been left to the tender mercies of nature, and, anticipating no good from their fellow men, can echo the significant words of one of their sorely tried compatriots: "Nothing can astonish or frighten us now, we have passed through all."

Photo, Florence Farmborough

summer, with no spring to speak of, occurs all over Russia, but not, of course, at the same moment. If you leave Archangel in April, you leave the port frozen up still and the snow as solid as in January. Travel to Petrograd and you may see the ice just breaking up on the Neva. After a night in the train you are at Moscow, where the period of waiting for the trees and the earth to shake off the grip of frost has begun. At Kiev after another twenty-four hours' train journey the buds are uncurling and the sun shines with power. Go further south to Odessa and you are among fruit trees in full blossom, chestnuts are showing their flowers, laburnum has already cast its golden rain. Along the Crimea there were resorts of health-seekers and fashionable idlers where it is warm in March.

The Russian aristocracy did not require to seek the French Riviera in winter, they could find in their own country a sheltered haven of warmth and flowers, spread with scenery varied and picturesque which must be seen to be fully appreciated. Yalta, an enchanting spot, essentially the Mecca of the "upper ten," was like Nice on a small scale, and Kislovodsk in the Caucasus set itself up to rival Marienbad and Evian. The charm of the Black Sea coast and the grandeur of the mountains made up for defects in hotel management, and the absence of other pastimes was not noticed by Russian visitors so long as there was mild gambling to be enjoyed.

II. Life in Soviet Russia

By F. A. McKenzie

Author of "Russia Before the Dawn," etc.

BOLSHEVISM has completely changed the outer life of the Russian people, although it seems to have merely shaken those national characteristics which have made the Slav what he is.

In March, 1917, tsarism disappeared, and a Socialist Republic was formed. In November, 1917, the Socialist Republic had to give way to the Communist State. The Bolshevists set out to build up a new society, based on the dictatorship of the working classes, which were to be given all rights and power. The old middle and upper classes, grouped together as "bourgeoisie," were to be destroyed or absorbed in a workers' republic.

As a start, all private property rights were abolished. All land, all goods of every kind, all money, all precious stones, the very clothes that men wore became henceforth the property of the state. The very furniture in a private home was no longer the possession of its former owners. The state might take it, and usually did, possibly leaving the former owner a few things for his own use. The former rich were treated with special disdain. In one district that I know, after being expelled from their old homes they were sent to cellar dwellings. "They have had more than their share of the good things of life. Now let them taste the bad," said the commissar appointed to administer the district.

Banks were closed or taken over by the state, and after a few months people could no longer draw from their savings on deposit. Stock exchanges were closed down, and even if they had not been, stocks and shares had lost their value. A sponge was wiped over debts, public and private. The state planned to abolish money altogether, adopting a system of exchange in kind.

All who had lived on rents, on the interests of invested capital, on the yield of great estates, found their means of livelihood disappear almost in a day. Some people hid their savings,

and gradually brought out their buried roubles secretly to buy food. But money dropped so rapidly in value that even great hoards soon became of little worth.

Within three years of the start of the Communist Republic, two hundred thousand roubles, in pre-war days worth, say, £20,000, were worth but £1. In the early summer of 1923, during the anxious days when a break was expected in Anglo-Russian relations, people offered one thousand million roubles for an English £1 note. One thousand million roubles in the old days were equal to £100,000,000—more than the wealth of the richest man in the world.

The learned professions suffered heavily. Lawyers, judges, notaries, and all the elaborate organization of old-time justice were thrown into the discard. Courts of law and the old code of law were abolished, their place being taken by peoples' courts, presided over by working men, who sentenced according to "the proletarian conscience." Doctors were employees of the state, receiving a pitifully small salary and an allowance of food. Professors and teachers who were suffered to retain their posts were also paid by the state.

All the machinery of trade halted. Foreign markets were closed to Russia, for other nations had declared a blockade, and so exports and imports ceased. Private shops were closed. Nothing did more to produce an air of apathy and deadness in the cities than this. Restaurants—except for a few that ran secretly—were closed, and so the armies of cooks, waiters, musicians, scullions found their old living gone.

The state was to be the universal parent. It provided work, food,

SATURDAY VOLUNTEER WORKERS CLEANING THE MOSCOW STREETS

In the Russian vocabulary, "Saturdaying" now signifies not merrymaking, but hard work. All able-bodied Russians must volunteer each Saturday for state service, a rule that has helped to break the back of Bolshevist ardour, for according to a careful observer: "The best cure for this disease is—Bolshevism. Bolshevism in practice is an unfailing remedy for Bolshevism in theory"

BOLSHEVISTS MAKE MERRY ON THE FIRST OF MAY

Russia has never allowed the old customs of general jollity on May Day to die out. Before the Revolution, the students all assumed white cap covers, even if the snow was falling, as a sign that spring, or, at any rate, its season, had come. The date has now been turned by the Bolshevists into Labour Day, and here they are seen celebrating this day in their own way

amusement, travel, education. Everyone was rationed, and much time each day was spent in waiting for doles of food in the public distributing centres. As civil war and the blockade grew in severity, the rations grew smaller and smaller, until in Petrograd in 1919-20 the average ration often did not amount to more than one to two ounces of black bread a day, with, perhaps, an occasional portion of potato or herring soup.

Masses of the people were at first intoxicated by their new liberty, and in their release from the severity of the old rule they plunged into many excesses. The poor marched from their slum dwellings and seized the homes of the rich; working men drove their old managers and foremen away, and took possession of the factories. There was to be no master save the people's will. School children appointed committees, school "soviets," to manage their schools, and declared that they would only study what and when they wanted. Patients in hospitals appointed their "soviets," that gave directions to the doctors. The working-man engineer scorned dictation about his work. He would do what he pleased.

The years from 1917 to the summer of 1921 were a period of great suffering for all classes. Many of the old rich and professional workers fled, and established colonies in Berlin, Paris, and elsewhere. Many of those who remained were arrested for conspiracy against the new Government, and many died. Those who remained had to work like other people, and there were some officials who delighted in giving them the most menial tasks. Former princesses became laundry women; society ladies of yesterday were found sweeping the streets or clearing the snow. Wise men and women forgot their old life, learned a trade, drove a cab, wielded a hammer, or went as peasants on the land. Others clung on to their old traditions, believing that this new condition of affairs could not endure.

There were great rebellions. Large sections of the old tsarist armies, under generals like Denikin, Koltchak, Wrangel, and Yudenitch, fought the Bolshevists, and at one period had

FORCEFUL ORATORY FROM AN ARMOURED CAR IN THE RED SQUARE

To a mixed audience of soldiers and civilians Kamarev, one of the Bolshevist commissars, or civil administrators, harangues with vivid gestures Behind are the tall buildings of the Trading Rows of Moscow, a hive of offices and shops over two hundred and fifty yards long But while the crowd is animated under its many banners, commerce halts in the great emporium

BROTHERHOOD UNDER THE FIRST FLAG OF FREE RUSSIA

When the storm of revolution first broke over Russia, all classes and creeds were united by "an immense and amazing happiness" Freedom of thought, word, and action had come at last, and the watchwords of the bloodless revolution, "Liberty, Equality, and Fraternity" emblazoned throughout the land, held bright hopes for the future But Russia is still no nearer to the millennium

Photo, Florence Farmborough

MOCK EXECUTION OF THE MAN RESPONSIBLE FOR LIEBKNECHT'S DEATH

On the anniversary of the murder of Karl Liebknecht the German Socialist, Russian Communists organized a "demonstration" Palm leaves, with ribbons, testifying to the "everlasting glory" of this "Apostle of Communism," adorned a portrait of Liebknecht, and behind, a huge inscription bore the words "You kill our leaders, but you cannot kill the Communist Revolution"

conquered so much territory that they seemed likely to win. But the Bolshevists, often with working-men commanders, fought with the fanaticism of religious enthusiasts, and defeated one after another. Many peasants resented the new Communism which, while it gave them land, only permitted them to keep sufficient of what they grew to feed themselves, claiming the rest for the state. Peasant uprisings were frequent. These, too, were gradually suppressed.

The Communist leaders aimed at creating a systematic state, with strict discipline, and a more even distribution of wealth. They were enthusiasts for education, and opened new schools all over the country. They tackled illiteracy, compelling all workers in factories and all soldiers to learn to read and write. They took control of the Press, and poured out books by the million, not merely propagandist works, but standard literature. They were hampered at every turn by lack of money and lack of trained assistance. When they tried to reorganize industry, they found that there were few or none to take the place of the old and experienced managers and foremen.

In running the state, they had to employ hundreds of thousands of non-Communists, and many of these did their best secretly to hamper and wreck all they could. The Communists were opposed to excessive officialism, but they found that they were employing more often worse officials than tsarism had done in its heyday.

Early in 1921, Lenin, the Communist leader, induced his followers to face the

WOMEN AND CHILDREN ENJOYING THE BENEFITS OF THE RED RULE
It was soon discovered by the minority who engineered the revolution that they, like the old rulers, had still to reckon with the great majority. This section soon found propaganda and revolutionary rhetoric but sorry substitutes for food. The little ones in this queue wait for soup while an ironic notice over the way reads "stolovaya," or eating-house, the phrase as empty as the shop

APOSTLE OF DESTRUCTION INTENT ON HIS WANTON WORK

One fanatical aspect of Bolshevism is vividly depicted in this scene where a young hooligan revels unrestrainedly in his malicious destructive tendencies. Communist psychology has swept away all barriers of self restraint and the international law of Bolshevism may be summed up in "the good old rule, the simple plan that he shall take who has the power, and he shall keep who can"

Photo, Florence Farmborough

situation. Manufactures had almost entirely ceased. Many of the peasants, as a protest against the seizure of their surplus food stuffs, were only growing the minimum of grain necessary for themselves. Much of the machinery of manufacture was wrecked or useless. Tools, locomotives, ploughs, and spades were all wanted. Old stocks were exhausted, none were being produced to take their place, and the state had no money to buy any.

In the cities the people were cold and hungry. Most of the hospitals had no medicines or drugs, not even chloroform to give momentary unconsciousness to people under the knife. In the schools there was not one pencil for every twelve children.

Something had to be done. The working men would not think of going back to the old tsarism. Acting on Lenin's counsel, it was resolved to modify Communism, and to permit some private activity again. As a start, the peasant was allowed to retain and deal in the foodstuffs he raised. Next, small industries were handed back to private initiative, and the attempt that had been made to destroy money was definitely abandoned.

At first, people were doubtful about the sincerity of the authorities. These fears were soon set at rest.

After the autumn of 1921 shops gradually re-opened. People were permitted to own their own homes. They were allowed to possess private wealth and even, under some limitations, to bequeath it. Businesses came more and more under private management, and while the state, by a system of "trusts," owned and controlled the big industries, it was expected that some of

COMRADE OF THE COMMUNISTS
Physically he is a braw young soldier, but his finer feelings have been blunted by Bolshevist influence, and he is expected to commit any crime in the cause of Red Russia
Photo, Donald McLeish

these would again return to private control. Banking was revived, the court of law was constituted as a separate organization, with professional lawyers, and strict discipline was established in factories. Above all, the system of universal rations disappeared. People who wanted food, clothing, travel, amusement, had to pay for them as in other lands, or go without. The visitors to Moscow or Petrograd were now usually surprised at the order and quiet there. The capital was transferred from Petrograd to Moscow, which became the centre of government. Much of the wreck and ruin of the revolution was cleared away. The streets were well kept, traffic was strictly controlled, there was an excellent tramway system, and the shops began to show beautiful things. The selection of the shop stocks was, however, strangely uncertain. One could not as a rule buy, for example, roll films, foreign newspapers, or foreign new books, but food was cheap. There were many unemployed.

The theatres of Moscow, always world leaders, retained their leadership right through the revolution. The Moscow Great Theatre retained its place as one of the three greatest opera houses in Europe, while theatres like the Art, the Kamerny, and Meyerchold's showed the way for fresh developments in drama.

Moscow had its new rich, the Nepmen as they were called (N.E.P.—New Economic Policy, the change instituted by Lenin in 1921). They mostly made their living by trading and speculation. To cater for these there were expensive restaurants and gambling houses, where gay night life was maintained until three every morning. In the shops one could buy furs as costly and dresses as delicate as ten years before. Some of the old court dressmakers endeavoured to work out a new republican mode in women's dress, which should give a note of simplicity and modernism typifying the Commune. But it was confessed that the "new rich woman preferred the latest Paris fashions."

Most of the rest of the country was far less happy than Moscow. One reason for this was the terrible famine that swept over south and south-east Russia in 1921-22. Famines are periodic in the Volga region, but in olden days there were always stores of

"RED ROSA" OF RED RUSSIA AND FELLOW REVOLUTIONARIES

Bouquet in hand, and wearing a white lace dress, Red Rosa, as she was appropriately called—not to be confused with Rosa Luxemburg—is seen holding court in the midst of a group of fellow agitators. It is alleged that she killed several hundred Russian officers with her own hand, and that then satiated for a space with her crimes, she posed as a goddess of justice and a promoter of freedom.

MEN AND BOYS IN THE WELTER OF BOLSHEVISM

Withdrawn from their normal avocations and gathered together to await the decision of Russia's new rulers as to their next task, these men and boys, in their varied and nondescript garb, form just such a crowd as revolution might cause to assemble in any great city. For them obedience to Red rule is the only alternative to hunger or perhaps a more sudden end by execution.

Photos, Donald McLeish

RUSSIAN IMPERIAL JEWELS, INCLUDING THE LATE TSAR'S CROWN, IN THE HANDS OF THE SOVIET GOVERNMENT

The long narrow table is spread with an array of priceless jewels forming part of the famous Russian Crown Jewels, seized by the Bolshevists, kept in the secrecy of a guarded building in Moscow, and valued in American currency at sixty billion dollars A few Soviet officials, including members of the Crown Jewel Committee the Director of the Hermitage Museum at Petrograd, and a well known French jewel expert are here seen placing an assayed value on the beautiful gems, in order that they may be disposed of in foreign markets to help Russian finances and so stabilise the Russian rouble

food to meet them In 1921 the country had been swept by rival White and Red armies and all the peasants' stocks had vanished The horrors experienced, particularly in the early winter of 1921, will scarce bear description People fled from their farms, flocking to the cities and the railways, where they herded together like cattle, famine-stricken multitudes, mad with despair Parents abandoned their

equipped the hospitals and institutions of half Russia with full stocks of medical supplies The relief work of the different organizations lasted until the summer of 1923, when the famine was over and most withdrew

Another horror that did much to check progress was epidemic disease, a dread spectre that marched through the land claiming its share of human life Cholera in summer and typhus in the

RED MOSCOW GREETING A BRITISH LABOUR DELEGATION

Red Moscow did its best for the entertainment of a British Labour Delegation, and friendly greetings were showered upon the visitors from all sides For their benefit a naval and military parade was organized and members of the delegation are here seen assembled under the portico of the Opera House reviewing Communist forces marching past them through the Theatre Square

children, and men and women died wholesale, until it was impossible to bury them, save in heaps in great pits People dropped dead in the streets and lay until the dogs gnawed at them

The Russian Government appealed to the world for aid, and the world responded The British did something, but the lion's share of relief was carried out by the Americans, who spent $70,000,000 (say, £14,000,000), fed at one time over ten million hungry, and

autumn and winter slew their hundreds of thousands Dr Shemaskho, the head of the Government Commissariat of Health, with the assistance of foreign agencies, began a great campaign, and by the spring of 1923 these were apparently brought under control Another epidemic disease, however, spread over large parts of Russia—malaria—and month by month during the summer claimed increasing armies of victims In the first flush of Communist

enthusiasm, some proposed the separation of children from their parents, to bring them up in institutions from three years old, in order to attain more perfect equality. This, however, was never put in practice. Large numbers of institutions were opened by the state, but these were filled by orphan and destitute children.

One of the most far-reaching changes under the Commune was the transformation of the position of the Church. Russia was formerly the most religious country in Christendom, if the outward observance of religious ceremony be taken as a measure of faith. Icons (sacred pictures) hung everywhere, and the gorgeous ceremonial of the Greek Church pervaded national life. There was, admittedly, much corruption and immorality in the Church, especially in some monasteries, and discipline among the clergy was slack. Drunkenness, for example, was often regarded as little more than an amiable weakness.

With the rise of Communism, all was changed. The Communists were avowedly atheists. Under the new Russian Constitution, the Church was disestablished and religious freedom granted. But the entire influence of the Communist party was against religion, and the Churches were soon made to feel it. Various ordinances were passed regulating religious activity.

The class teaching of religion to young people under eighteen was prohibited, and Churches were forbidden to exercise philanthropy. The struggle between one section of the Church and the State came to a head over the resolution of the Government to use surplus Church

WHEN THE FLOODGATES OF BOLSHEVIST ORATORY ARE THROWN OPEN

Bolshevist leaders found it not a little difficult to retain the interest and affection of many of their followers whose eyes were gradually opened to the horror of the despotism that became rampant in Russia. But eloquence works wonders with the peasant's childlike credulity, and the ambitious orator was able quickly to gather a crowd and sway it to right or left with the fire of his verbosity

RAW REVOLUTIONARIES IN TRAINING AT PETROGRAD

By its avowed friendship for the poor, its advocacy of liberty, and hatred of bureaucracy, Russian Communism drew to its ranks all the proletariat of the towns. Here is a division of men and lads from Minsk, their irregular marching proving them to be the rawest of recruits, but a few weeks under Bolshevist training would transform them into capable servants of the Commune

treasures for famine relief. Many clerics were arrested for resisting this decree and for allied offences, and the execution of the Greek Archbishop of Petrograd and the Catholic Dean Butchkevitch appalled the world.

Communism unquestionably has much influence on the moral life of the people. Just as in England the excitement of the Great War led to a lowering of the moral standard, so war and revolution had a similar effect in Russia.

Marriage laws became very simple, consisting of a form of registration. Most Russians, however, insisted upon a religious marriage as well. Divorce could be had, without specific cause, at the will of either party; but after a third divorce a person was not allowed to re-marry. One of the great problems with young people arose from the fact that in the break-up of life during national change it was impossible to train many for professions or callings. The universities were, however, crowded as never before.

Money presented one of the problems of new Russia. With a currency constantly falling, no one except the foolish saved paper money. A hundred millions to-day might be worth only fifty millions next week. People bought goods, or gold, or gold notes if they wished to save.

To avoid big numbers the Government late in 1921 issued new notes on which each rouble was worth ten thousand old roubles. In 1923, still fresh notes were printed; one rouble was worth a million old roubles of three years before.

After studying surface changes, the onlooker was forced to believe that fundamentally Russia retained her nationality and her national characteristics. Many of the faults that provoked foreigners most were very like those known under the old regime. New Russia, like old Russia, was bureaucratic. But new Russia was seen to be trying to find the right path. And it seemed in 1923 safe to say that, whatever path she took it would not be one leading her back to the old regime. That stage had passed as definitely as the rule of Napoleon had passed in France.

CROWDS OUTSIDE THE KREMLIN ACCLAIMING "LIBERTY"

This is a glimpse of the Red Square at Moscow on the occasion of a great military review held in connexion with the "Red International," and attended by many important Soviet commissars and officials and witnessed by immense throngs, one and all animated by the ideas, more or less understood, of those who were then controlling the destinies of what was once the Empire of the Tsars

Russia

III. Rise & Progress of the Great Slav State

By Sir Bernard Pares

Professor of Russian Language, Literature and History, London University

RUSSIA occupies the eastern half of Europe and a great part of Asia, having for its northern boundary the Arctic Ocean. As there are no interior mountain ranges, there are few and only gradual variations in climate as one goes southward. There is a greater proportion of marsh than in any other large country in Europe. These marshes serve as reservoirs to great rivers which, winding through the crumbly soil, traverse enormous distances and form natural highways. Along these great river-ways travelled the stream of peasant migration which was the chief factor in the creation of the Russian Empire.

The northern part is covered with forests, mostly coniferous. The southern part is open plain, and is the best grain-producing land in Europe. It was along this black soil that the invaders found a ready road into Europe. The black soil begins far back in Siberia, and in an ever-narrowing wedge reaches as far west as Galicia. Asiatic tribal organizations, if they were unable to break through to the Pacific, could follow this great road westward, it gave them abundant fodder for their horses and cattle.

The Slavs, of which family the Russian people are a branch, appear in the first few centuries of the Christian era only as subject elements in successive agglomerations of various tribes, rapidly formed and dissolved. The home in which history first identifies them is near the Carpathian Mountains from which, near the end of the fifth century and throughout the sixth, they raided the eastern empire of Byzantium. The clan was the basis of their social life; and it would seem that their military expeditions, which had but little organization, were conducted by the military elements of various clans.

Clan Life Replaced by the Family

It appears that they were organizing themselves into something more like a confederation when, in the sixth century, they were conquered and enslaved by the Avars. This set various Slavonic units radiating out in different directions. The Serbs and Croats went south-west, the Czechs and Slovaks north-west, the Poles north, and the Russians eastward to the Dnieper. The migration helped to split up the old clan basis which, by the time the Russians settled on the Dnieper, had been almost replaced by that of the family. The Dnieper forms part of a great river-road running from Scandinavia to Constantinople. This road runs by the Gulf of Finland, the Neva, Lake Ladoga, the Volkhov, the Lovat, then by tributaries of the Dvina to the Dnieper, by which it passes into the Black Sea. When the Russians approached the Dnieper from the west, they found on its eastern side an Asiatic tribe, the Kozars, who, being rather traders than warriors, offered for over a hundred years an unwonted respite from the conflicts which disturbed this part of Europe. The Russians became tributary to the Kozars, but their yoke was an easy one and the connexion gave them trade communication as far as the Black Sea, the Volga, and even Bagdad (ninth century).

Russia Based on the River-Road

In the ninth century the empire of the Kozars was overthrown by a peculiarly savage people from Asia—the Pechenegs. The water-road lost its eastern communications, and was itself in danger. It was in these circumstances that various Viking adventurers, who had now become more necessary than ever for the defence of the Slavonic towns, were able to make themselves masters of them. The best known of these incomers was Rurik, who established his rule in Novgorod on the Volkhov; his successor Oleg (879-912) extended his control south as far as Kiev, and moved thither the centre of his rule.

The name Rus was first given to this state. It was less a dominion than a militant trading company based on the water-road. The Vikings Askold and Dir, who had preceded Oleg in Kiev, had already made a military expedition to Constantinople. Several others followed under Oleg and his successors. These relations of war and trade acquainted the Russians with eastern Christianity; and Olga, who was regent after the death of her husband, Prince Igor, became a Christian (957). Her son and successor, Svyatoslav, at one time thought of moving his capital from Kiev to Bulgaria, but it was his son Vladimir who introduced Orthodox Christianity into Russia.

Yaroslav, son of Vladimir (1015), made Kiev one of the principal cities of the Orthodox East. He made marriage alliances with other European states, and

one of his daughters became Queen of France. He initiated the first written law code of Russia (Russkaya Pravda), which was an attempt to codify for civil cases the principles of Byzantine legislation blended with Viking and Russian customs.

Kiev kept up a long struggle against the heathen nomads from Asia, but she proved unequal to this strain. The population itself moved away from the threatened water road. Some retreated to Galicia (the future Ukrainians); others, the majority, took a line of least resistance to the watershed round Moscow, where, blending with Finnish elements, they formed the Great Russian race.

Tartar Invasion of Russia

In 1224 the heaviest blow from the side of Asia fell upon Russia. The Tartars were an accumulation of Mongolian tribes massed into a vast moving and militant force by the genius of Temuchin (Jenghiz Khan, d. 1227). The main mass remained in Eastern Asia and established the greatest empire of the time, of whose organization we have a picture in the Travels of Marco Polo. A great-nephew of Jenghiz Khan, Baty, led another mass of Tartars into Russia. The Polovtsy, who had routed and replaced the Pechenegs, appealed to the Southern Russian princes for help, which some of these gave, but were easily overwhelmed. This was only the advance guard of the Tartars, and in 1237 the mass moved in a more northerly direction, attacking Central Russia.

Vladimir, the new capital created by Andrew Bogolyubsky, was sacked, and never recovered its importance. The Tartars conquered practically all Russia, except the great merchant city of Novgorod, protected by its climate and its marshes. For two hundred and forty years (1240-1480) Russia was to remain under the Tartar yoke.

Administration Centred in Moscow

It was only during the first years of subjection that this yoke was felt in its full weight; the Tartars did not settle in Central and Northern Russia. Attacks and raids were to continue for many generations; and Tartar envoys regularly appeared to claim tribute. Even Alexander Nevsky (d. 1263), the national hero of this time of distress, who had won notable victories over the Swedes and the German knights (1240-41), had to counsel the unconquered city of Novgorod to pay this tribute.

Russia was ruled by small principalities which took more and more of a territorial basis and were further and further subdivided. The office of Grand Prince, or head of the family, was now conferred by the Tartar Khan, and for some time it passed about among different branches of the princely race. Tver for a time held the headship, but was ultimately outplayed and superseded by Moscow.

The Moscow princes, after the model of Andrew, followed a policy of purchase and colonisation. This was greatly assisted by their obsequious attitude towards the Tartars, and it was not long before the Tartars found it convenient to leave the superintendence of taxation and administration largely to Moscow—the office of Grand Prince soon becoming permanent in the Moscow branch. The Metropolitans (Heads of the Church) ultimately established themselves in Moscow and put the prestige of the Church behind the Moscow princes; and Moscow developed a practice, which became more and more systematic, of concentrating all wealth and power in the hands of the reigning prince, to the disprofit of his brothers.

A succession of mediocre but consistent princes led up to the reign of Dmitry of the Don (1359-89). He united the various Russian principalities in a common effort against the Tartars and thoroughly defeated them at Kulikovo in 1380. Moscow was raided by them soon afterwards; but the Russians now grew bolder. Under his grandson, Vasily (1425-62), Moscow finally and irrevocably adopted the order of succession from father to son instead of from brother to brother.

Moscow's authority was truly national, based on the people's need for security and on the strong support of the Church. It was threatened from both sides, which meant constant wars. In 1386 Lithuania, containing a great number of Russians, was united by marriage to Poland, which was henceforward always hostile to Russia.

Hereditary Autocracy Established

Ivan III. (1462-1505), son of Vasily, enormously increased the power of Muscovy. Already the line of the middle Volga, which gave the independent merchant city of Novgorod its communications with its eastern possessions, had been crossed northwards by Moscow colonisation, so that the Muscovite princes could, when they wished, hold up the supplies. Novgorod looked for support to Lithuania, but its citizens were divided, and the great city fell into Ivan's hands like a ripe fruit (1471). Pskov was to fall to Muscovy without a struggle in the next reign.

When, in 1453, Constantinople was captured by the Turks, the niece of the last Greek emperor, Sophia Palaeologa, who became a ward of the Pope, was married to Ivan III. (he was then a widower). Sophia regarded herself as almost an independent sovereign, and

EUROPEAN RUSSIA AND ITS PEOPLES

Ivan considered that he had thus become the heir to the tradition of Constantinople. Byzantine ceremonial was introduced into the Moscow court and helped to strengthen the Russian autocracy. It was now that the Moscow ruler first used the title of Tsar (Caesar).

One result of the marriage was that Moscow finally threw off the Tartar yoke (1480). The Tartars were now as much divided among themselves as the Russians had been when they first arrived. There remained three independent Tartar khanates at Kazan, Astrakhan, and Crimea; the last-named later became a part of the Turkish empire.

Ivan's grandson, Ivan the Terrible (1533-1584), conquered Kazan, and soon afterwards annexed Astrakhan (1553-54). This opened the road into Siberia, and the region east of the Urals was at the end of the reign conquered by a Cossack, Yermak (1582). Yermak loyally handed over his conquest to Moscow. The further conquest of Siberia proceeded by more or less peaceable colonisation along the main lateral rivers eastwards.

Ivan the Terrible had himself turned his attention westwards, where Turkey, Poland and Sweden blocked his outlets. He specially coveted the Baltic coast and, anticipating Peter the Great, made an attempt to break through on this side, but was foiled in 1558 by a league of

all his Western enemies against him. Ivan had come to the throne as a mere child, and being clever and extremely high-strung, had bitterly felt the arrogance of the greater nobles during his minority. Ivan suddenly and easily threw off their tutelage (1543), and ruled at first wisely, introducing important reforms. He created local elective institutions, to which he gave a considerable measure of control over the local governors, and he summoned a series of "zemskie sobory" (national assemblies) which, without derogation to his own authority, he consulted on serious issues, including even questions of peace or war. Later, disillusioned in some of his counsellors, he lost his mental balance and established a sheer reign of terror and killed his eldest son with his own hand.

Foundation of the Russia Company

It was in this reign that an English naval expedition, under Chancellor, made its way to Archangel (1553). Ivan received the travellers cordially in Moscow, and commercial relations with England were established, resulting in the foundation of the Russia Company, which still exists.

The Muscovite state was in incessant war on all sides. The expansion of Russian population eastwards kept up a constant atmosphere of raids and counter raids, and large armies had to take the field nearly every year. The state was therefore based on a system by which domains were portioned out to its principal servants with the obligation of acting as colonels of militia, as tax collectors, and as local magistrates. Thus the right of the peasant to move elsewhere, though not yet abolished in principle, was more and more restricted in practice. The increasing state burdens and state control, especially near the centre, drove numberless peasants to find any outlet, legal or otherwise, and thus the outward pressure of Russian colonisation was only strengthened by the increase of control within.

Romance of the Pretender Dmitry

These conditions led to terrible convulsions after Ivan's death. His son, Fedor, died childless in 1598, and was succeeded by his chief minister, Boris Godunov, who was brother-in-law to Fedor, and was strongly suspected of having murdered Fedor's half-brother Dmitry, the only remaining son of Ivan. Boris ruled by suspicion and oppression. Soon it was reported that Dmitry was alive and in Poland. The Pretender advanced without serious resistance to Moscow, Boris dying suddenly before his arrival. After a year's reign (1606), the Pretender was overthrown by a Russian boyar (or landowner), Vasily Shuisky. However, a second Pretender, who also claimed to be Dmitry, appeared in the provinces and, rallying various elements of disorder, almost blockaded Shuisky in Moscow.

Polish partisan bands ran riot through the country, and ultimately some of the leading Russian nobles, in fear of the growing anarchy and the beginnings of a class war, offered the throne to the Polish crown prince, Ladislas or Vladislav.

Ladislas's father, King Sigismund of Poland, preferred, however, to use the occasion to annex Russian territory to Poland, and conquered Smolensk. On the initiative of the Russian Church, and especially of the Trinity Monastery near Moscow, which the Poles in vain besieged for a year, a patriotic movement began, and ultimately a national army, led by Prince Pozharsky and a butcher, Minin, regained Moscow, and summoned a national assembly of all classes, which elected as tsar Michael Romanov (1613). Michael was the young son of a conspicuous Moscow noble, who had been compelled by Boris to become a monk, and was now at the head of the Church.

Serfdom Under the Romanovs

The Patriarchate or single authority in the Church had been established in Russia in 1589, as one of the consequences of the fall of Constantinople. The Church, by its authority, had done more than anything else to bridge the interregnum between the two dynasties, and the Patriarch Philaret, as he was now called, was the father of the new tsar.

Under the new dynasty the nobles recovered their power, and the zemskie sobory, frequently consulted in the reign of Michael and his son Alexis (1645), gradually ceased to exist. The remains of local self-government also passed away, and on the occasion of the codification of existing laws under Alexis in 1649, the peasant definitely became a serf or chattel whose life was at the full disposal of the local squire.

Serfdom, which defined itself so late in Russia, was based not on feudalism, but on the obligation of the squire to provide recruits for the army and taxes for the treasury, in return for which he received an absolute authority over the peasants on his land, who even ceased to be regarded as distinct from him in the eyes of the law. Serfdom, during the succeeding reigns, became more and more aggravated with the increase of the army and of taxation, and it even became customary for owners to sell individual peasants away from their estates apart from the remaining members of their families. As a result, the migration of

discontented elements from the centre continued to increase. Many went to Siberia as a line of least resistance, and before the end of the seventeenth century Russian colonies had settled on the Pacific. On the south-west frontier, where conditions of war were almost constant, there had sprung up colonies of Cossacks (or free lances) which, during the interregnum between the dynasties, had aggravated public disorder and gave equal trouble both to Russia and to Poland.

The Dnieper Cossacks, in the reign of Alexis, offered themselves to Moscow to guarantee themselves against Polish control, and the offer was, after much hesitation, accepted.

In the same reign the increasing needs of the state compelled the Moscow government to invite foreign instructors, first military, then scientists, organizers, and traders. There was now a strongly developed German suburb at Moscow. Alexis' very able foreign minister, Ordyn-Nashchokin, tried to inaugurate an intelligent economic policy and local self-government.

Accession of Peter the Great

After the death of Alexis' eldest son and successor Fedor in 1682, a son of Alexis' second marriage, Peter, who was only ten, was chosen as tsar. Peter's half-sister, the Princess Sophia, seized the power. She showed ability and intelligence and a desire to learn from Western civilization. She was, however, displaced by Peter, now grown to manhood, in 1689. Seeking outlets for Russia to the west, he conquered the Turkish fortress of Azov, and concentrated his energy on developing the port of Archangel. He himself came for instruction to Europe, and engaged large numbers of experts and skilled workmen for the service of Russia (1697-98). He was called back by a revolt of his Palace Guard (the Streltsy), which he dissolved, replacing it by troops on the Western model and led largely by foreigners.

To gain an outlet to the Baltic, Peter formed a coalition against the young king of Sweden, Charles XII.

The bulk of Peter's reign was taken up with this war, which, by the way, dictated most of his reforms. The gallant Swede crushed Peter's loose forces at Narva, but by a thorough military organization Peter was, in 1709, able to rout his rival at Poltava.

By conquering the Baltic coast as far south as Riga, Peter brought into the empire a considerable number of German subjects, who later took a prominent part in its administration. By a series of marriages he also obtained an influence among the princes of Germany. Final peace with Sweden was obtained in 1721, at Nystadt. Peter died in 1725.

With one exception, the whole system of administration of Russia, and indeed the whole structure of its society, was radically changed by Peter. He created a huge standing army, based upon the severest recruiting system, which he quartered on the various provinces. All the gentry he compelled to serve the state; he forced them into schools, and forbade them to marry until they had obtained his certificate of education. Birth was henceforward to give place entirely to seniority in the state service, which was tabulated in the most precise way by ranks (" chiny ").

Reorganization of the State

Peter created a senate, nominated by himself, and authorised as a standing institution to replace the emperor in his absence or minority, and he handed over the control of the Church to a similar standing commission—the Holy Synod—to which for purposes of control he attached a procurator of his own. He created for each function of the state, especially military, a " College " of persons corporately responsible for executing his decisions. He instituted the sole succession of eldest sons, the younger being compelled to seek their fortunes in the state service. He developed in every way open to him the economic resources of the country, forming companies indiscriminately of Russians and foreigners, to which he handed over whole villages of serf workmen and gave large government contracts. He worked hard to create a system of roads and canals. He made the merchant class more compact, giving it a considerable measure of self-government, especially in matters of trade.

A Break with the Past

Peter, however, though essentially by his character a peasants' tsar, and always ready to do his work with his own hands, did nothing at all for the peasants except to increase infinitely the burden of taxation and recruitment. Peter's changes, though the product of hand-to-mouth experience and necessity, involved a complete break with Russia's past. In every case he attempted by short cuts to obtain a finished product of state service comparable to that which had grown up by slow stages and on the basis of civilization in Western Europe. One of Peter's latest acts was to claim for the sovereign the right of determining the succession, a right of which he never made use. In consequence, there followed some forty years of palace anarchy

and violence, in which the country at large had no part.

Peter was succeeded by his second wife, a Lithuanian peasant (Catherine II., 1725), next by his grandson by his first wife (Peter II., 1727), next by the daughter of his half-brother (Anne, 1730), next by a great-grandson of his half-brother (Ivan VI., 1740), and in 1741 by his daughter Elizabeth, who, though extravagant and capricious, gave a short period of repose to the country.

Conflict Between Russia and Prussia

Elizabeth and her able minister, Shuvalov, sought to bring Russia nearer to French standards of enlightenment, and founded Moscow University. She abolished the death penalty, though torture was retained. Personal antipathy to Frederick the Great led her to join with France and Austria in the attempt to annihilate Prussia, and among the battles in which the genius of Frederick triumphed over his overwhelmingly superior enemies, none brought him nearer to the end of his forces than those which he fought against the Russians (Zorndorf and Kunersdorf). Russian troops even succeeded in raiding Berlin. The death of Elizabeth in 1761 saved Frederick from destruction.

Her nephew, Peter III., was hopelessly incompetent. His wife, Catherine, originally Princess Sophia of Anhalt-Zerbst, was a woman of exceptional intellect and energy, and finding herself openly insulted and threatened by her husband, she dethroned him without difficulty. Peter was murdered shortly afterwards.

Contentious Reign of Catherine II.

Catherine II. having no kind of legal title to the throne, was struggling throughout her reign (1762-96) with pretenders in the names of her dispossessed predecessors or her son Paul. All these movements she succeeded in crushing. She summoned a remarkable national assembly to assist her in the codification of the laws, but much as the assembly taught Catherine about the conditions of her empire, it did not bring about any serious legislation, and her sincere efforts to raise the question of the emancipation of the serfs broke down against the vested interests of property.

All that she could do was to promote Western instincts among the gentry, who were the support of her throne and almost the only body in the country possessing legal rights. In 1771-74 the whole foundations of the state were disturbed, first by a grievous plague in Moscow, and then by the rising of all the discontented elements around a Cossack, Pugachev. Largely owing to her own personal courage, the rising was suppressed. There were savage reprisals, and all thought of serious reform became impossible.

While the empire remained at the bottom entirely uncivilized, Catherine, by masterly diplomacy, added to it enormous tracts of territory. Prussia and Austria, fearing the capture of Constantinople, induced her to take her compensation for her victory over the Turks in conjunction with them by a partition of Poland. The Turkish wars brought Catherine to an indecisive war with Sweden. Catherine also formed a league of armed neutrality during the American War of Independence to limit the use which England made of her sea power in time of war, and it is this reign which marks the beginning of Russophobia in England.

Alexander's Futile Efforts for Peace

The outbreak of the French Revolution finally deprived Catherine of any further desire for reform, and a new epoch of Russian history began, in which, instead of the sovereign forcing enlightenment upon the people, the state resisted any attempt of the people to take a part in its own government.

Paul (1796), long dispossessed, was sullen, futile, and capricious. A naval league against England was formed, and Paul and Napoleon even planned the conquest of India. Nelson defeated the new coalition at Copenhagen, and was on his way to Reval when he learned that Paul had been assassinated (1801).

Paul's successor, Alexander, a young man of brilliant promise, had been educated personally by Catherine and by the French thinker, La Harpe. His reign opened with an attempt to secure a general peace in Europe, and to frame a liberal constitution for Russia. His plans for a constitution broke down against unpreparedness and ignorance of the population, and his efforts for peace ended only in the third coalition against Napoleon and the crushing defeat of Alexander himself at Austerlitz (Dec. 2, 1805). The peace that followed became an alliance against Alexander's former friends, and he subscribed to the Continental blockade against England, which proved ruinous to Russian trade.

The two emperors drifted back into war. In 1812, Napoleon invaded Russia and after hard fighting occupied Moscow, only to find his enemy more determined than ever. He retreated in face of the Russian winter, which was fatal to nine-tenths of his army.

Russian troops took an honourable part in the campaign of 1813 and 1814, and Alexander, whose decision to follow Napoleon into the west had made possible

the liberation of Western Europe, claimed generous treatment for the defeated emperor, and later insisted on the grant of a French constitution as a necessary condition to the return of the Bourbons.

The magnitude of events had set on Alexander a deep impress of religious mysticism. He planned a holy alliance of monarchs, who should themselves engage to keep peace with each other and to work for the good of their peoples. As far as this took shape later, it was in the form of a police league of sovereigns against peoples. Contact with the West spread liberal and vaguely socialist ideas among several of the abler officers in the Guard. Small revolutionary groups sprang up in Russia, one (in the north) aiming at constitutionalism, and another (in the south) at something not far removed from communism. It was now (1825) that Alexander disappeared from the scene. By many it was believed that he did not die, but became a monk.

Freedom of the Russian Serfs

At the news of his death his younger brother, Nicholas, proclaimed in St. Petersburg the next heir Constantine; but Constantine, who was in Warsaw, had privately abdicated his rights, and therefore proclaimed Nicholas. The confusion which followed was utilised by the conspirators to rise in the name of Constantine and the Constitution. The few troops which joined the rising were suppressed with force, and Nicholas began his reign by investigating this conspiracy.

Up to 1830 Nicholas seriously tried to bring practical improvements into the administration and even to deal with the question of serfdom. Then, when France finally expelled the Bourbons, the Poles rose for independence. Nicholas ruthlessly suppressed the rising, and took a prominent part as the champion of reaction in Europe in the succeeding years, during which police rule in Russia became more pronounced than ever.

The result of Nicholas' aggressive policy abroad was the Crimean War, which cost Russia great losses and great distress. In February, 1855, he died, already aware that his whole system was breaking down.

Alexander II. (1855-81), in his first manifesto, gave precedence to questions of reform. Extracting himself as best he could from the war, he set about the abolition of serfdom. Roughly about one-half of the land holdings were allotted to the peasants, who were to pay redemption dues for them over a period of fifty years. Compensation to the landowners was defrayed at once by the state and was in most cases rapidly expended, so that many of the gentry, losing all importance in the country, joined the town population. The system of communal tenure among the peasants themselves was retained, and the communes were given a measure of administrative authority and were linked up to the central system of administration.

Extension of Local Government

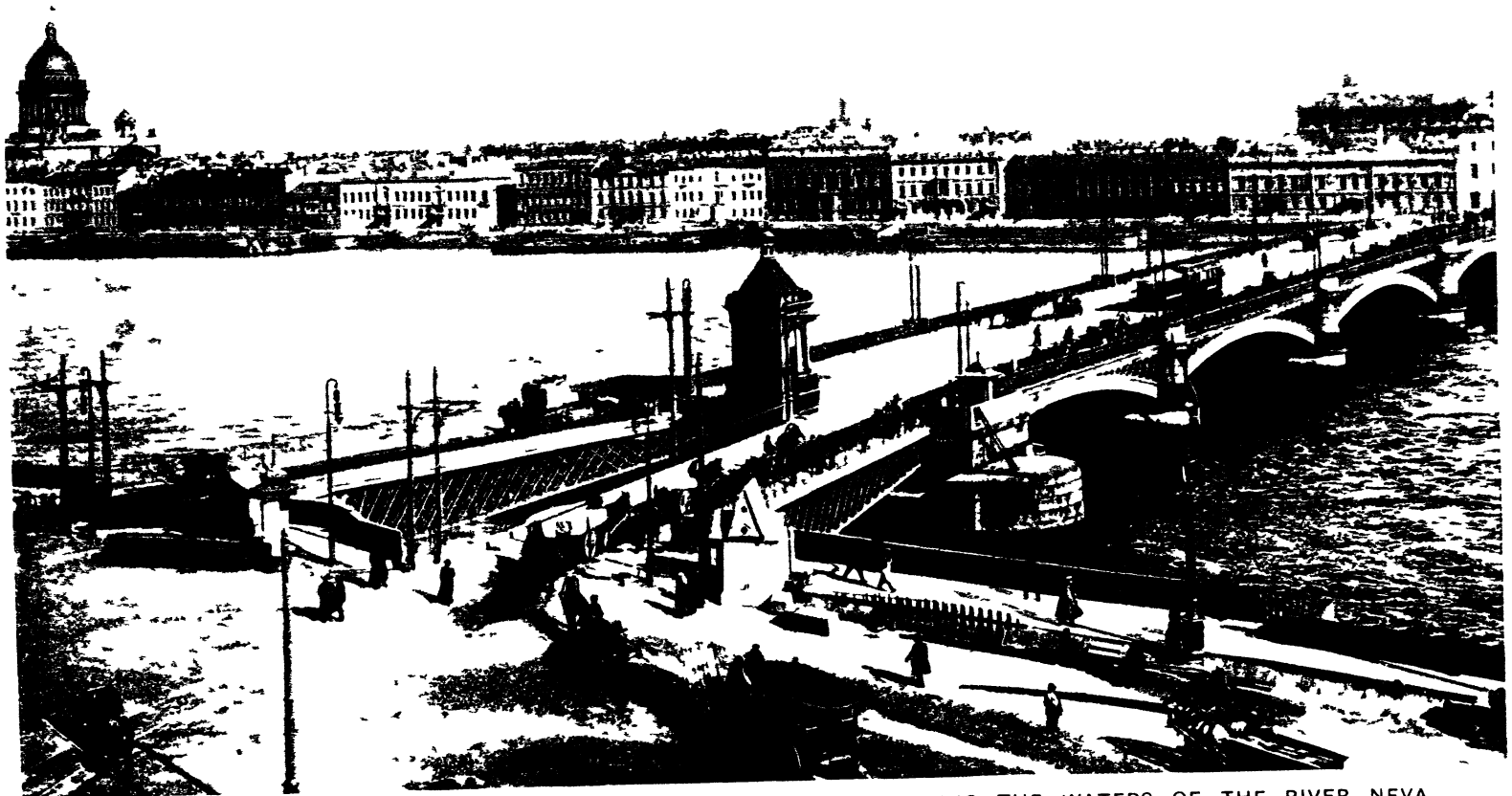
To replace the local authority of the squires there were introduced in 1864 county councils (zemstva) elected by the whole local population and authorised to levy rates. To these bodies were entrusted such questions as education, public health, and sanitation. The system of justice was reformed (1862-65) and trial by jury was introduced; judges were declared to be irremovable. A change in the law as to the Press, which substituted a punitive censorship for a preliminary, was nullified by the provision which gave the punitive power not to the law courts but to the administrative officials. Another statute accorded the right of self-government to the universities. The town councils were remodelled on similar lines to the new county councils, but with greater restrictions. The old army, based on serfdom, was replaced by a new army based on conscription.

In 1863 the Poles made another desperate but abortive attempt to recover their liberty, and were deprived as far as possible of all marks of national existence.

Reforming Ardour Followed by Reaction

The greatest Russian writers (the poets Pushkin and Lermontov, the novelists Gogol, Turgenev, Dostoievski and Tolstoy) lived and worked under the oppressive system of Nicholas. In the same reign Belinsky laid the foundations of literary criticism. A new generation of political theorists took the field, roughly breaking with the conventions of the past, and violently attacking the spokesmen of Liberalism; and as the reforming ardour of the emperor tired and reaction set in, numbers of young students, men and women, went to the peasantry to educate them in their various political and social theories. Finding practically no response among the peasants, some of these groups drifted to the back quarters of the larger towns and declared war on the government and on the emperor. High police officers and even governors were stricken down.

Risings in the Balkans in 1874 led to violent Turkish repression, and in 1877 the emperor was practically forced by public opinion to go to the assistance of the Christian Slavs, with whom many of his subjects were already serving as volunteers. The Russian troops crossed the Balkans and reached the gates of



PETROGRAD VIEW OF THE SEVEN-PIERED NICHOLAS BRIDGE SPANNING THE WATERS OF THE RIVER NEVA

Petrograd possesses few national or real Russian features, and its outward appearance has long been that of a modern and Western city. The long rows of secular buildings interspersed with churches are seen to best advantage from the quays and the Neva, which in part less troublous times were in summer usually much animated by carriages and shipping. The Nicholas Bridge, connecting the English Quay with Vasili Ostrov on the right bank of the Neva, is a fine granite and iron structure, at one end of which stands a miniature marble chapel erected in 1854 and dedicated to S. Nicholas.

Constantinople. The Russo-Turkish War was ended by the Treaty of San Stefano (January, 1878), which gave the new Bulgaria a seaboard on the Ægean, but that of Berlin (July 13, 1878) revised the first in a sense wholly hostile to Russia. The Bulgarians, lately liberated by her, were placed under a guarantee of Europe in general, chiefly against Russia. Meanwhile the Bosnians, who are Serbs, were withdrawn from Turkish rule only to be put under that of Austria.

The Treaty of Berlin came as a serious check to Russian aspirations whether religious, patriotic, or democratic. There was a revival of liberal patriotic opinion during the deadly war between nihilists and the government. The emperor appointed as his chief minister Loris-Melikov (1880), whose programme was to crush revolution but to win the confidence of the general public. The revolutionaries were relentlessly pursued, but the emperor was at last persuaded to summon representatives of the county councils and other bodies to St. Petersburg to take part in the drafting of laws. On the day that he took this decision he was assassinated (March 13, 1881).

Russia's Forward Policy in the East

His successor, Alexander III. (1881-94), for a time put a certain value on experts as consultants of the government, but soon fell back into sheer reaction. The small revolutionary groups were rounded up and punished. The censorship again became intolerable. Education was dragooned, and made as inaccessible as possible to the poorer classes. Travel in Europe was restricted. The Church (through the Procurator of the Holy Synod) was made more and more the instrument of police rule and reaction.

Only the peasants obtained some alleviations of their state burdens. Meanwhile, in its anxiety to get away from the contagious example of Europe, the government prosecuted advance eastwards, and further large tracts fell under Russian rule, with the result that British fears as to India were accentuated and more than once almost led to conflict with Russia.

The Russian race spread itself through Siberia. Isolated in Europe, Russia sought to rule the East, an ambition which harmonised with Germany's desire to get a free field in the Balkans. Russian expansion eastwards reached the confines of dense population in China and later raised questions between Russia and Japan. Non-Russian nationalities of the empire, especially to the west—the Finns, the Germans, the Poles, and the Jews—were subjected to a policy of "russification," aimed at crushing out their national distinctiveness. Alexander III. kept peace with Europe, but his policy in the Balkans, culminating in the kidnapping of Prince Alexander of Battenberg, kept alive the distrust of the West. To balance the strength of Imperial Germany, the Russian government with some hesitation entered into closer relations with France.

All this time, though at first almost without the attention of the government, Russia was herself undergoing a rapid economic development. The freedom of labour to migrate, together with the exploitation of coal and iron in South Russia, especially on the Donets, created a new industrial area, and the centre of population steadily gravitated southwards. Witte, who had risen from employment on the Odessa Railway to be Minister of Transport and later of Finance (1893-1903), furthered this industrial development in every way.

Socialism and Economic Development

By adopting a gold standard, he facilitated relations with foreign credit of which he made the widest use. In particular, foreign merchants were encouraged to set up works in Russia. New mines and factories received not only concessions and subsidies, but large orders from the government, which was at this time constructing the Trans-Siberian Railway. Witte also enriched the treasury by restoring the state monopoly of spirit.

This industrialisation of Russia, falling at the very time when Marxism was making progress in Western Europe, led to the formation of groups of Socialist thinkers in Russia. Witte endeavoured to win the new industrial workers for the government by a philanthropic system of factory laws and the institution of factory inspectors who were expected to safeguard the interests of the workers; factories were required to establish hospitals, schools, and crèches.

Accession of Nicholas II.

Severe famines in 1891 and 1892 led to a great revival of interest of the public in the peasant. Again students from the universities streamed down to the country, and this time they found useful professional employment as schoolmasters, doctors, or technical experts in the service of the zemstva. Zemstvo work everywhere revived, and, on the accession of a new sovereign, Nicholas II. (1894-1917), there were again strong requests for constitutional government. These requests were rudely rebuffed, but the zemstva, and later the town councils, though increasingly restricted in their powers, particularly in that of levying rates and in that of enforcing their by-laws,

instituted a campaign of public service which formed a school alike for their members and for their employees.

The leading zemstvo was that of Moscow, which, under D. N. Shipov, served as a model to the rest of the country. Urgent economic questions forced the government to appoint commissions—for instance, to deal with the growing impoverishment of the centre—and on these commissions those members who were associated with zemstvo work supported a common programme. Anxious to utilise this new force in his struggle with the more reactionary ministers, Witte instituted, in 1902, local economic committees based on the zemstva. He was driven from power by his rival Plehve, who later annulled the re-election of Shipov as chairman of the Moscow zemstvo.

Causes of the Russo-Japanese War

The Russian policy of advance eastwards had by now brought Russia to grips with Japan. The Japanese War (1904-5), which was due in part to commercial ambitions of a small group associated with the court, proved the bankruptcy of both the foreign and internal policy of the government. Each reverse in the war was accentuated by troubles at home, which made the government unwilling to send its best troops to the front.

At home two movements ran side by side, one for reform and one for wholesale revolution. In July, 1904, the reactionary minister Plehve was assassinated, and the emperor named as his successor a high official with Liberal views, Prince Svyatopolk-Mirsky, who appealed to the public for its confidence and received a sympathetic response. Moved by the troubled state of the country, leading members of zemstva met in conference in November, 1904, and put forward a programme of far-reaching reforms, including a National Assembly.

Crowning Catastrophe of the Struggle

The emperor forbade the zemstva to talk politics, and announced that he would himself give reforms. There followed a number of professional banquets, at which each profession, practically with unanimity, supported the programme of the zemstva and formed a professional union for the purpose. In January, after a prolonged strike in St. Petersburg, the priest Gapon, formerly and later an agent of the police, led an enormous crowd to the Winter Palace to ask for reforms; the procession was fired on by troops, and there were many victims; police expulsions dispersed many of the demonstrators all over Russia, and there sprang up an epidemic of strikes.

Meanwhile, the more advanced of the zemstvo men set about the formation of a Liberal Party. In February the emperor's uncle, the Grand Duke Sergius, governor-general of Moscow, was assassinated in the Kremlin. The emperor, reprobating this act, at the same time promised a National Assembly. Various parties now began to organize themselves.

The crowning catastrophe of the Japanese War was the destruction of the Russian Fleet at Tsushima (May 27, 1905). Universal indignation found expression in a deputation from men of various parties which was received by the emperor on June 19. Congresses and party conferences followed, and in August the government announced a scheme for an Imperial Duma. In this project the franchise was hopelessly restricted, and the assembly was only to be consultative. Disorders continued, and Poland and other outlying parts almost passed out of control.

The crew of the battleship Potemkin mutinied in the Black Sea and caused consternation in Odessa. Capable agitators created in the country areas a peasants' union, and agrarian riots on a large scale lasted well into the winter, and were only repressed by punitive columns. Witte had, meanwhile, secured moderate terms from the Japanese in the Treaty of Portsmouth.

The Government and the First Duma

In October, practically without organization, starting from a strike of the railwaymen, a general strike spread over the country; and on October 30 the emperor, recalling Witte to power as his Prime Minister, issued a manifesto in which he rectified the limitations of the project of the Duma, extending the franchise and making it legislative, and promulgated from the throne the reforming policy of the first zemstvo conference.

The October manifesto was hailed by many, but disorders did not diminish. A Council of Workmen, which came into being during the strike, challenged the authority of the government in St. Petersburg, but the new strikes for which it called were not effective. On the arrest of some of its members there was a short rising in Moscow, which tended only to discredit the revolutionaries and to tire the public mind of convulsions.

It was at this moment that the law of the Duma was practically made to include universal franchise (December). The tide now flowed the other way. Repression set in, and a peculiarly savage rising in Latvia was ruthlessly crushed. By a number of new fundamental laws made on its own sole initiative, the government limited the competence of the Duma.

The Duma, when elected, proved to be predominantly Liberal, the dominant party being the Cadets (Constitutional Democrats). It made an almost unanimous demand for detailed reforms, passed a vote of censure on the ministry, and adopted several bills which received no attention. The government invited the country not to trust the Duma, and the Duma replying with an appeal to the people was dissolved (July, 1906).

The minister to whom was entrusted the dissolution of the Duma was P. A. Stolypin. Like Loris-Melikov, he desired to crush revolution and to promote reform. The revolutionary organizations were almost exterminated by field courts-martial. On the other hand, in November, Stolypin, on his own authority, authorised peasants to convert their holdings in the commune into personal property.

The elections to the Second Duma were an almost unanimous reprobation of the dissolution of the First, whose protesting members had been excluded by the government from re-election. The Second Duma was markedly inferior to its predecessor, and kept as quiet as possible in order to prolong its existence, but the reactionaries had now taken heart, Stolypin's influence at court was much diminished, and after a couple of provocative plots the Second Duma was dissolved. At the same time the predominance in the Duma was, by new wholesale restrictions of franchise, transferred to the gentry (June, 1907).

Third Duma's Record of Reform

Little was hoped of the Third Duma. Here the prevailing party were the Octobrists, or Conservative Reformers, who took their stand on the manifesto of October 30, 1905, and the Cadets, or Liberals, were a small minority. The Third Duma (1907-12), however, managed not only to live out its period of five years but to make a definite mark on both legislation and public opinion. Much was done in army and navy reform, in education (made in principle universal), and in the bettering of social conditions.

The principal act of the Duma was the modification and adoption of Stolypin's land decree, and in many parts there began to arise a race of yeomen, living on their own farms apart from interference of the commune, which, as far as land tenure was concerned, in several places dissolved itself. This led to cultivation of waste areas and also incidentally to an influx of peasants into the towns, bringing with them the price which they had received for the sale of their land. The economic progress of the country made very great strides in this period. The employers in various trades were federated and united in a Council of Trades and Industries which constantly demanded freedom of industrial initiative. Much foreign capital came into Russia; the first Chamber of Commerce was founded specially to promote trade with Great Britain, to which the Duma, as a whole, showed a marked friendliness. These effects flowed from a treaty between the two countries in 1907, which made a satisfactory settlement of their disputes concerning Persia. The Fourth Duma, elected in 1912, contained practically the same personnel as the Third, and continued in every way to develop friendship with Britain.

Bolshevists and Menshevists

Socialist groups had grown greatly in the troubled years. The Socialist Revolutionaries, a country party of Russian origin, had been in the field since 1900 and commanded a great deal of support. Marxism, or Social Democracy, had many adherents in the towns. At a congress held abroad in 1903 the Social Democrats broke up into two groups, of which the Menshevists, headed by Plekhanov, were prepared to deal with and utilize a regime which was becoming increasingly constitutional, while the Bolshevists, under Lenin, worked for a class war.

In 1909 Austria announced her final annexation of Bosnia, and simultaneously Bulgaria declared her independence from Turkey. This raised again the Serbian question, and there were vehement Serbian protests backed up by the great majority of Russians, independently of party. Germany then made it clear that she was behind Austria, and gave a direct challenge to Russia. Stolypin did not feel strong enough for war, and, after negotiations in which friendly services were rendered by Great Britain, the protests were allowed to drop. In 1911 Stolypin was assassinated. From 1909 onwards Russian opinion was convinced that German aggression and the German challenge would be repeated.

Russia and the Great War

The murder of the Archduke Francis Ferdinand, in 1914, again raised the whole question. Austria and Germany used the occasion for demands on Serbia which brought on the Great War. This war was at first popular in Russia, chiefly as a reply to German aggression and as effecting an alliance with Britain and France. The provision for Red Cross service, and later for the other needs of the army, was left to the "Zemsky Soyuz," an organization of the zemstva under Prince Lvov. Numberless volunteers anticipated their time of service. Poland was at first left open, and Russia

concentrated her forces principally on the south west Here an invading army of Austrians close upon a million men was turned by its right flank and driven almost out of Galicia (Aug Sept) When the Germans were successfully advancing on Paris a Russian counter stroke was launched on East Prussia, but espionage and lack of organization led to the disaster of Tannenberg (August), where the army of Samsonov was practically annihilated, this diversion, however had succeeded in drawing off German forces from the advance on Paris

Ministry Loses Public Confidence

Warsaw was now strongly occupied by the Russians and a German attacking force was driven off and pursued In May 1915 however, a powerful artillery concentration was made against the Russians in Galicia and after heroic sacrifices the Russians were expelled from Austrian territory The same artillery superiority broke up the whole Russian line Warsaw was lost and by the autumn of 1915 the Russians had retreated to the line of the Pinsk marshes

The next year was marked only by fewer and more local operations, which, however, testified to the steadiness of the Russians and to a somewhat increased equipment The Duma, whose members had so far mostly confined themselves to war services now took an active part in demanding efficiency, especially in face of the munition scandals of the previous year and a group of parties constituting an effective majority and known as the Progressive Bloc demanded a ministry possessing the national confidence

Abdication of the Tsar

The reply of the court was the expulsion of the more liberal ministers, such as the Foreign Minister Sazonov, and their replacement by men of dubious antecedents and convictions The new Prime Minister, Sturmer, was practically driven from office by the contempt with which he was received by the Duma Grave scandals, not unconnected with the equipment of the army, centred on the name of a dissolute priest Rasputin, who enjoyed unlimited credit at the court The emperor made a visit of conciliation to the Duma, but the ministry was suspected of planning a separate peace

The rout of the Rumanian armies increased the general distrust of the government The colossal casualties of the war had had their effect upon the mood of the public, though the army continued to hold good.

In March, 1917, the Minister of the Interior, Protopopov, precipitated matters by posting policemen with machine-guns at various points in Petrograd (the new name for the capital introduced during the war) to fire on crowds which were asking for bread The troops began joining the side of the people and the government collapsed without any effective resistance The emperor abdicated leaving the power in the hands of a provisional government formed by the Duma

Again a reform and a revolution movement went on side by side but this time, in view of the extreme war weariness and the collapse of the whole administration the second prevailed The provisional government formed in the main out of the Progressive Bloc was from the outset at issue with a Council of Workmen's and Soldiers' Deputies The new government declared at once for universal franchise and a Constituent Assembly and at once conceded full independence to Poland It was never however, able to establish its authority which was threatened by the Bolshevist group actively supported by German organization and money An army order of the Council which practically released the soldiers from the authority of their officers completely disorganized the army The more moderate ministers resigned

Lenin and Trotsky in Power

A Socialist Revolutionary Kerensky, held a dictatorship for some months but a rupture ensued between him and the Commander in Chief Kornilov who made an unsuccessful attempt to dissolve the Council and in November Kerensky, in turn fell before a Bolshevist coup d'etat planned with ability by Trotsky

The Bolshevists established a Government of Peoples Commissaries of which Lenin was President based in principle on a system of Soviets (or councils) from which all but the working classes were excluded All property was declared to be nationalized including the profits of industry or agriculture Peace was concluded with the Central Powers at Brest Litovsk (1918) on humiliating terms

The Red Army was ably organized by Trotsky, and various attacks led by Generals Kornilov Alexeiev and Denikin in the south, by Admiral Kolchak in Siberia, by General Miller in Archangel, by General Yudenich near Petrograd, and by General Wrangel in the Crimea, which were backed with growing half-heartedness by the Entente Powers were successfully defeated (1918 20)

Recurring risings of peasants were crushed by punitive columns An Extraordinary Commission dealt wholesale and summarily with all opponents of the new regime Only Bolshevist literature was allowed, extensive propaganda was organized all over the country, and a

comprehensive system of education was planned.

The Reign of Terror was quickly aggravated by epidemics, mortality, and depopulation of the towns and, after the seizure of the peasants' stock of grain by military expeditions of the government, wholesale famine broke out on the Volga and in South Russia and Crimea.

Among the people there was a notable religious revival and a strong tendency towards individualism and decentralization. A war with Poland (1920) in which the Red Army was driven back from the gates of Warsaw by the generalship of the French General Weygand, had closed the period of external conflicts, and in March, 1921, Lenin pronounced for "an economic retreat" from the application of Marxist principles and sanctioned a partial restoration of private enterprise in trade.

After negotiations with several European Powers, conferences were held on the initiative of Britain at Genoa and The Hague, with the object of organizing and regulating European assistance for the restoration of normal conditions in the great Slav state.

RUSSIA: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Mainly except in Lithuania from the Black Sea to the Arctic Ocean. Valdai Hills rise in central part and form principal water parting, from which drainage flows to Black, Baltic, and Caspian Seas. Northward the boundary is the Arctic Ocean; east the Ural Mountains, whose other side is Siberia; south the Caspian Sea, the Black Sea, Rumania, west Czechoslovakia, Poland, Lithuania, Latvia, Estonia, the Baltic and Finland. Only in Caucasus, 5,000 feet, and Ural Mountains, Caucasus, Elsewhere land rarely rises above 1,000 feet. Rivers form important natural highways, but traffic is much interrupted by ice in winter and in autumn, shortage of water. In the south are vast tracts of arid and semi-arid country called steppes, through which in winter blow piercing blizzards below zero Fahr. Winter lasts six months at Archangel, where mean daily temperature is 14° below zero; five months in Petrograd, and little more in Black Sea littoral. Large areas are forest-covered, and north of them within Arctic Circle are the tundras, marshes in summer and frozen in winter. Total area of European Russia about 1,800,000 square miles, with estimated population of 100,000,000.

Government and Constitution

Russian Federal Socialist Federal Soviet Republic. Constitution was published July 19, 1918, and after it had been proclaimed the supreme authority of Soviets of Workers', Soldiers', and Peasants' Deputies, with entire authority in their hands. Mines, waterways of national importance, live stock, and all land are declared the property of nation, as are all means of transport and production, though the owners be allowed private ownership. Constitution assures freedom of opinion, conscience, and the Press. All Russian Congress of Soviets consists in the case of town Soviets of one representative for every 25,000 inhabitants, and for Provincial Congresses of one for every 125,000. The All Russian Congress of Soviets elects an All Russian Central Executive Committee of 386 members meeting not less than once every two months, and in this body is vested legislative, controlling, and administrative powers. Franchise universal and for both sexes after age of eighteen, provided that elector earns a living by productive labour. No privileged or any person deprived of civic rights in a criminal court, or who employs others for profit, lives on unearned income, may vote.

Defence

Service in army universal and compulsory, but only labourers allowed privilege of actually bearing arms for the Soviet; other citizens doing other work of military importance. Red army has a peace strength of about 600,000. There is, besides, a militia recruited universally from age of eighteen. For the better organization of this force the country is divided into ninety-three regimental districts. Large percentage of officers come from peasant and worker community, though officers of the old imperial army were largely used for organization and training purposes. The navy consists of Baltic fleet and Black Sea flotilla. In the Baltic there are four old Dreadnoughts, two cruisers, one sixty destroyers, and fifteen submarines. There are also flotillas on the Caspian Sea and the River Dniepr.

Commerce and Industries

Main product of Russia is grain, 47,000,000 tons being harvested in 1922. For same year 120,000 acres were under cotton. In 1921 salt production amounted to 913,000 tons, and petroleum 4,807,000 in 1922. In 1922, 4,476 dessiatines (1 dessiatine = 2·7 acres) were described as area of famine, 2,066 dessiatines as partial famine area, and 3,745 as productive non-famine area. Total value of imports for 1922 in millions of gold roubles at prices ruling in 1913 are estimated at 202·11 for 2,054,455 tons of goods, and exports similarly calculated were valued at 74·82 for 805,450 tons. Main articles of import were foodstuffs, coal, and timber; seed and oil export, timber and metal ores. Soviet Government made a Trade Agreement with Great Britain in 1921. Money unit the rouble, 0·46 roubles being officially equal to the pound sterling, the nominal rouble value being about 2s. 1d.

Communications

There are some 42,500 miles of railway in use and in European Russia about 20,000 miles of waterway navigable for steamers, 7,400 for light sailing boats, and 88,700 for rafts.

Religion and Education

Complete religious freedom, though prevailing creed is that of Greek Russian or Orthodox Church which has been disestablished. There are large numbers of Mahomedans in east and south-east of country, and Jews in towns of south-west. Education is compulsory and entirely state controlled. No private school may exist. There are various universities and institutions for medicine, economics, and philology.

Chief Towns

Petrograd (population 2,318,000), Moscow (1,050,000), Kharkov (258,000), Kazan (195,000), Nijni Novgorod (112,000), Archangel (43,500).

WATER CARTED IN HOGSHEADS TO LAY THE DUST SCATTERED BY SAN SALVADOR S VOLCANO

San Salvador, chief of the Republic's cities occupies a fine site more than two thousand feet above sea level But as like many other towns of Central America it lies within the immediate danger zone of an active volcano and suffers much from the dust and ashes that are periodically belched forth from it mouth, the water carts here have plenty to do A cobbled space is provided where the great hogsheads that serve for tanks may be replenished from the leathern pipe seen above

Salvador

I. A Vigorous Race in a Volcanic Land

By Hamilton Fyfe

Author of "The Real Mexicans," etc.

WHETHER a people which has seven times rebuilt its capital city after earthquakes, or other disasters volcanic in character, should be praised for its patience and courage or blamed for foolish obstinacy is a question which can be argued both ways. Those who do not know the Salvadorians will probably blame them. Anyone who has been in this small Central American Republic and made any study of the Hondurans will be more inclined to take the favourable view.

For of all the Central Americans they are the most energetic, the most intelligent, the readiest to work. This does not imply that their vigour of mind and body would be considered anything out of the way in North America or in Europe. It is not to be expected that people who live in a climate such as theirs should display the same energy or the same force of character as those who are braced by cold and compelled to wrest a living out of an unfriendly soil. Yet, when compared with their neighbours the Hondurans, they certainly compel admiration.

Compensations for Heavy Risks

Their territory is small, and has a larger population than Nicaragua, which is seven times its size, and than Honduras, which has six times as much territory. And a great part of it is subject to frequent and violent volcanic disturbances. Yet it is in this very part that the mass of the Salvadorians persist in making their abode!

The reason for this is that the volcanic regions are both more healthy and more suitable for farming than the strip of Pacific coast which lies below them or the high mountains which stretch up behind towards the frontier of Honduras. This is the only one of the Central American countries which has no Atlantic seaboard. It fronts the Pacific only, and it is handicapped by not possessing one really good harbour. Passengers landing at the port of La Libertad used to be slung ashore from lighters in an iron cage. Now the landing system has been improved, and the port of Acajutla has become more important than La Libertad.

The Birth of a Mountain

Approaching the Republic by sea, you are sure to have pointed out to you, as soon as it is visible, the huge volcano called "The Lighthouse of Salvador." This was thrown up in 1770. Its other name is Izalco. Its appearance was preceded by rumblings under the earth and by shocks which terrified the folk on a cattle-farm standing where the crater now is, and sent them flying for safety. When they ventured back to see what had happened, they found the earth had opened and was belching out flames and thick smoke and molten lava.

It is said that within two months a mountain arose four thousand feet high. The aspect of the country was altered, and ever since then the volcano has been in eruption. It does no harm, but the people speak of it with superstitious awe, and believe that some day it will vent its wrath upon them again.

The Salvadorians are a nation of farmers, though they do some manufacturing as well. They grow, without any severe labour, coffee on the slopes of the mountains; sugar, cotton, and tobacco in the hot, damp coast region; and in one district the balsam, which is called "Peruvian," although it was

MIGHTY LEAF FROM THE PLANTAIN PLANT

In this land of burning sun nature has provided the means of abundant shade in the leaves of the plantain a food plant allied to the banana An old tradition connects the plantain with the forbidden fruit of the Garden of Eden

never found in Peru It got that name from being shipped long ago through the Peruvian port of Callao The balsam is the sap of a big tree, so thickly leaved that it makes a darkness in the forests, hundreds of miles in extent where it grows The bark is scraped or cut, and the juice compelled to flow As a cure for asthma and other chest complaints it has a world wide reputation It is used also for making soaps and scents

The trees from which this balsam is taken will not grow well anywhere but in one particular district, inhabited by Indians They consider it their own and make a handsome profit by preparing and selling it They are known as the Balsimos and they practise a kind of socialism based on the principle From each according to his ability to each according to his needs The heads of the community are old men who act as both governors and priests To them all earnings are handed over and at intervals distributed to families in proportion to their requirements

Little is known for certain about their system It is supposed that they have vast sums of money buried in the forest and that every year they add to these with strange religious ceremonies They are darker taller less communicative than the people of Salvador generally who are almost entirely a mixed race and one of the best that have resulted from Spanish Indian marriages They have certainly shown more enterprise than any other people on the isthmus They were the first to break away from Spain and their earliest ambition was to become a state in the North American Union, which proved that even then they were under the influence of enlightened ideas They were the first also to struggle against the domination of the priests

Quite early in their independent history they refused submission to the Archbishop of Guatemala and chose a bishop of their own The Pope threatened to excommunicate the entire

CHILDREN OF THE FOREST IN THEIR LOFTY PLAYGROUND

In the intricacy of its branches, which writhe and twist about the trunk, the amata tree provides the most exciting possibilities for play Hide and seek and all the breathless joys of children s play have a particular thrill when there is a drop of some feet for the incautious, and, when tired, the players can rest shaded by the leafy canopy above

BULLOCK WAGONS IN THE PATH OF THE EARTHQUAKE'S DEVASTATING CONVULSIONS

Though the damage done by a simultaneous earthquake and volcanic eruption was sufficient to warrant de pair of such a dangerous site for their capital the Salvadorians at once set to work to restore order in their streets Their terrible neighbour displayed its awful powers of destruction in 1854, again in 1873, and then in 1917, and on each occasion the inhabitants went quietly to work and rebuilt their wrecked homes The wagons are clearing the streets of rubbish

Photo American Museum of Natural History

WOMEN OF SAN SALVADOR TURN OUT TO CLEAR THE RUBBISH THAT WAS A STREET

In this street the damage by earthquake has been severe. The rubbish has been collected in heaps and the stout-hearted women of the city are filling their wide and shallow baskets. Each load is dumped into a bullock wagon. The construction of the buildings can be seen where the seismic shocks have shaken the plaster from the laths. The cathedral has been rebuilt entirely of wood, the better to withstand the activities of the mountain that soars eight thousand feet above

Photo, American Museum of Natural History

nation, but that made no difference whatever to their sturdy attitude. Later they wisely fixed at a reasonable amount the marriage fees of the Church. Each congregation has a voice in choosing its priest, and the priests elect their bishop; thus the whole ecclesiastical system has been given a democratic basis.

Intelligent Democracy in Being

So democratic is the constitution of Salvador that elections to Congress take place every year, yet universal suffrage has not been adopted. All married men are given a vote if they have not been convicted of crime, if they do not owe money, if they have some regular occupation other than domestic service, and if they have never received money for services rendered to a foreign power.

Unmarried men can only vote if they are property owners. The idea is to limit the franchise to those who are doing something useful for the community. On the whole, the government is such as an industrious, quiet, sensible folk deserve. Their finance is well managed, and their debt is small.

Their methods of cultivation might, of course, be improved. The tobacco planters, for example, might hit upon some plan of clearing the tobacco plants from grubs and flies better than driving in flocks of turkeys among them and letting the birds pick the pests off. It can be imagined that they pick off a good deal else!

Paucity of Urban Centres

Indigo used to be grown to great advantage, but it did not succeed in competing with the aniline dye. It needed very careful treatment, cutting just at the right moment; also it took up a large area of ground compared with the space required for other crops, and the ground needed a great deal of working. For these reasons it has gone out of cultivation. Yet the soil is so accommodating and the climate so kindly that its loss has been little felt. Owing to the people being mostly farmers, there are few towns, and those which have grown up are of small size. Apart from the capital there are only two of importance, San Miguel, where there is a fair every year in February, which attracts buyers from all parts of Central America, as that of Nijni-Novgorod used to draw its attendance from every region of Russia and the Middle East; and Santa Ana, a busy commercial centre, built in a steep situation among green downs, which send torrents pouring through its streets in rainy weather.

The capital, San Salvador, has a magnificent site also which not only gives it very fine views, but keeps it cool and healthy. Nearly three thousand feet high, it looks down to the sea, eighteen miles distant, and in every other direction up to mountains. It is not a picturesque or interesting town. No place could be that has suffered from eleven earthquakes and has been three times almost completely destroyed.

Resilience After Disaster

One of these disasters occurred in 1854. The surface gave one tremendous heave, and in less than a quarter of a minute the town was in ruins. Again in 1873, 1917, and 1919 the town suffered. The vigour of the Salvadorian character was shown then, as before and since that time, by the brisk clearing away of the ruins and the rebuilding of the place. But it could not be supposed that it should be very solidly rebuilt. Still, it has some fair public offices, and though the appearance of the houses is dull, they have delightful gardens, green all the year round, thanks to the water which runs down the centre of the streets and is supplied for watering purposes.

There is a state theatre, where travelling companies appear, and where amateur performances are often given to crowded audiences. These include not merely music by local composers, and singing by the favourites of the hour, but also poems and speeches. These are, indeed, the most popular items of the programme. Any youth

SALVADORIAN GUARD OF HONOUR IN PRESIDENTIAL PROCESSION

One of the signs of progress in all the small republics of Central America is the demeanour of their soldiery. So often these present a slipshod appearance on parade or the martial pomposity of musical comedy. The troops that form the guard of honour on state occasions in Salvador look very different, and even from a distance suggest quiet efficiency in both pose and equipment

MESTIZOS OF A VILLAGE IN SALVADOR'S CATTLE DISTRICT

Salvador's cattle district provides meat for the entire Republic, and a quantity of hides for export. Oxen almost universally replace horses, so that from this locality is drawn also much of the means of transport. The carts have sides of poles like those illustrated in the chapter on Portugal, and may have a covering of hide In these vehicles the countryman takes his produce to market

who has a good flow of language can make his name easily in Salvador, especially if he celebrates some patriotic theme They are a perfervidly patriotic people, and keep many festivals commemorating famous events in their history. The early part of such holidays they give up to piety, and the later part to noise. In the mornings they go to church; after that they delight themselves with brass bands and fireworks.

While there are in the capital many reflections of prosperity, yet there are so many charitable societies and establishments in the city that one is driven to infer the existence of a large class below the poverty line.

To be poor in this country does not, of course, carry with it either the reproach or the discomfort which are associated with the receiving of relief, either public or private, among European peoples. The mass of the Indians have never been anything but poor. So long as they are at work they have enough for their needs, which are primitive. When they fall sick or suffer from a disinclination to work they are dependent on help from others, usually their own folk, but in Salvador the well-to-do make provision for those who are not so fortunate as themselves.

Six miles from San Salvador, a pleasant ride out through woods, is a

SAMOAN ISLAND WARRIOR IN WARTIME DRESS

With his collar of sharks' teeth, barbaric headdress and ornaments, and fearsome arms, he recalls a phase of native life when tribal warfare rent this Lotus Land of the Southern Seas

Photo by Frank C. Dawson

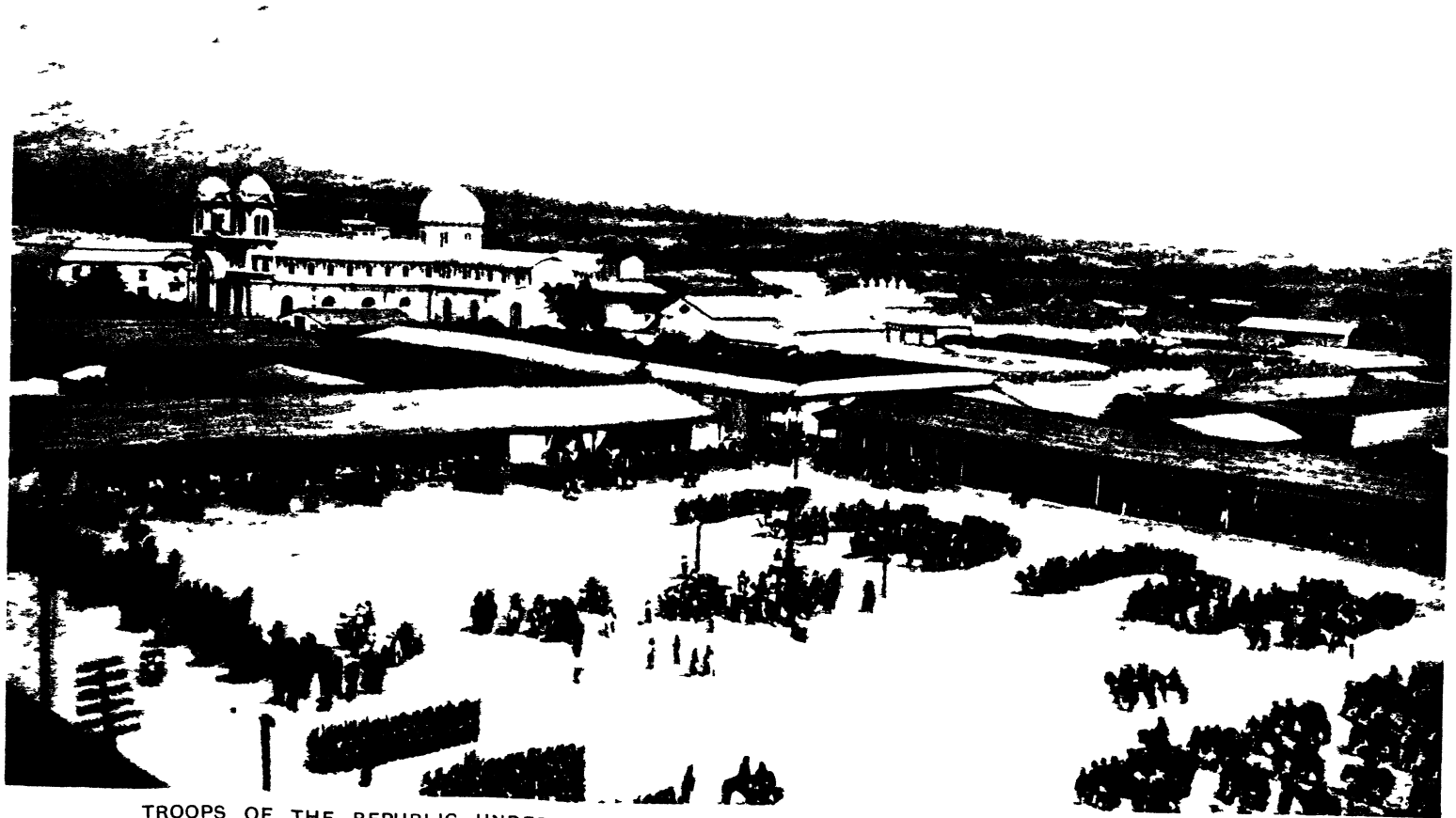
HOUSEWORK OUT OF DOORS. KNEADING DOUGH ON A CART SHAFT

Most housewives in Salvador have to make their own bread, and it is pleasant in the cool hours of the earlier morning to take the little bread trough out of doors and exchange local gossip with the young wife from next door The poles of the bullock cart have been drawn together for a table, and the double yoke lies in the cart itself

lake bathing resort, a number of hotels with pretty gardens add the attraction of comfort to those of nature, the place is an embodiment of pleasure and peace Yet as recently as 1880 this Lake Ilopango went through a series of alarming and violent changes, caused by volcanic disturbances far below the surface of the earth.

First the water rose, then it suddenly sank thirty-four feet. The ground around it heaved, there were rumblings which told of explosions beneath it, vapours and mephitic gases escaped. Finally, a volcano arose in the centre of the lake, and through this the fiery energy of the underworld found a vent. The furious eruption seemed to relieve the troubled earth of its malady, for after it there was quiet again.

The Republic is luckier than most of its Spanish-American fellows in possessing a labouring class which is tractable and industrious, and a governing class which makes genuine efforts in some directions to improve the civilization of the people. It makes efforts to educate them, and it picks out young men and women who show promise as writers, painters, or musicians, and sends them to Europe to be trained at the expense of the state. They go mostly to Paris. Here, as elsewhere in Spanish-America, the French are admired



TROOPS OF THE REPUBLIC UNDER REVIEW IN THE BARRACK SQUARE AT SAN SALVADOR CITY

Salvador maintains a standing army of some sixteen thousand officers and men and the authorities have been at pains to produce ma tne s and erve Some batteries of mountain artillery for which local topography give fine sc pe will be noticed on the right Behind are the lines of the w den cathedral that ha been painted to resemble stone, the real article being impracticable as building material in view of the activity of Mount San Salvad r seen in the background

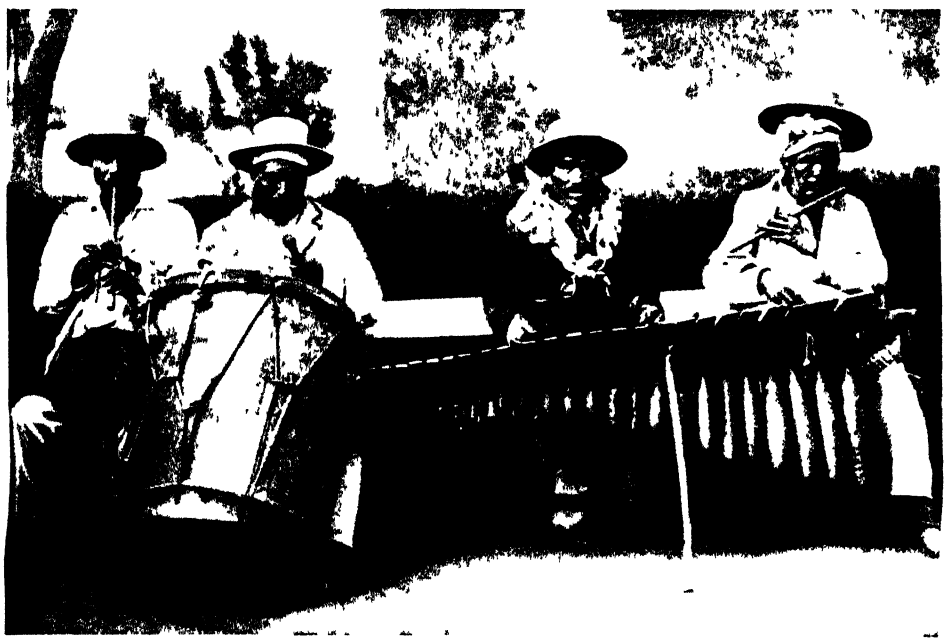
for their taste, and the Germans for their thoroughness and perseverance. The trade of Salvador had got mainly into German hands before the Great War Many even of the British vice-consuls were German traders, a fact which did no good to British commerce

The greater success of the German merchant is attributed to his careful study of the conditions of his market, to the trouble which he took to have his wares packed attractively, and to the easy terms he would grant in order to secure business. Further, the Germans were not so exclusive as the English nor so ready to ridicule the customs of the country as the Americans. They lived with the people, joined in their amusements, adapted themselves to their habits, made their social relations serve their business ends.

The intelligence of the natives is proved by the skill shown by many who were trained, mostly by Germans, as mechanics. They are clean and honest : they work faithfully for all who treat them well Too obstinately attached to their own ways to make good house-servants, they are in their proper element as guides through difficult country. They find their way by instinct, choose the best camping places, care for the pack mules, and serve a traveller well.

These Indians have good features and contented expressions They are short of stature, able to run great distances at a dog-trot, and able to carry great burdens They wear loose cotton trousers, baggy jackets, and wide palm-leaf hats The women dress neatly, are modest and attractive. Round their heads they wear scarves or kerchiefs for the purpose of keeping off the heat of the sun.

In the Indian homes the patriarchal system prevails, the authority of parents and grandparents is acknowledged and respected. Many attribute the good qualities of the native to the discipline which this system entails.



DRUM AND FLUTE ACCOMPANIMENT TO THE MARIMBA'S MUFFLED MUSIC

In the marimba, an advanced type of the gourd piano found throughout Africa, an example of which is the Liberian balafon, illustrated in page 3326, the lines of development of musical instruments are well indicated On the discovery that pieces of wood or metal of a certain shape made varying sounds, and that the longer the piece, the lower the note the scale naturally evolved

Salvador

II. Four Centuries of Steady Evolution

By Percy F. Martin

Author of "Through Five Republics of South America," etc.

SALVADOR (or El Salvador), while the smallest, is topographically and, in regard to its products and people, the most interesting of the six Republics of Central America. It is possessed of the most dense population, perhaps the most industrious and well-ordered of the smaller Latin American states. In the gorgeousness of its scenery, however, lies one of its greatest dangers, for this natural beauty has been brought about by violent seismic disturbances, which, while ruthlessly destructive on the one hand, have been productive of much scenic splendour on the other. Not only are the mountains distinguished by their height and strange verdure; their formation and their proximity to the world's earthquake centre endow them with a fascinating terror all their own.

Pedro de Alvarado invaded the country in 1524, coming thither from Mexico by way of Guatemala. After less than four years of Spanish savagery and extermination, complete dominion had been established, and, in 1528, the first European city, San Salvador, was founded, only to be soon afterwards destroyed. The three hundred years of Spanish rule afford very little occasion for comment, the history of progress being uneventful and the course of government similar to that pursued in other Latin American possessions of the Spanish Crown.

There would appear, however, to have been rather less popular discontent in this province of the huge vice-royalty of Guatemala, of which it formed but a small although important part. But it was impossible for the Spaniards to withstand the effect of the revolt against their dominion which occurred in other parts of South and Central America, so that in September, 1821, when Guatemala severed her connexion with Spain, and the Central American Confederation was formed, Salvador joined in the uprising.

At first consenting to annexation with Mexico, in 1839 the relationship, proving untenable, was severed, and further attempts upon the part of Morazán to reunite this with the other small states of Central America failed; his enterprise, repeated too often, cost him his life (1842).

Serious, indeed, was the position of the newly-arisen Republic of Salvador, since its leaders who had been sent to attend a "Junta" held at Guatemala City were met and overawed by armed bands, their deliberations were forcibly interrupted and suspended; some of them, such as Bedoys, Mauda, and others, were assassinated, while Gainza, President of the Provisional Junta, turned traitor and went over to the enemy under promises of a high post in the Mexican Government.

Salvador was the nearest province to Guatemala, and the centre of liberalism; thus it was not long before the patriots of the country took up arms in the defence of their newly-acquired freedom, and they claim the strange distinction of having fought the first seriously organized battle ever waged on Central American territory among Central Americans themselves.

Party jealousies and personal ambitions brought about political disintegration over a course of years, and fierce internecine struggles continued to rage. In 1885 General Justo Rufino Barrios, President of Guatemala, sought to establish what Morazán had failed to carry out; but his efforts ended equally disastrously. The first well-considered national law of Constitution was followed by a second in 1883, but this, in August, 1886, was discarded and another Constitution—that still in existence—was promulgated.

THE REPUBLIC OF SALVADOR

Under its terms the first president to be elected was General Menendez, his term lasting until 1890, when he was succeeded by General Carlos Ezeta. The third president, General Rafael Gutiérrez, in due course was followed in the order named by General Tomás Regalado, Don Pedro José Escalón, General Fernando Figueróa, Dr. Manuel Enrique Araujo (who was assassinated during his term of office, February, 1913), Don Carlos Melendez, and Señor Jorge Melendez.

In November, 1907, the Amapala Conference, held between the presidents of Salvador, Honduras, and Nicaragua, was summoned for the purpose of establishing peace, but failed. In December, 1908, a further effort to stir up revolution in Salvador was made by the then hostile president of Nicaragua, José Santos Zelava, who instigated an attack upon his fellow-president, General Fernando Figueróa. In April, 1909, the U.S A. found it expedient to despatch warships to Nicaraguan waters in order to prevent a further incursion into Salvadorian territory.

In July, 1919, further revolutionary movements were chronicled, the more serious having been that headed by General Lopez Gutiérrez, an unsuccessful presidential candidate, who broke into revolt in the region of Pariso, causing sanguinary encounters to take place between his rebel troops and government forces, the encounter taking place close to the Nicaraguan frontier. In May, 1920, General Araujo, another aspirant to the presidency, came into violent conflict with government troops in a bitterly-contested battle fought near Arcato, in Northern Salvador, quite close to the Honduran frontier, but met with defeat. Both uprisings were finally suppressed, but not without considerable loss of life.

Repeated refusal had been returned by Salvador to invitations to join a Central American Union. But at the end of June, 1921, the government of the day signed an agreement for confederation with Guatemala and Honduras. The federation consists of an offensive and defensive alliance, from which the U.S.A. are debarred because of racial difference.

Feeling between Americans and Salvadorians is not friendly. On December 20, 1919, the Foreign Secretary of Salvador requested the Washington Government to state clearly and definitely the intentions and interpretations of the Monroe Doctrine. On February 29 following, the United States Government replied that "a categorical answer to the question raised" was in preparation, setting forth Dr. Wilson's interpretation of the famous doctrine. This was not forthcoming, however, and since then little further has been heard of the matter.

A short-lived insurrection in the capital, San Salvador, occurred in June, 1921, but was productive of little trouble

Salvador has been singularly unfortunate in the number and severity of natural disasters overtaking it Apart from the many volcanic eruptions referred to, including the disastrous earthquake of May, 1919, which destroyed the greater part of the capital—a violent conflagration broke out in the city in the following month of July, when a large number of houses, the newly-erected radio-station, and attendant buildings, covering one and a half blocks in the centre of the city, together with several residences and hotels, were destroyed. Almost simultaneously there was an outbreak of yellow fever, the port of La Unión being placed in quarantine (June, 1920).

Several cases of bubonic plague were discovered, the outbreak constituting a serious menace to the neighbouring states, causing the other Central American nations to place Salvador in rigorous quarantine.

SALVADOR: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Lies on the Pacific coast of Central America, being bounded west by Guatemala, and north and east by Honduras. Save for narrow coastal plain, Salvador is mainly mountainous and abounds in volcanoes. Several of these are active, and the country is subject to periodic earthquakes and destructive eruptions. Bulk of population inhabit a fertile valley between two enclosing ranges. Much of the soil is very productive. Principal and only navigable river, the Lempa, some 200 miles long. Climate varies with altitudes, the coastal belt being forest-covered and unhealthy, while interior is lofty and more bracing. Total area about 13,000 square miles, with a population of some 1,500,000, more than half being of mixed Spanish-Indian stock.

Government and Constitution

Salvador became an independent republic on seceding from the Central American Federation in 1839. Legislative power in hands of Congress consisting of forty-two deputies representing the several departments elected annually by universal suffrage. President exercises powers of executive and is elected for four years.

Commerce and Industries

Agriculture chief occupation of inhabitants, and coffee is the principal product. Rubber, sugar, tobacco, and cocoa are also cultivated, and gold, silver, iron, copper, and mercury are found. Cattle, sheep, and horses are numerous. Imports for 1921 totalled £2,629,737, and included hardware, drugs, flour, and cottons. Among exports, which totalled £3,738,297 for same year, were coffee, sugar, balsam, hides, and rubber. Standard coin, the gold colon; nominal value, 2s. 1d.

Chief Towns

San Salvador, capital (estimated population 90,000), Santa Ana (70,000), San Miguel (34,000), San Vicente (30,000), Sonsonate (16,000).

MELLIFLUOUS ORATÓRY OF THE NATIVE TULAFALE CHARMS THE EARS OF THE KANAKAS OF SAMOA

Punctilio dear to the heart of the Samoan most courteous of all Polynesians. He talks by the hour with great eloquence on matters of general importance and holds an audience with his silver tongue. In the days when tribal warfare was frequent, nothing was permitted by formal discussion of the procedure to be followed and ceremonious debate not uncommonly ended in mutually satisfactory explanation of alleged unfriendly act

Samoa

A Paradise of the South Seas

By Frank Fox

Author of "Oceania," etc.

THE Samoan Islands—"the Navigators' Islands" as they were first christened by Louis Antoine de Bougainville in 1768 are typical of that charming South Seas life which is now quickly passing away.

Where the Pacific Ocean rolls its long swell the world was, until very recent years, still young and fresh. There were there laughing nations of happy children who had never grown up, and lands where the curse of Adam, which is that with the sweat of the brow must bread be won, had not fallen.

Civilization, alas! intrudes now, more urgent each year to bring its drabness of fettered life; and the Paradises of the South Seas yield to its advance here with the sullen and passionate resentment of the angry child, there with the pathetic listlessness of the child too afraid to be angry.

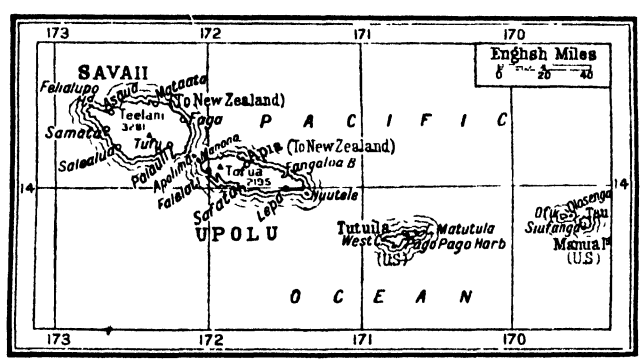
Still, there survives much and especially in Samoa that has the atmosphere rather of the Garden of Eden than of this curious world which man has made for himself a world of exacting tasks and harsh taskmasters, of ugly houses and smoke-stained skies, of machinery and conventions.

There was enough to hold Robert Louis Stevenson bondslave to Samoa during the closing years of his life. The impression with him, as he records, was instant: "The anchor plunged. It was a small sound, a great event; my soul went down with these moorings whence no windlass may extract nor any diver fish it up, and I, and some of my ship's company, were from that hour the bondslaves of the isles of Vivien."

The Samoan group, a little south of the Equator, is near to the longitude point where one gains or loses a day travelling west or east. The 171st meridian divides it under two flags: east of that meridian the Stars and Stripes fly; west, the British flag, with the Dominion of New Zealand as guardian. The group has thus two capitals, Pago Pago an important naval station—for the American half, and Apia for the British half.

This division is the final development of a very troubled history. The Dutch were the first white people to visit Samoa (1722). The French followed in 1768. But neither effected a settlement. The London Missionary Society (1830) were the pioneer white colonists, and they were followed a decade later by a United States naval mission which was the first to explore and survey the group.

In the middle of the nineteenth century a kind of loose tripartite guardianship of the islands was established by Great Britain, the U.S.A., and Germany, but there was no defined diplomatic control. An American naval officer secured the right to establish a



THE ISLANDS OF SAMOA

naval station at Pago Pago in 1872, and made a "treaty" with the Samoan people which his government did not take up.

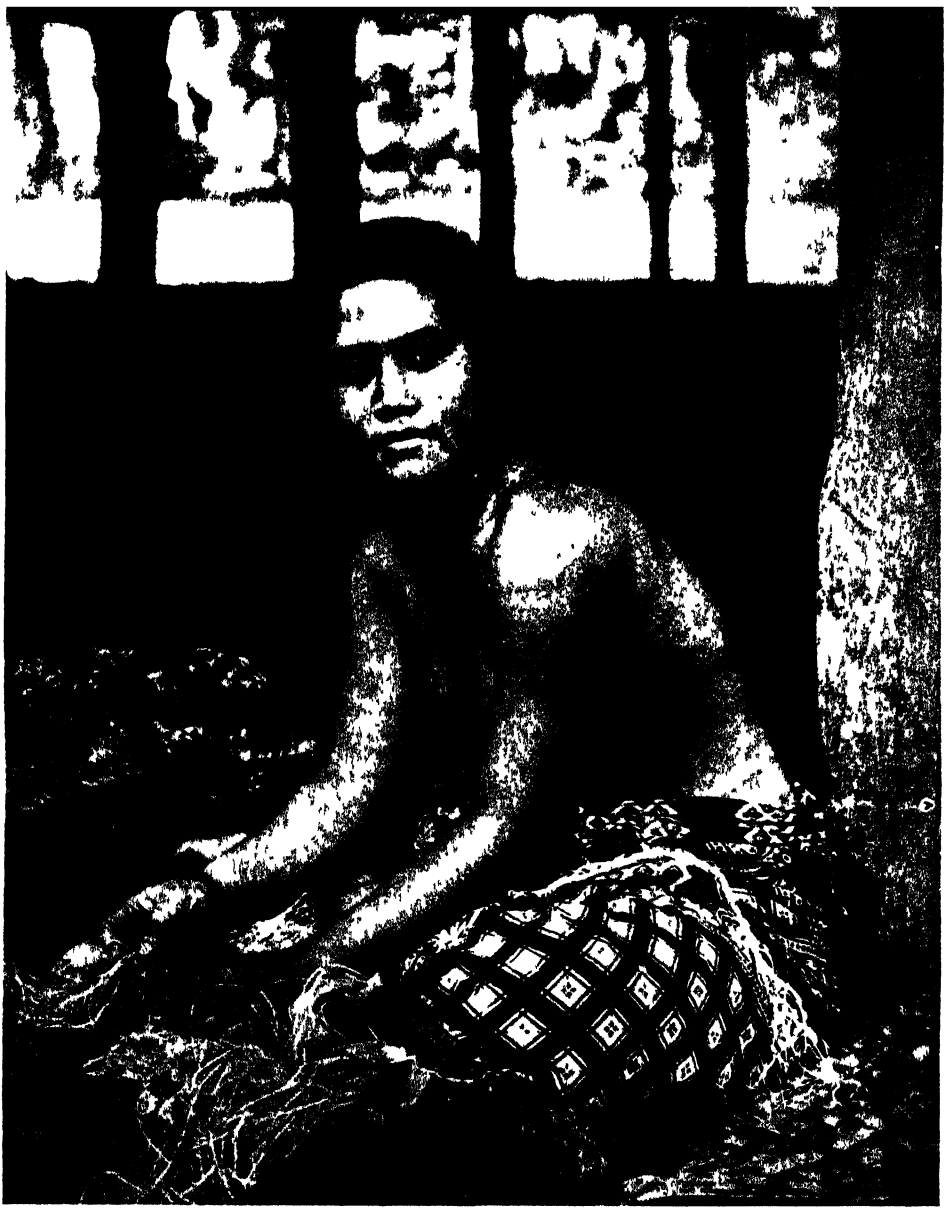
For a long period of years subsequently the Samoans were the sport of the rivalry of the three white Powers. An American citizen set himself up as dictator of the islands in 1873, and was deported by the British in 1876. The next year the Germans made war on Samoa, deposing one king and setting up another, and naval squadrons from the three Powers assembled at Apia prepared for trouble. Nature—one may imagine without being too fanciful—was angered at all this squabbling in her little Eden, and the great hurricane of 1889 hurricanes are very rare in the group—completely destroyed the American and the German squadrons. Only the British ship Calliope survived by putting out to sea. It was an early proof that the new age of steam and steel had not destroyed the spirit of the British Navy.

The Calliope was able, because of the superior care that had been taken of her engines and the courage and daring of her men, to steam out of Apia harbour in the teeth of the wild hurricane. An incident of the tragedy which will be

AGED FINGERS NIMBLE STILL IN BRAIDING TWINE

There is virtually no limit to the practical utility of every portion of the coconut palm, and the Samoans, intelligent and clever craftsmen, make full use of this most valuable of their natural assets. These old fellows, natives of Tutuila, are braiding together shreds of fibre from the husks of coconuts, and twisting the braids into "afe," a twine which while very light is surprisingly strong

Photo, Underwood Press Service

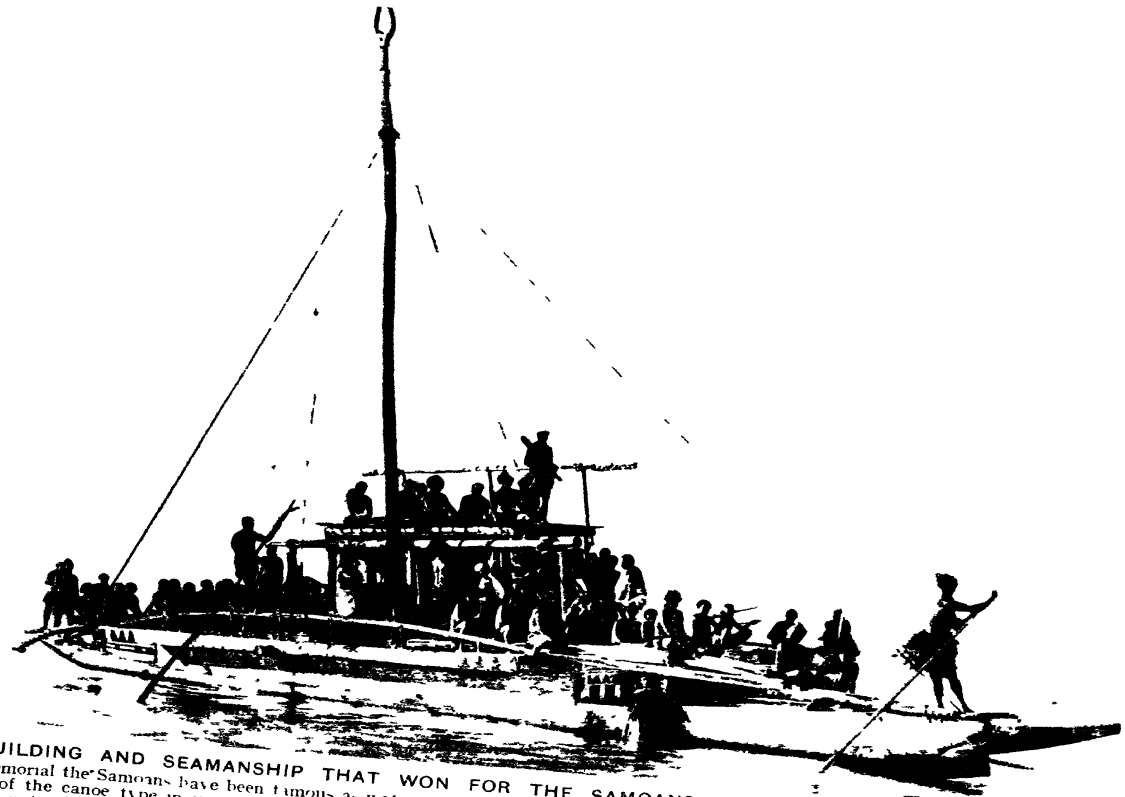


CAPABLE WOMANHOOD BUSY ON SAMOA'S MAIN HOME INDUSTRY

Mats are the prime necessity for Samoans setting up housekeeping, and every native woman is expert in the art of weaving them from the leaves and fibres profusely ready to her hand Mats piled one on another serve as beds, upon mats the people sit cross legged for meals, and mats that can be hung up and removed at will serve as walls for the native houses

Photo, Brown Brothers

always remembered in naval history, and in the records of the Anglo-Saxon race, is that the crews of the doomed American warships " manned the yards " to cheer the British ship as she went out to fight the storm in the open sea. The tragedy of 1889 did seem really to convey its lesson, and by the Berlin Act Samoa was granted independence, with, however, a Chief Justice representing the three Powers. That system did not endure, and shortly afterwards the Samoan Islands were divided between the United States and Germany, Great



SHIP-BUILDING AND SEAMANSHIP THAT WON FOR THE SAMOANS THE PROUD NAME OF NAVIGATORS

From time immemorial the Samoans have been famous as watermen so much so indeed, that their islands were formerly called the Navigators Islands. Their boats were of the canoe type in use among all the peoples of the South Seas trunks of trees hollowed out with fire and adze and sometimes fitted with outriggers They not infrequently attained dimensions entitling them to be described as ships with decks and deckhouses, and accommodating a large crew during voyages hundreds of miles in length that must have occupied considerable periods of time

AMPHIBIOUS YOUNG KANAKAS AT PLAY AMONG THE BLUE LAGOONS THAT FRINGE THE SAMOAN ISLANDS

Their native watermanship is shown by the Samoans in earliest infancy, the brown babies making for the sea as soon as they can roll Quite tiny children manage their little craft with such dexterity that kanaka and canoe seem to be a single living thing All along the coasts the children may be seen playing in their pow pows, or outrigger canoes, in the lagoons behind the surf breaking on the reefs—a fascinating living picture of bronze humanity on white beaches fringed on the one hand by verdant palms and on the other by turquoise sea

Photo Underwood Press Service

FAIR DAUGHTERS OF A HANDSOME RACE

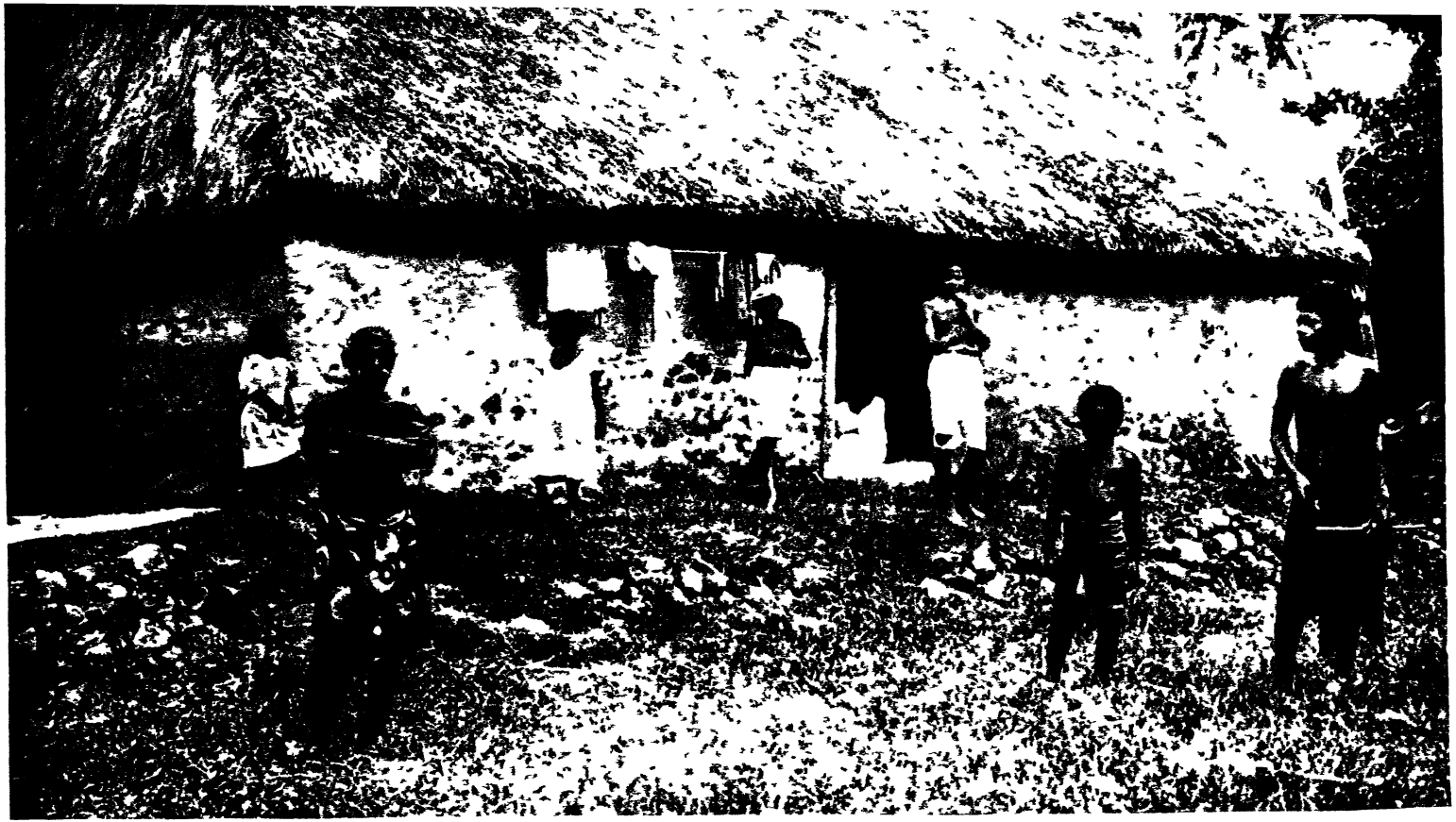
Samoans are the handsomest race in the Pacific, and the young women are often really beautiful, with well proportioned figures and a most alluring charm Their love of colour is highly developed, and they show a native artistry in the selection for their personal adornment of the flowers and hues that will most enhance the warmth and colour of their skin and hair

Photo, A J Tattersall

MAIDS OF HONOUR OF A SAMOAN VILLAGE "TAUPO"

In not a few communities of still low culture the village virgin is a sacrosanct personality. Known in Samoa as the "taupo," she leads the official dances, and looks after the comfort and entertainment of distinguished visitors. She lives in a house of her own, and is attended by several handmaidens chosen for their beauty of face and figure and for their ability and grace as dancers

4398



CARE-FREE, INDOLENT NATIVE LIFE IN THE GENIAL CLIMATE OF THE BEAUTIFUL ISLANDS OF SAMOA

Living in their villages and working their plantations with a minimum of care and labour the friendly half civilized natives of Samoa lead a quiet inactive existence. Food is abundant, vegetables and fruit form the chief diet varied by pork and fish, but even the poorest family is not dependent on labour for the wherewithal to live, and can easily subsist on the food which nature supplies freely for the gathering. Home industries are few and undeveloped for there is little incentive to labour, and the construction of houses and manufacture of cloth and mats provide almost the whole field for the employment of native ingenuity.

SYMPHONY OF ARMS IN A PERFORMANCE OF THE SIVA DANCE

Three young girls are performing an intricate figure of the Siva said to be one of the most attractive of Polynesian dances. Seated cross-legged on a square of matting, they make all their movements with the arms and upper part of the body, now and then they will sing some pleasant sounding old melody for song with the Samoans usually goes hand in hand with the dance

AMONG THE MERRY AND PLEASURE-LOVING NATIVES OF SAMOA

The Samoans have an inveterate passion for dancing, and no occasion is too insignificant on which to indulge in this popular pastime. The cottons of civilization are discarded for the festive moment, and flowers and foliage form the regulation ballet costume which, though scanty, is admirably suited for the display of lissom grace given by these lithe limbed daughters of the Southern Pacific

FORMIDABLE WEAPON OF SAMOAN WARRIOR

Flowers, leaves, and matting are all his costume, but though simple in tastes and chivalrous in manner, this Samoan is not without a leaning towards bellicosity, and can remember the time when he regarded the head of an enemy as his choice trophy

Photo, Underwood Press Service

Britain getting compensation in another quarter. On August 30, 1914, a New Zealand force captured German Samoa, the first capture of a German colony in the Great War. The group is now partly American and partly under New Zealand as mandatory for the British Empire under the League of Nations.

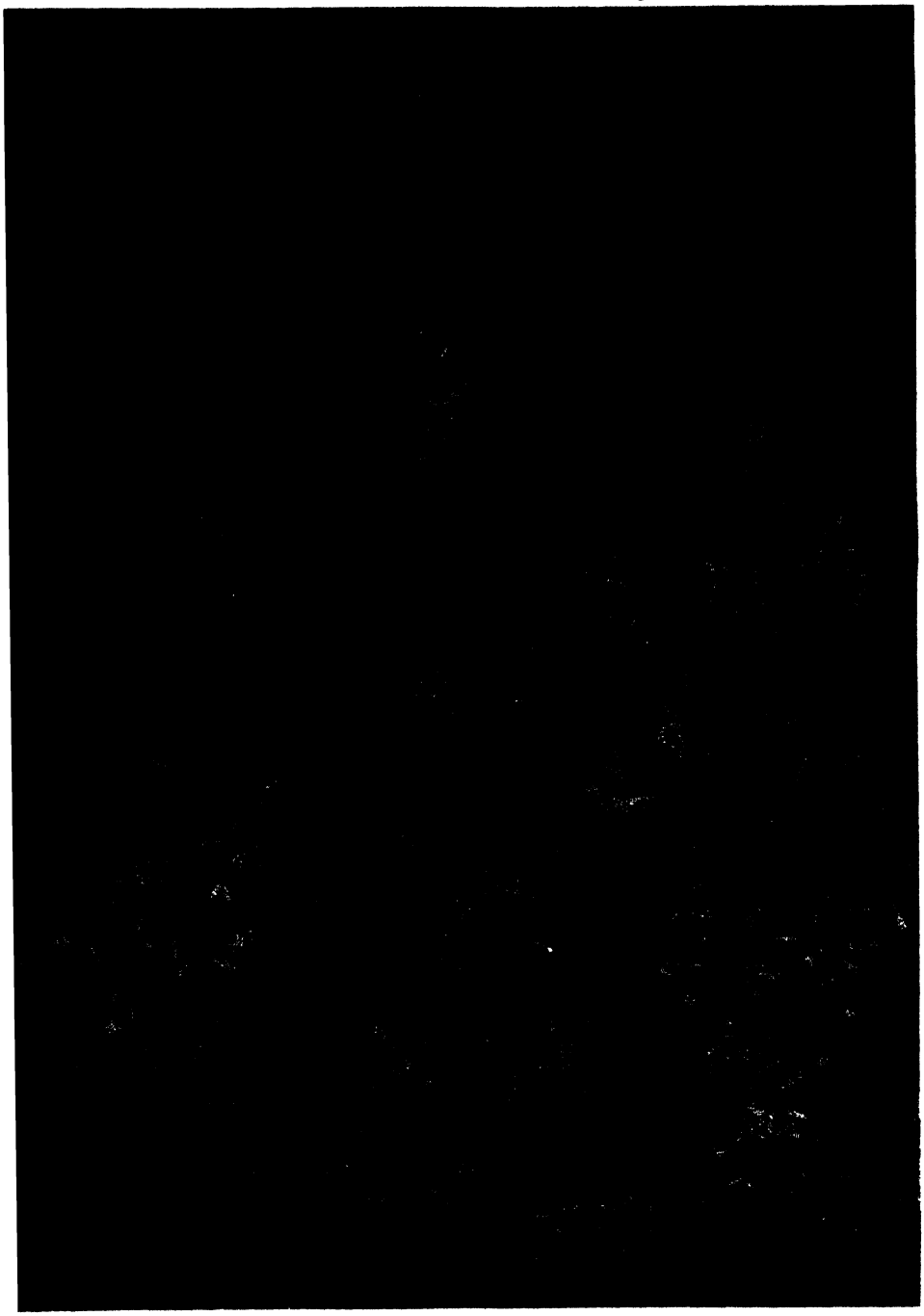
Samoa may boast, I think, the handsomest race in the Pacific. A fine-looking fellow is the Samoan dandy, taller than most of the aboriginal people of Polynesian stock, his hair frizzed out and bleached to a Titian red with lime, which he gets by burning the coral of the reefs. Truly beautiful, too, are the Samoan women when they are young fine in figure and light bronze in hue. They are not without a consciousness of their grace, which they assist with wreaths of the dark scarlet hibiscus-flower and the lighter scarlet of the pomegranate-flower.

The dress for the men is the lava lava, a loin cloth. The women used to wear a very short kilt made of bark cloth, leaving the rest of the body bare except when the torso was wreathed with flowers for a gala occasion. Lately European influence has led to the women wearing more clothing when in towns and villages where there are white residents.

The Samoans are very courteous and dignified. Their ancient manner of life was a kind of aristocratic communism. Property was little reputed because nature supplied all that man wanted practically without labour on his part. Rank was, however, most highly esteemed and the chiefs enjoyed great respect. The language reflected the national character in its wealth of honorific terms and its curious provision of a dignified word and a common word for the same object. Politeness demanded that in referring, say, to your neighbour's house you used the dignified word and in referring to your own house the commonplace word.

A Samoan banquet is as elaborate in its ritual and as elegant in its courtesies as a dinner at All Souls College, Oxford. The chief who entertains you is at once your servant and your friend. He is most punctilious in the observance of

SAMOAN ISLANDERS
In Their Halcyon Home



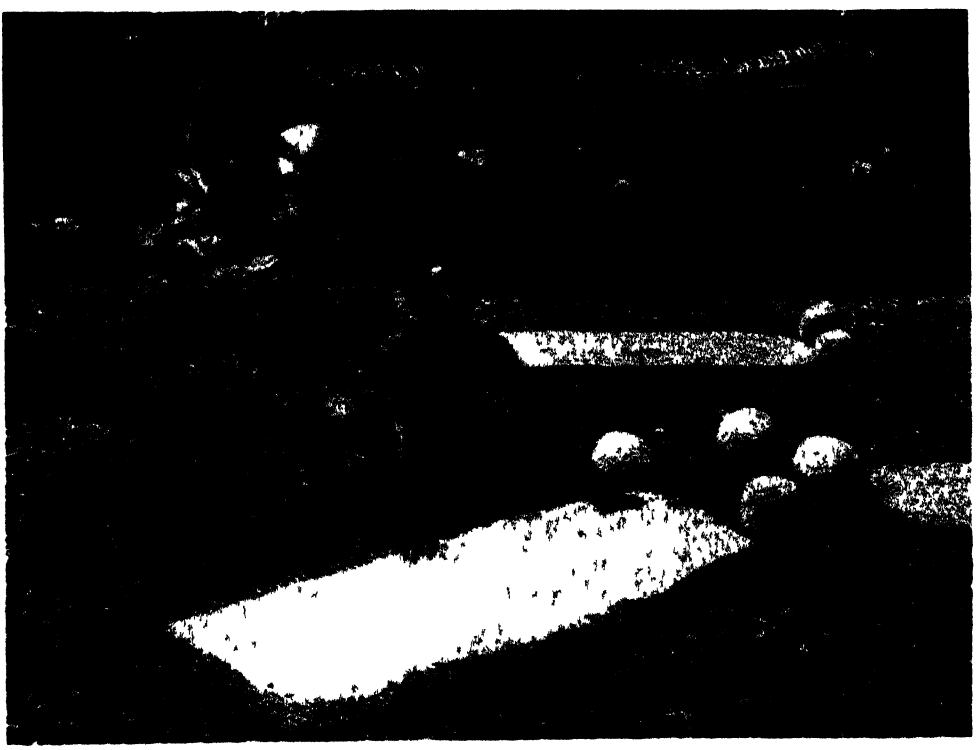
Shapely in figure and light bronze in hue, Samoan young womanhood has both charm and beauty when apparelled in its own bright native garb

Photo, Brown Brothers

They are making kava, the favourite beverage of the Samoans. From the roots of the kava shrub, ground, soaked in water, pounded and rubbed, a milky liquid is extracted which provides a refreshing stimulant

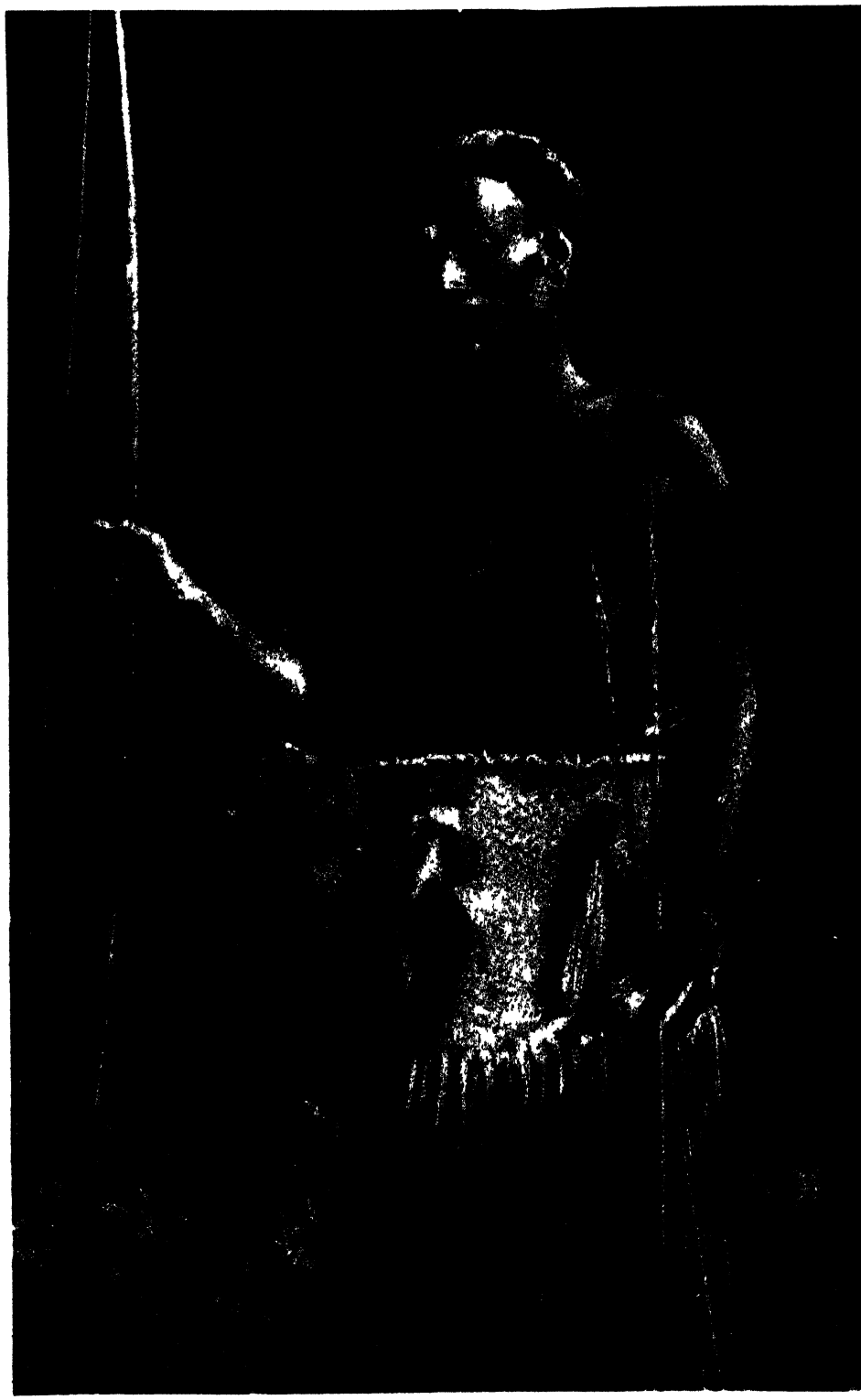
Photo, Brown Brothers

On her lava lava the Samoan woman expends much artistry It is made of mulberry bark, painted with brilliant juices of tropical plants



Breadfruit furnishes delicious flour. This Tutuilan matron is spreading out the pulp to dry in the sun in preparation for an early baking

Photos, Underwood Press Service



Sprung from brave fighting stock this native warrior of Pago Pago is a formidable foe with his bow and arrows and many-barbed spears

Photo, Brown and Dawson

Towering helms nodding with plumes and blossoms are vanity's crowning achievement when womanhood appears in festal array in Pago Pago

Photo, Brown and Dawson

Conspicuous even above her garish lava lava is the brilliant smile with which the Samoan beauty faces life in her fortunate islands

Photo, Underwood Press Service

Although royalty exists no more in Samoa, birth and breeding still are manifest, as in the gracious figure of this girl of princely origin

A vanishing art in far more civilized lands, oratory is cultivated in Samoa, where this tulafale, or professional orator, is an honoured figure

etiquette on his side, but if you offend unwittingly no notice is taken.

An elaborate etiquette surrounds every social observance, and when tribal wars broke out they were carried on with a ceremonious politeness which prevented them from becoming very murderous. The person of any herald or messenger was sacred, and the discussion of the exactly proper ritual for beginning a fight would often lead to all anger evaporating and a feast being held instead.

It is bad form for a Samoan to brag of his own exploits, but he will magnify his friends' deeds in finely poetic language.

Macdonald's judgement, in his "Oceania," was truthful as well as kindly: "They are most polite in their intercourse with each other. They are hospitable and generous. They live according to strict laws and customs handed down to them from their forefathers. In their way, or according to their lights, they are pious and religious. They live in the presence of the supernatural. They are a sensible people. They treat their children kindly, and are shocked to see Europeans correcting their children: I have never seen a native beating a child."

Religion is as favoured a hobby among the Samoans as cricket among the Fijians. Before the coming of the white man the Samoan natives followed devoutly religious customs which had neither grossness nor cruelty. When the Europeans came Christianity was accepted eagerly. Prayers are said night and morning in most Samoan houses. In and around Apia there are innumerable churches, missions, and religious schools.

The Roman Catholic Cathedral at Apia is a truly fine building. The London Missionary Society has the greatest

GIRL MEMBERS OF A GENTLE-MANNERED ISLAND COMMUNITY

As with most Pacific islanders, the natives of the Samoan group are much addicted to dancing, singing, and feasting, and in recent years to church-going. An attractive people, they have shown themselves eager to assimilate Christianity, and there is scarcely a village that has not its own pastor and mission school, for the Samoans are alive to all the advantages of education

Photo, Keystone View Co.

AFTER THE COCONUT HARVEST IN SAMOA SKILLED LABOUR MAKING COPRA

Copra is the important export of the Samoan islands. The coconuts are broken open and the kernel taken out and cut into strips which are then dried. These dried strips are the copra of commerce exported for the sake of its oil which is extracted by pressure in the mills of Europe. In the East the oil is used in lamps and in unguents. In Europe it enters largely into the manufacture of margarine, soap, candles, medicine and ointment. The residue is not infrequently used to assist in the making of the oil cake given as fattening fodder to cattle.

number of adherents about twenty eight thousand There are also Mormon and Seventh Day Adventist sects On Sundays every place is closed and every Samoan goes to church

The Samoan has ample supplies of the necessities of life provided for him by nature The breadfruit the yam the taro the two last resemble potatoes somewhat the former is a fair imitation of bread many kinds of fruits the cocoanut which is useful for food and drink and for its fibre all grow with little or no cultivation The kava root provides a mild stimulant The ocean gives a plentiful supply of fish Since the advent of the white man pigs and cattle have been introduced and flourish A house is easy to construct and the little clothing that the climate exacts is no great trouble to make

It is in a way unfortunate that nature made life so easy to the Samoan, for as a natural consequence he has no habit of industry He is a sportsman, a gentleman of leisure not a labourer He will work with extreme energy for a time at anything which interests him but he will not settle down to steady toil He finds it difficult to comprehend why man who is the crown of things" should condemn himself to perpetual hard work

I watched once for an hour or two from the verandah of my island host his garden boy at work This was a good garden boy noted in the district for his industry And he played with his work with an elegant naivete that was altogether charming to one who had not to be his paymaster Almost bare of clothing, his fine bronzed muscles rippled and glanced to show that he had the strength for any task if he had but the will

Perhaps this gentle energy was inspired by the aesthetic idea of just keeping his bronze skin a little moist, so as to bring out to the full its satin

COLLECTING NUTS FOR COPRA-MAKING ON A COCONUT PLANTATION

The cocoanut palm abounds in Samoa where the nuts are said to be larger than those produced on the more southern islands Copra is the chief and virtually the only export it is abundant and of excellent value Horses and wheeled carriages are found on the islands but the roads are poor and this up to date vehicle and well kept thoroughfare are due to American enterprise

Photo by J Latter

POPULAR SPORT AMONG THE SOUTH SEA ISLANDERS SAMOANS ENGAGED IN A BASEBALL MATCH

Games are indulged in with an ever increasing enthusiasm among the natives of the Samoan Islands Referring to the pastimes and recreations of his adopted neighbours on Upolu, the central and most important of the Samoan group, Robert Louis Stevenson wrote that ' cricket matches, where a hundred played upon a side, endured at times for weeks, and ate up the country like the presence of an army " Baseball, the national game of America, has found much favour with the Samoans, and here a sturdy, dark skinned batsman is seen standing at the home plate preparatory to taking his stroke

SUNSHINE FALLS ON BRIDE AND BRIDEGROOM IN SAMOA AT THE OUTSET OF THEIR MARRIED LIFE

Although theoretically they are a monogamous people the Samoans wear their marriage bonds very lightly Polygamy as such is not recognized by the Samoan code, but divorce is so easily arranged that there is hardly any limit to the number of wives a man may have in succession Legal divorce can be secured on the ground of desertion, and actual divorce is often effected by the simple process of running a wife home" The husband then takes another woman into his house, and offers a sop to the outraged majesty of the law by paying a fine

ELIGIBLE RESIDENCE FOR A WELL-TO-DO FAMILY IN SAMOA

Samoan native houses are of the beehive type of architecture, oval, or more commonly circular in form, and comprising but a single room some fifty feet in diameter. The walls are of thatch with, sometimes, removable matting panels serving as windows. The roof is of thick thatch of sugar cane leaves, bound together with strips of coconut palm and suspended over a ridge pole.

CLOTH-MAKING WITHOUT LOOMS IN THE SAMOAN ISLANDS

Until the quite recent importation of cheap cotton goods, tapa cloth was the only fabric made by the Samoans for their garments. It is made from the bark of the paper mulberry, an indigenous tree throughout Polynesia, Burma, and China, and used in Japan for paper making. The bark is beaten to paper thinness and dyed with vegetable juices, the material being flexible and durable.

SAMOAN HOUSE IN CONSTRUCTION, SHOWING FRAMEWORK OF ROOF

The Samoan house is little more than a roof supported by poles, the ribs being carefully tied together with coconut fibre rope and then thatched with sugar-cane or pandanus leaves. Curtains of plaited palm leaves are sometimes added, but these serve to shelter the inmates against the weather rather than to screen them from publicity, for the "open house" has a real significance in Samoa

Photo, Underwood Press Service

grace without blurring the fine anatomical lines with drops of visible sweat. His languid grace deserved that it should have had some such prompting.

If a bird alighted in a tree, he quickly dropped his hoe and pursued it with stones, which his bright smile said were not maliciously meant, but merely had a stimulatory purpose. An insect, a passing wayfarer, the fall of a leaf, a cloud in the sky, all provided equally good reasons for stopping work. Finally, at three o'clock a little shower came, and the "model boy" thankfully ceased work for the day.

Because the Samoan cannot be taught to work steadily, Chinese coolies have been introduced to meet the needs of the new industries that came with the white man. It is the official view that no harm results from this, but those who love the Samoan race regret an immigration which must result in bringing a Chinese strain into their blood.

The white men going to Samoa have not always been guiltless of contaminating the native life. Very many of the early white settlers were fugitives from justice, and became "beachcombers" in the Samoan group and other South Sea islands, with more profit to themselves than to the natives.

On the other hand, the Samoan natives have had the benefit of much noble missionary effort, and have benefited, too, from such guests as Robert Louis Stevenson, who lived from 1890 to 1894 at Vailima, near Apia. He was beloved by the Samoans and has made their charm known to all the world. "The coral waxes, the palm grows, but man departs," says a proverb of these islands. It may be the fate of the Samoans to dwindle away before the white man and the Chinese coolie. At least their friends have made it sure that a gracious memory of these delightful people will survive.

CLIMBING THE STEEP SLOPE FROM BORGO MAGGIORE TO SAN MARINO THE ASCENT FROM SUBURB TO CITADEL

From Rimini, which is the port of call for San Marino, the road runs through a border of white fronted houses fringing the northern escarpment of Mount Titano which rises more than a thousand feet above their tiled roofs A rough track, ill paved with worn stones slopes up the mount whose bushy flanks are here and there gashed by rocks. All the way from the coast the traveller has been climbing, and, the last height gained he can see as from a tower the fair fields of Italy

San Marino

Liberty-Loving People of a Tiny Republic

By Melvill Allan Jamieson, F.R.G.S.

Consul-General for the Republic of San Marino in London

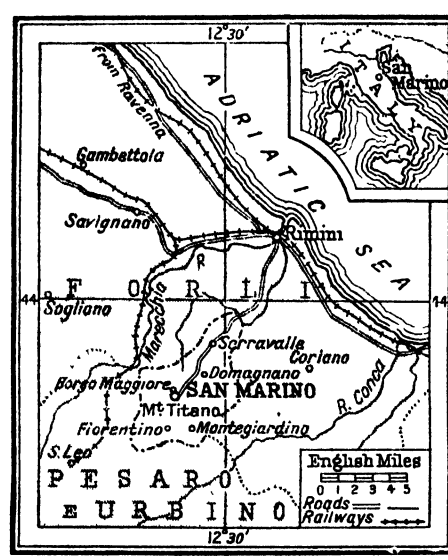
IN the early years of the fourth century, during the persecution of the Christians under the Roman Emperors Diocletian and Maximian, a poor stone cutter and convert from Dalmatia, named Marinus, sought refuge upon Mount Titano. There, in the remote solitude of its summit, he founded a Christian hermitage. A pathway to this almost inaccessible rock was soon dug out by the footsteps of pilgrims attracted by the preachings of the humble workman of Rimini.

Mount Titano was at that time the property of a Roman matron named Felicissima (or Felicity), whose two sons, serving in the Imperial Guard, were naturally opposed to the new religion. While visiting their mother they undertook, under a burning sun, the abrupt ascent of the mountain in order to hurl abuse at the hermit. On descending from the chilly peak to the warm valley they were attacked by fever, and their mother, alarmed at the rapid spread of the disease, begged the preacher to come and restore them to health.

Moved by the earnest words of prayer uttered by Marinus, both mother and sons were converted to the new faith, and in token of gratitude, Felicissima made an absolute gift to him of the mountain upon the summit of which was soon erected a cross bearing as its only inscription the word "Libertas." This phrase has remained through all the intervening years the motto of the republic, of which Marinus may be regarded as the founder.

Another phrase, which has almost passed into a proverb in the little state, demonstrates that honesty and integrity were regarded as assets of the utmost importance by the Sammarinese at a very early date. Its origin arose in this way. A Venetian merchant, who was once owed a sum of money by a Sammarinese, repaired in person to the republic, and went straight to one of the Captains Regent of the time. He found this high official treading grapes in his vineyard. Much staggered at this sight, which offered so great a contrast to the grandeur and pomp of his own dignitaries, he half repented him of his journey, and the trouble he had taken; nevertheless, he approached the captain, and told his story.

This functionary thereupon left his employment, and sent for the delinquent, who acknowledged the debt without hesitation. Orders were immediately given for the selling of his house and worldly goods, whereupon the money was soon forthcoming, and the Venetian went home rejoicing and profound in his respect for the



THE REPUBLIC OF SAN MARINO

republic Some time later the same creditor having occasion to sue a debtor in the courts at Venice and having there experienced the delays and uncertainties of the law made use of the phrase to which I have referred A simple grape trader of San Marino is worth more than ten Venetian magistrates

Wars and rumours of wars were responsible for the division and subdivision of the Italian republics from the earliest times but, throughout all these vicissitudes, San Marino remained true to its primary tradition of independence and its flag of Liberty floated proudly from the battlements at the summit of Mount Titano, 2,650 feet high.

It is on record that on several occasions San Marino was offered an increase in territory, but wisely its councillors refused In 1797, for example, Bonaparte proposed to extend the frontiers but the Captain Regent of that time Antonio Onofri, surnamed by his fellow citizens the Father of his Country replied that the republic of San Marino satisfied with its narrow boundaries and modest existence had no desire of accepting his generous offer, nor of entertaining the ambitious idea of aggrandizement which might in time compromise its liberty

The Republic comprises thirty eight square miles and the population is approximately 13,000 so there is little doubt that San Marino can establish its

OFFICIALS OF THE REPUBLIC AND AN ENVOY FROM ROME

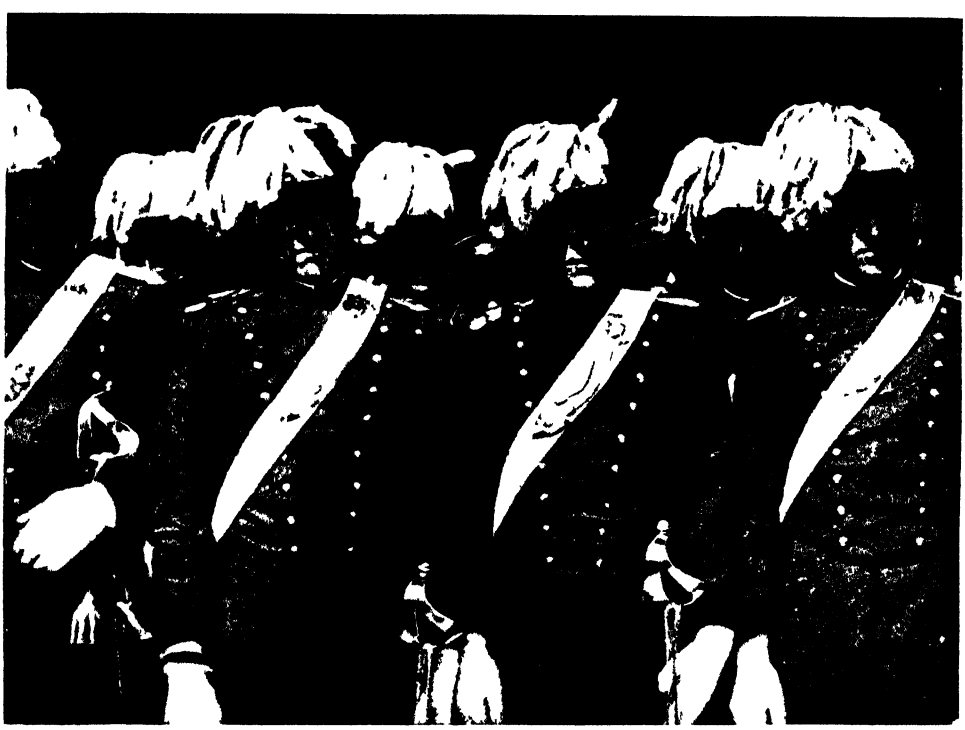
San Marino provides picturesque uniforms for her officials some of whom officers of militia and the gendarmerie are gathered on the roof of the government palace in honour of a visit from Rome of General Giuseppe Tattarini senator of the Mussolini regime Behind the group are the battlements of La Rocca that frown from the summit of Mount Titano

The Sammarinese are a healthy, diligent, and extremely courteous race, and their surroundings are exceedingly beautiful The view from Mount Titano is superb Eastwards is the Adriatic, to the north lie the pinewoods of Ravenna, while to the south and west are the mountainous districts bordered by the Apennines

The temperature varies between eighty and twenty degrees Fahrenheit, though

INFANTRY FROM THE ARMY OF THE WORLD'S SMALLEST NATION

All able bodied citizens must join the ranks of the militia only those engaged in either receiving or imparting education being exempt from military service It is happily, not likely that the army of San Marino will ever be needed to defend the diminutive state though its steep cliffs have been formidably assailed more than once since they first supported a fortalice

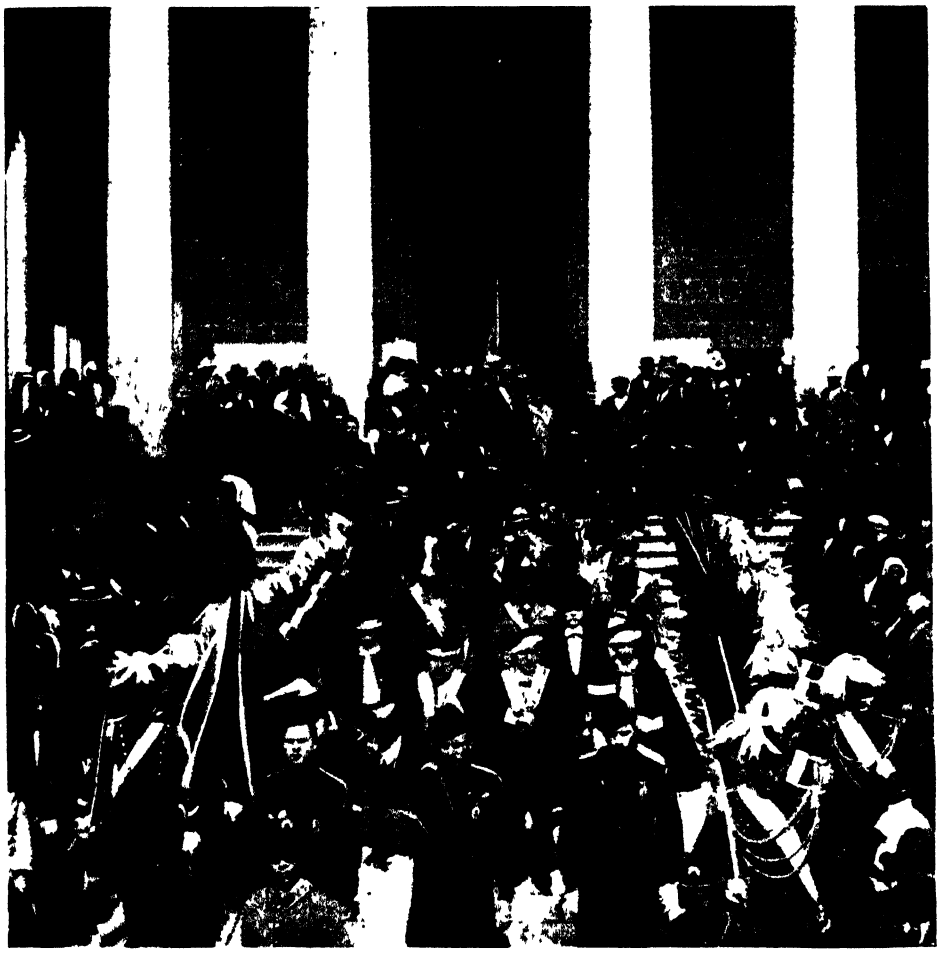


GENTLEMEN OF THE NOBLE GUARD WHO ESCORT THE CHIEFS OF STATE

The Noble Guard was instituted on January 15, 1741, to act as escort to the Captains Regent, for special religious ceremonies, and to guard the persons of the Councillors during sessions Such companies were raised from time to time in former days, notably in France, among them being the famous musketeers of Louis XIII immortalised by Dumas

WHERE COOL WATER FLOWS FROM LIBERTY'S PEDESTAL

Whereas many pieces of public statuary lose their significance with the passing of time, that which surmounts the Piazza del Pianello has a practical as well as symbolic import to passers by since the benefits of Liberty are always ready to flow at their bidding. Behind is the Government Palace where the Council meets, and from both square and tower wide vistas stretch to Apennine and Adriatic



PAST AND PRESENT CAPTAINS REGENT AT THE BI-ANNUAL INSTALLATION

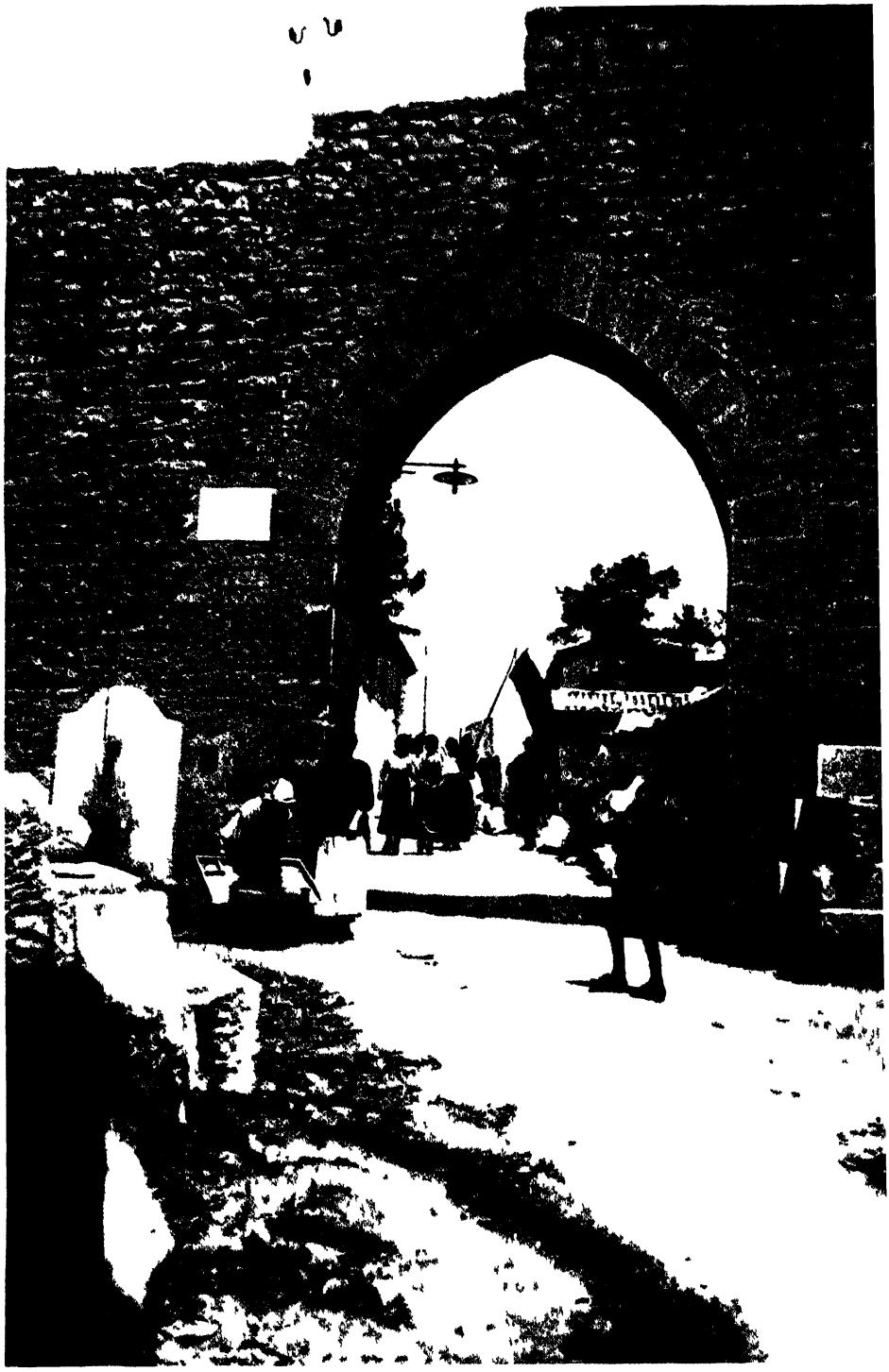
On the steps of the cathedral the townsfolk are massed to witness the installing of the two new Captains Regent. The retiring pair can be seen walking together between their successors, to whom they are about to hand over the insignia of the order of San Marino. On either side wave the plumes and flash the sabres of two files of the Noble Guard

naturally it is considerably colder on the mountain, where snow is usual during the greater part of the winter months. The climate is healthy in all seasons, and in summer a delicious breeze refreshes the visitor from the low-lying towns near the Adriatic.

Soon after the frontier is reached, where no passport or other unpleasant formalities are imposed, one arrives at the town of Serravalle, and later at the Borgo, nestled at the base of Mount Titano. A steep ascent brings one to the old Porta Franciscana, the principal gate of the capital, the city of San Marino. No vehicles enter, owing to the narrowness of the winding streets, and the houses rise in tiers towards the summit of the mountain.

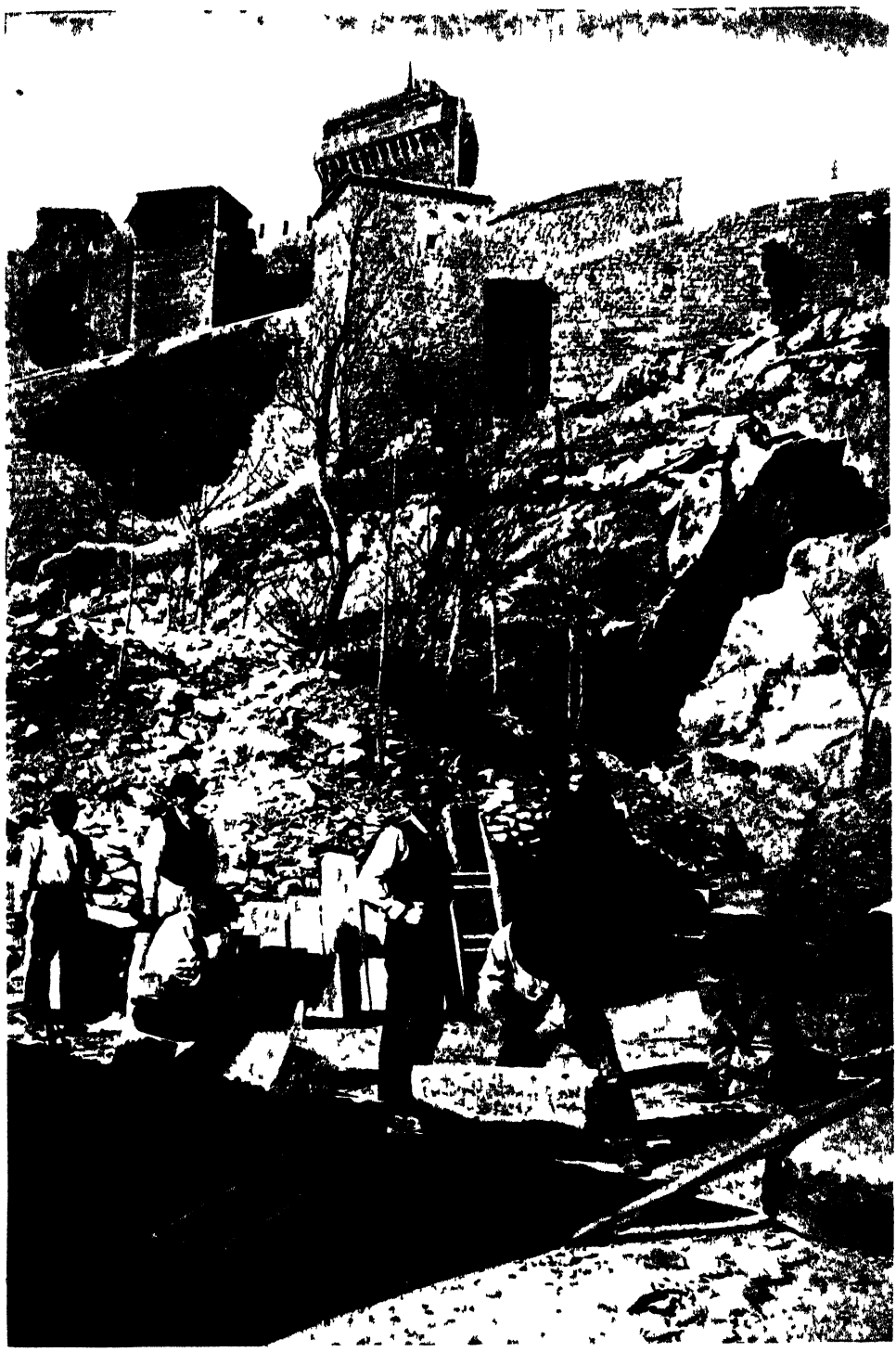
A walk along the crest of the hill affords one a wonderful panorama and a close view of the three towers, which are the outstanding feature of the coat-of-arms of the Republic, and from each of which rises a bronze feather visible from a considerable distance.

The cathedral was erected in 1855 on the site of what was one of the oldest Christian buildings in Italy, dating from 1126, and originally dedicated to S. Peter. The relics of the patron saint are preserved here in great veneration, and are displayed to the people at the annual fête of S. Marinus on



WHERE THE ROAD RUNS THROUGH THE CITY WALL TO THE QUARRIES

In the days when the walls were raised and any road might bring an enemy, gateways were built narrow in San Marino The blocks of rough-hewn stone piled about the side of the way indicate that this is the road to the quarries, and there is some fragment of Mount Titano in many an Italian house To one side a townswoman does her washing at a scrubbing board



STONE-CUTTERS AT THE QUARRIES OF MOUNT TITANO

S Marinus made his home upon this mountain and, so the legend runs was a stone cutter His trade is still followed upon the same site and provides one of the main articles of export The crown of stones circling the summit encloses the city which takes its name from the lonely anchorite whose chisel strokes echoed among the rocks so long ago

CAPTAINS REGENT OF THE REPUBLIC

From the Great Council, two members are selected twice yearly to act as Captains Regent; they assume office on April 1 and October 1, and don curious uniforms for the occasion, survivals, like the state itself, of medievalism

September 3, when a service is held attended by the Captains Regent, the officers of state, the militia, and the mass of the population. In the museum are to be seen several souvenirs associated with Garibaldi, who took refuge in San Marino on July 30, 1849, when forced to retreat from the Austrian Army.

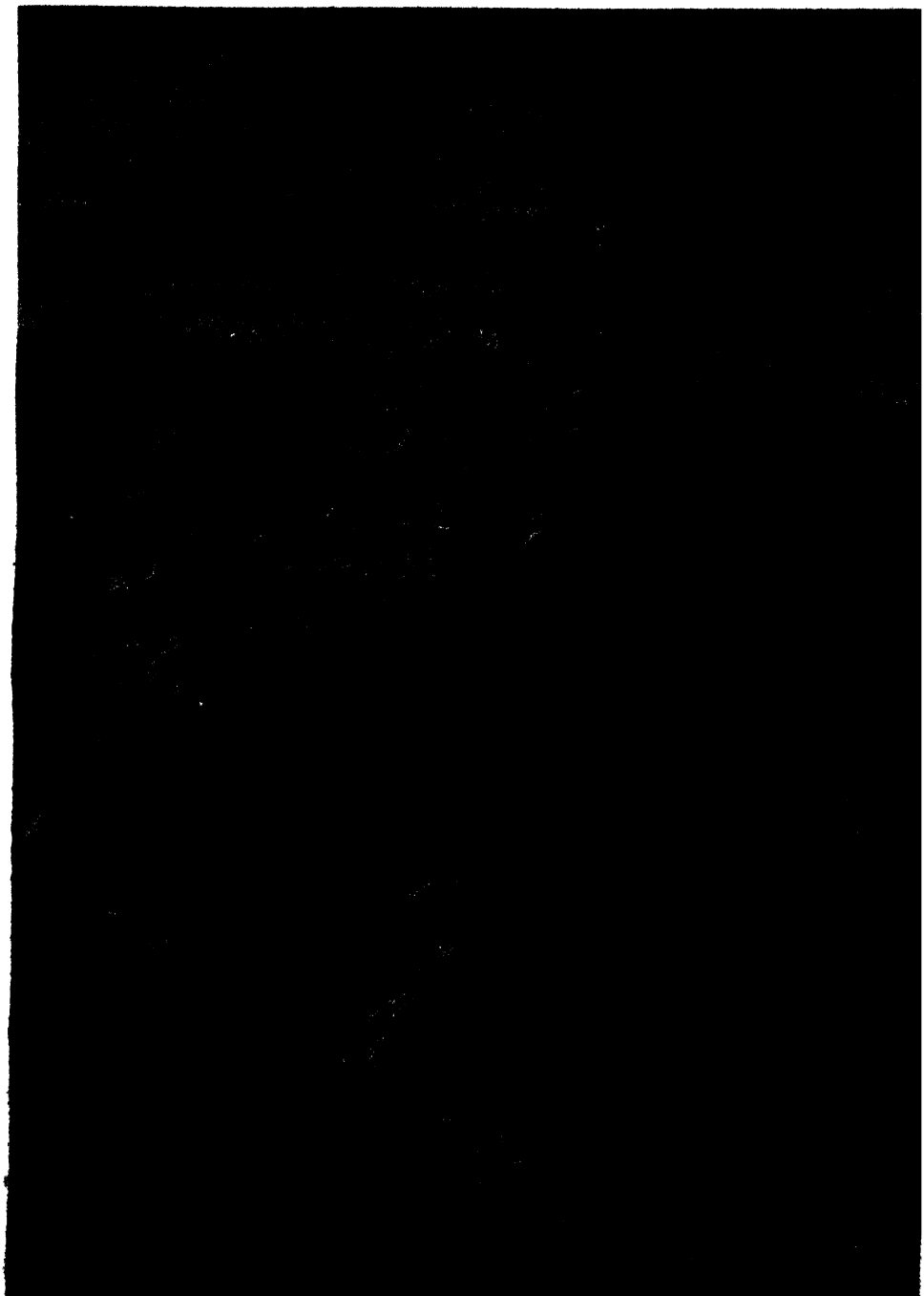
A well-furnished theatre, accommodating about five hundred, affords periodical entertainments, and is extensively patronised by this joy-loving and cheerful if hard-working people.

The form of government is a relic of medieval times, and is in the hands of a Council, Grand and General, of sixty members formed of equal representatives elected from the ranks of patricians, citizens, and countrymen. Two Captains Regent preside, and are chosen from the members of the Grand Council bi-annually, assuming office on April 1 and October 1, with all the quaint ceremonies observed for several centuries.

No Captain Regent can be re-elected until three years have elapsed. Secretaries of State for foreign and internal affairs have charge of these government departments. The Republic has consuls-general in London, Paris, Rome, Brussels, and Stockholm, as well as consuls in various other countries. A treaty of friendship and commerce, signed in 1862, and renewed in 1897, between San Marino and the kingdom of Italy proclaimed the absolute independence of the Republic, and treaties of extradition have since been concluded between the state and Great Britain, Netherlands, Belgium, and the United States of America.

San Marino is an example of the aristocracy and people sharing the reins of government, with results that have been and still are entirely satisfactory to those concerned, and it is a notable fact that of all the constitutions that flourished in the Middle Ages, such as Florence and Venice, only the Republic of San Marino remains as an example of those independencies that have passed away and are now part of the kingdom of Italy. The judicial organization is presided over by

SAN MARINO
Its Towers, Town & People



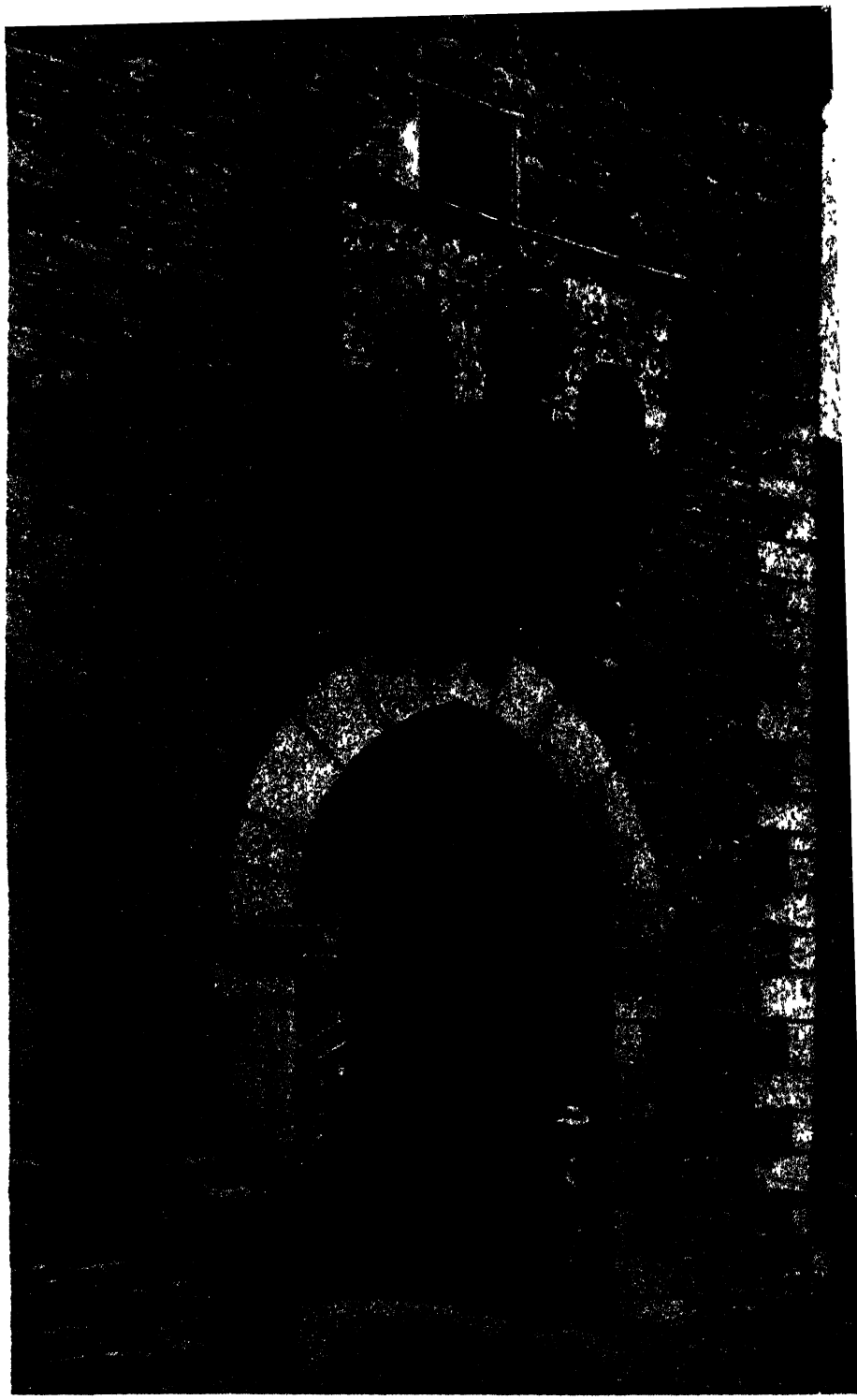
As if hewn from the crest of this unscaleable cliff stands the castle of La Rocca. Far beneath, the roads wind like ribbons over the border

Photo, Donald McLeish

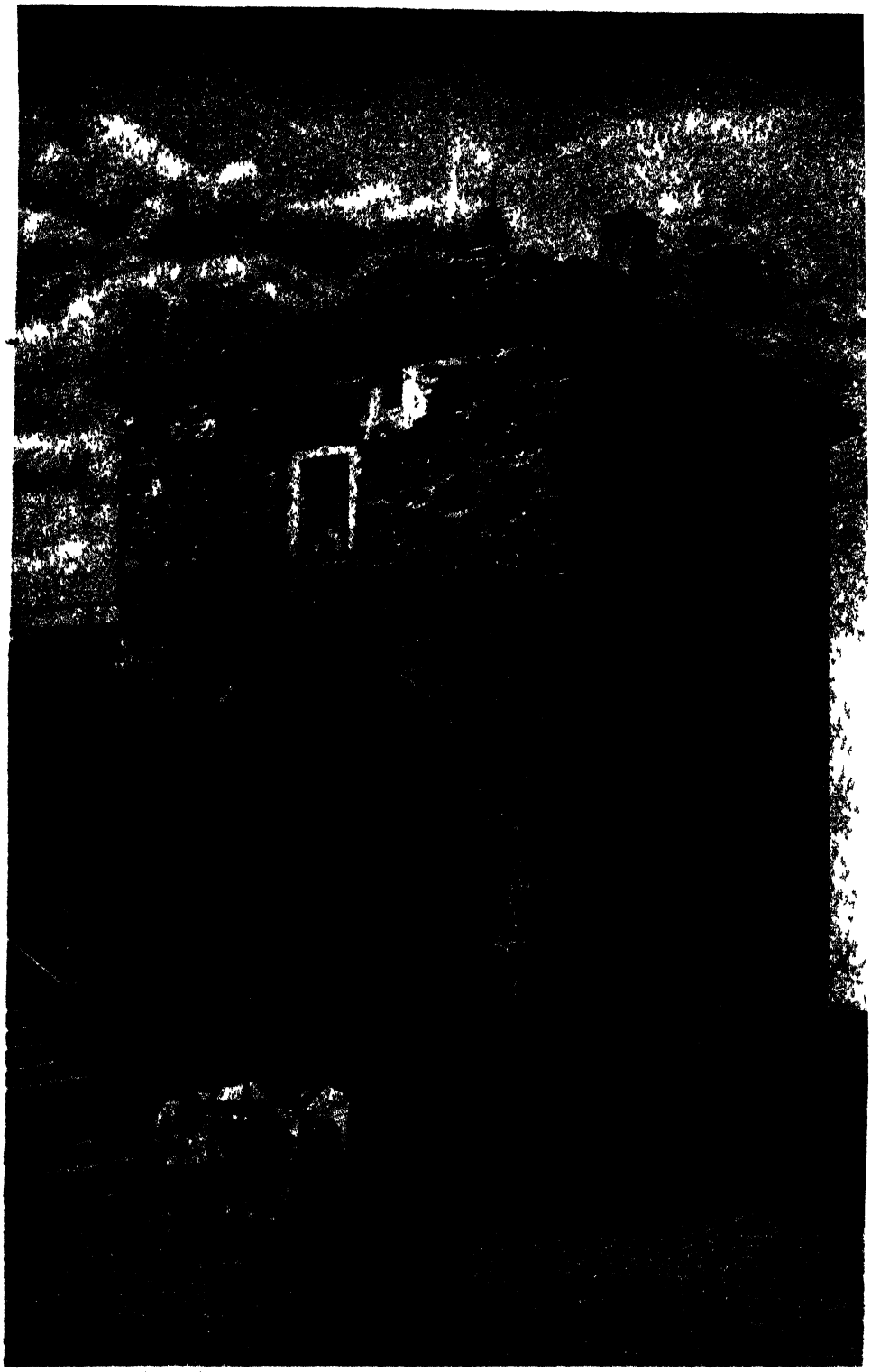
From the field of the day's work the white kine are driven slowly to the byre. Wherever the peasant goes in his small country, the sudden cliffs of Mount Titano are always near at hand, dominating and splendid

Photo. Canon I. T Parfit

Three towers crown the triple crests of Mount Titano. The first forms part of this castle of La Rocca, now a prison, while the others to the right stand alone. The three are displayed upon the state coat-of-arms

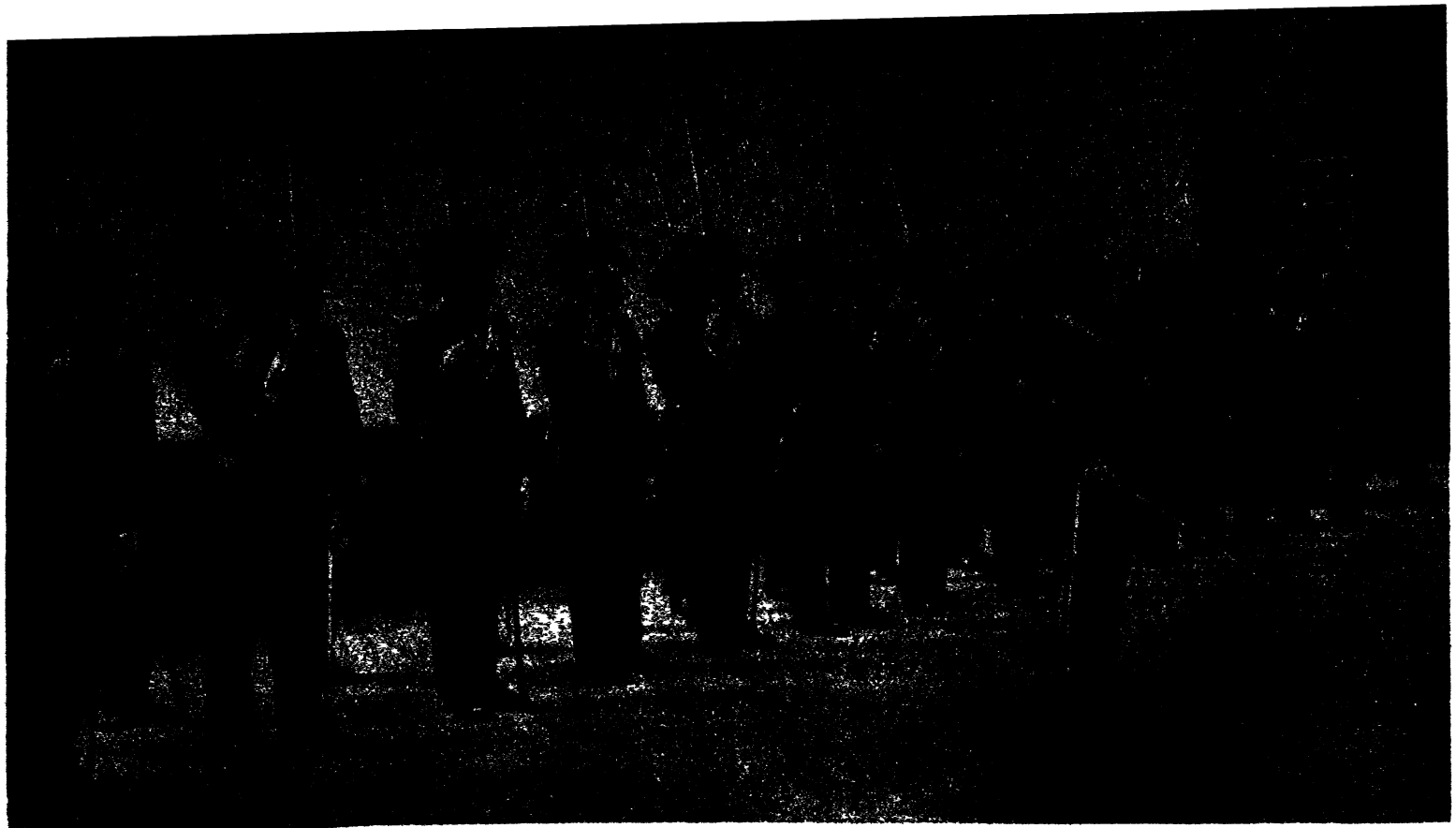


At the end of a long climb in the heat, the traveller reaches the shadowed archway of the Porta Franciscana, the city's main gate

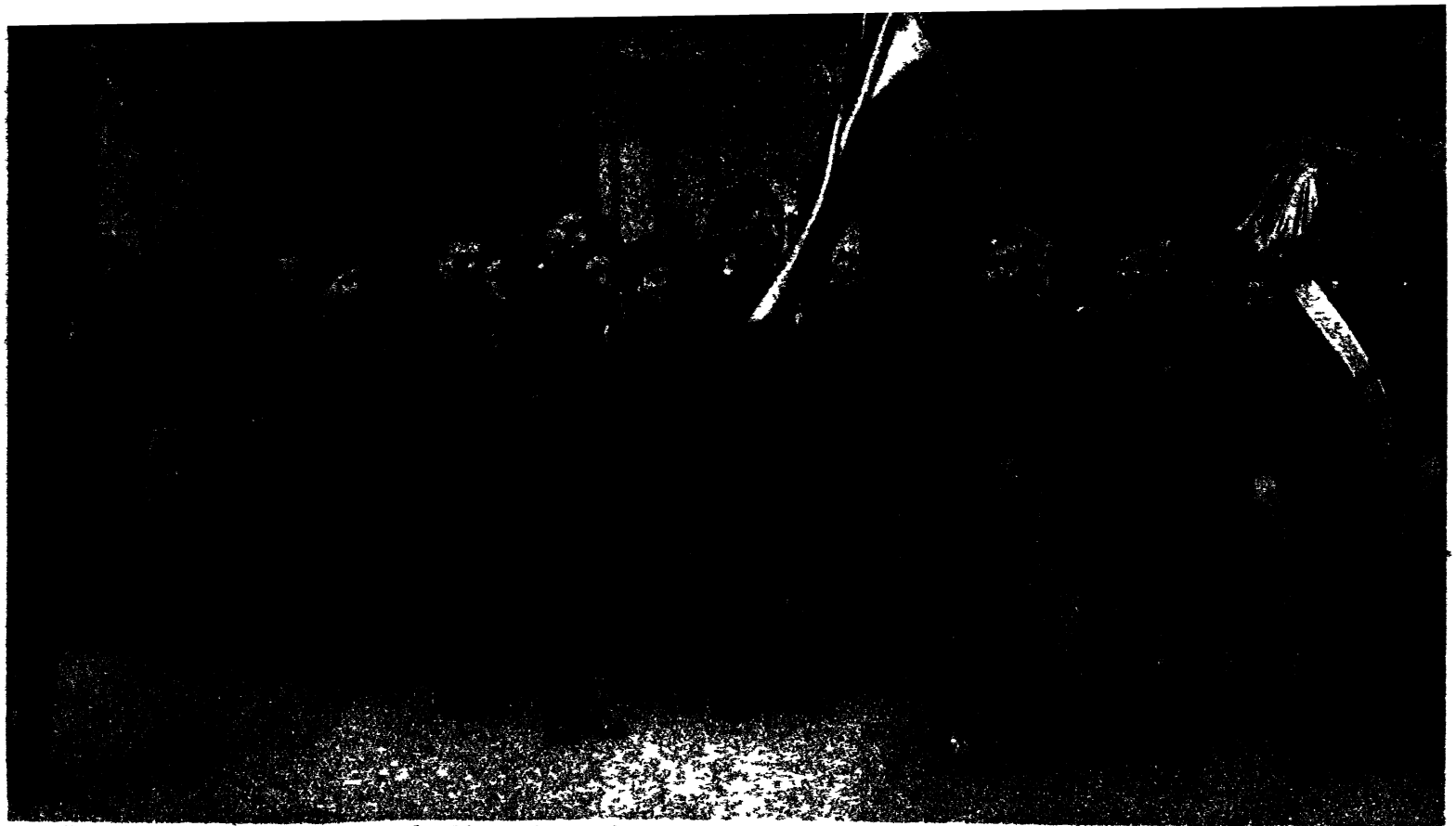


On passing through the gate, just wide enough for an occasional ox-cart, the three towers of the coat-of-arms can be seen over the arch

Photo, Donald McLeish



Drawn up on the terrace outside the Government Palace, the Noble Guard, containing in their ranks some who are entitled to coat-armour and a coronet, make a brave show, their blades all flashing in the sun



San Marino readily took to the black shirts of Fascism. A detachment headed by the azure and white of the Republic's banner are giving the ancient Roman salute in front of the Government Palace

Military and civil authority in imposing uniform are here represented: the officer commanding the militia and, standing by him, a gendarme

Photo, Donald McLeish

magistrates of foreign nationality (Italian) in order to obviate the influence of personal relations which exist in a small state. The largest of the three towers on Mount Titano, La Rocca, serves as a prison, though crime is happily infrequent. Capital punishment was abolished in 1859

The defensive army or militia is composed of all able-bodied citizens between the ages of sixteen and fifty-five, with the exception of professors and students, and numbers somewhat under two thousand of all ranks. As soon as Italy entered the Great War many Sammarinese offered their services, and served in the ranks of the Italian Army, and of these several were decorated for conspicuous bravery. In addition, the people of San Marino equipped and supported two Red Cross hospitals, which rendered valuable services throughout the war, and General Diaz, Commander-in-Chief of the Italian troops, saw fit to record this fact in Italian Army Orders after the severe battles on the Piave front, where the San Marino hospitals were actively engaged.

The principal products of the soil are grain, wine, oil, and vegetables, while cattle-breeding is carried on successfully, an annual fair being held at the Borgo for the disposal of the livestock. All the stone of which the fine buildings are constructed is quarried out of the slopes of Mount Titano, and is of excellent quality, the Sammarinese stonemasons being worthy successors of the stonecutter who founded their Republic sixteen centuries ago. Elementary schools and a finely-equipped college, the diplomas from which are recognized by Italian universities, where the courses are identical with those of the kingdom of Italy, are well attended, the boys receiving instruction in mechanics, engineering, and allied trades calculated to prove useful as the groundwork of the occupations they will embrace at a later date.

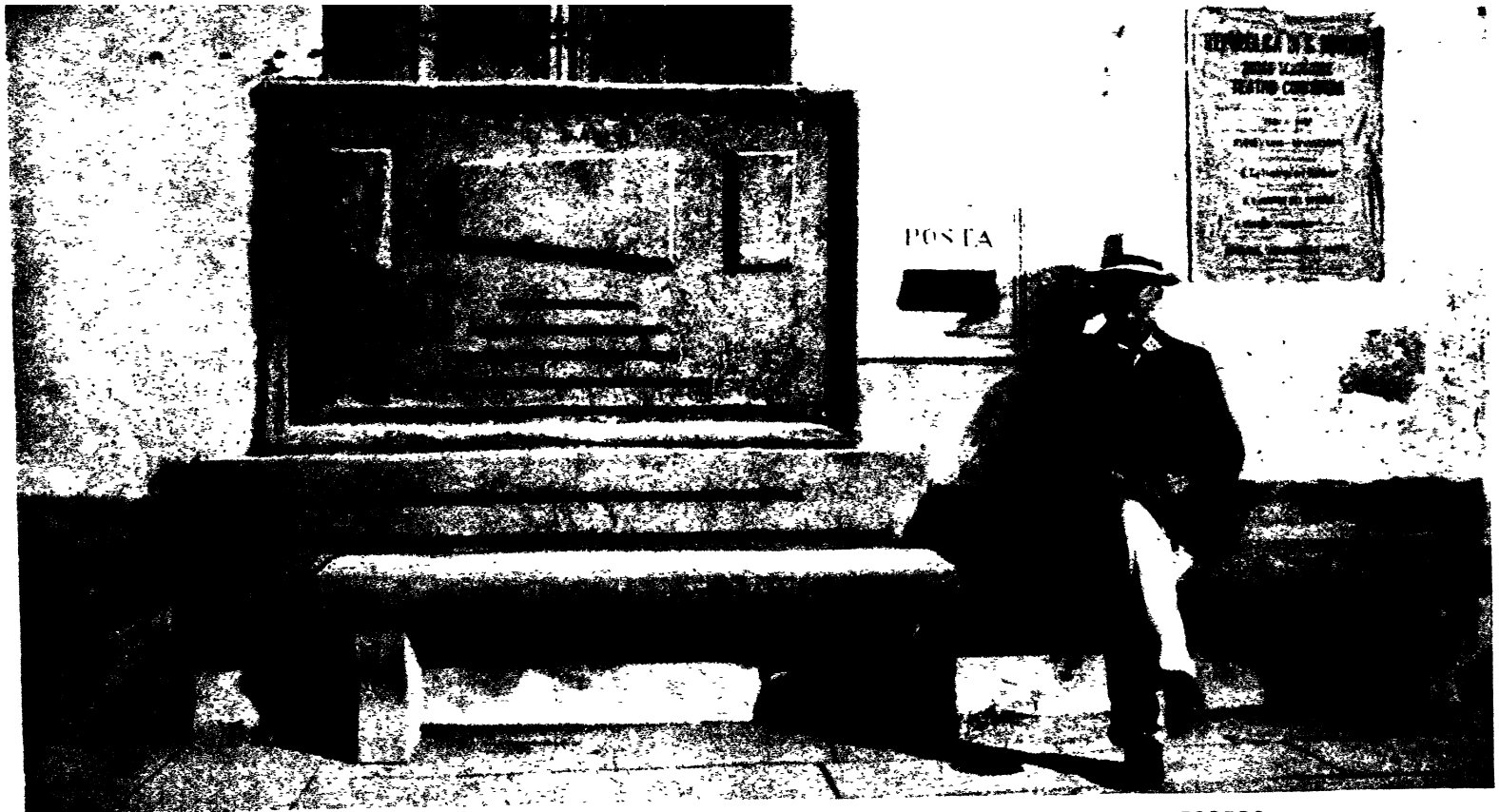
The hospitals, dependent on government grants and the benefactions of private individuals, are thoroughly up to date, and there is a fine operating-theatre with a complete up-to-date equipment. A surgical dispensary provides such medicines as are required to out-patients daily at a nominal charge regulated according to the purse of the sufferer. All the doctors are Italians. The coat-of-arms of San Marino is

MILK IN THE MORNING EARLY

Before the long shadows of the after-dawn have lost their coolness, the peasant girls from the farms below have climbed Mount Titano with their milk bottles in straw baskets. Each day this fair invasion wakes San Marino

WITH THE PEASANTRY OF SAN MARINO UNHURRIED OCCUPATIONS UNDER SOUTHERN SKIES

Set like an island in the midst of one of Europe's most vivacious and active peoples, the little state, little troubled, resists the importunate waves of hard activity The visitor finds that time has more spare hours to give out of the hurried twenty-four The people pursue their chief occupation of winning wine, oil and garden produce from the earth, and in maintaining their excellent breed of cattle Sometimes, a larger wave from the sea of international trouble may spray their land with excitement, but life here yet remains something of a pastoral in the pageant of nations



TABLET THAT HAS OUTLASTED THE ANCIENT LOCAL MEASUREMENTS IT RECORDS

Outside the post office of the capital this old monument, worn with years, is displayed. It gives certain official measurements, now replaced by the metric system to conform with Italy, which date from the fifteenth century. The mail is brought to this post office by motor from Rimini. The car is garaged outside the gate for, according to a by-law, no vehicle is supposed to enter the town, though it is on record that on the day when Mussolini's envoy arrived a lame man from a border town was allowed to ascend to the Pianello Square in a motor-car. The streets could only just contain it

Photo, Canon J. T. Parfit

STRAIT STEEP STREET IN SAN MARINO FILLED WITH FASCISTI

So steeply do the streets climb up the mountain they cover that traffic can get no farther than the town gate, and all who use them go on foot. As many houses as possible have been crammed within the circumference of the ramparts so that all thoroughfares are narrow and have no spare room when a procession like this, which welcomed visiting Fascisti, swarms down them

described as follows: A field of azure within a shield, three mountains in green, with towers in silver, the windows, battlements and outlines in black, on top of each a silver ostrich feather, and on either side entwined branches of laurel and oak with berries and acorns. On a white label is the word "Libertas" in blue letters. Over the shield is depicted a gold crown.

The republican flag is composed of two horizontal stripes of white and blue, with the coat-of-arms displayed in the centre.

Special copper coinage was minted for San Marino from 1864 to 1894, and silver in 1898 and 1899, but this has been discontinued, and the notes and coins of Italy are in general use.

The government of the Republic has, however, its own postage-stamps, bearing a view of Mount Titano and the three towers. On more than one occasion tempting offers have been made by the promoters of gambling casinos, but so far the powers that be have refused all proposals to establish a resort of this nature within their territory. This decision is, undoubtedly, wise for many internal reasons, and externally as the Italian government does not look favourably upon institutions of this character.

To this day the uprightness of the inhabitants can be readily vouched for, and once more it is safe to say that a visit to this curious state, termed some years ago "A Freak of Freedom," will provide the visitor from other lands with abundant interest and pleasure. It will enable him to obtain a glimpse into times and customs that are now lost irretrievably in the other countries of Europe.

Santo Domingo

I. Picturesque Islanders of the Caribbean

By Percy F. Martin, F.R.G.S.

Special Correspondent in South and Central America

IF for naught beyond ranking as the resting-place of the great Columbus's honoured bones and the first white colony established in the New World, Santo Domingo would challenge sympathetic attention. But it possesses other claims, for it is perhaps one of the most beautiful and fruitful of tropical islands in the Western Hemisphere, and, like Cuba and Porto Rico, is progressively attracting foreign capital—mostly American—and responding encouragingly thereto.

Realizing the benefits of work and thrift under the tyrannical tuition of their Spanish conquerors, and later on under French taskmasters and British buccaneers—neither very gentle in their methods—the people have become industrious almost in spite of themselves. But for their fiery temperament, their inordinate love of political excitement, violence, and a propensity—common to all coloured races—to extravagance in expenditure, the Santo Dominguans might become a highly-prosperous nation. At least, they succeed in being a picturesque and an interesting people.

Where Want is Hardly Known

Their island, notwithstanding devastation caused by innumerable sanguinary revolutions and occasional seismic disturbances, still contains many flourishing plantations—sugar, coffee, banana, and cocoa; its rich pastoral stretches support thousands of head of fat, sleek cattle. Cotton, equal to the best Sea Island quality, and tobacco, even superior to that of Cuba, grow luxuriantly.

When Columbus landed on the island, on his first voyage (1492), he found the natives peacefully smoking; and since that period tobacco has been one of the country's chief crops, just as cocoa and sugar, cultivated since 1506, have brought about its greatest wealth. No inhabitant can ever know the meaning of the word "want," except when a main crop fails. And that is rarely.

It is but just to state that, unwelcome as they were and unpopular as they remain, the "Yankees" have helped these dusky islanders not only to live at comparative peace with one another, but to make more money out of their natural products than ever they gained before; and, what is of yet greater importance, they have shown them how to save it.

Fortunes in Sugar and Cocoa

Sugar-cane is now grown scientifically, and fetches correspondingly higher prices, proving an extraordinary tonic to business throughout the country; cocoa, ranking as second in value for export, now secures preference in foreign markets; yet other resources, up till now largely neglected, must bring added wealth to the island community.

Not as yet are the people rich, but they are gradually realizing the value of economy, and are less inclined to squander. Little ready capital is needed to engage in the growing of their crops—cocoa less even than others; the livelihood of the larger number of planters depends upon this staple product.

So partial are the small Dominguan planters to cocoa, that they are inclined to concentrate upon it to the exclusion of other foodstuffs that might just as easily be raised. A good cocoa season means prosperity for the whole island.

It would be venturesome to assert that all risks of further political

upheavals have been removed by improvement in the people's well-being, no one can tell what events may follow upon the evacuation of the island by the American marines, who have been in control since November 29, 1916. After four centuries of constant revolution and bloodshed, it would be unreasonable to expect Santo Domingo to subside suddenly into a condition of peacefulness and tranquillity. Even Cuba, a neighbouring and largely a "white" island, which has enjoyed an additional decade of North American supervision, becomes restive at times.

Left alone, and not incited to cause trouble, the Santo Dominguans are a peaceful and happy people. Like all dark skinned races, they revel in almost perpetual sunshine, their rich soil provides them with the fruits of the earth in super-abundance, beyond the few trivial taxes imposed, heavier since the Americans instituted a system of collection that there is no evading, and periodical crop failures they have but little to trouble them.

Home life is not without its sympathetic touches, for the negro is an affectionate father and the negress a no less indulgent if she is a somewhat unreliable—mother.

Each native habitation, sometimes a mere hutch, shack, or bothy, formed of dried grasses or old railway sleepers, roofed with sheets of discarded corrugated iron, or protected from the elements by old rags stuffed into holes and crevices, has its full complement of sprawling and mischievous piccaninnies, many, alas, little thieves and pilferers from their birth.

Far different are the homes of the whites and the superior class of coloured residents. Built on the "Colonial" style, that is to say consisting of one floor only, raised some six feet above the ground upon brick or stone arches so as to allow the winds free play beneath, the majority of houses are large, roomy,

NOVEL NATIVE FASHION OF PACKING TOBACCO

Tobacco forms one of the chief products of Santo Domingo, and its harvest provides employment for a large proportion of the population. This burly labourer is packing tobacco for pipe smokers, the stripped leaves are wrapped in a large palm leaf, pressed into a long cylindrical roll and tightly roped, and are then left to dry for a certain time before shipment to market.

Photo, Rollo H. Beck

SLOW BUT SURE METHOD OF CARRYING BALES OF TOBACCO TO TOWN

The inhabitants of the Dominican Republic are of mixed races, African, Spanish and Indian predominating. All have an equal disinclination for hurry, and in a country where roads are bad and railways few, are perfectly content to jog along on lethargic oxen, carrying in capacious saddle bags the dried leaves of the tobacco grown with comparatively little labour on the inland plantations

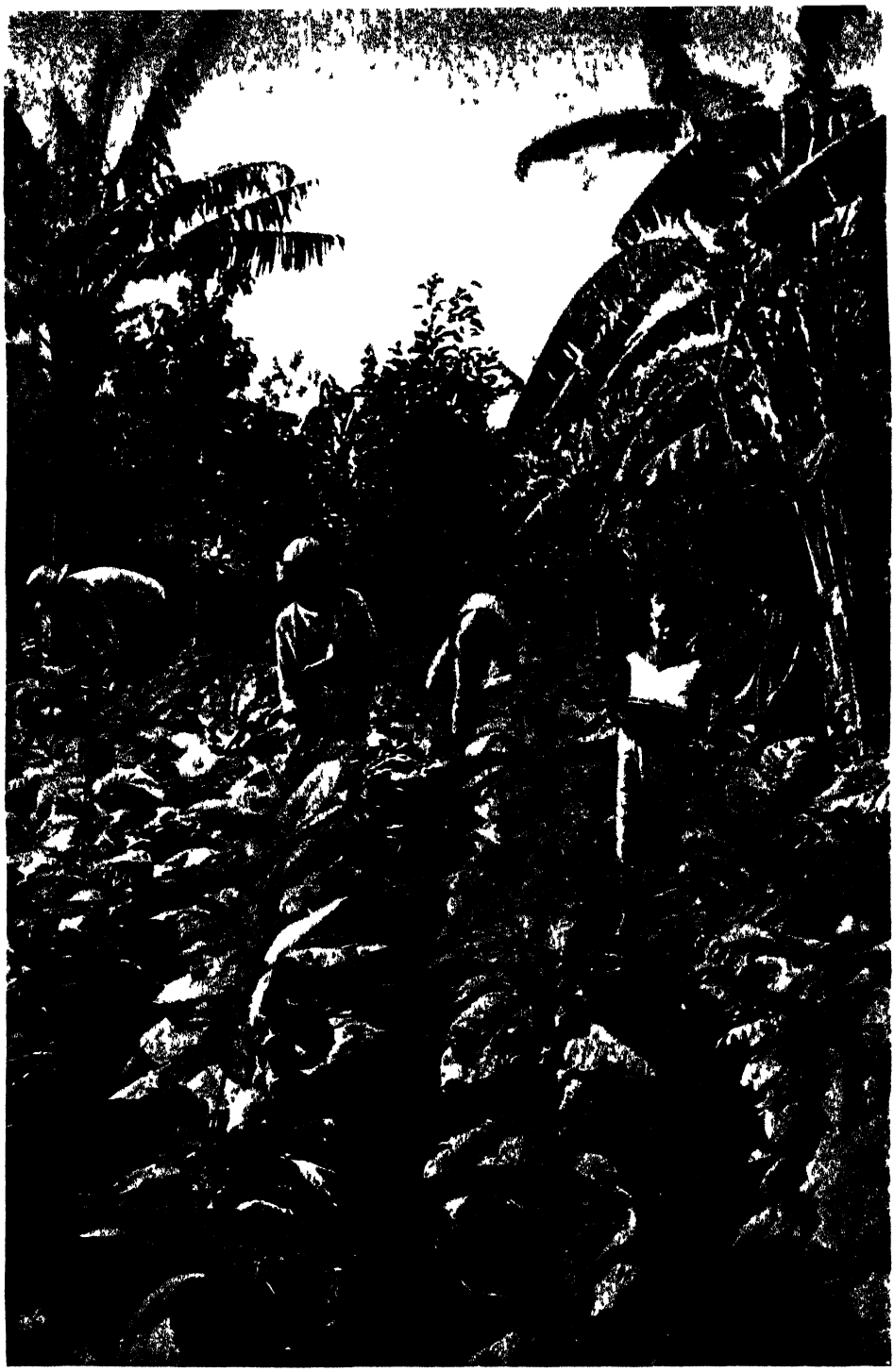
and cool. Fine wire screens protect the windows and doors from venomous insects, which swarm here as in all tropical countries. Elegant Empire furnishings, with North American labour saving devices and notions, adorn the interior. These were brought to the island in the eighteenth century when the French invaded it and turned out the Spaniards only themselves to be dispersed by the Haitians under Toussaint L'Ouverture.

Each domicile is embowered in luxuriant, odoriferous tropical gardens, containing specimens of the most beautiful plants and flowers to be found in the world. Food is abundant, but the natives with money to spend are not content with what grows at their doors, they hunger for European or American delicacies, and larger and larger grow these extravagances imported from foreign markets. From the nearest—the United States alone the imports in 1900 advanced in value from $1,300,000 (in round figures about £260,000, or, say, 40.2 per cent of the whole imports), to $15,800,000 (about £3,760,000, or, say 93.1 per cent.) in 1918.

Spanish is the dominant language in this tongue all official documents and the many news sheets—some very anarchistic prints, of no small danger to the peace of the community at election times—are published, a fair amount of French, but scarcely any English is spoken. American coinage has been introduced, but the debased currency of the country itself passes freely.

The French introduced and still control the telegraphs and telephones the government likewise has a system—but both are extremely deficient in service and decadent in point of maintenance.

Living—and living well—with so little physical effort, the inhabitants of Santo



SANTO DOMINGO. THE CRADLE-LAND OF THE TOBACCO PLANT

The earliest European reference to tobacco was made by Columbus on his return from the West Indies in 1492, and the plant was first brought to Europe in 1558 by a Spanish physician. Some authorities claim that the word is derived from "tobaco," the name of a peculiar Y shaped instrument used by the old inhabitants of Santo Domingo island for inhaling tobacco smoke through the nostrils.

IN A CACTUS GROVE OF SANTO DOMINGO

The country possesses a luxuriant vegetation, and among indigenous plants are numerous specimens of the prickly cactus. Many obstacles have hindered improvement and progress where both island and islanders are concerned, and Santo Domingo has been referred to as " beautiful, majestic, and fruitful, waiting only the assistance of law and sound government to take its proper place in civilization"

ONE OF THE MAIN STREETS IN SAN DOMINGO, THE CHIEF CITY OF THE DOMINICAN REPUBLIC

San Domingo lies on the south coast of the island at the mouth of the Ozama river It was founded in 1496 by Bartholomew Columbus brother of Christopher Columbus, and was long the most important place in the New World, and it is still claimed that its archbishop is the primate of the West Indies It is poorly built, the streets straight but narrow and the houses chiefly constructed of stone pierced with large doors and windows, but since 1916, when the U S A set up a government with naval officers at the heads of all departments, many beneficial changes have been brought about

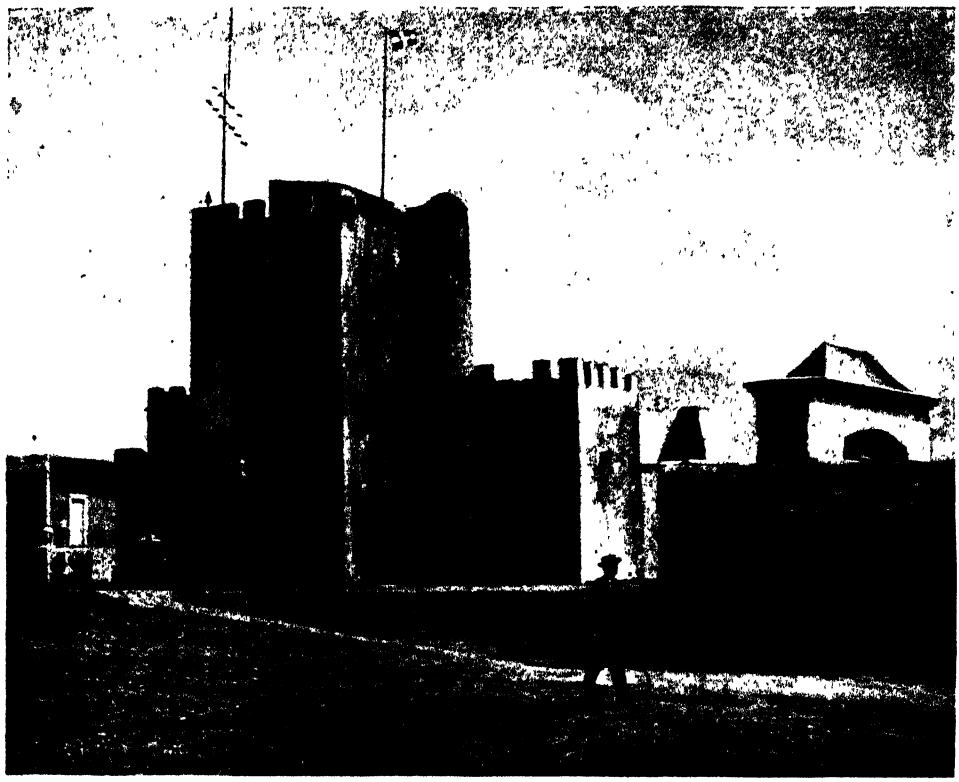
EARLY MORNING ACTIVITY ON A RIVER BANK IN THE DOMINICAN REPUBLIC

Santo Domingo or the Dominican Republic, together with the Republic of Haiti, forms the second largest island of the Greater Antilles, and though more sparsely populated than Haiti it is the chief division, occupying two thirds of the island in the east The country is mountainous, with large forested tracts, which yield enormous quantities of cedar, mahogany, satin woods, and dye woods Much of the less valuable timber is disposed of as fuel, and in the early morning canoes, laden with firewood, line many a river's edge, while labourers stack the cargoes on the bank, whence they are marketed to the various customers

Photo, Rollo H Beck

OFFICERS AND OFFICIALS AT THE GATEWAY OF SAN DOMINGO'S FORT

This ancient fort in the city of San Domingo still houses troops and, together with many other time-worn buildings, including the cathedral to which the bones of Christopher Colombus were brought to be buried, and the decaying fortifications, has stoutly resisted the shocks of earthquake and revolution, and stands as a memorial of the past greatness of the first of Spanish-American cities



OLDEST STRONGHOLD ERECTED BY WHITE MEN IN THE NEW WORLD

San Domingo, a seaport, the chief town of the Dominican Republic, and said to be the oldest existing settlement of white men in the New World, possesses many interesting historical relics, among which are the massive but crumbling walls with bastions that surround the town, and the fine old fortress, hoary with age, built soon after the island had been discovered by Christopher Columbus

Domingo naturally make poor labourers, but they are a sober race, drunkenness being but rarely met with. Wages are considerably higher since the Americans "hustled around" and caused the hitherto slothful inhabitants reluctantly to follow their example.

As may be believed, the island has not as yet earned the reputation of a "manufacturing country." The only factories, all employing native labour, are small establishments producing shoes (for home consumption only), ice, candles, soap, aerated waters, harness and saddlery, a small amount of common house furniture, sawmills, and cabinet works.

A fair proportion of men find employment in the placer workings opened by the Spaniards at points along the north coast, in the central ranges, and in the province of San Domingo. Women *washing gold in the streams, two or* three years ago found a nugget which was sold in the town for £400. The island, rich in minerals—silver, lead, copper, iron, coal, salt, and petroleum—could probably provide remunerative work for the greater part of the male and for many of the female community, but the time to exploit this wealth has not yet arrived.

Very backward are the people of Santo Domingo in point of education—even the "teachers" being woefully ignorant and lacking training. Education is compulsory, and school attendance is on the increase. Franciscan monks conduct a school in the capital, and there exists also a university with a curriculum about equal to that of a small college on the European or American model. The few private schools are poorly patronised; vocational or manual *training establishments are being introduced.*

Santo Domingo

II. Through Racial Strife to Enforced Peace

By Percy F. Martin

Author of "Through Five Republics of Central America," etc.

SANTO DOMINGO—known also as San Domingo and the Dominican Republic—forms part of the Caribbean proper, which occupies that part of the ocean-bed lying immediately to the north of South America and the east of Central America. Scenically, it is a beautiful land. Majestic mountains form four-fifths of the island (Mount Tina, the highest peak, stands 10,300 feet above sea-level); verdant valleys and broad plains, swift-flowing rivers—the Ozama and the Isabela, the Jana and the Nizao—provide abundant water; the magnificent Bay of Samana would easily accommodate the largest of the world's fleets. Defensive works at its entrance would make it impregnable.

The interior of the island abounds in minerals, gold, silver, copper, iron, manganese, platinum, lignite, salt, and petroleum exist; they need but capital and energy to render their exploitation highly profitable. A diverse and generous soil, forests, flora and fauna unexcelled for variety, beauty, and extent, make Santo Domingo a veritable land of desire. That there is room for expansion is shown by the fact that the total area contains only about 897,000 people.

The large island, of which Santo Domingo forms approximately two-thirds (19,325 square miles, and Haiti, which is described in pages 2559-75 of this work, 11,100 square miles) was discovered by Cristóbal Columbus during his first voyage to America (1492), although this was not the first land at which he touched. He called it "Hispaniola." Its earliest white settlers met the fate often meted out to such pioneers. They were murdered by the natives.

Columbus's renewed effort to establish a colony, however, proved more successful; on his second voyage (1493) he founded, and maintained, on the south-east coast the small town of Isabela (named after the wife of his ungrateful sovereign). Other settlements followed, all of which exist to-day. Three years after his second landing, Columbus and his brother Bartoloméo, who had accompanied him and become his vice-regent, were imprisoned in the citadel of San Domingo by the Spanish Governor Bobadilla, a typical tyrant to whose brutal regime may be attributed much of the hatred engendered among the natives for their conquerors.

Set to work in the mines and on the plantations, starved, treated worse than dogs, and finally shipped like cattle to other islands to replace those who had died there under the Spanish lash, these miserable creatures gradually dwindled in number and died out. Physically they had been a fine and fearless race—corsairs of the high seas. Their places were filled by negroes brought from Africa; the first consignment arrived in 1522, the progenitors of the present sturdy black population.

THE REPUBLIC OF SANTO DOMINGO

The Spaniards were not allowed, however, to have things all their own way. Both British and French pirates descended upon the island and considerably harassed the Spaniards, although perhaps less malevolently than they themselves had oppressed the Indians. Buccaneers established themselves upon a small island near the north-east corner of Haiti, and therefrom raided many a fat, heavily-laden Spanish galleon, sailing home on its way from Santo Domingo.

The French eventually won nearly one-third of the island. Establishing themselves in the western section—then known as the Despoplado, and now as Haiti—the French continued their attacks, and at the close of the eighteenth century secured also the eastern section. But Spain again took possession between 1809 and 1821, only however, soon afterwards to lose the entire colony as the result of revolution. Both the eastern and the western section thereupon joined forces, and after expelling the Spaniards formed a republic which endured from 1822 until 1844, when separation took place and two independent sovereign states—the Dominican Republic and the Haitian Republic were created.

Their administrations were maintained by an almost uninterrupted reign of terror. President succeeded president in Santo Domingo, only to murder or to be murdered. Violently divided among themselves, and squandering their by no means abundant financial resources upon prolonged internecine struggles, they fell once more an easy prey to their old and watchful enemies, the Spaniards, who, descending unexpectedly upon the island, took repossession in 1861 and held it until 1865, when, this time finally, they were expelled from this part of the world.

On the other hand, the Santo Dominguans and the Haitians continued at war, all economic progress in either state being suspended as a consequence. In 1869, mainly through North American influence, the two nations were induced to ask for annexation to the United States, and the American President—General Ulysses S. Grant—actually entered into negotiations with President Baez, but was defeated by the Senate.

Comparative internal peace reigned with no more than occasional political uprisings until 1898. Then revolution succeeded revolution, a state of turmoil continuing until the end of 1903. Three Presidents—Jiménez, Vásquez, and Morales ruled in as many years; each outdid the other in oppression, and all alike helped to bring the country to financial disaster. Default took place in the foreign debt and remains so far as the British portion is concerned—partially in default still.

A mandatory commission from the United States brought about something like order in 1914, but armed cruisers had to keep at hand (one, the Memphis, was lost on the rocks in 1916) for several years. Since then the ordinary system of government has been in abeyance, a military government by United States naval officers, combining the functions of the President and Congress, being maintained. At the end of 1920 a relaxation of the military regime took place.

Over 9,000 claims for damages sustained during the last revolution were presented. More than 6,280 were allowed, being awarded $4,293,000 (say £840,000).

SANTO DOMINGO: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Occupies eastern and larger portion of the island of Haiti in the West Indies and south-east of Cuba. Mountain ranges interspersed with valleys, many of which are extremely fertile, cover great portion of surface. Intercommunication much impeded by configuration of land. Forests cover large area, while both soil and climate vary considerably. Total area about 19,325 square miles, with an estimated population of about 897,000.

Government and Constitution

Form of government is republican. Constitution provides for a National Congress composed of a Senate of twelve, one Senator for each province, and a Chamber of Deputies with twenty-four members. Senators elected for six, and Deputies for four years. President and Cabinet of seven control executive.

Commerce and Industries

Chief industry is agriculture, sugar, cocoa, cotton, tobacco, and coffee being produced. Cattle are extensively raised. Country is rich in minerals, which include copper, coal, silver, gold, platinum, rock-salt, and iron. Petroleum, sandstone, and limestone are worked. Exports for 1921 totalled £5,153,512, and imports £6,146,332 for same year. Principal exports are sugar, cocoa, and tobacco, while iron and steel goods, cottons, and foodstuffs are among the chief imports. Standard coin, the U.S.A. dollar.

Communications

There are some 150 miles of public, and 250 miles of private railway line. Telegraph lines aggregate about 310 miles, and telephone lines about 1,000. There are also some thirty post-offices and several wireless stations.

Religion and Education

State religion is Roman Catholicism, but other creeds are tolerated. Elementary education is free and there are over 950 schools, instructing over 105,000 pupils. A university has been established.

Chief Towns

San Domingo, capital (estimated population 31,000), Puerto Plata (8,000), La Vega (6,500), Azua (4,700), Moca (4,000), Sanchez (3,000).

SCOTLAND · WESTWARD VIEW DOWN PRINCES STREET, THE UNRIVALLED PROMENADE OF STATELY EDINBURGH

In Princes Street, Edinburgh has as fine a main thoroughfare as any capital city can show The dominating feature in its splendid prospect is the Castle crowning the hill on the steep sides of which the historic Old Town is built The loch intervening between the castle and the superb mile long boulevard is occupied by Princes Street Gardens, a triumph of horticultural beauty Above these soars the gothic monument to Sir Walter Scott, on the left of which the Greek, structure of the Royal Scottish Academy is here shown, with the Caledonian Station and hotel at the end of the magnificent vista

Photo Francis Caird Inglis

From the Editor's Desk—continued

with Part 49. As at present planned the final Part will contain, in addition to a dictionary of races, an atlas showing distribution of races, a full index and a highly interesting chapter on a subject that is occupying much thought at the present time—"National Spirit in the Modern World." This chapter has been specially written for PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS by Mr. J. A. R. Marriott, M.A., author of "The Remaking of Modern Europe," "The European Commonwealth," and many other works full of penetrating thought and scholarly distinction.

卐

"No Falling off in 'P.A.N.'"

OFFERING his congratulations relative to Part 37 of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS, which contained the chapters on Persia, Peru, and the Philippines, one of my readers, writing from Purley, Surrey, remarks: "It is pleasing to see that this work is not falling off in interest as it is nearing completion—a rather common failing among many Part works and suchlike publications." The writer goes on to testify to the value of our photogra[illegible]. In the few cases where these have appeared before, they are, he says, "so wonderful that you could not well disregard them in a work of this kind." The world quest of original photographs for PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS would provide material for a long story, and it may be said, without fear of contradiction, that only by the public spirit of the Publishers, prepared as they were to spend huge sums far in advance of publication, has it been possible for the Editor to give in this work such an unrivalled as well as exhaustive series of camera studies of the peoples of the world.

卐

For the Folklorist

THAT the days of the wandering minstrel are not over, that, so far as some parts of the world are concerned, they did not end with the disappearance of the trouveur and troubadour of medieval times, or even with the "Last Minstrel" of Sir Walter Scott, is probably a commonplace to the student of the human race. The minstrel still lingers in remote parts of the world, and the fact is recalled by one of my readers, in reference to the photograph of some native musicians reproduced in our chapter on India. It appears that these interesting nomads are not Baluchis, but Doms, and these Doms spend their whole lives in going from place to place in the character of peripatetic musicians and ballad singers. In recent times, my correspondent adds, their ballads have been much sought after by folklorists.

East, West, and South

OUR alphabetical plan is often responsible for striking contrasts, and the present Part is especially notable as touching lands and peoples at three of the four cardinal points of the compass. Following the conclusion of Mr. Hamilton Fyfe's quite photographic description of the semi-Oriental character of the Russian people, and Mr. F. A. McKenzie's vivid account of life in Soviet Russia (which, by the way, was broadcasted from the London station of the British Broadcasting Co. on August 2), comes Sir Bernard Pares's scholarly and detailed summary of the absorbingly dramatic story of the rise and progress of the great Slav state. Then our attention is drawn off to the contrast presented by life in San Salvador. Next our imagination is appealed to by a description, fully illustrated, of Samoa, that Paradise in the South Pacific doubly romantic by reason of its association with "Tusitala," or "the Tale Teller"—Robert Louis Stevenson. Again we are in Europe—this time in the pleasant little Republic of San Marino whence, again, we get back to South America, and in the two chapters on Santo Domingo are enabled to study life among the picturesque islanders of the Caribbean.

卐

On "Touching the Thistle"

OUR next Part, as already announced, will be largely taken up by a description of Scotland and the Scots, by Mr. Hamilton Fyfe and Sir George Douglas, Bart. Perhaps some of my readers may recall a little note of mine in Part 12, in which I referred to the way in which both Scots and Jews were dealt with in more or less humorous portraiture. Than the Scots, probably no people, not even the Jews themselves, have suffered more from the old but quite unjust charge of meanness. This gibe does sometimes "touch the thistle," but the Scots as a whole do not let these little things trouble them. In his delightful chapter on the Scots as they are in fiction and in fact, Mr. Fyfe takes up this question with anecdote and argument, and while presenting the case for and against the gibe referred to, very cleverly and effectively laughs it out of court. It should be added that the national spirit of Scotland, itself an outcome of the national character, is shown to no little advantage in the chapter by Sir George Douglas.

Part 41 PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS will be on sale everywhere Tuesday, Sept. 2

"Tell me a Story"—

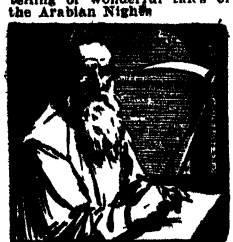
The Cry of Humanity throughout the Ages.

THE art of the Story-Teller brings you the knowledge of strange lands, vivid emotions, great deeds. Like a magic carpet it carries you away wherever and whenever you will, giving you, not only the dry bones of historical fact, but men and women in their habit as they lived and as they live.

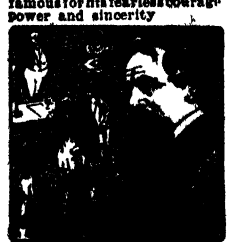
SAGAMAN.—One of the most primitive of all story-tellers, the Sagaman delighted our Viking ancestors with his tales of prowess and adventure

JONGLEUR.—In the Age of Chivalry, the Jongleur wandered from Castle to Castle, telling the Ladies in their bowers and the Knights at their feasting, marvellous tales of bravery, love and romance

SCHEHERAZADE.—The famous Queen of Arabia who prolonged her life from night to night by telling of wonderful tales of the Arabian Nights



TOLSTOY.—The great Russian reformer, idealist and novelist, famous for his fearless courage power and sincerity



DICKENS.—The immortal novelist of London life, creator of Mr. Pickwick, Little Nell, Oliver Twist, Mrs. Gamp, Mr Micawber.

It keeps you in touch with the wide kingdom of thought and imagination. It lifts you clear of the monotony of your daily occupation, and transports you into a world thrilling with passion and drama, beautiful with the visions of the lover and the artist. And here is your opportunity to get the world's greatest Story-Tellers to practise this art for you, to tell you in your own home the tales that have made them immortal. Write to-day for particulars of

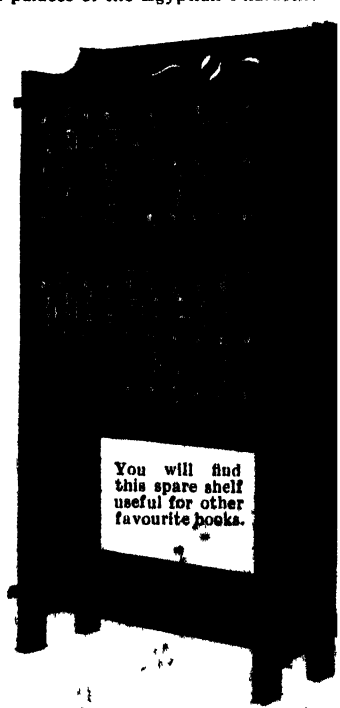
The Masterpiece Library of Short Stories

20 superb volumes containing the 1,000 best short stories of all nations and centuries, selected by a Board of the most eminent critics and writers of the day.

General Editor J. A. HAMMERTON

Read in them the marvellous tales of love and intrigue told 4,000 years ago in the sacred walled cities of China and in the palaces of the Egyptian Pharaohs.

Read the dark stories of medieval Italy, stories of poison and murder and feud; real original contemporary documents which no Grand Guignol thrill can rival. Read the splendid stories of old Scandinavia, of Spain and Portugal, and the gorgeous Courts of France. Read the work of Victor Hugo, de Maupassant, Maeterlinck, d'Annunzio. Read the 3 volumes of American stories, by such writers as O. Henry, Jack London. Read the stories of Ireland and Scotland; stories by H. G. Wells, Galsworthy, Anthony Hope, W. W. Jacobs, Boyd Cable, Stephen McKenna, Alec Waugh. This collection is a library indeed—the best stories by the best authors in the world, and enough to last you a lifetime. If you were to read a different story every day, it would take you nearly 3 years to finish these 20 volumes—and then you would want to begin all over again!



Write for the FREE BOOKLET

Do not miss the chance of acquiring this incomparable and absorbingly interesting Library for your very own.

Send a postcard at once, mentioning "Peoples of All Nations," to The Educational Book Company, Ltd., 17, New Bridge Street, London, E.C.4., and a fascinating free Art Prospectus, giving you full details of the finest collection of stories the world has ever known, will be sent you post free by return.

ed and published every alternate Tuesday by the Proprietors, The Amalgamated Press (1922), Ltd., The Fleetway House, Farringdon on, E.C.4. Sole Agents for South Africa: The Central News Agency, Ltd. Sole Agents for Australasia: Messrs. Gordon & Gotch, Ltd. Canada: The Imperial News Co., Ltd. (Canada). Subscription Rates Inland and Abroad, 1s. 5½d. per copy. September 11th, 192 D&F

Scottish Life & Character Finely Illustrated

41

PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS

Edited by J.A.Hammerton

BACK NUMBERS OF PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS CAN STILL BE HAD

Contents of this Part

SCOTLAND I. Scots in Fiction and in Fact - - 60 *Photographs* - - Hamilton Fyfe
,, II. National Spirit in Scottish History 1 *Illustration* - Sir George Douglas
SERBIA I. Life and Character of the Serbs - - 17 *Photographs* - - Hamilton Fyfe
PHOTOGRAVURE SECTION. SCOTS AT HOME IN HIGHLANDS & LOWLANDS *(17 Photographs)*
COLOUR PLATE: Scotland: The Music of the Pipes

From the Editor's Desk

THE FLEETWAY HOUSE, FARRINGDON STREET
LONDON EC 4

SCOTLAND occupies the bulk of the accompanying Part of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS, and the two chapters are published with confident anticipation that they will command general approval. It is never an easy matter for an author to view his native land purely objectively. Mr. Fyfe has used all his practised skill as a trained descriptive writer in selecting the salient features of Scotland and Scotsmen, and so allocating them as to give a representative picture of the people of his own nation. As happened, too, in the preparation of the chapter on England, the selection of illustrations was difficult, owing partly to the embarrassing number of good photographs from which to choose, and partly to anxiety to omit no subject necessary to the completeness of the survey. A more representative collection could not have been prepared than the nearly eighty photographs here presented in black and white and in photogravure.

卐

A Versatile Man of Letters

ADMIRABLE, too, for its combined comprehensiveness and conciseness is Sir George Douglas's historical sketch. Born in 1856, son of the fifth baronet whom he succeeded in 1885, he was educated at Harrow, and Trinity College, Cambridge, and has found a principal life interest in Scottish literature, in which subject he was lecturer in Glasgow University in 1911. Apart from his own poems and essays he has made a study of Scottish poets, major and minor, and written a history of the Border counties and useful lives of such dissimilar men as James Hogg and Major-General Wauchope. In this contribution to our pages, fettered though he was by inevitable exigencies of space, he has achieved a little masterpiece of history in miniature.

卐

The New Serbia

THE remaining pages of Part 41 contain the beginning of the chapter picturing life to-day in Serbia, one of those vivid pieces of descriptive work which have brought Mr. Hamilton Fyfe to the front rank of special correspondents. This chapter will be completed in Part 42, where the illustrations will include sixteen photographs of the peoples of the new kingdom of the Serbs, Croats, and Slovenes, reproduced in photogravure with the technical excellence for which "P. A. N." has become famous. There, too, Mr. Fyfe's chapter will be supplemented by two other chapters, both written by Mr. Anthony Dell, an authority on the reorganized Balkan State, the first dealing with the other peoples recently included in the triune kingdom, and the second sketching the troubled history of the State.

卐

Concerning Part 42

SOME further announcement of the contents of Part 42 may be acceptable now, since it will complete the sixth and penultimate volume of our work. The other countries, dealt with in it are Siam, Siberia, and Sin-Kiang of the last of which scarcely anything is generally known. Siam is unique in being the only country where untrammelled Oriental despotism survives in the midst of a somewhat highly developed civilization, and it lends itself to, almost compels, an engaging literary and pictorial treatment of which full advantage has been taken. Both the chapters allotted to this fascinating land have been written by Mr. W. A. Graham, author of a standard handbook on Siam, where he lived for many years.

卐

Siberia's Sombre Reputation

TO nine people out of ten the word Siberia may even yet have little other connotation than the name Botany Bay had to their forebears. They think of it merely as a vast penal colony for political offenders against a relentless tyranny, an ice-bound land of broken hearts and utter hopelessness. Foreign interest in the Russo-Japanese war and in the possibilities suggested by the completion of the Trans-Siberian railway has done something to correct the general ignorance, but even to-day

(Continued on page iii. of this wrapper

The entire contents of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS are protected by copyright in all countries signatory to the Berne Convention The literary and most of the pictorial contents are copyrighted in the United States of America.

Scotland

I. The Scots in Fiction and in Fact

By Hamilton Fyfe

Formerly Special Correspondent of "The Daily Mail"

SCOTTISH characteristics are well known to the world, but it has never been certainly discovered whence they came. Cross over from the northernmost part of England into Dumfries or Roxburghshire and at once the difference of race makes itself felt. Not only is the language spoken with a different intonation and with a different idiom; the look of the people is different also: faces are harder-featured, cheek-bones more prominent, the hair inclines to be reddish or sandy in colour, the expression is serious, the smile less ready. Clearly this is a stock distinct from the English: there has not been the same intermixture of blood as is usual along frontiers – there must be some stiff element in the Scottish nature which it is very hard to smooth away. But what that element is the anthropologists have not quite succeeded in finding out.

Unknown Element in Scottish Strain

There are several theories about the natives of Scotland before the Celtic invasion, the natives from whom the Lowland Scots drew so large a part of their character. One is based upon the known fact that in the Lowlands a Teutonic language, a form of English, has been in use for more than ten centuries; from this it is deduced that the Lowland Scots must be a Teutonic race. Again, they are held, upon the strength of their descent from the Picts, to be of Celtic origin. But who were the Picts? Were they Celts? Or were they of some other branch of the human family, possibly not Aryans at all?

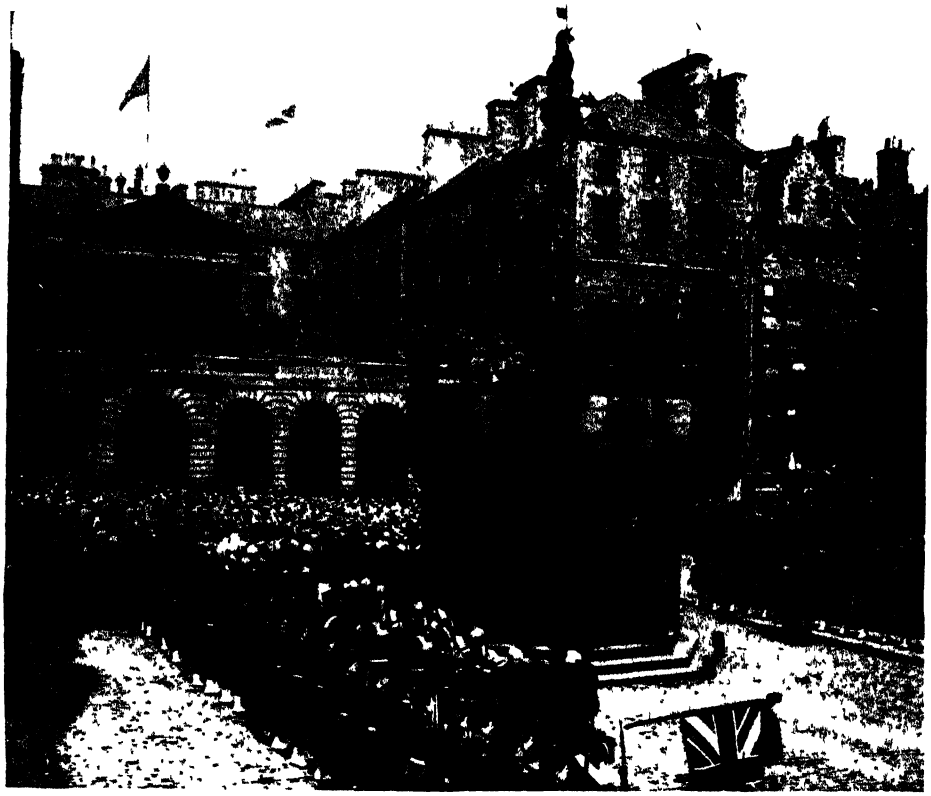
Certainly there is much in the Scottish nature which cannot be traced either to Celtic or to Teutonic ancestry. It is a nature quite distinct from the English (Teutonic) and from the nature of the Highlander (Celtic). Not alone the researches of Professor Rhys, but the agreement of all who have studied the Scot, suggest that there must be some other strain in him to account for what he is, as well as what he has been, and for all he is doing in the world to-day.

Fusion of Celt with Teuton

If the population of Scotland had been entirely Celtic, the name of Scot would not stand, as it does and as it has done for more than a hundred years, for industry, competence, and resolution. It is not the Highlanders who have won this high national reputation. Much as they have contributed to the glory of Scotland, bright though the threads be which they have woven into the history and the literature of their country, they did not until they were mixed with the Lowland race show that determination, steady will to prosper, that unfailing attachment to the business in hand, that unflinching readiness to sacrifice present ease and pleasure for the future rewards of hard work and enterprise and parsimony which have given Scotsmen their positions and reputation throughout the globe.

It used to be said jokingly that when the North Pole was discovered a Scotsman would be found sitting on it, and if there had been any Pole to discover that might well have been proved true. Since nothing existed in the Polar region but barren snowfields and useless tracts of ice, it offered no attraction; the typical Scotsman becomes an explorer only when there is something with commercial possibilities in it to explore, or when he is moved by

Copyrighted, 1922, by The Amalgamated Press (1922), Limited



ROYAL PROCLAMATION FROM EDINBURGH'S MERCAT CROSS

Many historical scenes have been enacted on this spot in Parliament Square where a crowd is gathered to hear a royal proclamation. It is being read from the renovated City Cross, which occupies the site and includes the ancient shaft, or "lang stane," of the original Mercat Cross, taken down in 1756. The present cross, an exact reproduction of its predecessor, was erected in 1885

Photo, Francis Caird Inglis

the state of the heathen and the burning wish to save their souls for God.

Many of the greatest among the missionaries in the days when a missionary had to be an explorer were Scots. Livingstone's is the name most famous among them, Chalmers's not far behind. The same impulse which moved Scotsmen to give their best energies for the souls of black folk accounts for the charitable habits which are far more pronounced in Scotland than they are in England.

The truth known to all who have lived among them is that the generosity of the Scots is quite as prominent among their characteristics as their cautiousness The latter has been fixed on as their national trait simply because it marks the difference between them and the English. In England the idea is prevalent that anyone who looks carefully after his money must be mean.

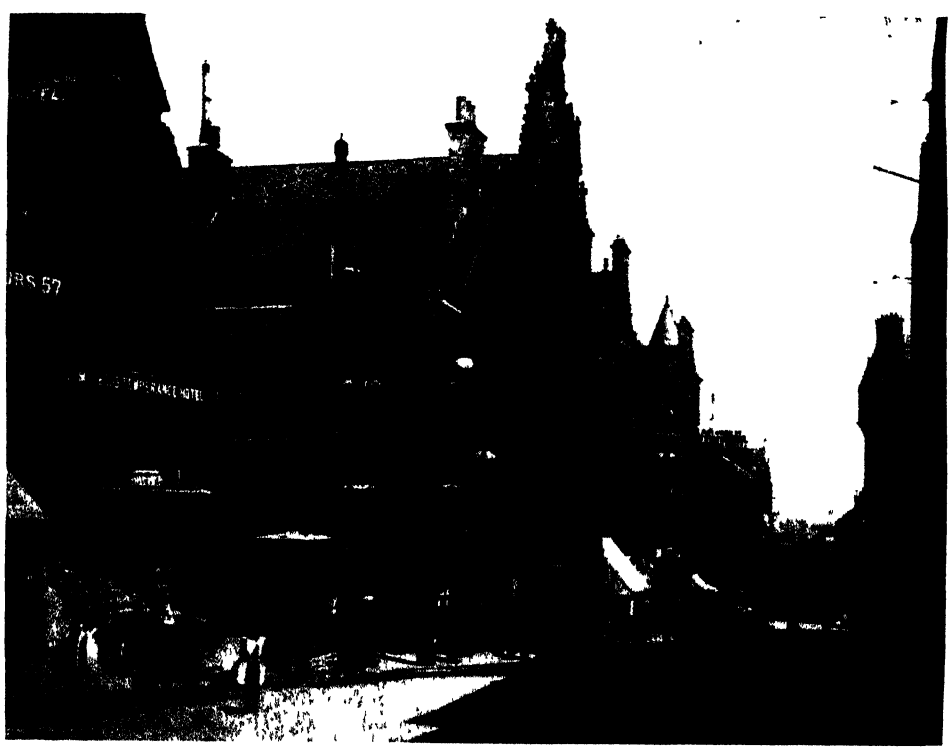
In the original Highland nature there does not appear to have been much of the "canniness" that now distinguishes Scotsmen generally. Indeed, the two races in Scotland were not merely not alike, they were positive opposites. This partly accounts for the enmity which existed between them, for the state of warfare in which they lived, for the

mutual scorn and pity which may still be heard upon the lips of some of them.

Some large part of the blame for this must be laid upon the English government, which employed the Highlanders to exterminate troublesome Lowlanders. It was only after the failure of the second rising in favour of the Stuart dynasty in 1745 that the Highlanders and the Lowlanders began to commingle as one people. Since then the two strains of blood have mixed more and more, and the result has been good on both sides.

The Highlander, who had been lazy and given to robbery, and was as superstitious as a savage so long as he lived in remote glens, owning allegiance to no one but his chief, soon showed, when he went south, that his abilities were excellent and that he could work hard. At the same time he brought into play an imagination, a fire of enthusiasm, a vigour of enterprise, which were seldom found among the Lowlanders. They profited also, therefore, by his emergence from the mountain strongholds in which under the clan system he had found no opportunity to shine save as a guerrilla warrior and cunning thief.

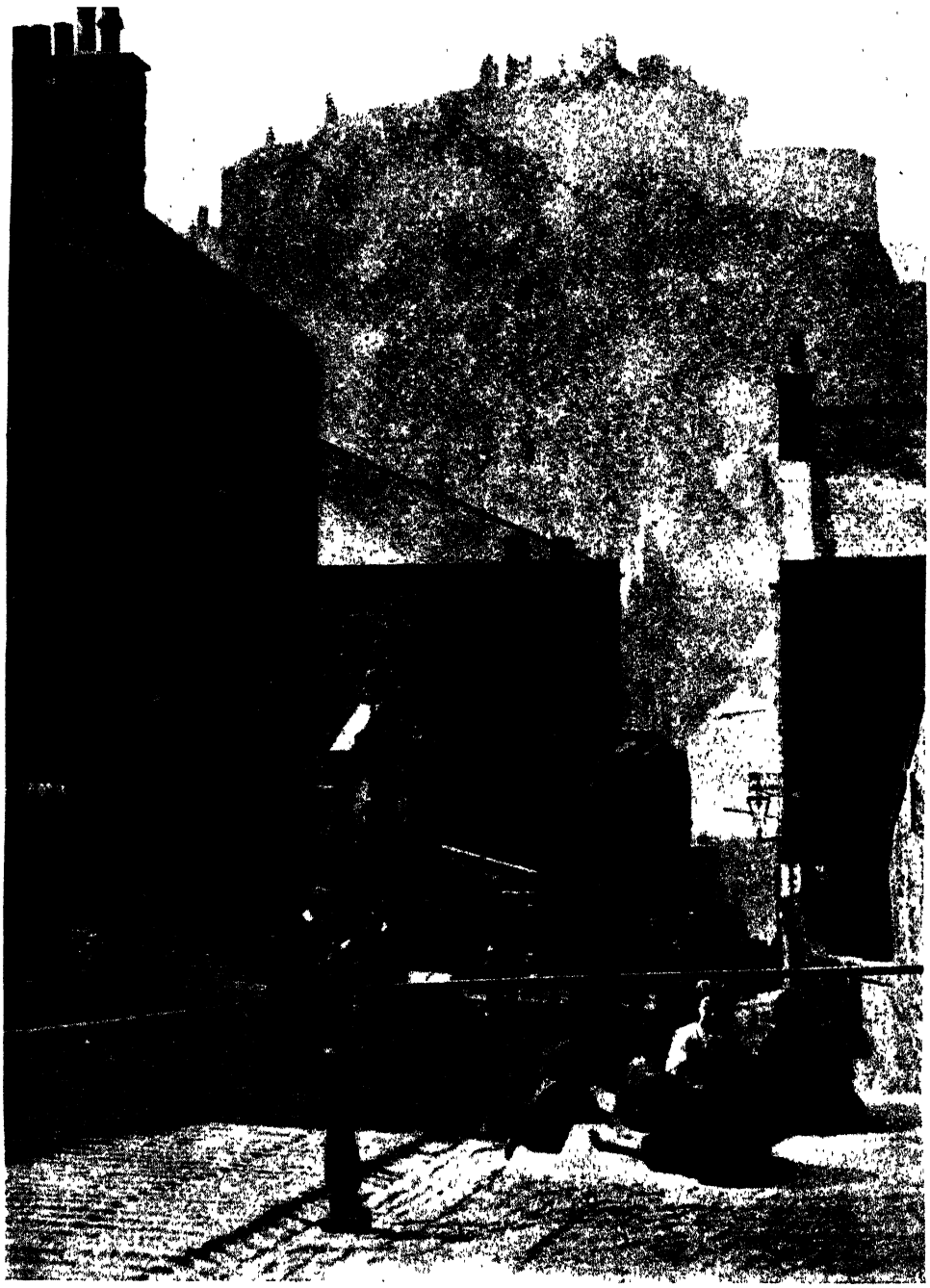
There remains something of the old clan spirit still. The chiefs have been replaced by landlords whose relations with their tenants have been purely commercial and the griefs of the crofters have from time to time enlisted fleeting sympathies in England. The old feeling among all clansmen that they were "gentlemen" by birth and that they must prove this by their manners has passed away. It is scarcely possible in the mean streets of Glasgow, among the dock labourers or mechanics, or railway men, to distinguish between the



HERE LIVED "ONE WHO NEVER FEARED THE FACE OF MAN"

One of Edinburgh's most prized possessions is John Knox's house, secured from possible demolition by its purchase by the Free Church of Scotland. It is a timbered house, with overhanging windows, and is entered by a flight of stone steps from the Canongate. Its rooms now contain a priceless collection of relics of the Great Reformer, who died here November 24, 1572

Photo, Underwood Press Service



WHERE EDWIN'S FORTRESS FROWNS DOWN UPON "AULD REEKIE"

From every view-point in Edinburgh the Castle appears majestic in its dominance over the life below it. But it is from the wynds of the Old Town, roughly paved streets flanked by grim stone houses, that one realizes its perfection as the focal point of the city's beauty and historic interest, its glamour enhanced by the haze spread by the smoking chimneys that originated the name "Auld Reekie"

Photo, Peter Orr

EDINBURGH UNIVERSITY STUDENTS ELECTING THEIR LORD RECTOR

Every three years the students of Edinburgh University elect a Lord Rector, from one of two candidates, generally men of eminence in politics. For some weeks preceding the election canvassing is carried on vigorously by the rival factions, the crowning feature of the contest being a torchlight procession through the streets and a general carnival which is attended by thousands of the citizens

RIVAL SUPPORTERS IN THE DUST OF BATTLE AFTER THE ELECTION

After the result of the election is made known a "rag" takes place, usually in the quadrangle. The upper picture shows the windows of the university building boarded over in anticipation of the declaration of the poll and of the ensuing undergraduate riot when the rival partisans pelt each other with rotten eggs, vegetables, bags of flour, crackers, and fireworks

Photos, Ian Smith

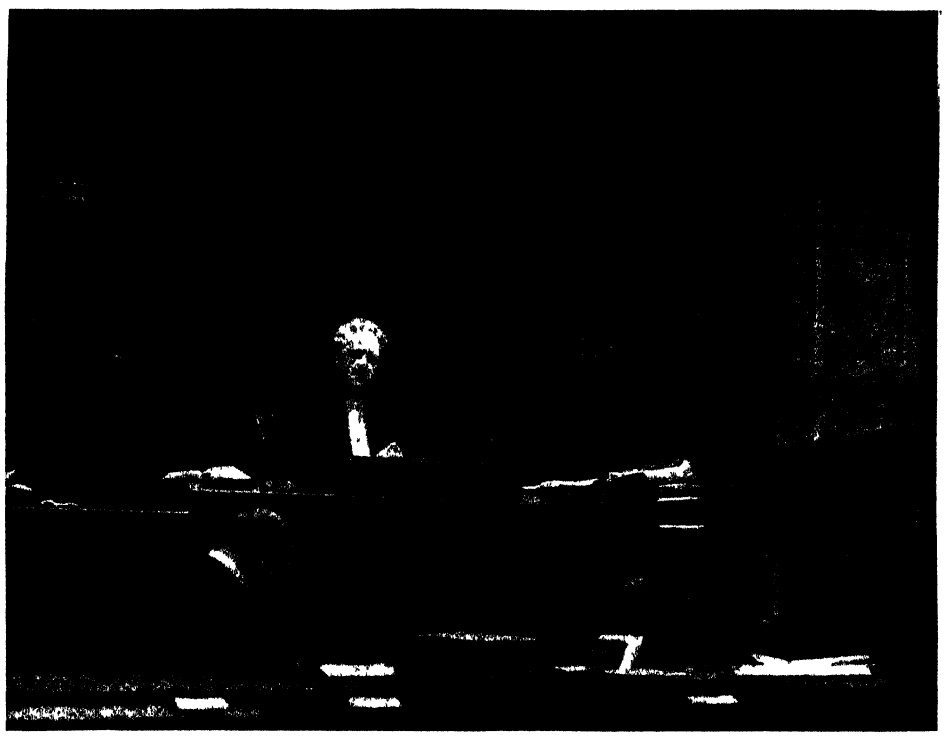
ACTIVITY AT THE BROOMIELAW ON THE CLYDE THE FLOWING LIFE-STREAM OF GLASGOW'S INDUSTRY

It is to the Clyde Navigation Trust that Glasgow is mainly indebted for its ability to accommodate the vast volume of shipping that resorts to the second largest city in the United Kingdom. At the Broomielaw, where pleasure steamers are here shown beginning and ending their trips on the Clyde, there was once a depth of but fifteen inches of water at low tide. Now the largest vessels in the world can fare freely down the waterway to the sea, passing docks that cover more than a hundred acres, and quays and wharves more than nine miles in length

Photo, I. and R. Annan & Sons

men of Highland and the men of Lowland origin.

But now and again the ancient feuds between clans are seen to be remembered; the heads of ancient families are not left entirely without the affection and loyalty which made their forefathers petty kings; even among families which have lived in the Lowlands for generations, or emigrated any dealings with civilization as it was known in towns. Its picturesqueness was heightened by Sir Walter Scott and other writers; they looked only at one part of the life of the clan, saying little about the cruelty, the treachery, the thieving. The loyalty of the Highlands to the Stuarts was extolled as a noble trait—the stupidity of adherence to so mean a family of princes was forgotten.



JUDICIAL DIGNITY IN THE OUTER HOUSE OF THE COURT OF SESSION
Scotland's legal system differs in many points of procedure and even of principle from that of England. The highest tribunal is the Court of Session. This comprises the Outer House, with five judges sitting in separate courts, and the Inner House, with two divisions presided over by the Lord President and the Lord Justice Clerk respectively, each assisted by three subsidiary Lords
Photo, Francis Caird Inglis

to America, there may be noticed an attachment to the traditions of their clan, a feeling of reverential love towards the tract of country which once belonged to it, and a determination to uphold the character of the Highlander for hospitality, courtesy, and good breeding.

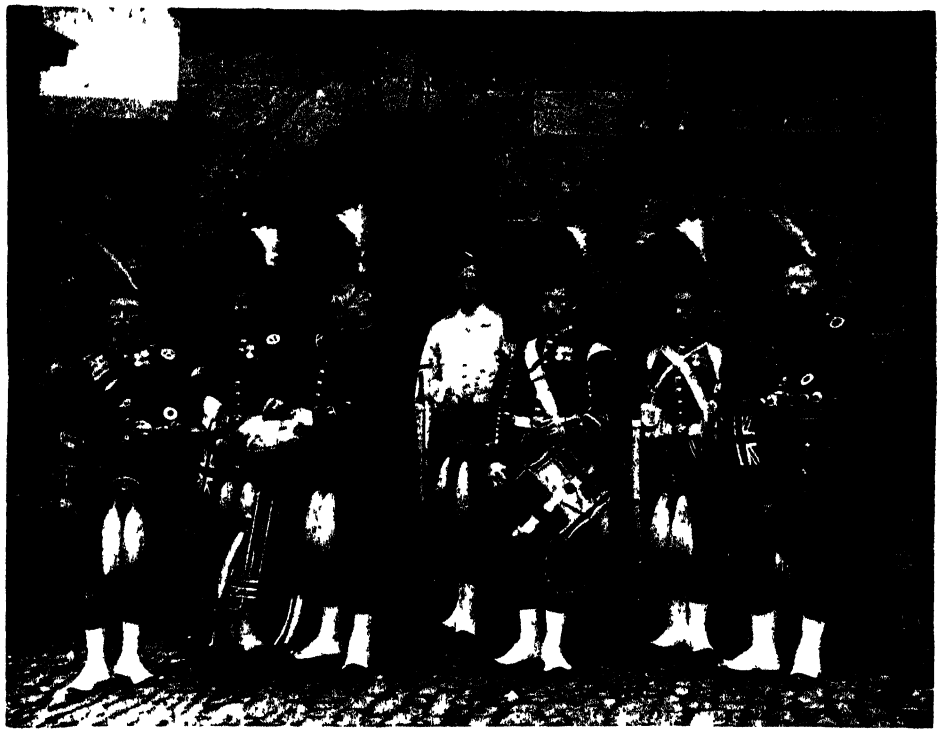
No doubt too favourable an opinion has been spread of the qualities of the Highland race during the period in which it dwelt apart and refused to have

A flood of facile sympathy was let loose by the publication and the immense popularity of "The Lady of the Lake." Up to that date the scenery of the Highlands had been thought of with dislike, even with horror. It was all wild and fierce and uncivilized, unpleasant to the taste of the eighteenth century, which regarded mountains as monstrosities and preferred the sight of roofs and chimneys to the most glorious aspects

PIPERS OF THE BLACK WATCH, A HIGHLAND REGIMENT FAMED FOR ITS GALLANT MILITARY EXPLOITS

There is brave reading in the history of Scottish soldiering and volumes could be written of the valiant Scotsmen who have fought to stabilise the foundations of the British Empire. The Black Watch, or Royal Highlanders, is a Highland regiment which was raised in 1739 in independent companies to preserve order in North Scotland; these companies formed a watch and because of the dark colour of their tartan they came to be known as the Black Watch. Their record is one of conspicuous gallantry, and they enjoy a very great prestige among the regiments in the British Army

Photo Francis Caird Inglis



STALWART MEN OF A WELL-KNOWN SCOTTISH REGIMENT

The Cameron Highland regiment, officially known as the Queen's Own Cameron Highlanders, owes its origin to Alan Cameron, who, towards the end of the eighteenth century, gathered together several hundred young men in his native country of Inverness and led them to the wars. The regiment did good service in the South African War, and had a glorious record in the Great War

Photo, Francis Caird Inglis

of natural beauty. Now a change set in. It became fashionable to talk gushingly about the Highlands, to visit the spots made famous by Scott's poems. He himself came upon proof of the stream of tourists whom he diverted to these spots when he talked with a man who bewailed his loss of livelihood as a "guide" to Ben Lomond. "That damned Walter Scott," he said bitterly, "whom everybody makes such a work about, has sent all the visitors to see that filthy hole, Loch Katrine, and I have had only two gentlemen to guide all this blessed season. The devil confound his ladies and his lakes, say I."

Next came the fashion which made the possession of a "deer forest" one of the signs by which rich men could flaunt their possessions and their acquaintance with the pastimes of the aristocracy. The noble stags which roamed over the moors, of which the so-called "forests" were composed, were now stalked and shot as an amusement. The peasants, known as crofters, were deprived of their chances to make even a poor living. Many emigrated.

For those who stayed on, trying to keep themselves alive upon their native soil, efforts were made in the House of Commons; a royal commission was appointed to hear their complaints and prayers. The general impression left on the public mind was that, although certain deer-forest owners had been harsh and overbearing, and although the crofters had been treated generally as if they were intruders rather than the original owners of the land, their poverty was due more to the barren nature of the soil than to any other cause. They were certainly far better off on the Canadian prairie than they could ever have been on their own "lone sheilings" which could never

LAND FERTILISER SUPPLIED BY THE SEA

So deeply is the Skye coast indented by sea lochs that scarcely any part of the interior is more than five miles from the sea, and the crofter has no lack of the wherewithal to fertilise his land, there is abundance of seaweed for the gathering

Photo, F. Hardie

make a return equal to the amount of labour expended on them.

All over Scotland the soil is poor and must be worked with the utmost energy in order to force it to yield its increase. To that necessity must be attributed half the success of the Scot in the modern world, the other half being accounted for by his unconquerable desire for education, based upon an understanding of its value as a means of getting on.

That "knowledge is power" the Scot fervently believes, and he acts upon his belief. No seeker after learning for learning's sake is he, as a rule, though many an instance may be still found in Scotland of accomplishments acquired and developed purely for pleasure by men of humble occupation. Gardeners who can paint in oils, stone-masons who quote Horace, railway porters who have read the whole literature of some subject—say, Egyptian exploration or the campaigns of Napoleon—such men can surely have their counterparts scarce anywhere else.

Fathers and mothers used to bring their children up to consider education as the one thing necessary—many do still, though the pressure of industrial competition has ground away the pride and the aspirations of a good many, and made it less easy than it was for parents to agree that sons or daughters shall carry on their education until they are twenty-two or three.

So long as the chief industry of the country was agriculture the poor students at the universities could earn their living through the time of year when farmers were busy and attend their classes in the winter months. Each of the Scottish universities (St Andrews, Glasgow, Aberdeen, Edinburgh, all founded before 1600) had many such seekers after advancement on their books even thirty years ago. They

GRINDING THE CORN IN A CORNER OF OLD-WORLD SKYE

The ancient millstone has served its purpose for many long years and is still in constant use, for tradition has this worthy couple well under her sway and the "good old ways" are still good enough for them. As one writer has said with truth about the island, "In Skye one is free of one's century, the present wheels away into silence and remoteness."

Photo, F. Hardie

MAKING THE MOST OF A FINE DAY HOUSEWIVES OF SKYE LAUNDERING THE FAMILY LINEN IN THE OPEN AIR

Although it is reckoned that more rain falls in Skye than in most other places in the British Isles, its rainfall amounting to eighty inches for the year, the sights and scenery make of this island of the mist a land of infinite delight; and homely scenes such as this one—savouring of true Scottish industry—are plentiful during the fine weather. The principal landowners are Lord Macdonald and The Macleod, whose feuds during the era of clan warfare, together with the associations connected with Bonnie Prince Charlie and his protectress, Flora Macdonald, add a special historical interest to the island

Photo F Hardie

lived mainly on porridge and oat-cake; they had one small room or the share of a room in a poor house; their clothes were rough; they often walked long distances from their homes at the beginning of term and back at the end.

Men who went through this wholesome discipline are to be found in all kinds of high positions to-day. They had, fortunately, little to suffer from snobbish companions; they were not looked down upon or ridiculed for their poverty. Few students were wealthy, few belonged to influential families. The rich and well-born sent their sons for the most part to English public schools and universities

Right Theory of Education

The spirit of the Scottish educators was very different from that of the English; they had no idea of being appointed to bring up the ruling class; they had no use for students who did not work hard, who had not some goal in view. The notion so prevalent in England that going to the university was useful because it enabled a boy to make profitable acquaintances and to learn to play games and to have a good time before he started on his life's work, was laughed at across the border.

The Scottish university was a place for strenuous application: it was for many poor students a lonely place. But its atmosphere was bracing; it helped to strengthen character as well as to impart learning. To it must be ascribed much of the driving force which has pushed Scotsmen into foremost positions in almost every country in the world.

Dr. Johnson, who never tired of poking fun at Scotsmen, said the finest view they ever saw was the view of the road which led to England. This was in an age which did not take Scotsmen seriously, chiefly because they did not behave as serious persons. For during most of the eighteenth century it was the Highlander who represented Scotland in the south of England, and the Highlander was more often than not a figure of fun, a starveling adventurer, a picker-up of unconsidered trifles, whether in the shape of jewelled snuff-boxes or rich widows.

Peaceful Penetration into England

Lowland Scots made their way south in small numbers, and attracted less attention. They worked steadily and intelligently, for the most part on the land. They were famous gardeners; they brought with them the methods of industrious farming which were necessary on their own poorer soil; if they took service in commerce, they proved their worth by care for their employer's interest—and their own. Thus they established themselves in England during the later part of the eighteenth century and the earlier part of the nineteenth, permeating every profession and occupation, every branch of business, until the success of Scotsmen and their ability to push their way to the front, whatever they might be doing, became proverbial.

Within a short period of years Great Britain had three Scottish prime ministers; Lord Rosebery, Sir Henry Campbell-Bannerman, and Mr. Arthur Balfour, all sprung from families which had been obscure until the close connexion of Scotland with England opened to the Scots those avenues of advancement and ambition of which they were so ready to take advantage.

Taking the Highest Room

In the civil service, as well as in Parliament, they took a share of the prizes out of all proportion to their numbers, and even in the Church of England they secured many of the highest posts. In our own time we have seen both the archbishops, Canterbury and York, Scotsmen, Randall Davidson and Gordon Lang. A story told to illustrate the natural tendency of Scotsmen to congregate about the top represents a native of some Scottish town returning after a visit to the south.

OLD STONE COTTAGE OF A CROFTER SITUATED AMID THE "GLOOMY GLORIES OF SKYE"

Skye, the largest island of the Inner Hebrides and part of the county of Inverness shire is separated from the mainland at its nearest point by a narrow channel scarcely half a mile wide—a voyage that can hold no terror of seasickness for the most timorous traveller The surface is mountainous interspersed with lochs, and the scenery, though beautiful, is often of a grim, lonely grandeur, offering endless delights to the nature lover Great improvements have taken place in recent years in the condition of the crofters, and most of the old black huts have disappeared, giving place to well ventilated, nicely built houses

Photo F Hardie

MATRONS AND MAIDENS OF FAR-AWAY ST. KILDA BEGUILING A LEISURE HOUR WITH KNITTING AND GOSSIP

St. Kilda, a remote island of the Outer Hebrides, belonging to Harris in Inverness-shire, lies forty miles to the west of North Uist, and is the chief of the group of about seventeen rocky islets. It is often inaccessible for eight months out of the twelve, but in summer steamers visit it regularly, bringing many tourists who are attracted by the very remoteness of the little island; consequently, this annual influx of "foreigners" has its influence on the islanders, who in many respects are far less primitive than the inhabitants of less frequented parts of the Hebridean group

Photo, F. Hardie

VILLAGE NEIGHBOURS MEET IN A SECLUDED CORNER OF THE BLEAK AND FORBIDDING LANDSCAPE OF ST. KILDA

St. Kilda possesses about forty acres of arable land which produces potatoes, oats, and barley. There are a few head of cattle, and sheep are raised, and from their wool blankets and coarse material are made for home use. The fisheries are productive, but much neglected. So isolated is this small island from the outer world that the mail is sent only two or three times a year, but "sea messages" are sometimes indulged in—communications despatched in boxes which the strong westerly wind carries over in due course to the western islands or the mainland

Photo, F Hardie

"And what did ye think o' the English?" a friend inquires. "Man," he replies, "I didna see ony o' them. My business was wi' the heads o' depairtments."

Scots cherish a strong sentimental affection for their native country, although they may prefer to stay out of it. Scarcely ever does one hear of a Scotsman returning to Scotland to live at the end of his active career. Many return from India, from Africa, from the Far East, to spend their latter years in England, but once they have left their own country, they very seldom show any desire to go back to it for good.

They very seldom lose, however, their affection for Scottish songs and literature; they gather religiously on New Year's Day, which is much more of a festival in Scotland than Christmas, and on S. Andrew's Day and on Hallow E'en; they praise Scotland and everything Scottish; they drink large quantities of whisky, and eat a dish composed of minced sheep's entrails with oatmeal and called "haggis." This is a delicacy never omitted from the bill of fare at the Burns' Club suppers which call forth all the enthusiasm of the race.

FARMERS OF SKYE PREPARING THEIR LAND FOR A POTATO CROP

The crofter inhabitants of Skye are chiefly engaged in sheep and cattle raising, fishing and distilling. Much of the moor and hill land consists of pasturage, but potatoes and turnips are grown with considerable success by these able landsmen whose energy and ambition are centred in their small holdings, and who find no labour connected with land fertilisation and cultivation too irksome

Photo, F. Hardie

Scotsmen are great at hero-worship. Carlyle was a type of his countrymen in that. Wallace and Bruce, both of them Celts, by the way, as most of the famous Scottish soldiers have been, are still honoured for their prowess against the English. Stirling and Bannockburn are still names that ring proudly in every Scottish ear. They will hear no ill spoken about Mary Queen of Scots; though how they manage to square their devotion to her memory with their

BRAWNY, BEARDED MEN OF ST. KILDA DISCUSSING PROBLEMS OF THE DAY IN THE MAIN STREET OF THEIR VILLAGE

The circumference of St Kilda is about seven miles, but though so small, the island possesses a hill, Connagher, which forms a precipice 1,220 feet in height The population comprises some eighty persons—a thrifty, hard working community, speaking Gaelic and inhabiting a little village at the head of the East Bay The island is the property of the Macleods but the islanders hold the reins of government in their own hands, life runs smoothly for them and strife is almost unknown, for present laws and regulations differ little from those which were observed in the time of their forefathers

Photo F Hirtie

RETURNING WITH THEIR PREY AFTER PERILOUS CLIMBS AMONG THE PRECIPITOUS ROCKS OF ST. KILDA ISLAND

The fulmar is a large, petrel-like seabird, common in the Hebrides and St Kilda, its plumage is grey and white, and the bird measures nearly twenty inches in length. It nests on rocky ledges and grassy slopes among the cliffs, and the egg and young are usually to be obtained only at considerable risk of life The oil which is extracted from this bird has been found by chemical analysis to be a fish-oil, and closely to resemble that taken from the liver of the cod. When a live specimen is captured by hand it ejects some of this oil from its mouth

Photo, F Hardie

NEARLY HALF OF THE SCANTY POPULATION OF ST KILDA ASSEMBLED TO DIVIDE A LARGE CATCH OF FULMAR

Except in the south-east of the island where is the landing place, St Kilda is surrounded by lofty, precipitous cliffs which rise sheer from the water's edge The natives are expert cragsmen, noted for their exploits, and devote much of their time and energy to the capture of the sea fowl Sea birds abound throughout the island, including puffins, fulmar petrels, guillemots, razor bills, Manx shearwaters, and solan geese, and are killed for their feathers, oil, and meat Formerly these birds contributed a large share to the wealth of the islanders, who caught them chiefly with nooses, but their numbers have now considerably diminished

Photo, F Hardie

attachment to the Covenanters and their strict notions of morality, it is hard to understand.

Nor is it easy for persons of any other nationality to sympathise with them when they dwell upon the virtues and the services to Scotland of those rigid sectarian fanatics of the Covenant who surpassed the Puritans in deeds of blood, and left upon the spirit of their countrymen a cloud of gloom and sanctimonious pretence which has been passing away only within the last generation. The original fault lay not with the Covenanters, of course, but with those who made the imbecile attempt to force upon this stubborn folk a faith it did not choose to embrace. They had been satisfied with the Catholic ritual and belief until John Knox brought among them the pitiless doctrines of Calvin: these took root quickly in their minds, and for centuries their intolerance and fierce adherence to custom in such matters as Sunday observance were spoken of the world over.

Iron-Bound Sabbatarianism

It was, however, only among the mass of the nation that there was any real Calvinistic fervour. The educated, all who had the opportunity to mix with people not brought up as strict Presbyterians, followed in the footsteps of the zealot only so far as was needful for social convenience. Fashion, indeed, dictated an attitude of indifference to religion, however regularly its outward form might be practised.

Dean Ramsay, in his most entertaining and exceedingly valuable "Reminiscences of Scottish Life and Character," tells an anecdote in this connexion. He remembered a gossip relating as a piece of scandal that the commanding officer of a regiment quartered in a Scottish town "had family prayers every morning." She was rebuked by a friend with "How can you repeat such things, Miss Ogilvy? Nothing in the world but the ill-natured stories of Montrose." There was no hint of irony in the remark. It was nevertheless the feelings of the mass of the nation which regulated Scottish life. Until near the end of the nineteenth century no street-cars ran in Edinburgh or Glasgow on Sundays. Any kind of amusement on the Sabbath was regarded as sinful; many people even went so far as to keep their blinds down in order to induce the melancholy frame of mind supposed to be desirable on the day of rest.

Pharisaical Self-Righteousness

A geologist went out one Sunday morning with his hammer in his pocket as usual, and chipped off pieces of mineral-bearing rock as he strolled. An old man on his way to church watched him for a little while, then accosted him with "Sir, you are breaking something there besides the stanes" An English painter looking for "subjects" on a Sunday came in sight of a picturesque ruin. To a man who was passing he turned and asked him the name of the old castle. "It's no the day to be asking such things," was the indignant reply that he received.

Whistling on the Sabbath was for some reason considered a mark of peculiar sinfulness. An old Highlander told a Glasgow artist that the inhabitants of his village were "a God-fearin' set o' folk," and gave the following illustration of their piety: "Last Sabbath, just as we were comin' oot o' kirk, there was a drover chield frae Dumfries comin' along the road whustlin' and lookin' as happy as if it was the middle of the week. Weel, sir, oor lads just set upon him and a'most killed him."

Old Testament View of Life

There was little love of God among the severe Calvinists, only fear and the conviction that God could not wish His elect to be happy here below. The peasants were fond of discussing points of doctrine, which sharpened their wits, but did not soften their hearts. It was

GOOD WORK WELL DONE BRINGS PLEASURE AS WELL AS PROFIT

Defined as tweed hand spun, hand woven and dyed, and finished by hand in the islands of Lewis—which includes Harris—Uist, Barra, and their several appurtenances, Harris tweed has a world wide reputation for flexibility and durability It is further distinguished by a delicious odour of heather and peat, an imperishable reminder of the Hebridean cottages in which it is spun and woven and dyed

Photo, Francis Caird Inglis, by permission of the Harris Tweed Trading Co Edinburgh) Ltd

FIRST STAGE FROM COTTAGE LOOM TO WORLD-WIDE MARKET

Remunerative work is hard to come by in the remote Hebrides, and the development of the Harris tweed industry has been a boon to the cottars. At Tarbert, on the island of Lewis and Harris, two wool-carding establishments have been instituted to provide employment for the people, and also a depot to which they may bring the Harris tweeds which they have woven and dyed at home

Photo, Francis Caird Inglis, by permission of the Harris Tweed Trading Co. (Edinburgh), Ltd.

WHEN THE SEA YIELDS ITS HARVEST OF WEEDS. WOMEN WORKERS IN THE KELP INDUSTRY

Together with the Shetlands the Orkney Islands form one of the counties of Scotland The Orkneys comprise some sixty seven islands, islets, and holms, of which about thirty are inhabited Kelp gathering is a thriving industry in many parts, and here at Birsay a small northerly village of Pomona, women may often be seen working along the coast, gathering the kelp into large heaps, or burning it in order to obtain the ashes, or marketable kelp As already illustrated in pages 2938 39, intense labour is connected with the gathering, drying, firing, and carting of kelp, twenty tons of which are required to produce one ton of marketable product

Photo, F. Hartie

the teaching of the Old Testament to which they clung. Their deity was the Jah-veh (Jehovah) of the Jews, full of wrath and vengeance, unsparing in his damnation of all who strayed from the narrow path. Heaven and hell were to the Presbyterians very real. The burden of their sins weighed upon them like a physical pain.

The same literal and mechanical interpretation of what was called God's word prevailed among the "unco' guid" (uncommon good) as is applied by Tibetans to the formulae of Buddhism. Hume, the philosopher, used to relate that he once got into a swamp at the back of Edinburgh Castle, and called to a woman passing to lend him a hand She recognized him and said: "Are ye not Hume, the atheist?"

"Come," said he. "Does not Christian charity command you to do good to all?"

Grim Element in Scottish Humour

"Nae matter about Christian charity," his tormentor replied, "I'll dae naething for ye till ye turn a Christian yersel'. Ye maun say the Lord's Prayer and the Creed or I'll let ye grovel there as I fand ye."

Hume had to do as she bid.

Probably there was humour as well as piety in that, for in Scottish humour there is often a grimness which seems to approach cruelty. This comes out in the tale of the dying wife who could not bear the thought of being buried in a city churchyard. She said to her husband: "I've been a good wife to ye, John, have I no?"

"Oh, just middling, middling, Jenny," was John's grudging admission.

"John," she continued, "promise me that I shall be buried in the old kirkyard at Strathavon. I couldna rest in peace amid the dirt and smoke of Glasgow."

"Aweel, Jenny, my wumman," said John cheerfully, "we'll just try ye in Gorbals (an old Glasgow cemetery) first, and if ye dinna rest there quiet, we'll pit ye in Strathavon."

The belief that heaven would be like earth was due to poverty of imagination. The services of the Presbyterian bodies were not of a kind to fill the minds of the worshippers with images of the celestial regions such as were made familiar to the Middle Ages by the paintings of the Italian Primitives. It was common to send messages to friends in the other world by anyone on the point of death.

Simple Faith in Things Unseen

One old woman lying on her death-bed at Hawick, where clogs used to be heard all day long on the pavements, was asked by a crony, "If ye should see our folk, will ye no tell them we're a' well?"

"Ay," said the dying woman, a little impatient, "if I should see them, I'll tell them, but ye canna expect me to go clank-clankin' through heeven lookin' for your folk."

Yet there was a grandeur, too, about the stark sincerity and simplicity of the Presbyterian's faith in unseen things. It gave dignity to the humble, it raised existence to a higher plane than that of heedless materialism. Lord Rutherford, a famous judge, was once rebuked by a shepherd for cursing the "east ha'," a state of atmosphere which brings a cold, damp mist with it. "What ails ye at the mist, sir?" asked the shepherd. "It wets the sod, it slockens the yowes (quenches the thirst of the ewes), and it's God's wull."

Irony in Racy Epigram

It was the same shepherd of the Pentland Hills who took down another law lord, Cockburn, of distinguished memory. The judge looked at some sheep lying on the colder side of a hill, and said: "If I were a sheep, I'd lie on the other side."

"Na, na," said the shepherd, "if yer lordship were a sheep, ye'd hae mair sense."

In all probability the shepherd had no idea of humour in his mind. That is one of the difficulties lying in the way of the Englishman who tries to discover

SAILING VESSEL WAITING ON A BREEZE AT THE ENTRANCE TO LOSSIEMOUTH HARBOUR

Lossiemouth, a police burgh, seaport, and watering-place of Elginshire, is situated at the mouth of the River Lossie, five miles from the city of Elgin. It has a fine harbour adjoining the Moray Firth, with some good fishing and a fair amount of shipping. It is an attractive place for visitors, for the sea-bathing is especially good and the golf links are considered some of the best in Scotland. In the vicinity of the town stand the interesting old ruins of Spynie Castle, once the seat of the Bishop of Moray, situated on a loch of the same name. The principal remaining part is the square tower built in the fifteenth century

Photo, G. M. Tyrrell

NATIVES OF SHETLAND CARRYING HOME LOADS OF PEAT FOR USE DURING THE WINTER MONTHS

Peat is a spongy substance of vegetable origin, common to almost every temperate country. Pure peat, thoroughly dry, has great value as fuel, and is used extensively by the inhabitants of the Shetland group, who, during the long days, may constantly be seen tramping in their sandals of cowskin along the rough paths carrying heavy peat burdens. Peat is usually cut not later than June, and the sods, stacked one against the other, are dried by sun and air, and must be frequently turned during the drying process which lasts several days; they are then carried to the homes to be stored for winter use

Photo, Charles Reid

whether there is any humour in the Scots. He often cannot decide whether they are being intentionally funny or merely happen to throw perfectly serious remarks into racy, epigrammatic form.

Warm Hearts Under Cold Exteriors

It is this mixture of sense and simplicity, thrown into forms of words which are succinct and vigorous, that sometimes makes Scottish people appear wittier than they are, and sometimes makes others think them insensitive. No one who knows them well can be unaware of the strength of their affections, yet they have a matter-of-fact way of discussing death, for instance, which is embarrassing to sentimentalists. Even the dying join in discussions as to the order of their funerals, as did the man who begged his friends to consume the whisky provided for the occasion on the way to the cemetery. "For, ye ken," he said, "I shall no be wi' ye when ye come back."

Affectionate, though not demonstrative, in their family relations, the Scots are warm-hearted friends also, when once they have decided to open their homes and give their confidence. At first they are not inclined to "dull their palms with entertainment of each new-hatch'd, unfledged comrade." Many who visit their country complain that they are difficult to get on with: their sharp, staccato utterance is disconcerting; the smile that does not often get further than the eyes may pass unnoticed, they may cause discomfort, even possibly pain, without in the least intending it. But all who have lived among them or made friends with them outside their own country have the same story to tell of warm friendship, of real kindness, of generous hospitality.

Secret of the Scot's Success

Their reputation for hard dealing in business has been vastly exaggerated. They do not really drive harder bargains than other good business men, but their keen looks and short speech make those who trade with them feel that they are exceptionally eager for profit. But if the successes of Scotsmen in commerce were to be inquired into, they would be found to be the result in far greater degree of attention to detail, of industry and thoroughness, of method, than of any excess of acquisitiveness or any special gift for getting the better of competitors.

These useful qualities are in the long run of greater value than the natural aptitude for business which is found among Jews, or the cunning which makes the Greek the most successful small trader in the world. The world makes fun of Scotsmen for their commercial prosperity, for their supposed parsimony, for their propensity to save money out of the smallest incomes. But the fun is almost always good-natured: respect for their character is very seldom absent.

Pioneers and Empire Builders

Everyone knows that they owe their progress to hard work, that the only advantage they take over others is to spend less upon their pleasures, and to show more enterprise and to study more closely the conditions of their trade. In all countries which are being opened to commerce they are foremost in building up connexions, nor are they less valuable as colonists in lands that are being brought under cultivation.

Scottish emigrants helped to make the United States, and have played the largest part in making the Dominion of Canada. The Canadian accent is more Scottish than anything else; Scottish names predominate everywhere: Scottish clubs exist in all the cities of Canada, where bowls in the summer and curling in the winter are national sports, and Presbyterianism is the strongest of the forms of religion.

Yet while Scots carry with them overseas their faith and their enthusiasms and their pastimes, they do not include in their mental baggage a contempt for the people of the territory in which they settle, nor have they the

HAWKING CALLER HERRING IN THE STREETS OF CROMARTY

When the boats come in to the quayside the women fill their baskets with caller herring which they then hawk round the district They have no distinctive dress, but wear short skirts kilted to the waist, and generally go bareheaded The baskets are strapped across the chest, and the sturdy fishwives of Cromarty carry the heavy weight for long distances without any sign of fatigue

Photo, H. S Talbot

UNTIRING INDUSTRY IN THE COBBLED STREET OF CROMARTY'S ANCIENT FISHING QUARTER

Thatched cottages flanking a broad, cobbled pavement make up the ancient fishing quarter of Cromarty The street leads down to the firth, with its wooded head lands known as the sutors, or cobblers, of Cromarty from an old tradition which associates the shoemaking industry with the town Fish hang drying on the whitewashed walls on either side of the doors, outside which the fishermen's wives sit beside their creels or baskets of bait, or fish just brought ashore, ever busy mending nets, preparing bait, or packing herrings into barrels for market

Photo, H S Talbot

habit of continually comparing conditions in their new country with those which they left behind them in the old. It is not many years since visitors to Canada who could lay claim to Scottish ancestry found it wise to do so at once.

There was a prejudice against the Englishman, due to his supercilious assumption that anything which was not done in the English fashion must be done wrong. The Scots accepted the ways of the country, they went about their work quietly and competently, they won both respect and liking. As colonists it would be impossible to find their superiors—if only they would forswear their devotion to whisky.

Here we come to the chief defect in the Scottish character, a defect which they are ready to admit themselves, and which has been deplored by their most famous writers. Drunkenness is said to be less common in the country at large than it used to be, but the scenes that offend the eye and the ear, not to speak of the nose, in Glasgow, for example, on Saturday nights, make one doubt whether this vice can ever have been more distressingly practised than it is to-day.

From Scotland came whisky, the spirit which has made its way all over the world, and which is largely responsible for the evils of intemperance in the twentieth century. Whisky was brought into general use during the eighteenth century. It had been distilled from much earlier times in the Highlands and in monasteries; it was then, no doubt, what we should call a liqueur, like Benedictine and Chartreuse, also manufactured by monks. Gradually it became the national alcoholic drink of Scotland, displacing the beer which had up to then been drunk by the masses, and the claret and brandy of the more luxurious.

CROMARTY WOMEN PREPARING MUSSELS AS TEMPTING BAIT

Both net and line fishing are carried on at Cromarty, and baiting the lines is chiefly done by the women. Besides lobworms, mussels are largely used for bait all round the Scottish coast. They are gathered by the women and children, and opened with a short knife. The women look over the hooks, to see that they are securely fastened to the lines, and then bait them

Photo, H. S. Talbot

Made from the finest grain and mellowed by age, whisky is as harmless a spirit as any, and particularly suited to a damp, cold climate on account of its anti-rheumatic properties. But whisky can be made out of almost any kind of grain, and even from potatoes if grains are not procurable; and drunk in an untamed state it has the most injurious effects.

Deterioration of Scotch Whisky

The demand for it which arose during the later years of the nineteenth century, not only in Great Britain, but in British colonies and in the United States, lowered the standard of the materials used in its manufacture, and also caused a great deal of it to be put on the market in an immature condition, fiery and raw. It is the evil results of whisky-drinking that have stirred up so powerful a movement towards the prohibition of alcohol.

Up to the time of Burns the consumption of usquebaugh, as it was originally called (the "baugh" was dropped and the "usque" became "whisky"), had been mainly a habit of the Highlanders. Burns made it almost a national virtue among all Scots. He wrote the best drinking songs that exist in any literature, and he had hosts of imitators. His laudation of liquor was taken literally as an encouragement to intoxication, and in all ranks it became customary to drink for conviviality and to drink as much as possible at a time. It was deemed manly to be able to consume more whisky than other people.

Heavy Drinking in Scotland

Not even ministers were censured for getting drunk. They could not, therefore, be hard upon others who fell into the same temptation. It was usual to give everyone who came into a house a "dram," and poor was the reputation of the owner if the glass was not filled and the liquor heady. At parties men would challenge one another to drink and see who could keep it up the longest.

Unbelievable as the scenes were that disgraced even parties where women were present, they are established by the entire literature of the period as having happened and been considered nothing out of the way. A change came, and the offensive habit of intoxication grew rarer. But an evil tradition had been created, and it could not be eradicated all at once. Indeed, it has not been eradicated even yet. There is far more steady drinking, for the sake of drinking, in Scotland than there is in England or Ireland. Men in high positions may still be found who sit and drink whisky the whole evening.

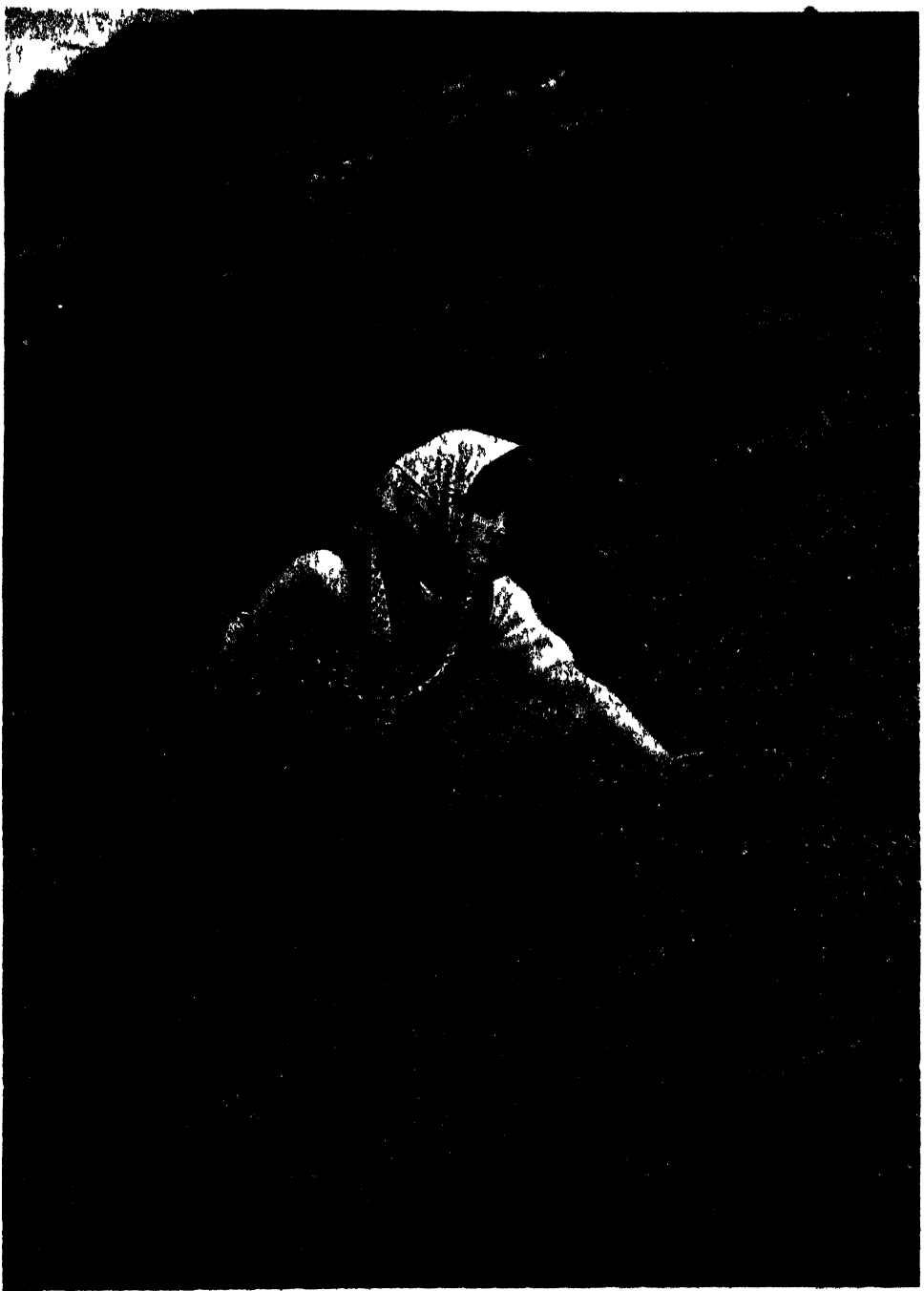
Sordid Conditions in Glasgow

As for the manual working class in the towns, the drinking among them, principally the result of their wretched conditions of existence, is a national disaster. No one who visits Glasgow on a wet day can be surprised that the inhabitants of its mean streets and tenements should fly to drink as a refuge from their grimy and repellent surroundings. With a situation which would have made possible the building of a city as delightful as any in the British Isles, Glasgow was made by the rapid and uncontrolled development of its industries a shocking example of everything that a city should not be.

No city prides itself more upon its municipal enterprise; it set an example in municipal ownership, and its ventures have all turned out well. There are a great many churches, libraries, societies for the spread of culture; there are picture galleries, theatres, concert halls; yet by all the agencies for making life more agreeable and more sensible the mass of the Glasgow population are untouched.

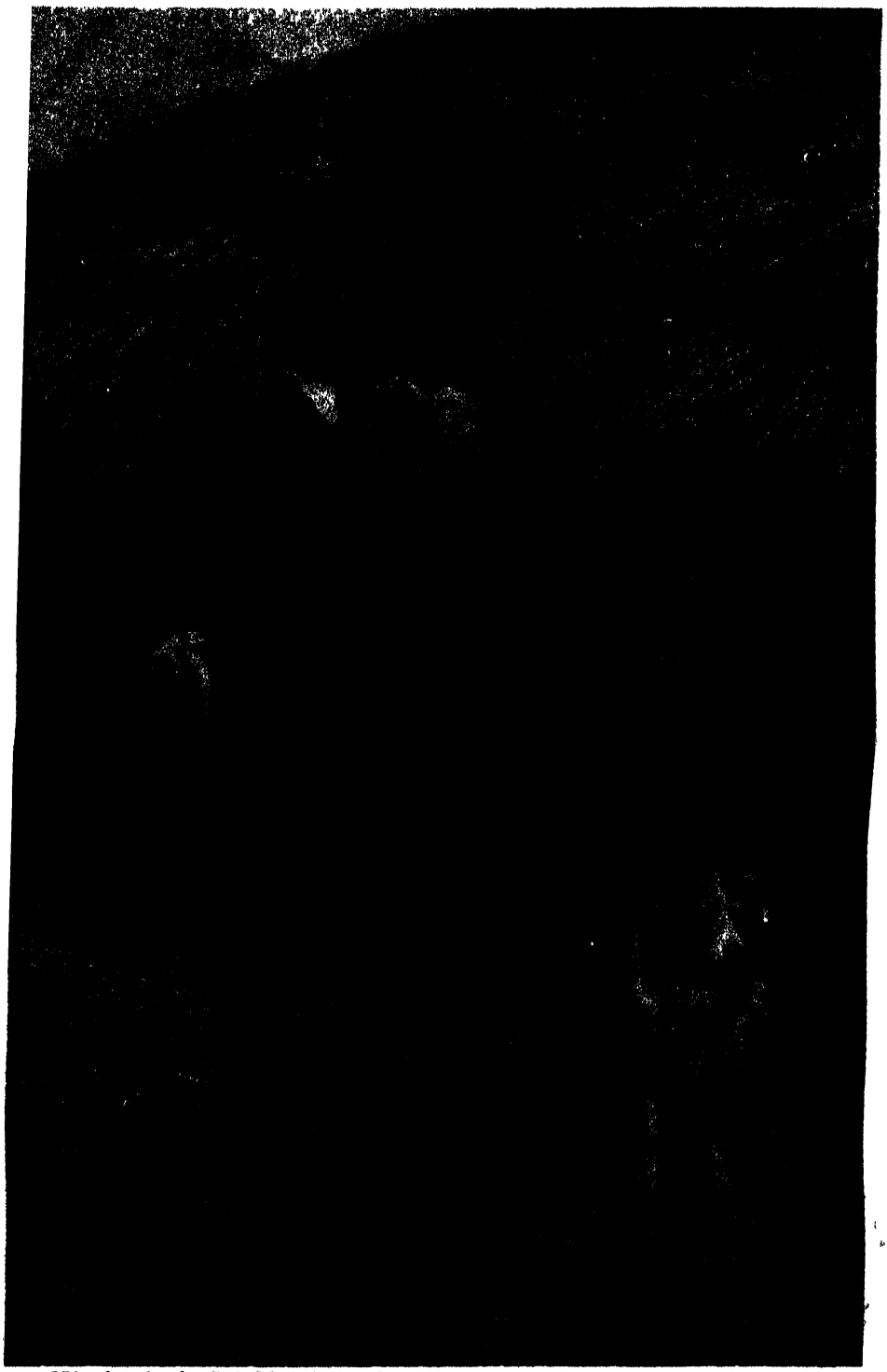
It was in the Highlands that the drinking of whisky began, and there it was an indulgence more often abused than in the other parts of the country. Among the Highlanders, too, there was the sternest sectarian intolerance. That was due to the Celtic fervour of the

SCOTS AT HOME
In Highlands and Islands



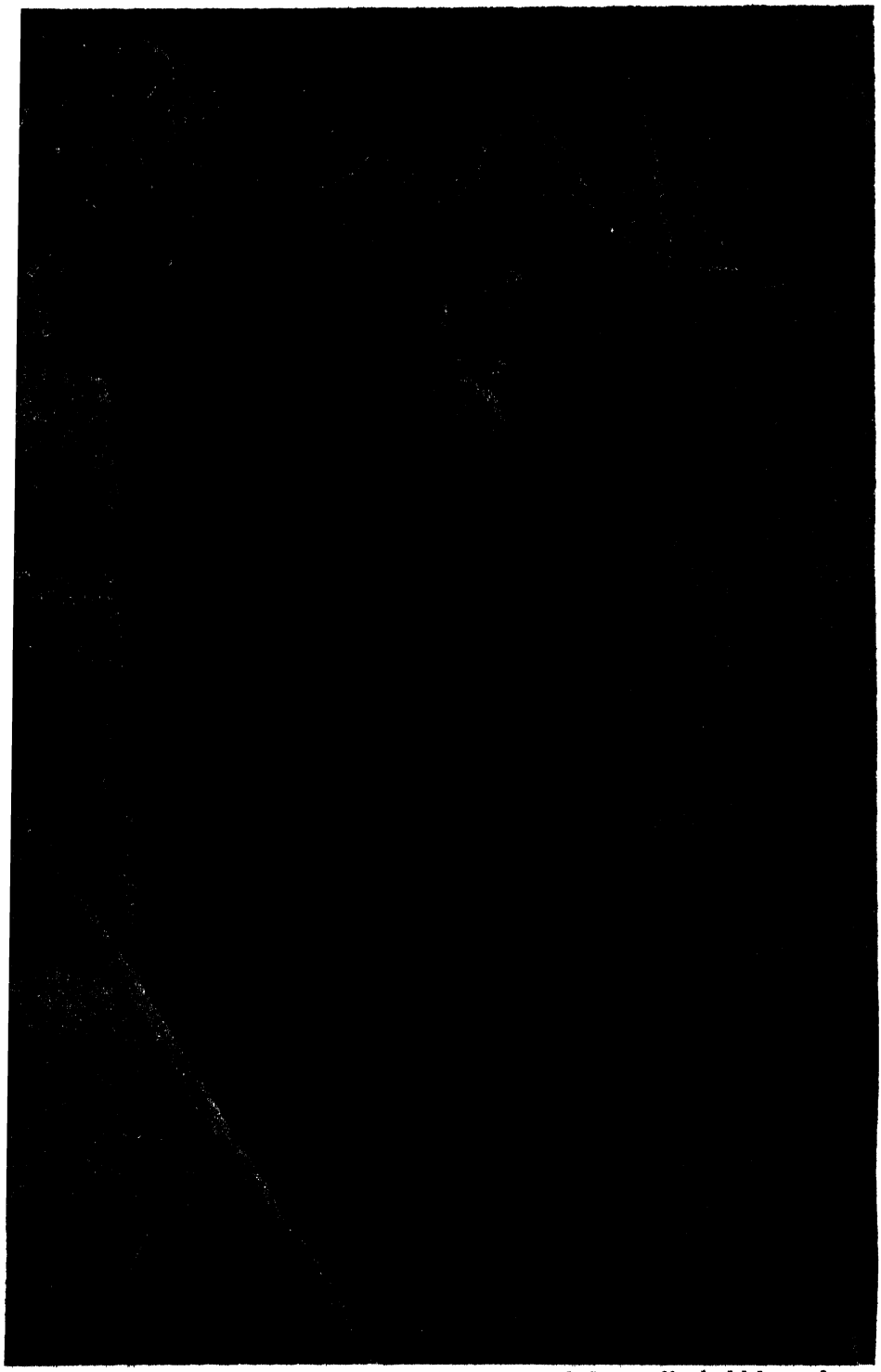
Lovely and fragrant, the heather of Scotland is useful, too, providing fuel, thatch, and luxurious beds for many a Highland shieling

Photo, Horace W. Nicholls



His dog is the Highland shepherd's inseparable companion, knowing every sheep in the flock, and as gentle as his master with the lambs

Photo, W. Reid



With the sound of the sea ever in his ears and the spell of old legends in his soul, the Skye crofter deems his Isle of Mist paradise enow

Photo, F. Hardie

When the salmon begin to leave the sea to spawn in the upper waters of the rivers, the fishermen along many an estuary are ready with boat and net to take their toll of the silver hordes

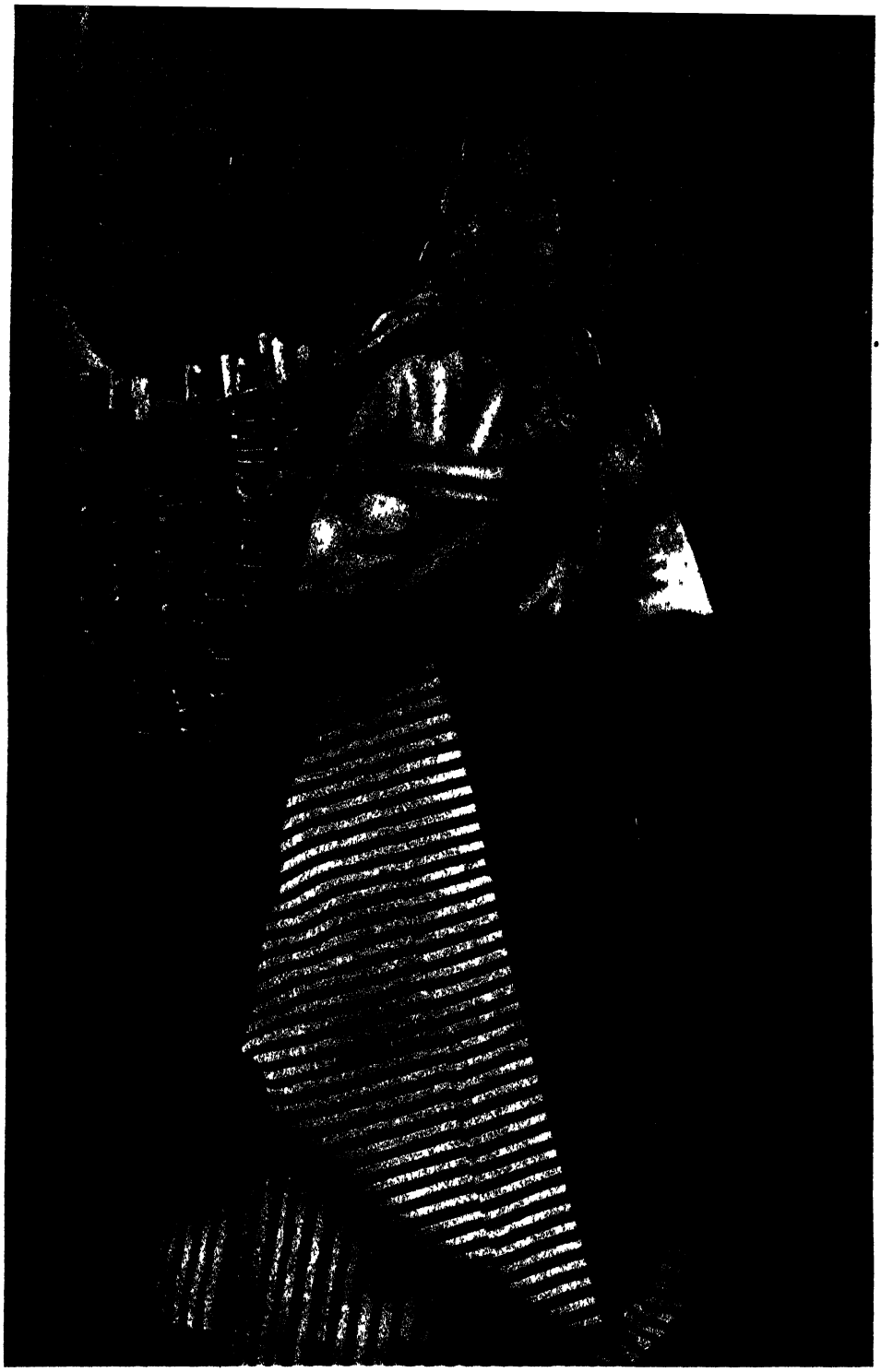
Photo, G. M. Tyrrell

Leaving one end of the seine in the hands of mates at their starting-point, boatmen pay out the rest in a great semicircle, when the net, filled with struggling fish, is hauled ashore from both ends

Photo, G. M. Tyrrell

Seated outside her creeper-clad cottage the placid Shetlander cards and spins the soft, warm wool for which her remote island is renowned

Photo, Charles Reid



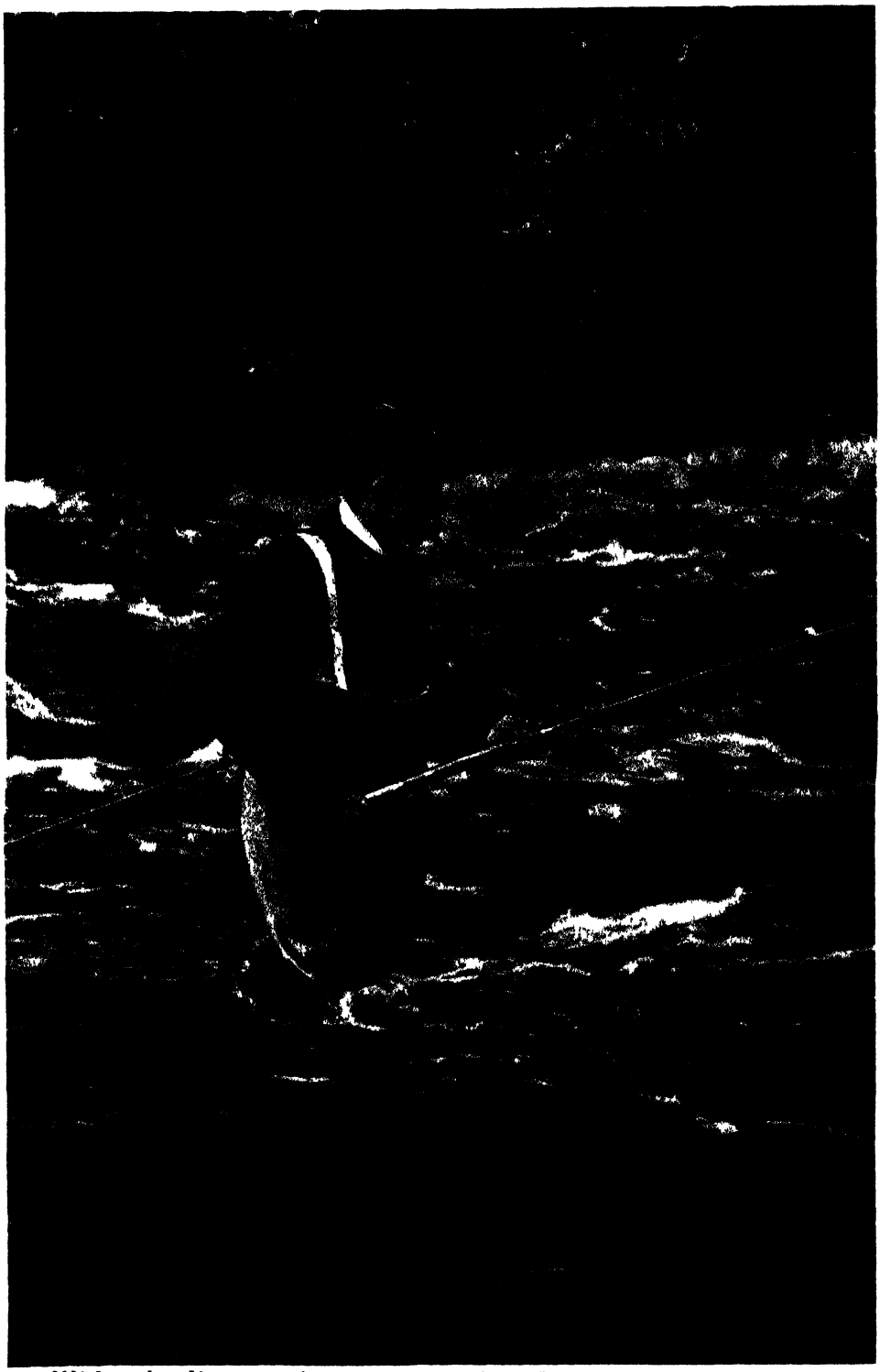
With her striped skirt always upturned, dark cloak, and great basket strapped on her broad back, the Newhaven fishwife is a striking figure

Photo, Francis Caird Inglis

Cromarty folk depend mainly on the fishing for their living, and in the season the good wife lends a hand in baiting her husband's lines

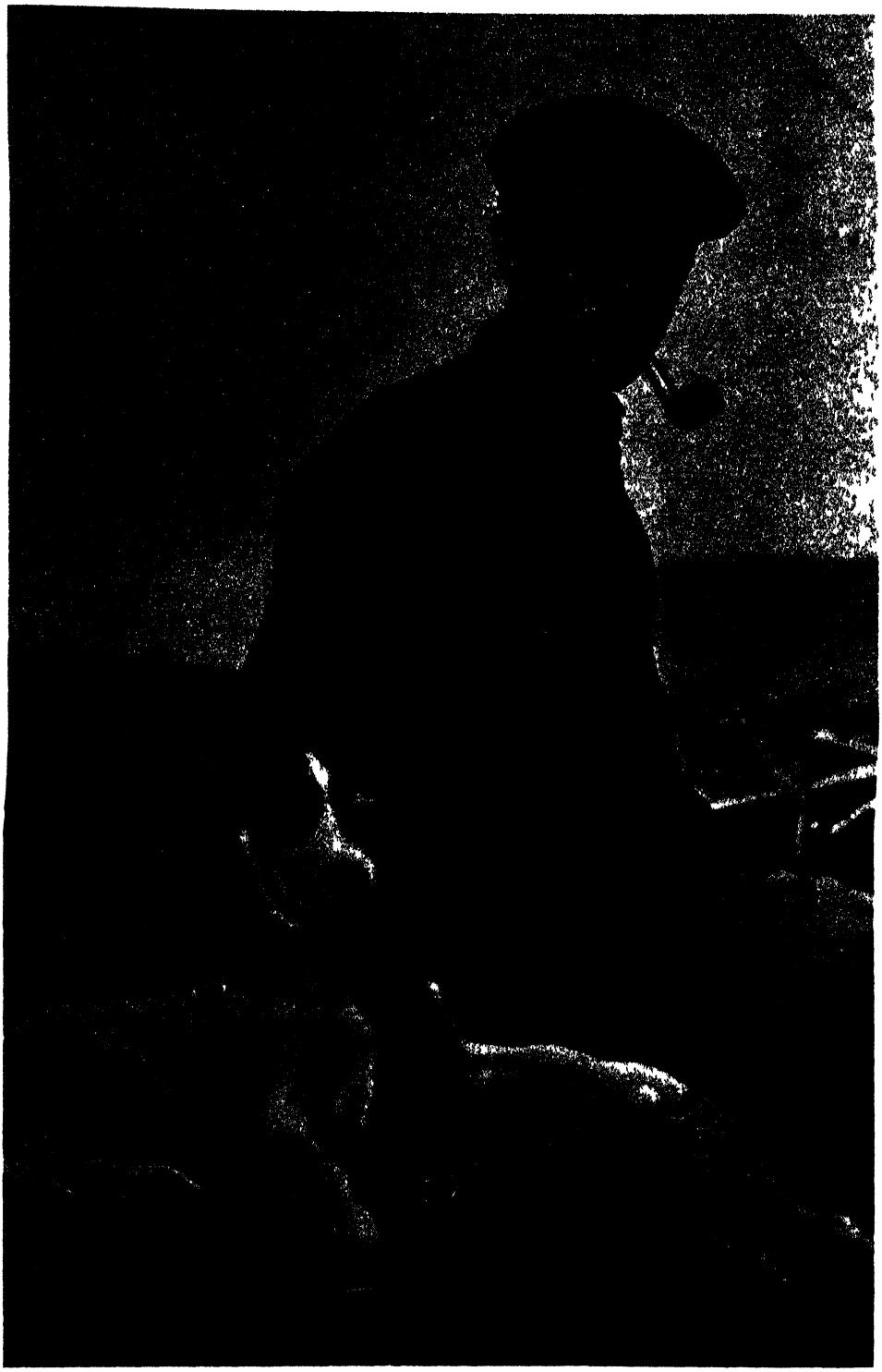
Photo, H. S Talbot

There is a riot of colour at Highland games, where a multitude of kilts with their subtle variations in tartan swing to the wearers' gait



With a landing-net slung conveniently behind him, he is fishing a rapid on the swift Spey, one of Scotland's most prolific salmon rivers

Photo, Horace W. Nicholls



Life lacks amenities in the deep-sea fisheries, and a terrier adds much pleasure to it, whatever his actual utility as the drifter's mascot

Photo, G M. Tyrrell

Peaceful pastoral scenes like this near Strathyre must oft have met the eyes of Rob Roy in his wanderings about Loch Lubnaig and the Braes of Balquhidder when wooing Helen MacGregor at Laggan Farm

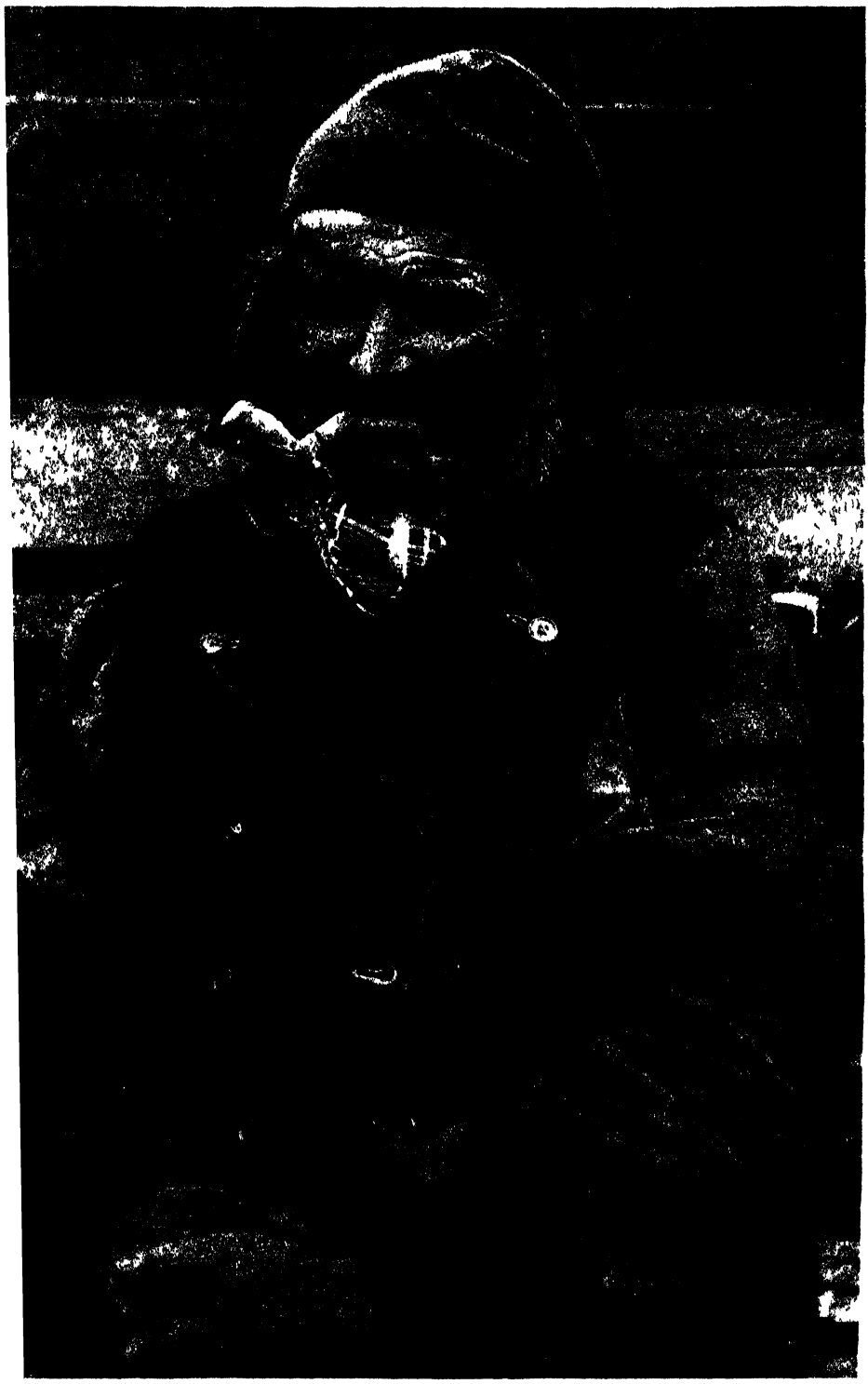
Photo, W Reid

Ever busily plying their knitting needles as they go, the Shetland women walk to Lerwick market beside their shaggy little ponies, laden with panniers packed with butter and eggs and bottles of milk

Photo, Charles Reid

Tending sheep on his native hills and delving in his own soil have given this Perthshire farmer a mellow wisdom hinted in his kind face

Photo, Charles Reid



Hard and weather-beaten as his native rocks, the old fisherman ever turns his still keen eyes to the sea that has given him his livelihood

Photo, F. Hardie

" Home is the place of peace." This faithful photograph of an actual interior at Loch Levenside in Argyllshire shows the restful stillness that falls at eventide on many a humble home in Scotland

Photo, J Nimmo

inhabitants of the wilder regions. The Lowland Scot has a stronger sense of proportion, as well as a stronger sense of humour than the Highlander. He has a longer period of acquaintance with civilized life behind him. Up to the middle of the eighteenth century the Highlands were outside that life.

When they sent out their forces to fight for "Bonnie Prince Charlie" and drove the frightened English with their terrified General Cope before them, the Highlanders were utterly ignorant of the value of the booty that fell into their hands. One sold a watch for next to nothing, because it had stopped, he thought it was "dead". Another exchanged a horse for a pistol. Their wild appearance, red hair worn long and unkempt, tartan kilts, bare legs, the cries which they raised as they rushed on the foe, the daring of their onslaught, aroused fierce hatred against them.

Scotland Becomes One Nation

It was only after the 1745 rebellion and the savage repression in the Highlands that feeling in the south of Scotland and in England was altered. Even then the Lowlands kept up the old detestation longer than the English—they had more reason. They had suffered from the cattle-raiding forays of the tribes which lived by plunder. They knew what it meant to live near those barbarous clans incessantly at war with one another and existing in a condition of indescribable squalor.

Not till the Highlands were conquered in the middle of the eighteenth century did the welding of the two Scottish nationalities into one really begin. From that time it went on rapidly, and for a long while it has been fairly complete. There are still Highland families and Lowland families, just as there are Yorkshire people and west-country or south-country people in England. But the race barrier has been obliterated between the Celts and the other folk in Scotland whose origin is obscure. With the fusion the peculiar customs which had marked off the Highlanders fell into disuse very quickly. The powers of the chieftain were taken from him; the opening up of the regions in which it had been considered (not without reason) dangerous to travel did away with tribal insulation; the feuds between the clans gradually softened down into mere social prejudice.

Glamour of Days that are Dead

So, in proportion as the tendency to idealize the Highlands grew in strength among the English, the habits idealized fell into decay. Everything that was Gaelic now found as much favour with the cultured as it had formerly been despised and loathed; it was honoured and envied as soon as it had passed into history or tradition. The Highlands were regarded as the last refuge of Romance. The family tie between the chieftain and the clansmen was extolled as far finer than the relation between landlord and tenant which had succeeded it. It was suggested that the Gaelic literature was not inferior to any in its epic compositions, and forgeries produced to bolster up this theory were accepted as genuine and highly praised.

Walter Scott and Robert Burns

The novels and poems of Sir Walter Scott did a great deal to increase the English admiration for the scenery of the Highlands and the character of the people. They also established a claim on his part to the gratitude and affection of his countrymen. He became one of the national traditions, and to this day it is unsafe to cast any doubt in the presence of a patriotic Scot upon the undying vigour of Sir Walter's fame. Something of this is due to the familiar and delightful personality of the novelist, made known to the world by his son-in-law Lockhart. Although he was a worshipper of kingship and aristocracy, although his ideas were almost feudal on such matters as the right of workmen to combine, yet the frank charm of the man who talked to

CURLING, SCOTLAND'S INDIVIDUAL WINTER GAME
Curling is controlled by the Royal Caledonian Curling Club. The players in turn stand on the crampit, or mat, and heave their granite stone by its handle, the object of each side being to get more stones nearer the tee than the other
Photo, Alexander Beattie

all he met as if they were brothers was irresistible. His career was as romantic as one of his own plots. The cloak of mystery in which he shrouded the authorship of the novels which everyone was discussing, his title, his lame leg, his popularity at the Edinburgh Bar, helped to make up a strange eventful history which stirs our imagination still to-day, while the pitiful financial difficulties of his later life, with the heroic resolve he made and kept to discharge all obligations, entitle him to as much respect for manly courage as he won for skill in the weaving of stories and the creation of character. The figures which move through the pages of his Scottish stories belong, of course, to the past, and as they are remarkable rather for their oddities than for their broadly human traits, they have not the freshness of the characters of Fielding, for instance, or of Defoe. But in Scottish hearts they are enshrined with unswerving devotion, scarcely less firmly than the poems of Robert Burns.

That Burns must be placed among the most famous of British poets is admitted by all. That he crystallised many aspects of Scottish life into exquisite and touching verse-pictures and thus made himself pre-eminently the national poet is also matter of common agreement. Yet these admissions come far short of the claims that are advanced when Scotsmen talk of Burns and gather to do him honour with much outpouring of whisky, as well as perfervid eloquence of speech. Without respect of class or education, Highland or Lowland origin, all Scots unite in this adoration. It is common in Scotland to hear poems recited off-hand with not less fluency than quotations are made from the Bible. No English poet has the same hold on the English nation as Burns has on the Scots.

Other literary idols of less sacredness are Thomas Carlyle and Robert Louis Stevenson. Neither of them lived in Scotland, they were not Scottish worthies in the same perfect sense that Scott and Burns were. Yet there was a great deal in Carlyle's writings which made special appeal to his countrymen, and the Highland novels of Stevenson

can only be appreciated to the full by Scottish readers That delicious remark of Alan Brocks, for example "Man, am I no' a bonny fechter?"—only those who know what the Highland character was and sometimes still is in spite of the mixture of blood, can understand how exactly it hits off a foible of the Gael

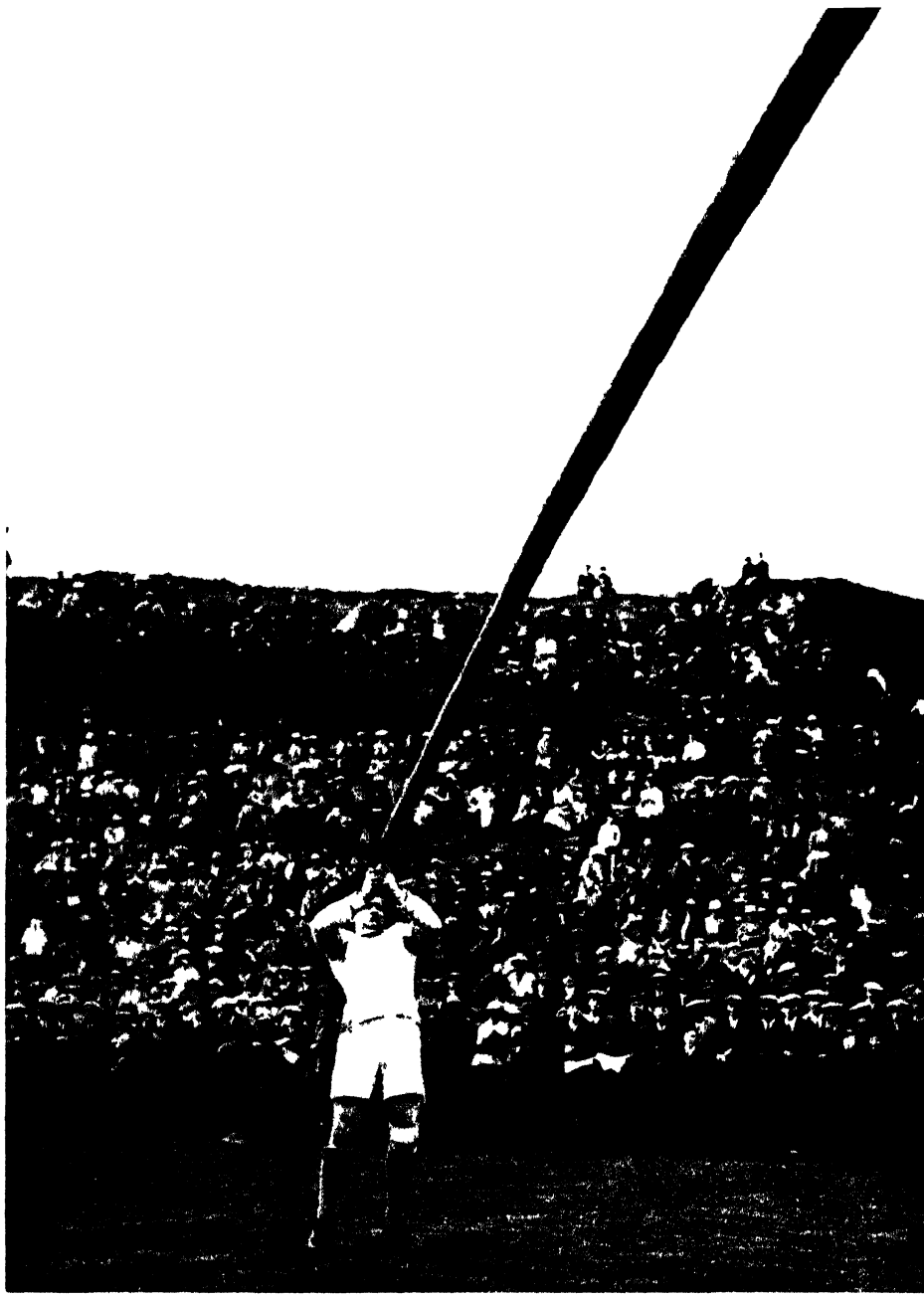
Other poets who were contemporaries of Burns and who followed after him are still read and enjoyed but the shifting of the literary centre from Edinburgh to London has left Scotland with no literature of her own, apart from that of the British peoples generally When the Kailyard School of novelists captured the English libraries, Scotland was expected to be proud of Barrie and Crockett and Ian Maclaren (the Rev John Watson), but they never won so much in favour there as in England and America. Much as Scotland gained by the union with her neighbour, she lost by this fusion of interests a good part of her national individuality It was not possible, when by far the greater number of her most able and distinguished men found it profitable to emigrate to London, that she should keep up the rich and vivid local life, the strongly marked idiosyncracies, which had distinguished Scottish society throughout all its layers while the nation was independent

Edinburgh remains a city of penetrating charm, that is ensured to it by its situation it remains also a home of culture in a more marked sense probably than any other city in the British Isles outside London In Edinburgh it is still possible to find men who combine shopkeeping with the keenest interest in all that is being

SWEEPING THE POWDERED ICE FROM THE PATH OF A "LAZY" STONE

Curling rinks are from thirty two to forty two yards long, and in this photograph the end from which the stones have come is out of the picture to the right When one of either side has played, and the stone shows signs of losing way before the tee, or mark, is reached, his fellows "soop," or sweep, away the powdered ice produced by the passage of preceding stones

Photo, Alexander Beattie



TOSSING THE CABER AT THE ARGYLLSHIRE GATHERING AT OBAN

The caber, usually the lower trunk of a larch-tree, some twenty feet in length, is lifted in perpendicular position, thin end downwards, until the competitor has it balanced upon his hands about waist high Then he hurls it forwards into the air, a successful toss turning it completely and bringing it down on its thick end, to fall pointing in a direct line away from the tosser

GAMES AT THE ANNUAL ABOYNE HIGHLAND GATHERING

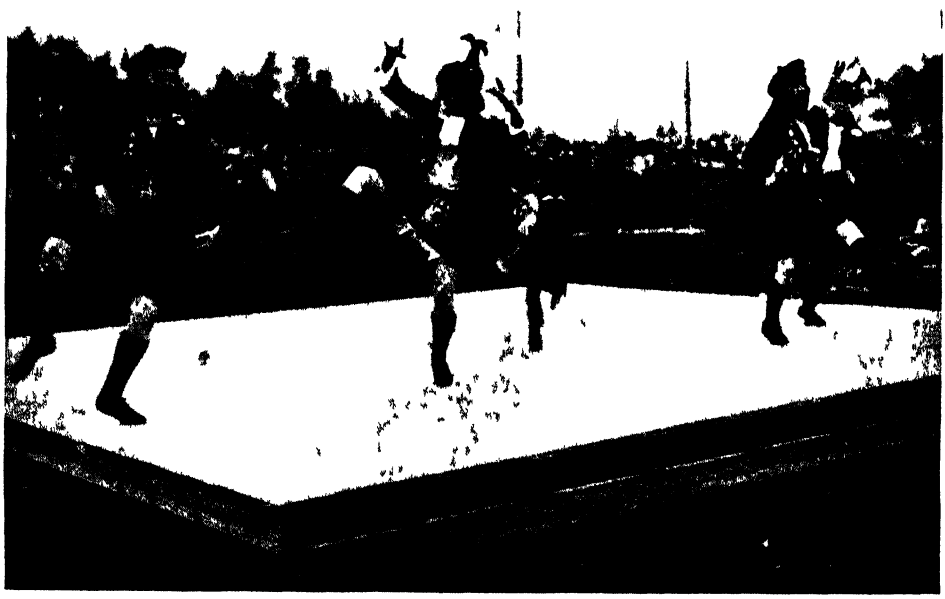
A putting-the-weight contest is included in the programme of most athletic meetings. The competitor stands within a limited space to cast the shot, or iron ball, and the shot must be " put " by a fair push from the shoulder and not thrown. The photograph illustrates a Highland champion putting the 22-lb. weight at the Aberdeenshire gathering, which event he won with a put of thirty-five feet

thought and done in the world, who are as well read, and as well fitted for intellectual pursuits as any professional man could be There is a pleasant club life, there is an agreeable society, largely composed of advocates, there is an atmosphere of cultivated intelligence

The presence of the law courts has a fortunate effect in preserving for Edinburgh something of the character of a capital There is the Royal Scottish Academy of Painters, too with its exhibitions, which keeps a certain number of painters in the country, though the most prominent of them usually make for London, as did the leaders of the Glasgow School who helped to make history in art towards the end of last century

In the Old Town the houses which once formed the fashionable quarter are now divided into dwellings for the humble It was from Scotland that the "flat" system came which grew into such speedy favour in London as soon as the age of large families came to an end The blocks of self-contained apartments are known as "lands", they are solidly built, and the rooms are of good size But flats have not become fashionable in Edinburgh as they have in London The wealthy live in houses, and fine, big, substantial houses they are At one end of the town they stand in gardens, hidden from the road by high walls, at the other end they are built in terraces, impressive by reason of their square stone fronts, important, though not beautiful

The beauty of Edinburgh lies, indeed in its natural advantages rather than in any work of man The Castle Hill is magnificent, Arthur's Seat lies green and tempting in the background around are other hills—some bare some, like



IN THE LAND OF BAGPIPES, FLINGS, AND TARTANS

For generations it has been customary for the clansmen to gather annually at the ancient village of Braemar there to take part in or to witness many scenes dear to the Scotsman's heart Highland sports take place in various parts of the field, braw young Scots test their strength and skill, and Hielan' lassies, in gay tartans, spangled with jingling medals, dance the Highland fling

HIGH DAY IN THE ABOYNE HIGHLANDS: KILTIES IN A SWORD DANCE
Highland sports are held in various parts of Scotland each year during the months of August and September, and never fail to attract a large number of spectators. Not the least favourite event is the dancing of the sword-dance and Highland fling, in which young, six-foot Scotsmen—bare-kneed, muscular men, nimble-footed as girls, take part, to the wild tunes of the pipes

Corstorphine, tree-covered. No maltreatment could quite spoil so fair a site. Not that maltreatment can fairly be alleged, though it would certainly have been possible to make better use of the opportunities offered.

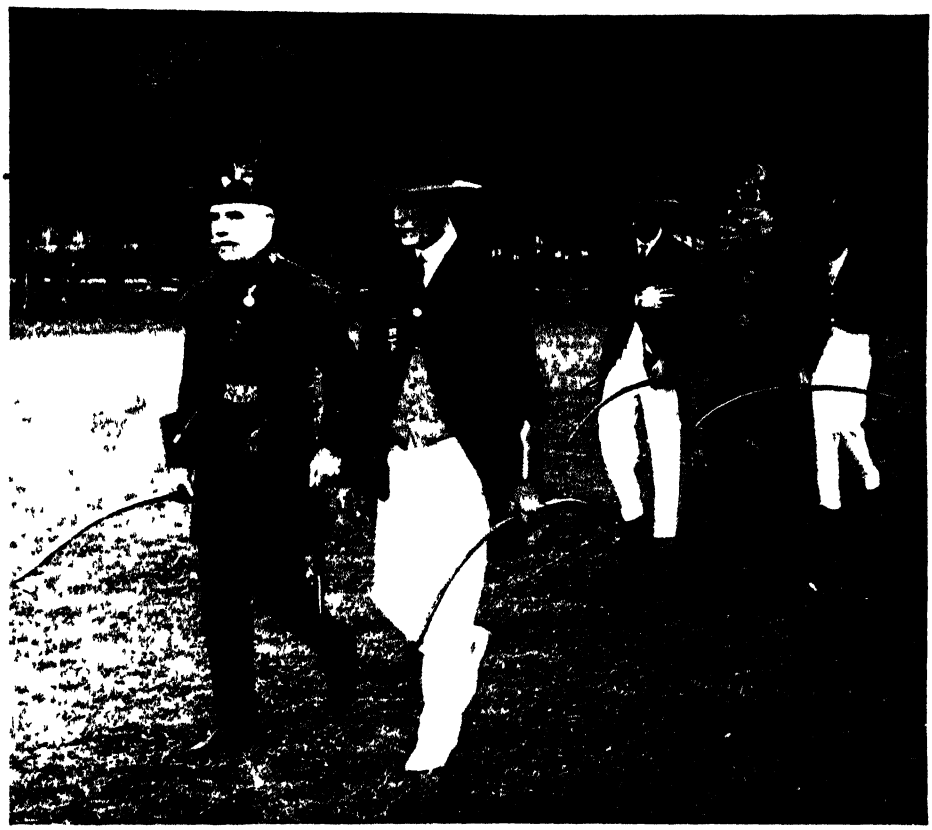
When the Old Town was all of Edinburgh that existed, the place must have been vastly more picturesque than it is to-day. There was room then for no more than a small town, hemmed in by rocks and by a loch, which was dried up when extension became necessary, and by a ravine across which a bridge (the North Bridge) was made. It was the squeezing of the houses together which caused them to be built high and led to the adoption of the flat system, just as the impossibility of extending New York laterally obliged the architects to plan the sky-scrapers. Then came the New Town, built well but without variety, and disfigured by monuments in the classical style which were erected in order that the city might live up to its title, "the modern Athens." Very proud of their town the citizens of Edinburgh have always been and are still.

All round Edinburgh lie the Lothians, East, West and Mid, splendid farming country, not by nature, but by force of man's perseverance and industry. No better cultivated fields exist in any part of the kingdom, no trimmer fences and walls, no more comfortable farm-houses. Yet these counties were for the most part barren moors and bogs until the pertinacious Lowlander resolved to drag a living out of the scanty soil. So scanty was it that the ploughing could not be done by steam, the

THE HIGHLANDERS' GREAT DAY MARCH PAST OF THE CLANS AT THE FAMOUS BRAEMAR GATHERING

The Braemar gathering which takes place in the early autumn is undoubtedly the most picturesque of all the Highland meetings Immensely popular, it attracts thousands of people from all parts of the north and includes events peculiar to the Highlands such as tossing the caber and dancing Highland flings The most important feature of the gathering, however is the march past of the clansmen in full Highland costume with ancient pike, axe, and claymore, all complete They march—young lads and veterans sturdy kilted men with keen healthy faces—to the sound of pipes and drums It is the "big thrill" of the day

share went too far down; such little earth as could be made productive by man's labour had to be ploughed with horses in order not to disturb and bring to the surface the bad stuff below.



FRIENDLY RIVALRY BETWEEN THE DESCENDANTS OF ANCIENT FOES

Scottish archers, predecessors of the Royal Company of Archers, shared in the victory of Bannockburn when Woodmen of Arden were among the routed English army. Now, old feuds forgotten, the Royal Company and the Woodmen meet annually in friendly rivalry, and here the Warwickshire men are seen walking amicably with their Scottish hosts to the shoot in the Meadows at Edinburgh

What was it that determined the change in the Scottish character which led to the undertaking of such enterprises and turned a miserably poor land, where the peasants only just managed to keep alive, into a thriving prospect of wheat and oat and potato fields, which draw people from all over the world to study the methods of Scottish farming?

It is hard to say. The union with England had something to do with it. The dying down of the fierceness of religious intolerance released a large amount of energy which had been most unprofitably employed. The devotion of the Scottish schoolmasters to their task trained their scholars to face the facts of life and apply themselves vigorously to glorifying God by improving their positions, or at any rate winning an independence by steady toil. Yet these reasons do not altogether explain the transformation.

What turned the Scottish miners, who less than a century and a half ago were in a state scarcely distinguishable from slavery, into the well-educated, keenly intelligent, politically shrewd class which they form to-day? What in the same period acted as the spur to energise a rural population that lived very poorly in hovels and went very ill-clad and

LOCATING THE HERD AT THE START OF A DAY'S DEER-STALKING

Along the line where grey sky meets the ridge of dark fell the stalker moves his telescope Already he has spent some hours, perhaps, in getting to the stalking-ground, and then, crouched in the wiry grass of some steep upland, he spies for the tell-tale silhouette of antlers against the skyline. A walking-stick serves to steady his long glass

Photo, Alexander Beattie

lived on porridge, and to give them the prosperity and their land the smiling aspect that we see now?

The Scottish peasant is the most intellectual to be found anywhere. The French small farmer may be quick-witted, and so makes a better impression on short acquaintance; but he has not the same depth of intelligence as the Scot. In cottages one comes across men who read Greek, men whose knowledge of history seems wide and thorough, men who will quote poetry with apt application.

This is not so common as it used to be. It is not so easy for a peasant boy to get to the university as it once was, even though Mr. Andrew Carnegie, upon the persuasion of Lord Shaw of Dunfermline—who, like himself, began life as a poor boy—endowed the Scottish universities with a fund to be used for the reduction of students' fees.

And of those who do go through their courses and take their degrees not many now are content to go back to the land. They consider themselves, perhaps rightly, fit for some more intellectual occupation, though, like Carlyle, they would in most cases lead happier lives if they led them in the open air and kept themselves in health by activity of body.

Many are drawn from the farms to business by the example of those who have made fortunes. Ambition comes

into play and tells them they were not meant to waste their existence at the plough-tail. There are openings all over the world for the capable Scot, and few there be who do not find them, unless they give way to the national failing and fall victims to whisky.

So the Scottish countryside becomes year by year less populous. Even the farm labourers who have no idea of exchanging their vocation for another emigrate to Canada in large numbers, and speedily find that the opportunities in the Dominion are vastly superior to those offered them in their native country. Sentimental about their country as they are, Scotsmen are still more devoted to getting on in the world.

Carnegie was in many ways typical of his countrymen. He laid the basis of his prosperity by working hard and keeping a look-out for any chance to improve himself. He was hard in his business methods; he would not allow anything to stand in the way of his "deals" and manipulations. Yet he could be sympathetic to individuals, he was by no means an "inhuman" employer, he remembered he had been a poor boy, and he never sank to the ostentation and vulgar pride of wealth which have been failings of many self-made men in America. And when he had become enormously rich, he resolved to do what good he could with his money while he was alive instead of leaving it to be dissipated by others after his death—an eminently Scottish conclusion.

Yet, while Carnegie gave away vast sums without hesitation, he remained mean in many small matters. That

WITHIN GUN-SHOT OF THE NERVOUS QUARRY AFTER A LONG CLIMB

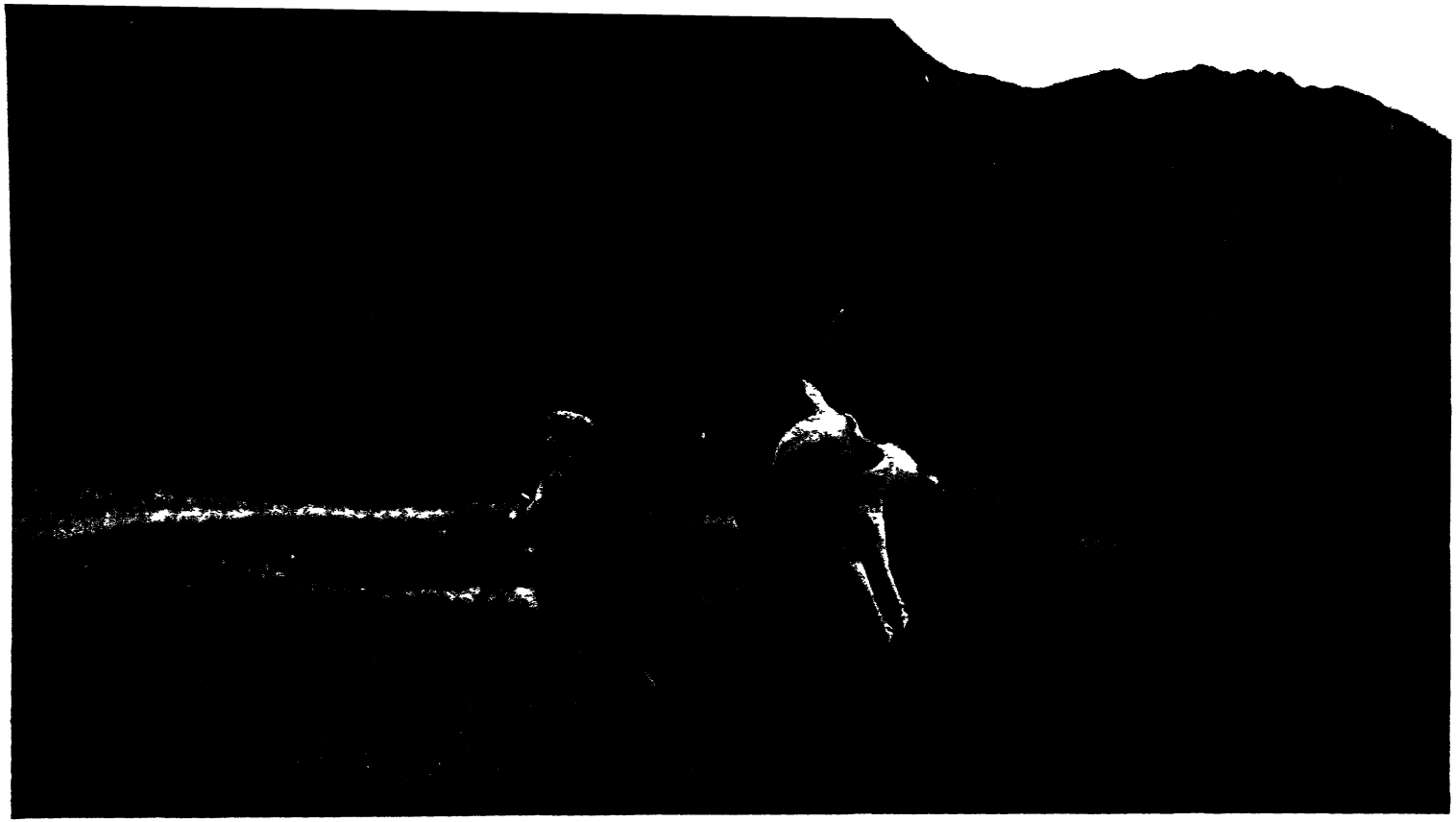
Deer are among the most nervous of all game, and an infinity of caution and patience must be at the stalker's command. As deer must always be approached up wind—that is to say, the wind blowing from game to hunter, for once the herd has scented man there will be little chance of a shot during the same day—a wide circuit is often necessary

Photo, Alexander Beattie

FALLEN DEER DRAGGED TO A RIDGE-PATH TO AWAIT THE PONY

When a deer has been shot it still remains to get the prospective venison to a spot where the shooting-pony can be brought to carry it home. In dragging the deer over rough ground a walking-stick is fastened to the antlers This kind of country, though often devoid of trees, is called a deer forest. A mountain torrent can be seen here making its way down the glen

Photo Alexander Beattie



SHOOTING-PONY BOUND FOR HOME WITH A FINE SIXTEEN-STONE STAG

For the convenience of the sportsmen concerned there is often some kind of shooting-box, at a point in the deer forest to which the kill may be taken and where such refreshment as the mountain air makes necessary may be had, for deer-stalking gives fine appetites. The game of the Scottish deer forests is the red deer, a full-grown stag standing about four feet high at the withers and weighing as much as eighteen stone, and the antlers may attain a spread of about three feet

Photo, Alexander Beattie

SNOW LINGERS ROUND THE CHILLY EDGE OF LOCH COIRE-AN-LOCHAN, THE HIGHEST LOCH IN BRITAIN

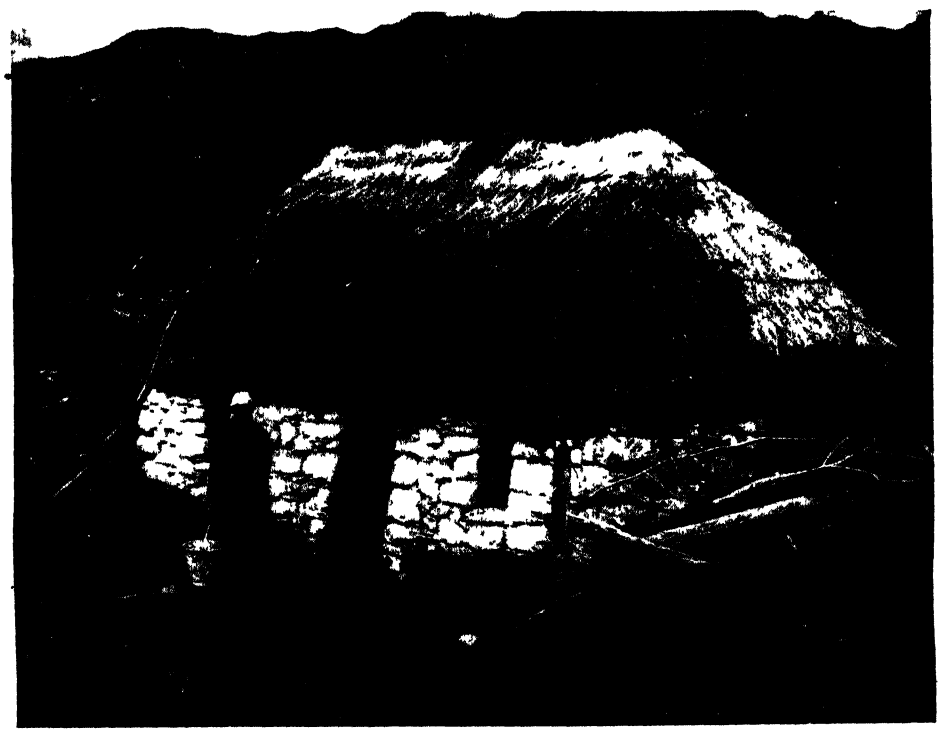
Set in a large corrie of the same name on the north face of the mountain of Braeriach in the Cairngorm Mountains, Loch Coire-an-Lochan has the distinction of being the highest loch in Britain, set 3,250 above sea-level. Braeriach itself, with an altitude of 4,248 feet, is the third highest mountain in Britain, and has three summit cairns over 4,000 feet in altitude. On this plateau the River Dee, which flows through Aberdeenshire, has one of its sources, known as the Wells of Dee, the other source being on Ben Macdhui

Photo, Alexander Beattie

is often the way with Scotsmen who have risen from small beginnings. The habit of looking after the pennies is so ingrained in their natures that they cannot get rid of it even when they are millionaires.

That is not evidence of essential meanness. The Scots are not mean in the sense of being miserly or ungenerous. Their freedom from this detestable fault allows them to hear chaff about it levelled at their nation with equanimity. They even make fun of the failing among themselves, which misers could never do. There is a capital story of one farmer who spoke to another of a neighbour's "greyhound." The other replied: "Greyhound? Yon's no' a greyhound. Yon's a collie." "Ay, maybe it wus," said the first, "but ony dog might become a greyhound if it lived lang with a man as mean as that."

Scotsmen's carefulness about money arises from their desire to make the most of what they have earned with so much toil. They know the value of money and they do not like to be overcharged or made to pay unnecessary expenses. When they are enjoying themselves or relieving a fellow-creature's distress, they do not grudge the cost one whit.



AT HOUSEWORK IN HER LONE HIGHLAND SHIELING

Almost as unchanged as their rude dwellings are the lives of the shepherd folk in the wild Highlands. There is little company save in the evening when the family huddles round the glowing peat, for all the day is spent on bleak fells and mist swept glens with only the dissolving formations of ragged clouds, the alternation between sun and rain, or the snow that makes even greater the deep silence

Photo, Alexander Beattie

While that will be admitted to be the truth about the Scottish people in general by all who know them, yet there are mean Scots who lend colour to the legend so frequently told against the nation. And they carry their frugality so far as to raise a prejudice against the whole body of their countryfolk. Such a one was a certain Robin

CHAT BY THE WAY IN A PASTORAL REGION OF THE HIGHLANDS

Sheep rearing is an important industry in the Highlands and sturdy hill sheep, especially of the black faced varieties are bred in large numbers The limitations of the Highlands are vague but the name is usually applied to that part of Scotland lying north and west of a line drawn from Dumbarton on the west to Stonehaven on the east, including all the chief mountainous regions

Photo W Reid

Carrick, head of the Ship Bank in Glasgow, who lived in poor rooms over the bank and spent so little on his housekeeping as to become a byword He died worth a million pounds and left none of his money to Glasgow charities, or to any others Only once was he known to make any substantial gift This was when subscriptions were being solicited for the Royal Infirmary in that city Carrick at first declined to put his name down for more than two guineas When the list went round to one of the Ship Bank's customers, a generous and humoursome old manufacturer, he exclaimed at the smallness of Carrick's subscription He was told that the banker pleaded he could not afford to give more

"Is that so?" he said, "then I know what to do" And he wrote a cheque for his entire balance at the bank, many thousands, sending a messenger with it and with instructions to bring the money with him

Very soon old Carrick ran into the manufacturer's office greatly excited, and asked what the demand meant "Oh' answered the manufacturer, "I hear that you cannot afford to give more than two guineas to the infirmary, so I think you must be in a bad way and I have decided to do no more business with you'

Carrick had to give fifty guineas before the threat was withdrawn

It is really because Scotsmen are so emphatic in their language and so obstinate in their prejudices that they have been misjudged Their bark is much worse than their bite They were not, for instance, nearly so intolerant in religion as they got credit for being and as, indeed, they

SCOTLAND: THE MUSIC OF THE PIPES

In costume and calling the piper stands for racial traditions ever dear to the heart of the patriotic Scottish Highlander and ever stirred to new life by the music of his pipes

To face page 4512

Photo, Francis Caird Inglis

professed themselves to be. In Burns's charming picture of "The Cottar's Saturday Night" there is no harshness, nothing but good humour, affection and simple piety, free from anything approaching to fanaticism.

Even their Sundays, which have been already described and which pulpits. The relations between ministers and people were of the kindliest character.

What could be at once more tolerant of a failing or more truly Christian than the conduct of a minister who went home Sunday after Sunday without his handkerchief? Suspicion fell upon

CASTING A LURE FOR SALMON ON THE SWIFT-FLOWING SPEY

With a rod from fifteen to eighteen feet long, made of greenheart or split cane, the expert caster can throw his fly thirty yards and more. The gillie rows him within reach of the likely spots and has a practised eye for water In the bows is a grapnel, ready against a sudden landing. The Spey has some of Scotland's finest salmon fisheries

Photo, Alexander Beattie

produced upon strangers in the land the most gloomy impression, were not so painful as they seemed. The country services were cheerful enough. The congregations could sing lustily without the "kist o' pipes" (as the church organs were called when they made their appearance in Scotland). The ministers were more often than not competent preachers, and they mixed their theology with humour in many an old woman who sat usually on the pulpit steps, and next Sunday the minister's wife sewed his handkerchief to his pocket, letting just a corner peep out. Sure enough, as he ascended the pulpit steps he felt a tug at the handkerchief, but instead of turning upon the culprit with angry reproach or threatening her with the law, he just said in a tone of considerate triumph, "No' the day (not to-day),

SHEEP FARMER OF PEEBLES-SHIRE COUNTING HIS FLOCK

About three-fourths of the country of the Lowlands is hilly and more suitable for grazing than for cultivation On the southern hills, in particular from the Cheviots to the Pentlands, sheep farming is pursued on a large scale, Cheviots are the popular breed, intermixed occasionally with the northern black-faced strains, and supply the wool to feed the many mills scattered over the Tweed valley

Photo, Charles Reid

SHEPHERD AND FLOCK BRAVING THE WINTRY WINDS OF LANARKSHIRE

Though agriculture is the chief occupation of the inhabitants of the Lowlands, it is not always a successful undertaking. The farmer has much to contend with, especially where the climate is concerned, and is often led to develop certain other branches of farming which can better withstand the inclemency of the weather, and in many districts sheep-breeding is a more profitable occupation

Photo, Charles Reid

MOTOR-CARS SUCCEED HORSES IN RIDING THE BOROUGH BOUNDARIES AT BERWICK-ON-TWEED

To perpetuate the boundaries of their borough, in times past so often disturbed by the troops of Scottish and English in their Border bickerings, the people of Berwick instituted and still observe an annual custom of riding the bounds Formerly this was done on horseback, and took the form of a race Now performed in motor cars, the absence of horsemen takes away much of the attraction, but the good folk of Berwick still turn out in strength on the great day

QUEEN OF THE BELTANE FESTIVAL HOLDS HER YEARLY COURT AT PEEBLES

Surrounded by her guard of archers and yeomen, all of them children, whose age of growth is symbolical of the time of year, the chosen child-queen sits in state attended by pages and her maids-in-waiting. Beltane, a festival of great antiquity in Scotland, is the name given in that country to May-day. Peebles has revived the celebrations which, as can be seen, strongly recall, as far as many of the costumes are concerned, the old English May-day revels

WANDERING CHINA-MENDER CAMPED BY THE PINES OF ROTHIEMURCHUS
He wends his way through the land, making a trifle at each village where thrifty folk may prefer the sight of a riveted jug to the cost of buying a new one. His push-cart carries house and belongings, and, when evening overtakes him, shelter and fire are soon ready, and while the pungent wood-smoke drifts about him he finishes some job for a local cottager
Photo, Alexander Beattie

honest woman, no' the day." There were in truth more Scottish ministers of that type, and more congregations, too, than of the fierce fanatical type, which took everything seriously and rejoiced in the thought that only a few could be "saved." But the fanatics made so much fuss, and so many who were not genuinely given over to intolerance professed its hateful tenets in public in order not to be attacked as heretics, that the world believed all Scots to be of the same atrabilious temperament. Scotland, after all, is not alone in being a victim of such injustice. The wide world over it is the fanatical zealot who makes the most noise.

Whatever these people think or believe, they proclaim so resolutely that they get the reputation of being more unreasonable than they are. It was a Scottish traveller by a suburban railway who refused for twenty years to give up his ticket at the end of his journey. At last the company decided to take action in the matter and he was proceeded against. He declared that the tickets were his property; he had paid for them; the company had no right to ask him to give them up. The case went against him and his eccentricity cost him dear. Only a Scotsman would have been so obstinate over a trifle. When there is "a principle involved" they will go to any lengths. It is their logical cast of intellect and their training in theological subtlety which are the cause.

It is again the "principle" involved which makes Scotsmen complain so indignantly when they are made to pay more than they consider due. The Englishman says little, merely determines not to be fleeced a second time in the same way. The Scot feels his sense of what is right and fair so outrageously flouted that he must

protest. For, although his emotions are kept well under control, they are strong and easily roused.

Anyone who has known a man or a woman of Scottish birth lacking in self-discipline will see good reason to be glad that the exercise of this virtue is a national habit. Nothing could be more mistaken than to suppose that the dry, unenthusiastic manner of the Scots gives proof of a nature meriting those epithets. They have a capacity for very warm affection and for devotion, not merely steady but fervid, towards many objects besides the bawbee. They are attached to their national games by ties which can only be understood completely by visitors who have watched the excitement at a curling match or a close contest at bowls. They speak of golf as if it were a religious observance, not like the English players of the game, who regard it as a healthful form of exercise or a means of killing time.

Whether golf was a Scottish invention or a Dutch is not certain. It has at any rate been played in Scotland since

HARVESTING THE GOLDEN GRAIN IN A HIGHLAND GLEN

The croft or small-scale farming system still prevails in many remote districts of the Highlands, but the great "clearances" of crofting areas which took place in the early nineteenth century, in order to afford room for extensive sheep-runs, had dire results and forced many families of the glens to leave their fertile tracts and seek refuge in manufacturing towns or in the wilds of far-off lands

Photo, Horace W. Nicholls

early in the fifteenth century, and it was in the true sense a national game since all classes took part in it. The public links were free to all who could handle their club in a workmanlike way. It was only when, during the last twenty years of the nineteenth century, golf became popular among the well-to-do in England that it was elaborated into the trial of strength and skill that it is among a small number of amateurs and professionals to-day.

There was golf on Blackheath long before that, but only Scotsmen played as a rule. Not until the 'sixties was a course made at Westward Ho, and only when Mr. Arthur Balfour came into prominence as a politician and was seen playing it in public did the game become fashionable. Never has the level of skill in England, however, approached that of the Scottish links. Boys who have begun on these as soon almost as they could walk and hold a club, show an ease and a grace of movement and a sureness of eye which could not be expected from middle-aged stockbrokers or lawyers playing under doctor's instructions for the benefit of their sluggish livers.

Golf has gone almost all over the world. Bowls has taken firm root in Canada, where it is played with a devotion equal to that shown on Scottish greens. Curling is so well adapted to the Canadian winter climate that it, too, ranks as one of the Dominion favourite sports. Football, in which the Scots have proved themselves so proficient, was introduced from England, but both the Rugby and the Association forms of it have been modified by developments started in Scotland.

It was at the suggestion of Scottish footballers that the number of men in a Rugby team was reduced in 1876 from twenty to fifteen. The science of passing which made Association

PEDIGREE ABERDEEN-ANGUS BULL THAT WEIGHS NEARLY A TON

At Scottish cattle-shows the Aberdeen-Angus cattle, notable for their great bulk, are usually to the fore in the fat stock section. The cows of the breed, noted for their milk production, have the advantage of maturing sooner than many other kinds. The hide is entirely black and the head horn-less. Large numbers are sent to the Argentine, where they have a good reputation for hardiness

Photo, Alexander Beattie

SHEPHERDS HOMEWARD BOUND WITH THE FLOCK, HALT AND HALE

The ruggedness of the Highlands and their relative inaccessibility and barrenness have combined to build up a sturdy vigorous and independent race of men who, strong of limb and stout of heart, retain their racial characteristics in the face of many vicissitudes—be they humble shepherds tending their native flocks or shrewd, thrifty Scots cutting a way for themselves in a new world beyond the sea

Photo Underwood Press Service

such an interesting game to watch, by securing certain victory for judgement and intelligence over strength and weight, was the discovery of the Queen's Park Club of Glasgow Cricket has never found much favour in Scotland, but many Scotsmen have been in the front rank of cricketers in England The indoor game most in favour with the Scots is draughts they play it with an intellectual vigour which makes it almost vie with chess

The Scottish name for a draught-board, the "dambrod," is supposed to be of French origin, like so many other Scottish words There was a close connexion between the courts of France and Scotland, and a good deal of French influence on the latter country. When the inhabitants of the tall houses in Old Edinburgh threw their slops out of upper windows, they gave notice to passers-by with the cry "Gardyloo" (Gardez l'eau) It is still possible to hear a certain kind of dish called an "ashet" (assiette)

Intercourse in the early periods of European history with France and other countries of the Continent, where Scotsmen found they could do better than in their own, gave the Scots perhaps (so some have theorised) that readiness to settle down anywhere and fall in with any customs which makes them such good colonists and accounts for their success in foreign parts

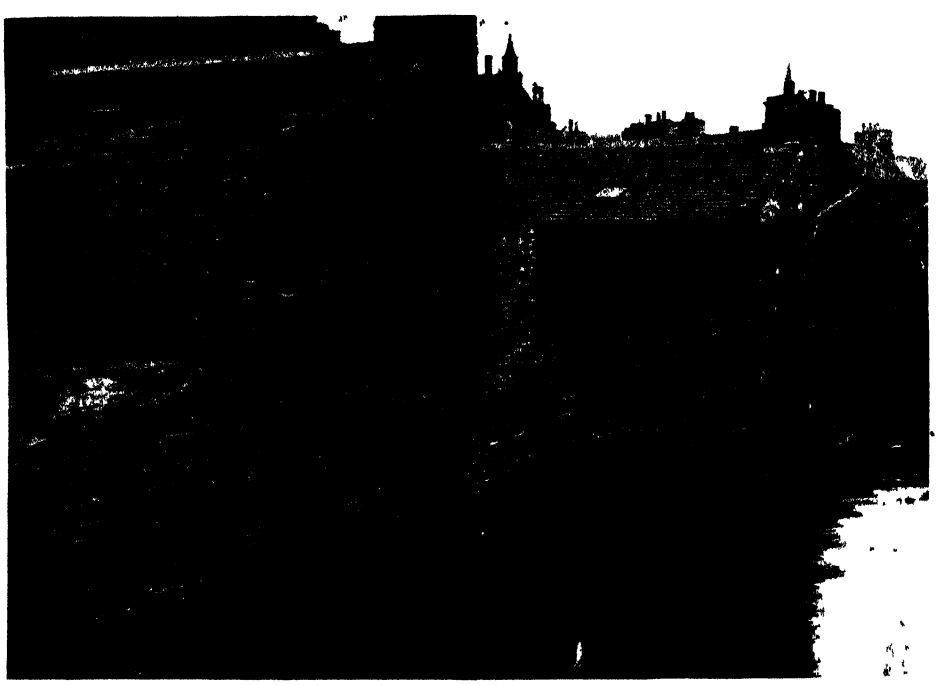
Many anecdotes are told to illustrate this One describes the meeting between a Scottish trader from Perth and the sheik of some tribe in Asia They did their business through an interpreter, but at the close of their talk the sheik followed the visitor to a quiet place and then said, "Man, do ye no ken me? I'm frae Perth too" He had, he related, become a Mahomedan in order to secure the office he held That was a case in which the old

reproach against Scotsmen of being ready to pursue fortune by no matter what means found some justification. In an old play there is a Scots baronet, Sir Pertinax MacSycophant, who attributes his prosperity to "bowing and bowing and bowing" (which he pronounces "booing.") Evidently that was the character in which the eighteenth century regarded Scotsmen, and there must have been some ground for it. But here again, as in the legend of Scottish meanness, some part must be allowed to envy of success.

It was hard, and it is sometimes hard still, for the English to comprehend the methods which brought Scotsmen who began poor and lowly-born so quickly to the front. It was not strange that unworthy conduct should be suspected, for the English are not a hard-working race and could scarcely believe that such rapid prominence was due entirely to qualities of mind and character. They have never quite understood the Scots (as they have never in the least understood the Irish). Indeed no one can understand them who has not seen them in their own country and marvelled at their getting a living at all out of so poor a land.

Besides the shipbuilding and engineering industries on the Clyde, which have made Glasgow so rich, there are none so important as that of jute-making in Dundee. This has brought wealth to the manufacturers and spoiled the look of the town by covering it very often with a fog of smoke and giving it a purely commercial appearance. It is famous also as the Marmalade Capital, whence the bitter-sweet breakfast dish, which is another of Scotland's gifts to humanity, goes out into all four corners of the world.

A pleasanter city is Aberdeen, built of granite, which is quarried near by



PRACTISING THE GENTLE ART FROM A STROMNESS WINDOW

Stromness and Kirkwall are the only two towns in the Orkney group, and are situated on the largest island known as Pomona or the Mainland. A foreign though attractive air pervades Stromness, which is built in quaint, irregular style; its inhabitants are mainly fisherfolk, a fact not altogether surprising seeing that, in some cases, fish may be angled for from the very windows of the cottages

Photo, F. Hardie

LASSIES FROM ABERDEEN SALTING HERRINGS AT A SHETLAND PORT

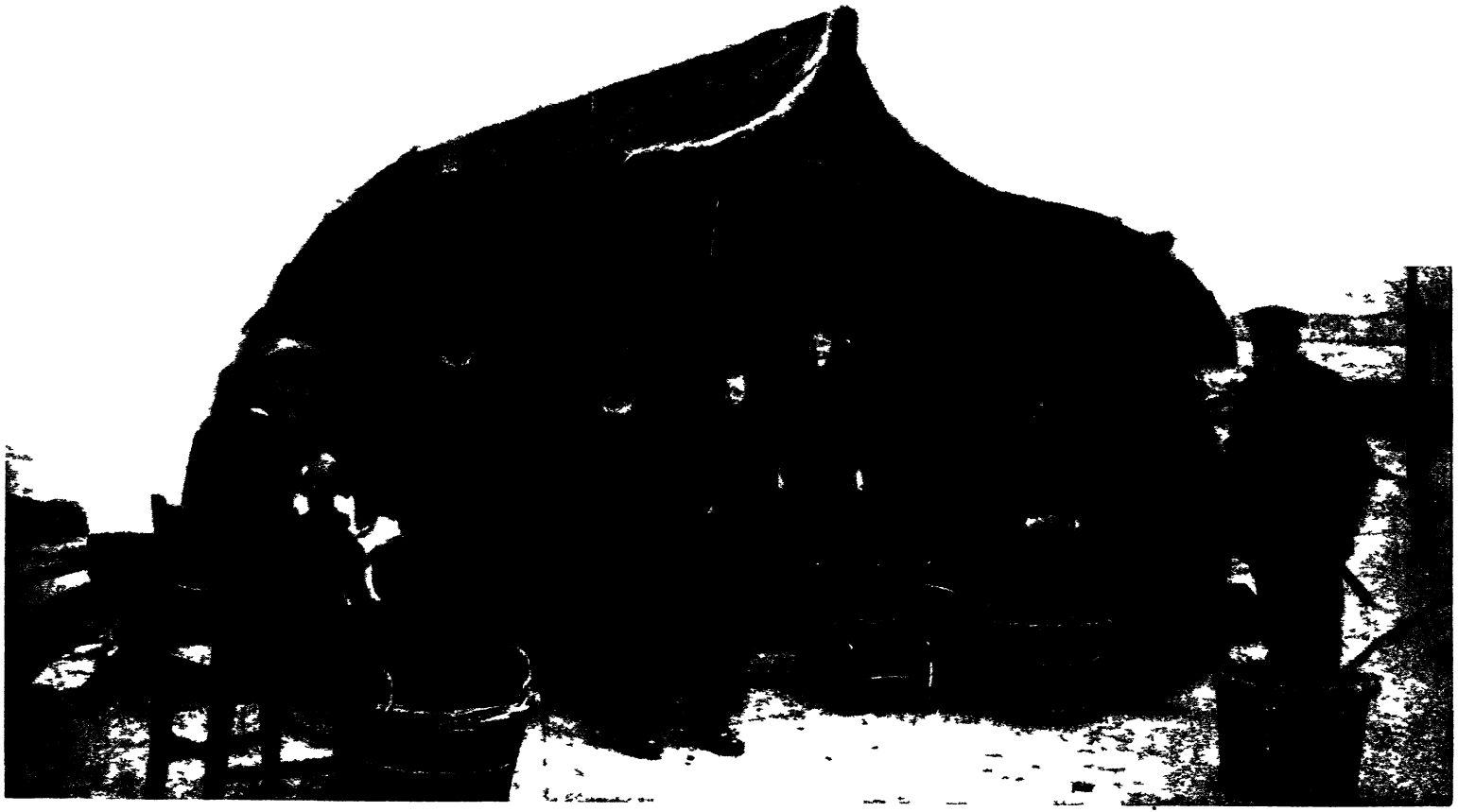
Scottish fisher-girls go far in search of work, and a journey to the far Shetland Isles does not daunt them When the fish have been gutted and sorted they are packed for shipping in special barrels. Being smothered in salt for the sake of preserving them, the herrings have a somewhat coarse taste on reaching the consumer. Russia and Germany formerly imported great quantities

Photo, Charles Reid

and supplied to many other parts of the country. Here the chief industry is fishing. The fish market is a vast place, where tons of all kinds of sea-food are disposed of every day, to be rapidly put into boxes and on to the special trains which take it south. Perth has a reputation for the manufacture of dyes and the distilling of whisky.

The other Scottish towns are of little importance in the industrial or commercial sense. Stirling fills the eye with beauty and wakes memories of romance and history, and many others have charm of situation, but they do not enhance their natural advantages; they are grey, and as a rule featureless.

North of Aberdeen and west of it the land is almost all too unfertile for cultivation. Vast moors of peat, rocks, and lakes, mountains bare and stately in their bareness, make up a landscape that is often superb, but which severely limits the population. Into the Highland region there is poured every summer and autumn a stream of visitors who leave behind them a rich sediment of money. Hotel-keeping is an art to which the clansmen of the past



DAN'L PEGGOTY'S HUT RE-CREATED BY OLD SALTS OF THE SCOTTISH COAST

To convert a disused boat into the roof of a dwelling has long been a favourite device of the fisher folk and longshoremen The good planks of this aged hull, their last voyage done, are still stout enough, with the aid of a coat of tar, to withstand the lashing of the spindrift on the wild Scottish strand Nets, baskets, and the owners of this storehouse on the beach, all smack of fish, and it is fitting that an old boat should thus usefully end its days within sound of the sea

Photo G M Tyrrell

have taken very kindly it is said to be only a different form of the occupation by which they lived in olden days Certainly their charges are large, but they give no other chance to their patrons to grumble Many of them supply fishermen with everything they need, others have shooting for their guests, for cleanliness and good fare they cannot be surpassed

Not much remains of any special Scotch cooking, but the soups, hotch potch or cocky leekie, the salmon grilled or boiled the Finnan haddie (haddock), the tender mutton, the oat cakes and the scones, leave on the minds of many tourists an even more indelible print than the glories of heather and green hillsides or the far-off majesty of the mountains veiling their heads in blue mist

KERBSIDE FISH BAR IN EDINBURGH

At many a corner in the poorer quarters of Scottish towns women may be seen selling whelks to pavement customers With stern, even handsome faces coloured by the sea breezes and wearing most appropriate costume, they are fine types of womanhood

Photo Horace W Nicholls

It is believed by most people that the Scots still make oatmeal in the shape of porridge the staple of their diet This is an error Once they did live on this wholesome, bone forming grain, either in the form of thin "cake" or as porridge But the custom decayed some time back Tea is what the Scottish masses have for their breakfast now and for their early evening meal as well, with bread and butter or margarine, and maybe bacon or fish

For dinner in the middle of the day the countryman often has cabbage soup with the pork which has been boiled in it to give it strength and flavour Otherwise they live much as the rest of the inhabitants of Great Britain do

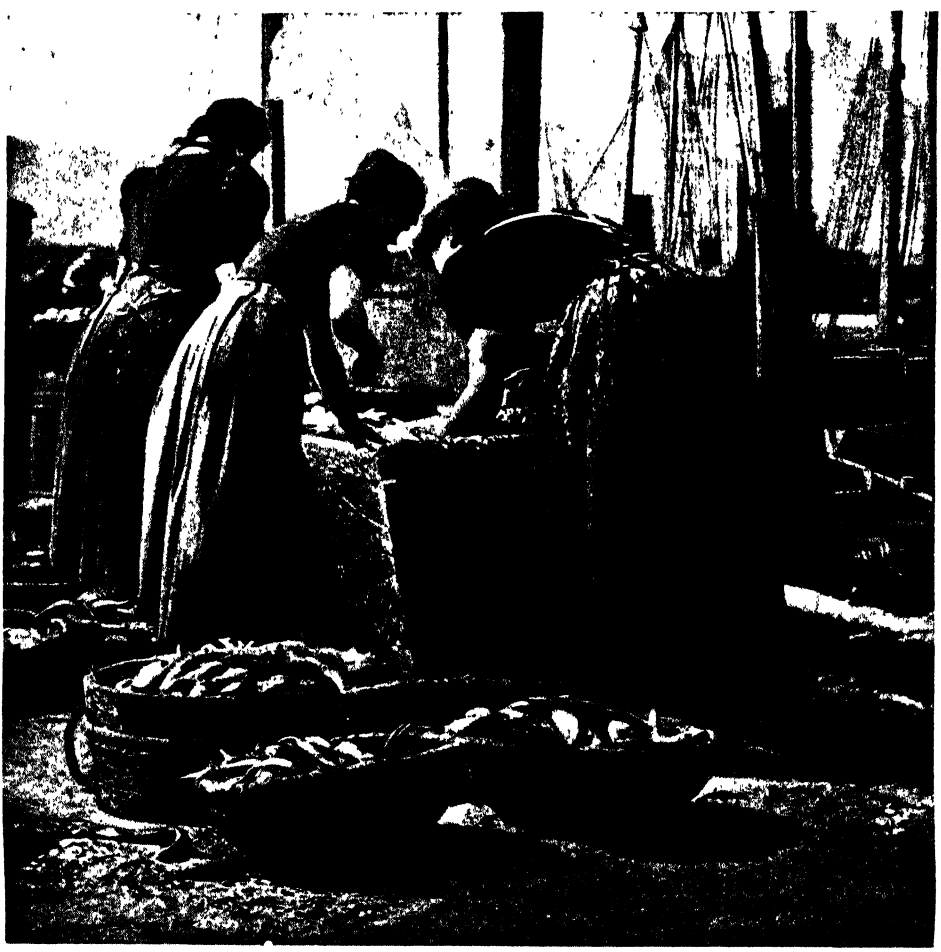
Although Scotland is called "the land o' cakes" and the shops of Edinburgh and Glasgow are tempting to the visitor with their displays of shortbread and Pitkaithly bannock and similar dainties, the cottage folk and the townspeople in the poor quarters seldom see much in that line

It might be expected that among so thrifty a population there would be no poverty of the kind that exists in English cities But a Scottish author lamented not long ago that the rapid change which occurred after centuries of struggle against every hard condition of life and the development in the direction of prosperity would be matter for profound gratification "were it not that the great mass of poor people subsist through it all, and that they seem ever poorer, ever more crowded

together in contrast with the wealth and ease of their more fortunate fellows."—(T. F. Henderson, "Scotland of To-day," 1907.)

This applies to the cities most of all, though in the far north there are peasants who live even more hardly than the slum-dwellers. They keep up, however, more of human dignity; there is no squalor in their simple homes; what they eat is wholesome, although there may be little of it, more conducive to health than the un-nourishing bread and the fried fish from unsavoury shops and the tinned foods on which the slums exist. Much Gaelic is spoken still in the Highlands and in the northernmost parts also, Caithness, for example, where it is a "foreign" language, however. For the people of Wick and Thurso and the extreme north-east are of Scandinavian ancestry, and there are many Scandinavian words in their vocabulary. The Orkney and Shetland islands once belonged to Norway; they passed to Scotland when a Scottish king married a Norwegian princess.

In these remote districts the people appear to have very little in common



SCOTTISH FISHER-GIRLS SORTING A CARGO FRESH FROM THE BOAT

Scottish trawlers, with their groping bag nets, rake the North Sea from Iceland to the Dogger Bank all through the winter. Fisheries are one of the most profitable industries in the British Isles, and thousands of pounds' worth may be contained in quite a modest fleet of boats. Unloaded on the quay in large wooden crates, the fish are sorted into baskets and barrels for sale by auction

Photo, Underwood Press Service

DRYING AND EXAMINING THE BASKETS-FULL OF FISHING-LINE

Where so many hundreds of yards of fishing line are concerned great care has to be taken lest it become tangled The hooks are joined to the line by a ' trace " of twine and every join and each hook must undergo a periodical inspection made necessary by the heavy work this tackle has to endure The lines are carefully dried on poles

Photo G M Tyrrell

with the folk of the Border country or the Lothian farming population or the Fifers They exhibit, nevertheless, one trait which is noticeable in all the varieties of type among Scots They are serious over their occupations, they apply themselves with industry to their tasks whatever they have to do, they do it with all their might.

In the Lifers there is also some trace of Scandinavian origin They have a distinct character of their own They are more cautious and more shrewd than the generality of their countrymen, which is saying a good deal! They do not care to express opinions lest they should be proved wrong. They speak slowly, with a deliberation which at times is almost maddening, in a sing-song which recalls the Swedish intonation They follow their own tastes and inclinations without regard to the criticism of their neighbours.

" Each," says an authority who has made a study of the Fifers, " has often his own hobby, the hobby that makes life worth living to him, whether it be politics, or religion, or the dambrod, or singing, or violin-playing, or bird- or dog-fancying, or bee-keeping or gardening, or amateur carpentry, or clock-mending, or fishing, or poaching.

" The Fifer generally does what he prefers to do, whether it be good or evil If he prefers to be thrifty and careful and well-to-do, then he is a very pattern of outward respectability, and if he prefers to go to the bad, then he goes to the bad without shame and with very little halt or pause "

As a rule these pawky folk aim at getting on in the world, and they seldom fail in their endeavour. They have the knack of winning popularity and they frequently reach first-rate positions by the exercise of second-rate abilities.

That has sometimes been said of Scotsmen in general and in politics it has ofttimes been found true. Keenly interested in public affairs as is the habit of the whole nation, and shrewd critics of public men as they usually are, the Scots who become politicians are apt to sink their critical faculties and to find as office-holders that the system is not so faulty after all.

Here again the practical side of the national character comes out a little too strongly, but seeing that it is their practical sense which has justly gained them so good a name for capability, it cannot be thought surprising that it should occasionally appear in excess.

Yet there are just as many Scotsmen on the rolls of Fame for qualities of idealism as for practical achievements. Without idealism they could not have played so large a part in making the British Empire what it is —a civilizing agency and a promoter of the idea of justice. Their energy in bringing land under cultivation and in creating businesses and in organizing government has been of immense value; but not less serviceable to the world as well as to the British Dominions and colonies have been their strong sense of duty, their strong attachment to home life, and their feeling of responsibility to God

As engineers the Scots have done a very great deal to link up the land inhabited by the British race. Railways, bridges, canals, irrigation systems, harbours, these and similar works of usefulness in many parts of the world bear witness to Scottish genius and Scottish industry. For their tenacity they are rightly celebrated. No job entrusted to them is ever given up until it has been proved beyond all doubt impossible of achievement. They are resourceful, because they are persevering. They persevere because they cannot bear to be worsted by circumstances and refuse to admit the phrase "give in" into their vocabulary.

PLAYING MARBLES AMONG THE NETS AND BARRELS OF A FISHER HOME

Fishermen's sons take early to the sea, but ashore they are surrounded, as are followers of few other callings, by the impedimenta of their work They play among the nets and fish barrels with the smell of the sea-salt and tar always round them. The ancient game of marbles, known to Egyptians and Romans, and the father of the game of bowls, is evidently played with zest by these young salts

Photo, G. M. Tyrrell

SCALY FINGERS GUTTING HERRINGS OF THE AUTUMN CATCH

When the deadly curtain of the drift nets, which, when at work, appear only as a long line of bobbing corks and rolling canvas buoys, has been drawn in and the smacks have made port, the Scottish fishwife has the busiest time of her year Hundreds flock to all the great East Coast fishing ports, from Peterhead to Lowestoft, and remove the "insides" with astonishing speed and address

Photo, Underwood Press Service

OLD SMACKSMAN OF A MORAY FISHING VILLAGE FORECASTS THE DAY'S WEATHER

Upon going out of doors, the first action of the old Scottish seafaring man is to cast his weather eye aloft and around to see what weather the wind is bringing. Beyond the roofs of grey or red, and in between the many lums, as he calls the chimneys, the wide waters of Moray Firth, which he knows so well have, each day, their story to tell. To the diapason of the waves on the bar is the shrill accompaniment of many screaming gulls.

Photo, G. M. Tarrell

Scotland

II. National Spirit in Scottish History

By Sir George Douglas, Bart.

Author of "The History of the Border Counties," etc.

POOR in resources and geographically remote and isolated, Scotland stands to a large extent outside European history. Her almost incessant wars were with her neighbour, England; her constant alliances with England's enemy, France. And though the shrewdness and hardihood of her sons made their influence felt far beyond her borders, her warriors fought oftenest, like Scott's Hal o' the Wynd, "for their own hand." Her leadership in colonisation and in the struggle for religious liberty belongs to comparatively late periods. So her annals may perhaps be summed up as a rich quarry for the romantic dramatist, but a poor pasture for the political philosopher or historian in the grand style.

Scottish history begins with the invasion of Caledonia by the Roman general Agricola in the year 80 of our era; but the Roman arms which had subjugated southern Britain obtained but a shifting and uncertain hold upon the north. Agricola judged it expedient to limit his conquests by a rampart drawn from the Firth of Clyde to that of Forth; while a further forty years' experience of the fierce Picts, or aborigines, led the Emperor Hadrian to withdraw his boundary and construct his wall between the estuaries of Tyne and Solway. Under the emperors Antoninus Pius, Severus, and Valentinian the tide of conquest alternately advanced and receded, until the withdrawal of the Roman troops from Britain, A.D. 410, left Romanised Caledonia, such as it was, to the mercy of the northerners.

Columba Introduces Christianity

The sixth century is memorable for invasions by the Angles from the east and by the Scots from Ireland, whose conquests left the country lying between the two Roman walls divided between the English kingdom of Northumbria and the Celtic kingdom of Strathclyde. To these Columba, a refugee from Ireland, who had established himself with twelve followers in the islet of Iona, brought the gift of Christianity. Columba's Church, however, was independent of the Roman See. And from this time forward, for 300 years, if we except a barren list of kings, the history of the Picts is obscured as if by the mists of their native climate. That their warlike prowess was not lost may be gathered, however, from their repulse of an invading army of Northumbrians in a battle at Nechtansmere. But at this period, and for long after, the history of Scotland was mainly a history of the descents of Norsemen on her coasts, with the attendant slaughter, pillage, and church-burning. In 843 the Picts were united with the Scots under the rule of the Scots king, Kenneth McAlpine.

Territorial Limits Established

In 924, in the hope of strengthening his position, the Scots king, Constantine II., "commended" himself to the English king, Edward—that is, placed himself under the protection of the latter. This arrangement did not last, but it is memorable as forming the foundation upon which English claims to the overlordship of Scotland were afterwards based. And now again, of a number of kings who followed Constantine, and were of his family, though not necessarily his direct descendants, it is only necessary to specify Malcolm I. (943-54), who received back the western province of Strathclyde as a territorial fief from the English king, Edmund, who had conquered it; and Malcolm II., the last of the direct line of McAlpine, whose great victory at Carham on the banks of Tweed (1018) placed the northern part of Northumberland, known as Lothian, permanently in his hands and those of his successors. Scotland had now assumed the shape and limits which, excepting during certain intervals of special strength or weakness, were henceforward to be hers.

We have now reached a point where the light of poetry shines upon Scottish history, though with a somewhat distorting illumination. After renewing with Canute the submission made by Constantine to Edward, Malcolm II. died, and was succeeded by Duncan, his grandson in the female line, who was slain by Macbeth, or Mormaer, a chieftain of Moray. Shakespeare's version of the story is, however, unhistorical, for in right of his wife, a granddaughter of Kenneth III., Macbeth had a fair claim to the throne. Scotland prospered under his rule (1040-57) until he in turn was slain and replaced by Malcolm III., called Canmore, the elder son of Duncan.

The reign of Malcolm Canmore (1057-93), covering as it did the Norman Conquest of England, marks the introduction of a

strongly modifying English influence into Scotland. For the conquered English turned to Scotland for refuge, and were made welcome there. Among them came Edgar the Aetheling, heir of the royal line of Wessex, whose sister Margaret became Malcolm's wife. Malcolm was a fierce warrior, and his reign was a succession of invasions of England, alternating with counter-invasions and submissions to the Conqueror and to Rufus. What survives of this time, however, is the humanising and reforming influence of the saintly queen, Margaret, beautifully recorded in her Life written by Turgot, her confessor.

Saintly Son of Saintly Mother

On Malcolm's death a disputed succession again plunged his country into warfare, in which rival candidates repeatedly obtained England's aid by promises of homage. And under the sons of S. Margaret, Edgar, Alexander, and David, the Saxon model or tradition definitely ousted that of the Celts from Southern Scotland.

War with Norway and with their own turbulent northern vassals characterised the successive reigns of the two elder brothers. Upon David I., the youngest of the three (1124-53), a double portion of his mother's religious and enlightened spirit had descended. He lives in history as a good and great king, after the pattern of English Alfred: one who not only led his troops to battle, but improved the government of his country, administered justice in person, and greatly advanced the interests of the Church and of the Commons. During his reign Scotland greatly progressed, both spiritually and materially. And yet he was time and again led into war with England, first in defence of the rights of his niece, Matilda, against Stephen, and afterwards by international jealousies, culminating in the Battle of the Standard, where his troops, composed as they were of imperfectly welded nationalities, suffered defeat.

Dawn of Scotland's Golden Age

To David I. succeeded his grandson, Malcolm IV., who on the one hand consolidated his kingdom by victories over the rebellious Lords of Galloway and Argyll; but, on the other, was compelled to give up the northern counties of England, which his grandfather had held, to Henry II. While endeavouring to regain the latter, Malcolm's brother and successor, William the Lion, was made prisoner by the English. And his capture was specially momentous because upon the treaty (known as the Convention of Falaise) to which he had to consent in order to regain freedom, was subsequently based the claim of England to supremacy over Scotland. As regards forfeiture of independence, and hostages and strongholds left in pawn, the terms exacted by Henry in this agreement were exorbitant. But on Henry's death they were practically commuted by Cœur-de-Lion for a money payment. The independence of the Scottish kingdom, absolute or partial, remained, however, a disputed point.

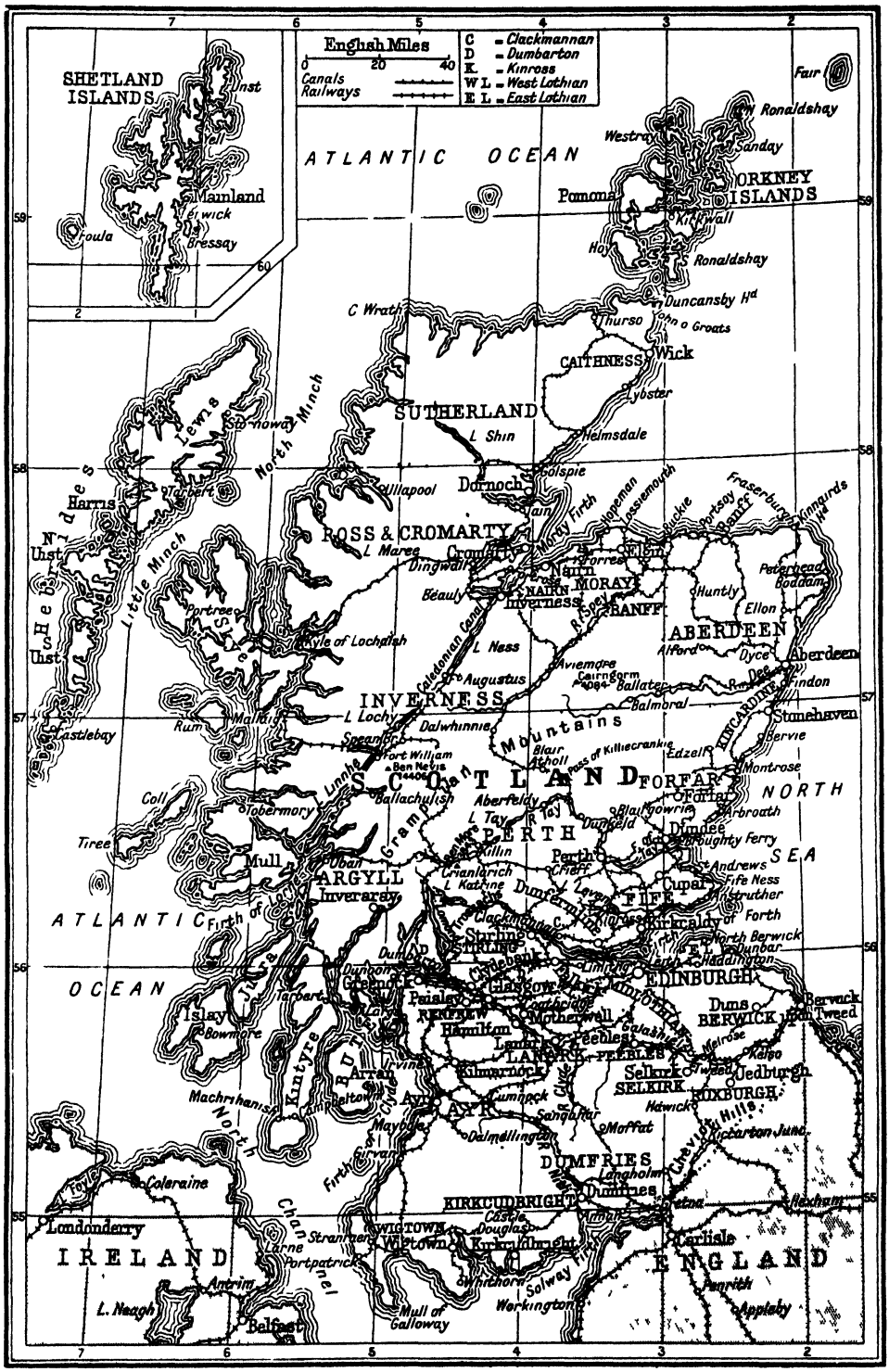
In spite of this, however, and of the recrudescence of local rebellion, Scotland continued to grow stronger, the development of her chartered towns and the recognition by the Pope of the independence of her Church alike contributing to that end. And this progress was continued under the two next kings, namely, Alexander II. (1214-49) and Alexander III. (1249-85). Excepting a final descent of the Norsemen on her coasts, which, repulsed by the victory of Largs, gave her the Lordship of the Isles, this period was one of unbroken peace, and has earned, by contrast with what followed, the name of Scotland's Golden Age. Then the great feudal nobles ceased from troubling, the great ecclesiastical foundations wisely administered their wide estates, the great towns—Aberdeen, Perth, Stirling, Edinburgh, Roxburgh and Berwick—increased in prosperity. Then, too, learning and literature, heretofore a dead letter in Scotland, found representatives in Thomas the Rhymer, Michael Scot, Duns Scotus—the poet, the savant, and the critic—Borderers all. But these halcyon days were indeed but the lull before the storm

Margaret, the Maid of Norway

The unexpected death of Alexander III. by a fall from his horse at Kinghorn, on the coast of Fife, plunged his country into centuries of the bitterest warfare.

Hitherto England and Scotland, on the whole, had been friendly. Throughout the next three hundred years they were inveterate and hereditary enemies. It happened thus. The children of Alexander III. having predeceased him, the crown passed on his death to Margaret, known as the Maid of Norway, the child of his daughter by her union with the heir to the Norwegian crown. Meantime, Edward I., an able and far-seeing, yet crafty and ruthless ruler, being king of England, conceived that scheme of uniting the two kingdoms which became the overmastering passion of his life. His initial plan towards this end, that of marrying the Maid of Norway to his son, afterwards Edward II., was frustrated by the Maid's death when on her way to Scotland.

And now a vexed question arose, for Margaret being the last of the descendants



THE KINGDOM OF SCOTLAND

of William the Lion, the succession to the crown was claimed by the descendants of William's brother, David, of whom the principal were John Baliol, grandson of David's eldest daughter, Margaret, and Robert Bruce, son of the second daughter, Isabel, who adduced precedents in support of his claim as belonging to the elder generation. Edward I., as overlord of Scotland, was appealed to to decide the case, and possessing a distinct aptitude for law, he justly upheld Baliol's claim.

Price Paid by Baliol for his Crown

Edward, however, had recognized the weakness of Baliol's character and the difficulties of his position, and having placed him on the throne, he forthwith required him to do homage, not merely for the provinces of Lothian and Strathclyde, for which some legal pretext might have been advanced, but for Scotland. This done, his next step was to consent to hear appeals of Scottish subjects against Scottish jurisdiction; and this being directly contrary to the terms of an existing treaty, he compelled Baliol to renounce that treaty together with all engagements opposed to his own superiority. Nor did Baliol's subservience profit him, for being cited to appear before the English Parliament, he was compelled to place the three chief strongholds of his kingdom in Edward's hands as a pledge of his future conduct. Thus did Edward labour step by step to undermine his victim's independence.

Fiery Patriotism of Wallace

England was now at war with France. Initiating the foreign policy which was to remain hers for the best part of three centuries, Scotland entered into an alliance with Edward's adversary and sent an army across the Border. Then Edward's wrath broke into flame. His aim was to instil terror, and having wreaked dire vengeance upon Berwick, the chief seaport of Scotland, he marched northward as far as Elgin, reducing Edinburgh, Stirling, and Perth, and, as a symbol of his conquest, bearing off the mystic Stone of Destiny, on which the Scottish kings were crowned, from Scone to Westminster Abbey, where it may still be seen, inset beneath the Coronation Chair. For the time being his conquest was as complete as it was rapid. The nobles swore fealty to the conqueror, John Baliol was deposed, and his kingdom, by an extension of feudal custom, declared forfeit to his overlord.

Having attained his main object, Edward took steps for administering his new dependency through English officials protected by English troops. The Celts of the north and the barons who held estates in both kingdoms remained passive under this foreign occupation; but William Wallace, a Lowlander of middle station, availing himself of latent discontent, raised a small band of followers and won successes at Lanark, Scone, and Glasgow. In their hatred of foreign domination, a leader was all the high-spirited Scots required, and though an army sent northward by Edward momentarily quenched the rising, Wallace seized the earliest opportunity to renew it. And it was now that the mettle of the heaven-inspired patriot was put fully to the touch. Having ejected the intruding garrisons of the neighbouring castles, with consummate generalship he drew up his army on the plain before Stirling, within a bend of the River Forth, and having his back protected by a rocky eminence. Then, waiting until half the English army had crossed the river by a narrow bridge, he cut that force in two and routed it (September, 1297). After which, acting nominally as guardian for the exiled Baliol, he possessed himself of the southern strengths and carried war over the Border.

Bruce as Wallace's Avenger

But his position was at best precarious. Edward returned from the Continent and himself led a great army into Scotland, while Wallace retreated before him in the hope of exhausting the enemy's supplies. Edward, however, forced a battle at Falkirk, and though the Scots fought bravely, while the military genius of their leader never shone more brilliantly than in the use he made of the hitherto underrated arm of infantry, the victory was to the larger army.

And though it was not until five years later that the country was again at Edward's feet, Wallace's day had set. The estimation in which he was held by Edward may be gathered from the fact that, while the other participators in this struggle for national liberty were left unmolested, their leader, betrayed by his henchman, was put to a cruel and ignominious death by hanging, drawing, and quartering, and this notwithstanding that he could urge in self-defence at his trial that he had never sworn fealty to the "Hammer of the Scots."

There is no darker blot on Edward's "stained renown." It, however, availed him little. For he had barely carried out measures for the government of the newly-annexed kingdom ere revolt once more made head against him. The leader this time was Robert Bruce, grandson and heir of Baliol's rival, and one whose career so far had been by no means consistently patriotic. He had, indeed, withdrawn from his early support of Wallace and

renewed his fealty to Edward. But his loyalty to the latter becoming suspected, he fled from England to Dumfries, where, in a mysterious quarrel in the Minorites Church, he caused the death of John Comyn of Badenoch, (the Red Comyn), a nephew of John Baliol, and, after Baliol's sons, next heir to the Scottish crown.

This was the turning-point of Bruce's career. Recognizing that his sacrilegious onslaught on Comyn, while it had put him outside the pale, civil and ecclesiastical, had also opened the succession to him, he lost no time in rallying his adherents and had himself crowned at Scone (March 27, 1306). Edward's anger knew no bounds. But his judgement as well as his health was by this time impaired. The ferocity of some of the punitive steps he took tended to unite the Scots against him. But his death occurred (June 7), within sight of the Border, when leading a powerful army to invade Scotland. Nor did his successor push the expedition as he might have done.

The eight years which followed witnessed the development of a truly kingly character in Bruce, and side by side with it the true birth of the Scottish nation. Both processes were gradual and painful. For long the king stood alone with a handful of followers, a wanderer, and for a time an exile, among enemies both within his kingdom and without. Yet this period of adversity has come to be recognized, not merely as the most romantic, but also as the most crucial in Scottish history.

Exploits of the Scottish Hero

It is said that, after sustaining six reverses, he lay despondent in a crazy shed and watched a spider fail in six attempts to sling his web from one beam to another. In the seventh attempt the insect was successful, seeing which, Bruce took heart and led his little band of followers to victory. And though doubt has been cast upon this story, it has at least the truth of poetry, if not that of fact, and serves to illustrate both the sweetness of temper and the indomitable perseverance for which the hero was remarkable. His feats of personal prowess added greatly to his reputation. For example, one day when riding along a narrow shelf of land between rocks and a lake, he was suddenly set on by three brothers, of whom one grasped his bridle and another his stirrup, while the third leapt on the horse behind him. With one blow of his sword the king shore off the arm of the first, at the same time setting spurs to his horse so as to overthrow the second and thus be left free to deal with the third, which he effectively did.

A second adventure, when he was surprised while dozing in a robber's hut, cost him indeed his faithful foster-brother, but also, thanks to good swordsmanship, cost his treacherous hosts their lives. Of the same character are his exploits against the one-eyed man of Carrick, against the sleuth-hound of John of Lorn, and at that moonlit ford where he is said to have heaped up a rampart of his slain enemies. If these stories be deemed by some to bear the colour of romance, his authentic encounter with the English champion, Bohun, on the eve of Bannockburn, is of itself enough to establish his reputation as a good man of his hands.

Scotland's Future in the Balance

Nor was his skill as a commander less, as was shown at Loudoun and Glentrool, and most of all at Bannockburn. Ably seconded as he was by valiant soldiers, such as Sir James Douglas—called the Good—his brother, Edward Bruce, and his nephew, Randolph, Bruce's luck at length began to turn, and success produced its usual effect in enlisting popular sympathy. His following increased, and one by one the strongholds of Scotland passed into his keeping, until Stirling alone remained in the enemy's hands, and that was sorely pressed. Then, at last, Edward II. realized that a great effort must be made, and marched an army of 100,000 men to relieve Stirling.

Bruce's numerically much inferior and less well-found, but infinitely better-tempered and better generalled, army was drawn up so as to intercept the enemy's advance, with one flank resting on the Bannock stream. The famous English archers opened the battle with a shower of arrows, but were dispersed by the small body of Scottish horse. The vaunted English cavalry then charged, but failing to break the bristling schiltrons of the Scottish spearmen, they fell into confusion, which became worse when a host of Scottish camp-followers, who just then made their appearance over a hilltop, were mistaken for a second army.

Bruce's Triumph at Bannockburn

The English turned, and in their flight became entangled in certain masked pitfalls with which King Robert had honeycombed the plain. The rout was total, Edward fleeing for his life and leaving much spoil and many captives in the victors' hands. At Bannockburn was decided the fate of Scotland, which was never afterwards threatened with absorption. Here Bruce succeeded where Wallace had failed, and Bruce rightly takes his place as Scotland's national hero. But it is only fair to remember that, where Bruce fought for his kingdom, Wallace had fought for his country.

Though Scotland had won the day, England still refused to recognize her independence, and the war continued in the form of Border raids, led by Douglas and Randolph, in which the Scots had the best of it, the mountainous character of the country and the simple and hardy habits of its inhabitants giving them at all times great advantage in warfare of this kind. At length the English, weary of being preyed on, concluded the Peace of Northampton (1328), in which claims of suzerainty over Scotland were definitely abandoned. Yet the mutual jealousy and hatred of the neighbour countries still remained, driving Scotland to seek a counterpoise in continued close alliance with France. Bruce died in 1329, having long since obtained recognition from the Pope and other foreign powers.

Incompetence Succeeds Ability

Though richly rewarding his adherents, his domestic policy had been to strengthen the burghs and to depress the nobles by what practically amounted to the forfeiture of those who held estates in both England and Scotland.

During the long and inglorious reign of Bruce's son and successor, David II. (1329-70), this enactment led to a successful invasion of Scotland by the dispossessed barons under Edward, son of Baliol, who, after being crowned at Scone, declared himself Edward III.'s vassal, thus doing all he could to undo Bruce's work, which was further compromised by English victories at Halidon Hill and Neville's Cross.

Waning Power of the Baronage

To David succeeded his sister's son, Robert II. (1370-90), called from his hereditary office the Steward, whose descendants ruled Scotland until James VII. was driven from the throne. His reign and that of his imbecile successor, Robert III. (1390-1406), form an obscure and unhappy interlude, chiefly notable for intestine lawlessness, though the war with England continued, being sometimes carried on in France, and sometimes with French aid at home. The chief battles of the period are those of Otterburn, famous in ballad-song and in the annals of chivalry, in which Earl Douglas defeated Henry Percy, known as Hotspur; and of Harlaw, where Donald, Lord of the Isles, was routed in an attempted invasion of the Lowlands by Highlanders. On the whole the century following Bruce's death was as inglorious as his reign had been the reverse.

Owing to the inveterate weakness of Robert III., the government throughout his reign was in the hands of his ambitious brother, Albany, who upon Robert's death became regent, Robert's son and heir, afterwards James I., being a prisoner in England. Being released in 1424, James returned to Scotland, where one of his earlier acts was to execute vicarious justice on the descendants of Albany, now deceased, whom he suspected of complicity in keeping him out of his own, as well as of the murder of his elder brother, the Duke of Rothesay.

It is in James that first appear those attractive characteristics of high courage and winsome bearing which, with one or two exceptions, were to distinguish the Stewart princes. Under him, too, the history of Scotland assumes the aspect of a struggle between king and nobles—a struggle in which, whatever the faults of individual rulers, the crown commands the larger share of sympathy. For though Douglas and others of his rank had played noble parts under Bruce, never surely was any country so cursed by a turbulent and self-seeking nobility, unredeemed by saving exceptions, as the Scotland of later ages. Confronted by this fact, James directed his policy towards strengthening the priesthood and commons at the expense of the baronage.

Weal and Woe Under Stewart Dynasty

It may be that his ideas carried him too far, but certainly he fell a martyr to them, for, after sternly repressing Highland lawlessness, recrudescent after the defeat of Harlaw under a new Lord of the Isles, he fell a victim to the vengeance of a member of the Graham family, which he had deprived of the Earldom of Strathearn, being basely murdered at the Black Friars monastery at Perth (1437). He had, however, reigned long enough to prove himself an enlightened ruler, his provisions for improving both his parliament and the social life of his kingdom entitling him to the highest praise. He was one of the sweetest, as of the earliest, poets of a country where the art of literature was again beginning to be practised.

The early years of James II.'s reign are memorable for a contention for the custody of the boy-king's person, the remaining years being occupied by the great struggle between the rival houses of Stewart and Douglas—a struggle which Hume Brown has compared to the contemporaneous strife of York and Lancaster. Archibald, Earl of Douglas, representing the Comyn claim to the Crown of Scotland (which many held superior to that of Bruce), was at that time the proudest and most powerful of the Scottish barons. But, though this by no means excuses the murders by which that power was brought down, the virtue of

the race no longer shone as it had done in Good Sir James, in Catherine "Barlass," and in him of Otterburn.

In the ensuing strife, ferocity was met by ferocity; the "execution" of Earl William and his brother was replied to by the murder of Bomby, and that, in turn, by the murder of a second Earl Douglas, at Stirling, a crime in which the king himself took an unkingly part. The question whether a Douglas or a Stewart was to wear the crown was, however, settled at Arkinholm, which dealt a death-blow to the elder or Black Douglases, much of whose land then passed to the Red, or Angus, branch of the family. James II. died by the bursting of a cannon (one of the first used in Scottish warfare) when besieging Roxburgh Castle in the interest of Henry VI. In this reign the Orkneys and Shetlands became part of Scotland.

The peaceful tastes of James III. (1460-88) sufficed to put him wholly out of sympathy with contemporary Scottish life, while his adoption of favourites (an indulgence which often proved disastrous to his house) made him still more unpopular. His history to some extent resembles that of his predecessor, for his early years were disturbed by the efforts of the upstart family of Boyd to obtain the custody of his person; while, at a later date, Douglas combined with the Lord of the Isles in an endeavour to divide Scotland and to hold their respective shares as vassals of England.

Flower of Scotland Falls at Flodden

The king's brothers, Albany and Mar, likewise took part against him, and the nadir of humiliation was reached when his favourites were put to death by being hanged over Lauder Bridge at the instance of Angus and other nobles. The death of the king, by the hand of an unknown assassin at Sauchieburn, barely averted a civil war between the northern chiefs, who had espoused his cause, and those of the south, who claimed to have deposed him. Had his lot been cast in Florence or Ferrara instead of Stirling, this James would have stood a chance of shining in history among lights of the Renaissance. As things happened, Scottish poetry bloomed under his successor, James IV. (1488-1513), bloomed rarely, and then languished for two and a half centuries.

Throughout the early years of the new reign Henry VII. of England kept intriguing with the Scottish lords against their sovereign, to which James responded by warmly supporting the claim of Perkin Warbeck. But ere hostilities were well begun, a truce supervened which was presently strengthened by James's marriage to Henry's eldest daughter. The ten years of peace which followed this alliance were spent by James in efforts, now peaceful and now warlike, to reduce his nobles to subordination. But the power he wielded was insufficient to achieve his aims.

In the meantime, the strain of the unaccustomed peace with England was beginning to be felt, and causes of complaint were accumulating not only on land but on the sea, where Scotland now began to hold her own. So, in September, 1513, James marched an invading army across the Border—to meet at Flodden with perhaps the greatest military disaster in the warlike annals of the rival kingdoms, and to pay for his perversely mistaken generalship by the loss of his own life and those of the flower of his army and nobility. His liberality, personal popularity, encouragement of trade, and strict enforcement of law, had made his country more prosperous than it had been for many a year.

Turbulence Within the Borders

James V. (1513-42) being but two years old when he succeeded his father, the Duke of Albany (son of the brother of James III.) became regent, and he, being more a Frenchman than a Scot, introduced French troops into Scotland, where they became very unpopular. Peace was made with England, but Scotland continued to be the scene of internal disorders, chief among which were the feuds of the Douglases and Hamiltons, respectively represented by the Earls of Angus and Arran, which culminated in the victory of the former in a fight known as "Clear the Causeway."

Meantime, an attempt made by Henry VIII. to interfere in Scottish affairs (1522) led to a renewal of hostilities on the Border, while the French and the English interests struggled to get the upper hand in the government, until at last James succeeded in throwing off the yoke of Angus—a step which he followed up by crushing the Red branch of the Douglas family almost as completely as James II. had crushed the elder branch.

Tragedy of the King of the Commons

His hands being freed, the king next applied himself vigorously, and without nice consideration of the means employed, to curbing the lawlessness of the Border moss-troopers and of the Campbells and others in the West Highlands and Isles. This useful work was interrupted by the efforts of Henry VIII. to induce James to follow his example in breaking with Rome. The son of Margaret Tudor, however, remained staunch to the faith of his fathers, and was prepared to try the issue by battle.

But he who had ever been the poor man's friend and "King of the Commons" had now to pay the penalty of having alienated his nobility, who, though marshalled for warfare, refused to follow him across the Border. From this humiliation he never rallied, dying of a broken heart in December, 1542. The news that his queen had brought him a daughter, which synchronised with tidings of the defeat of his advanced guard at Solway Moss, is said to have wrung from him the bitter words, "It cam' wi' a lass, and it will gang wi' a lass," by which he implied that as the crown had passed to the Stewarts with Marjory Bruce, so it should pass from them with his new-born daughter—a presentiment which remained unfulfilled. James V.'s chief legislative work was the development of the Supreme Court of Justice inaugurated by James I.

Tudor Schemes Frustrated

Henry was now as desirous to wed his son to the babe-queen Mary as had been Edward I. to unite the Prince of Wales and the Maid of Norway, and with the same object in view. He pursued his object by intrigue and by treaty, and, on the failure of these, by two of the cruellest coercive expeditions known to British history. These he entrusted to the Earl of Hertford, who, after Henry's death, when he had become Protector of the Realm, made a third expedition on his own account.

Except at Ancrum Moor, where they gained a success, and Pinkie, where they suffered a crushing defeat, the demoralised Scots attempted little resistance. Meantime, Mary had been sent for safety to France, where she was married to the Dauphin, afterwards Francis II.

John Knox and the Reformation

During all these latter reigns French influence had been paramount in Scotland, where it was seen alike in the form taken by the Legislative Assembly and the Supreme Court of Justice, in domestic architecture, and in the language, and where it was to reach its climax in the life of Mary. At the same time, from various causes, the Church of Rome had been losing its hold on Scotland. The murder of Cardinal Beaton, perpetrated in revenge for the martyrdom of Wishart, served to precipitate matters, and now John Knox, the Scottish Reformer, and perhaps the least lovable of all the great characters of native history, came to the front.

The successful champion of a purified faith and enlarged liberty of conscience, his methods were uncompromising to the verge of brutality. Scotland paid a heavy price for the unquestioned gains of the Reformation. Hitherto her Church had generally been peaceful and beneficent, but the era which we have now reached marked the commencement of something like three hundred years of bitter contention. In 1557 the advocates of Reform, who, by the way, derived the form of their Protestantism from Calvinistic France rather than from England, leagued themselves by a bond, afterwards to be known as the First Covenant, to support the new doctrine, the barons who adhered to them at the same time assuming the style of Lords of the Congregation

The queen-mother, Mary of Lorraine, acting as regent for her daughter, opposed them, and various conflicts ensued. Queen Elizabeth gave practical support to the Reformers, and, in 1560, the regent having died, the Estates formally adopted the Geneva Confession of Faith, abjured the authority of the Pope, and made the Mass a penal offence

Next year Mary returned to Scotland, to take up the reins of government, and so to assume the hardest task ever laid on a high-spirited girl. For, whereas her predecessors had found in the Church a counterpoise to the turbulence of the nobility, both Church and nobles were now opposed to her fervent Catholicism, while the distribution of forfeited Church-lands roused the cupidity of either class

Tragedy of Mary Queen of Scots

But for the Scotsman's characteristic attachment to the direct succession, she would indeed have stood little chance of holding her own, and her one hope of supremacy lay in the disagreements of the various elements of the Estates

Add to this that Mary's political difficulties were gravely complicated by those of personal temperament. In selecting Henry, Lord Darnley, the next heir to the throne, to become her second husband, she made what seemed a prudent but proved a disastrous choice. For Darnley united the faults of a spoilt boy with those of a dissolute man. Mary's infatuated patronage of an Italian musician named Rizzio soon gave offence to the Scottish nobles, some of whom, under the leadership of the Earl of Murray, a natural son of her father, had opposed her marriage.

Having induced Darnley to pledge himself to stand by them, several of these accordingly entered Holyrood Palace by night, dragged the foreign adventurer from the queen's presence, and despatched him with many wounds (March, 1566).

Mary at first dissembled her anger. But, less than a year later, the house known as the Kirk o' Field, in which Darnley lay sick, was blown up by gunpowder, his murdered body being discovered close at hand. Suspicion of complicity in the deed

at once fell on Mary, whose new favourite, the Earl of Bothwell, was believed to have contrived it Mary schemed to shelter him, and Bothwell, having evaded his trial and dissolved his marriage, became her third husband (May, 1567). They remained together barely a month. For on the barons confronting them in arms at Carberry, Mary sacrificed herself to Bothwell's safety, and after being led back to Edinburgh amid every manifestation of contumely, was confined in the island castle of Lochleven, where she was induced to sign an abdication in favour of her son Bothwell meantime escaping overseas, where some ten years later he died insane.

Long ere this, however, Mary had escaped from her prison, and having mustered an army of those who remained faithful to her, confronted Murray, who had been appointed regent, at Langside. The fortunes of the day went against her, and she fled to England, throwing herself on the protection of Elizabeth, who responded by imprisoning her. A prisoner she remained for nineteen years, and then, being accused of complicity in Babington's plot against Elizabeth, she was subjected to the mockery of a trial, condemned and beheaded (1587).

Feuds, Intrigues, and Civil War

By right of her personal fascination and her tragic history, Mary ranks as the Cleopatra of modern times. The difficulties of her position were overwhelming. Yet the worst that has been plausibly alleged against her is a guilty cognisance of the Darnley vendetta, and even this rests on no better evidence than the highly questionable Casket Letters

Upon Mary's demission, her half-brother, Murray, an able ruler but self-seeking man, became regent for the infant James VI (1567-1625). But the houses of Hamilton and Huntly, representing Mary's kin and the older religion, continued to support Mary's cause, and at the supposed instigation of the former, Murray fell by an assassin's bullet. His successor, Darnley's father, Lennox, commanded but a divided allegiance, and between the parties of the king and queen Scotland was ravaged by a civil war, in which England also took part from motives which would have been described as retributive.

Killed in a fray with the queen's party, Lennox was succeeded by Mar, who was, in his turn, succeeded by the Earl of Morton (1572). That history repeats itself is a truism, but nowhere more so than in Scotland under the Jameses. So, under James VI., we find again the long minority, the contention for the king's person, the escape, "disguised as a groom," with which we are already familiar. Intrigues were woven (Gowrie Conspiracy), confederations formed (Raid of Ruthven), favourites (Aubigny and Ochiltree) rose to power, heads fell, among them that of Morton. But for traits of disinterestedness or political enlightenment the reader seeks in vain.

By the time the king attained to man's estate, the question of episcopacy was again exercising the country. It had been revived under Mar, and both king and nobles had strong personal interest in maintaining it. But the panic inspired by the Spanish Armada (1588) provoked a revulsion of Presbyterian feeling, the Covenant was renewed, and the Scottish method of church government, by presbyteries, synods, and a General Assembly, was confirmed, though not without opposition.

Union of English and Scottish Crowns

And now James's so troubled lot was at length changed to one of enviable prosperity, for, on the death of Queen Elizabeth (1603), by right of his descent from the elder daughter of Henry VII., he succeeded to the English throne, the crowns of the neighbour kingdoms being thus united, and the long strife between them closed, as was, also, the long alliance with France. But though king and nobles derived material profit from the union, it was not so with the people, who, nevertheless, were being taught by the Reformation to think for themselves, and who about this time definitely emerged from the condition of feudal serfdom.

Drastic Policy of James VI.

Though fond of passing as a second Solomon, James was by no means without good understanding, and much of his government of Scotland was excellent. He instituted community of nationality between the two countries, and did much towards stamping out the long-established lawlessness of the Borders. He also brought drastic measures to bear upon the Highlands, with a view to bringing them into line with the civilization of the time.

Where James erred was in his determined attempt to bring the Scottish Church into conformity with that of England, by restoring bishops and church ceremonial against the express will of the nation. To his reign also belongs the inauguration of Scottish colonial enterprise by the founding of Nova Scotia.

The least attractive of his kingly race, James VI. was also the most fortunate and successful. Better had it been for Charles I. (1625-49) had this success been less, for it merely encouraged him to push assertion of the personal prerogative and

interference with the Scottish Church to a point of infatuated perversity. Having tampered with the method of electing the Lords of the Articles, or Committee of Government, he proceeded to substitute a liturgy approved by himself for the accepted Book of Common Order of John Knox, and to make other irritating changes. The reading of this liturgy provoked a tumult, and, national jealousy combining with religious conviction, raised Scotland in a general protest, called the Great Supplication, to which the king turned a deaf ear.

Disturbances due to the Covenant

An uncompromising spirit upon either side making all attempts at negotiation futile, the Covenant was renewed (1638), and events assumed a threatening aspect when the Assembly, convened at Glasgow, declined to obey the order of the King's Commissioner to disperse, and then proceeded to pass measures deposing the bishops and rejecting the liturgy. Next, the Covenant, not having yet been accepted in the north, the Tables, as the Covenanters' executive was named, resolved to enforce it, and having a brilliant general in the person of Montrose, and a body of soldiers who had learnt their business in the Thirty Years' War, they soon gained certain military advantages.

Meantime, in the south, a second army, under Alexander Leslie, had confronted at Duns the force sent by the king to subdue his contumacious subjects, and practically forced it to treat. Upon this, the Estates threw off the semblance of subservience to the throne, ratified the Acts of the Assembly, and enjoined upon all and sundry, under penalties the signing of the Covenant (June, 1640).

Roundheads versus Royalists

It was now clear that political no less than religious liberty was involved in the cause of the Scots. The war—which, from whatever aspect we regard it, was a noble one, seeking, as it did, to impose due limits upon temporal power—was carried over the Border, and brought, for the time, to a successful close by the king's conceding the terms asked. The peace was, however, brief.

The Civil War now raged in England, and by adopting the Solemn League and Covenant, the Parliamentary party gained the adherence of the Scots army, which again entered England (1644) in time to participate in the victory of Marston Moor. Meanwhile, the fickle Montrose was turning the warlike propensities of the Highlanders to brilliant account by winning back the north for the king. But this precarious warfare ended in his defeat by the younger Leslie at Philiphaugh (1645). Charles, whose position in England was hopeless, now voluntarily gave himself up to the Scots, who, after keeping him for eight months, returned him to the Parliamentarians, at the same time receiving a payment of £400,000. This somewhat sordid transaction did not, however, prevent him, while a prisoner, from entering into a secret treaty with the more moderate party in Scotland, whose endeavour to espouse his cause provoked a reaction against him among the extremists.

In his condemnation and execution the Scots, however, took no part. Nor did they hesitate to proclaim his son, Charles II. (1649-85) in his place. The new king had signed the Covenant, but his acceptance by Scotland was distasteful to the English "Independents," who now sent Cromwell northward at the head of an army which defeated Leslie at Dunbar. A second defeat at Worcester drove Charles a fugitive to the Continent, and left Scotland to the mercy of the Lord Protector, who proceeded to enforce the Legislative Union of the two countries, and to establish a stronger government than Scotland had hitherto known.

Restoration of the Monarchy

But the death of Cromwell, and the failure of his son, opened the way for General Monk's restoration of Charles Stewart (1660), who was no sooner firmly seated on the throne than he began to undo the good work done by Cromwell, by revoking international free trade, as well as almost all the concessions extorted from his father, repudiating the Covenant, re-establishing the bishops, and placing the government of Scotland under military protection in the hands of a Privy Council. And, as the heads of Montrose and Hamilton had fallen ten years earlier, so now, as if by way of compensation, fell those of Argyll and James Guthrie, a noted Covenanting divine.

Moreover, a "declaration" against the Covenant was required from all who held public offices, while 350 ministers, who refused to have their presentations confirmed by the newly-appointed bishops, were ejected from their churches, their congregations following them, and attending services held in the open.

Acts directed against Conventicles followed, and once more a religious war broke out in Scotland, the defeat at Pentland of an army of Covenanters from the west being succeeded by religious persecutions of the cruellest kind, in which instruments of torture known as the thumbikins and the "boot" played a prominent part. Had Charles understood the character of his countrymen, he would have realized the hopelessness of relying

on persecution His unscrupulous minister, Lauderdale, showed a finer political instinct when, having secured the ecclesiastical supremacy for his sovereign, he proceeded to extend successive indulgences (1669-1672) to the ejected ministers, and thus to detach the moderates from the irreconcilables.

Nevertheless, Conventicles still multiplied, notwithstanding the military force employed against them. Then reprisals, taking the form of the murder of Archbishop Sharp (1679) and of a repudiation of constituted authority at Rutherglen, led to a resumption of hostilities on a larger scale, these being inaugurated by a defeat of Claverhouse, the "despot's champion," at Drumclog, and discounted by a victory for Charles's illegitimate son, Monmouth, at Bothwell Brig.

The rebellion was now under the leadership of Cargill and Cameron, whose adherents called themselves Cameronians, and whose methods, however great the provocation received, were, in their turn, eminently provocative, as is illustrated by the Sanquhar manifesto.

Dutch William on the Throne

The slaughter of Aird's Moss (1680), and the executions which followed, passed the mantle of Cargill to James Renwick, a super-fanatic. But meantime the anomalous Test Act (1681) by which the Duke of York, now High Commissioner and himself a Catholic, pretended to penalise Catholicism, had aroused the worthier opposition of Argyll, who, compelled to seek refuge in Holland, became a centre of religious disaffection.

The accession of James VII. (1685) hurried on the catastrophe. Attendance at a Conventicle was now made a capital crime, while refusal to abjure the manifesto of the Cameronians became a ground for summary execution. The carrying out of these measures, being entrusted to Claverhouse, led to the martyrdoms of the "Christian Carrier" and the "two Margarets," gaining for the months in which these murders were perpetrated an infamous notoriety as the "Killing Time." Argyll chose this moment for a landing and marched into the Lowlands, but failing (strangely enough) to find adequate support, was captured and executed, many of his clansmen being deported.

James's infatuated desire to restore Roman Catholicism as the religion of the country was meantime arousing wider opposition, and an abrupt reversal of his policy by a succession of indulgences came too late. He was driven to flight, and William of Orange, having entered London, was waited on by a deputation of friendly Scots (1689), who prayed him to take over the government.

The acceptance of William and Mary as rulers of Scotland permanently relaxed, though it did not end, religious dissension in that country. For, though the Episcopalian "curates" were now, in their turn, ejected, and the Presbyterian religion was re-established (1690), there still remained Presbyterian malcontents. Moreover, James had still followers (Jacobites) in the country, and these, under Claverhouse, now known as Viscount Dundee, were soon in arms against William's supporters (the Whigs), over whom they gained a victory at Killiecrankie (July, 1689), dearly purchased by the death of their leader. This success was but momentary, and dissensions among the Jacobites soon brought the civil war to an end.

Blunders of the New Regime

The Highlands were then reduced, the chieftains being persuaded, by threats or bribery, to swear allegiance to the new sovereigns. But this pacification was stained by the infamous Massacre of Glencoe, by which the entire population of a valley was treacherously wiped out —a foul deed, from responsibility for which William cannot be wholly exonerated. A second incident which tended to make him unpopular was the disastrous failure of the Darien Scheme for trading with the East through America, from which he had withheld support. On the other side of the account, the educational system of Scotland, which for centuries had been in advance of that of other countries, was in this reign further improved.

Jacobite Energy and Enterprise

William's unpopularity in Scotland, together with the fact that his successor, Queen Anne, was childless, rendered expedient a further securing of the union between the two countries, which was brought about when Anne had reigned some five years (1707). By the new Articles of Union the succession to both crowns was settled on the Protestant Electress of Hanover, a granddaughter of James VI., and her descendants, while a joint Parliament, to the respective Houses of which Scotland sent sixteen peers and forty-five commoners, was, henceforth, to represent the two countries. Their commercial interests were fused, but Scotland retained her legal system unaltered, while special provision was made for securing to her the Presbyterian form of religion for all time to come.

Unpopular as the Legislative Union at first was, it was an enormous boon to Scotland, which, being now at last released from the struggle for national existence, was able to give undivided attention to the development of her national life, while the

removal of international restrictions on trade opened up a field of enterprise which she turned to the fullest account

Notwithstanding these prospective advantages, that national jealousy which is so marked a characteristic of the Scot remained unassuaged, and in 1715, the year following Anne's death, found expression in a Jacobite rising against George I., when the Earl of Mar raised the Highland clans in behalf of Anne's half-brother, James Stewart, known to English historians as the Old Pretender. Being joined by contingents from the west of Scotland under Kenmure, and from Northumberland under Forster and Derwentwater, a part of the rebel army crossed the Border and marched as far as Preston in Lancashire, where it was brought to surrender at discretion.

The Fifteen and Forty-five

Further Jacobite enterprises in 1717 and 1719, proved abortive. Disorders in Scotland, however, continued, being specially manifested in anti-malt-tax riots under George I. and in the "Porteous Mob" (1736) under his successor, when the Tolbooth was deforced and Porteous, captain of the city guard, was lynched as an act of reprisal for having ordered his men to fire on the people. In 1744 there was a further futile Jacobite attempt, but in the following year Prince Charles Edward Stewart, son of the "Old Pretender," exploited with brilliant, albeit shortlived, success such devotion to its ancient royal house as still survived in Scotland. Anachronistic from the point of view of practical politics, "The '45" is certainly the most romantic episode of post-Marian Scottish history.

Romance of the Young Pretender

Landing at Moidart, Inverness-shire, penniless, without arms and with but seven followers, in the face of dissuasion, Charles Edward raised the standard of his father at Glenfinnan (August 19), received the support of the Highland chiefs, and marched southward at the head of a constantly-growing army. Having out-manoeuvred Sir John Cope, sent to intercept his passage, he crossed the Forth, and entered Edinburgh, where on September 17 his father was proclaimed king and himself regent. His next success was a defeat of Cope, who had come south again, in a battle at Prestonpans, after which he continued to hold Court at Holyrood until November 1, when he marched south at the head of his army, capturing Carlisle, and pushing on by Preston and Manchester as far as Derby.

Charles had, however, reached the end of his tether. His officers declined to follow him farther in so hazardous an enterprise, and, much against his will, he was compelled to retreat as quickly as he had advanced.

On Falkirk Moor, January 17, 1746, he won his last victory over General Hawley, who had succeeded Cope; but the Duke of Cumberland, armed with summary powers, being now in close pursuit, left him no choice but to continue to fall back.

At Culloden Moor, near Inverness, Jacobitism made its last stand. But, though the Highlanders charged gallantly, victory was soon decided in favour of Cumberland, who in the next three months continued to carry out those ruthless punitive measures against the defenceless Highlanders which deservedly gained him the nickname of "Butcher"

Meantime, Prince Charlie led the life of a hunted man, enduring great hardships and experiencing most romantic adventures, in one of which a beautiful young Highland lady, Flora Macdonald, risked her life to preserve his. A price was set upon his head, but no Highlander was found so base or wanting in loyalty as to betray him. At length (September 20) he was picked up by a French frigate and carried back to France. His memory lingered long in Scotland and inspired her sweetest songs. But the remainder of his life was in sorry contrast to those gallant days, and his death in 1788, and the celibacy of his brother, Cardinal York, closed the line of the royal Stewarts.

End of Scotland's Separate History

The measures taken to prevent a recurrence of the '45 did much to efface Scotland's remaining national characteristics. But the Anglicisation of the Highlands was accompanied not only by the boons of higher civilization and great commercial prosperity, but also by a remarkable outburst of intellectual energy—Burns and Scott in poetry, Hume and Reid in philosophy, Robertson in history, Adam Smith in political economy, Watt in engineering, and Wilkie and Raeburn in painting, and a host of minor lights, raising their country to a higher position among the nations than she had hitherto dreamed of.

Henceforth, if she had little individual history, the annals of the Scottish Church still continued to exemplify the peculiarities of the national temper. The right of patrons, or local landed proprietors, to appoint parish ministers, was now the bone of contention. While expressly discountenanced by the First and Second Books of Discipline, and formally abolished by an Act of 1690, this privilege had been restored after the Union and though generally wisely exercised, it was liable to very grave abuse.

In 1834, the Non-Intrusion party succeeded in passing their Veto Act in the General Assembly, providing for the rejection by the presbytery of any pastor who should be intruded upon a congregation against its will. In the same year the validity of this power was tested in the secular courts by the celebrated Auchterarder Case, when the Veto Act was pronounced illegal. Rather than consent to abide by this decision, more than a third of the Scottish clergy resigned their livings and formed the Free Church, which at once became a powerful rival of the Established Church.

The Disruption was the "last bout in a conflict between Church and State whose acrid controversies had filled three centuries." From that time forward the movement of the churches has been towards reunion. Thus, in 1847, the United Presbyterian Church was formed out of dissenting bodies hitherto segregated. In 1900 that body was united with the Free Church under the name of the United Free Church, while the Church of Scotland Act of 1921 marks a further step in the direction of the union.

Of the country at large during the same period, it may justly be said that it affords a unique spectacle of grand energies, heretofore largely dissipated in turbulence and controversy, being successfully diverted to business enterprise and the profitable arts of life. Scotland has had many more romantic, more picturesque, days than the present. But she was never greater than to-day.

SCOTLAND: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Divided geographically into three sections, the Highlands in the north, the Lowlands in the centre and the Southern Uplands. Northern part of country much eroded by glacial action, and steep glens, narrow lakes and fiords are features of much of the landscape, particularly on the west coast. There are a number of islands including the Shetlands, Orkneys, and Hebrides. Highest point is the summit of Ben Nevis, 4,406 feet above sea-level which occurs in the Grampian Mountains, this range dividing the Highlands from the Lowlands. Lowlands district includes the valleys of the Tay, lower Clyde and Forth. Southern Uplands form part of central elevation of Great Britain continued into England in the Pennine Hills.

Principal rivers are the Tay, 118 miles; Spey, 110 miles; the Dee and the Forth. Chief lakes, or lochs, are Lomond, Leven, Katrine, Earn, and Tay. Area of fertile land comparatively small, and there are more than 2,000,000 acres of heathlands known as deer forests. Considerable part of population live round the coasts, especially on the west. Total area, about 30,400 square miles, with an estimated population of 4,904,000.

Government

Scotland has a secretary and separate governmental departments for agriculture, health and education, while the British Board of Trade and Home Office have administrative authority in the Kingdom. At the union of England and Scotland in 1603 and the union of their parliaments in 1707, the country retained much of its government system and all legal procedure. Counties have each their council, whose members are elected by local suffrage for three years, lord-lieutenants, sheriff, procurator-fiscal and bench of magistrates. Counties subdivided into districts, sub-districts and parishes.

Commerce and Industries

Scotland possesses valuable coalfields in Lanarkshire, Ayrshire, Midlothian, and Fife, and iron ore is also obtained in or near these districts. The existence of coal and iron deposits near the Clyde have encouraged a large industrial centre round Glasgow, shipbuilding and ironworks being carried on and chemicals and machinery manufactured. Stirling has iron foundries, Dundee is the centre for jute, linen and hemp manufacture and marmalade, and linoleum is made at Kirkcaldy. Whisky distilling is carried on in many districts, textiles are made at Dunfermline, and Perth has celebrated dye-works. Excluding coastwise vessels 2,637,000 tons net of shipping arrived with cargo and in ballast at Glasgow during 1920, 849,000 at Leith, and 331,000 at Dundee for same year. In 1922 the produce of the Scottish fisheries were valued at about £3,950,000.

Communications

There are some 3,800 miles of railway line and over 180 miles of canal, including the Caledonian (60½ miles). Principal railways radiate from Edinburgh, Glasgow, and Perth to Inverness, Aberdeen and Dundee to the north and to Carlisle, Berwick and the English systems to the south.

Religion and Education

Established Church is Presbyterian, governed by a General Assembly of ministers and laity elected from various presbyteries or groups of parishes. There is also the United Free Church of Scotland, Free Church, and Episcopal Church of Scotland. There are two Roman Catholic Archbishoprics and various other denominations are represented. Elementary education is supervised by authorities who are elected and work in connexion with school management committees which represent parents, teachers, and the authorities.

Education is obligatory up to fifteen years of age, but children over thirteen may leave school on certain conditions. In 1921 over 3,000 elementary schools were in receipt of grants. Nursery schools are provided for children between ages of two and five years. Free intermediate and secondary education is provided for and universities are established at Edinburgh, St. Andrews, Aberdeen and Glasgow. These are assisted by a trust with an annual income of about £100,000 divided equally between students and maintenance and enlargement of the foundations. The Scottish Board of Agriculture makes grants for the purposes of agricultural research and training.

Chief Towns

Burgh of Edinburgh, capital (estimated population 420,500), Glasgow (1,038,000), Dundee, (167,500), Aberdeen (158,500), Paisley (85,000), Greenock (82,000), Motherwell (69,000), Clydebank (47,500), Coatbridge (44,000), Dunfermline (41,000), Kirkcaldy (39,500), Hamilton (39,500), Kilmarnock (36,000), Ayr (36,000), Falkirk (33,000), Perth (33,000).

GYPSY DANCE IN PROGRESS IN A SUNLIT CORNER OF A COURTYARD OF SOUTHERN SERBIA

The countries of Central Europe appear to have suited the taste of the gypsies, for they are to be found here in larger numbers than in any other part of the world. Their original dialect, strongly savouring of Hindu structure, has been influenced by the languages of all the various lands through which they have passed, for they are quick to absorb many of the words and ways of their adopted country, though they insist in keeping themselves apart from its national life and laws, steadfastly adhering to the vagrant life beliefs, superstitions and propensities of their wandering forebears

Photo, Weal La Le

Serbia

I. National Life & Character of the Serbs

By Hamilton Fyfe

Special Correspondent in the Balkans during the Great War

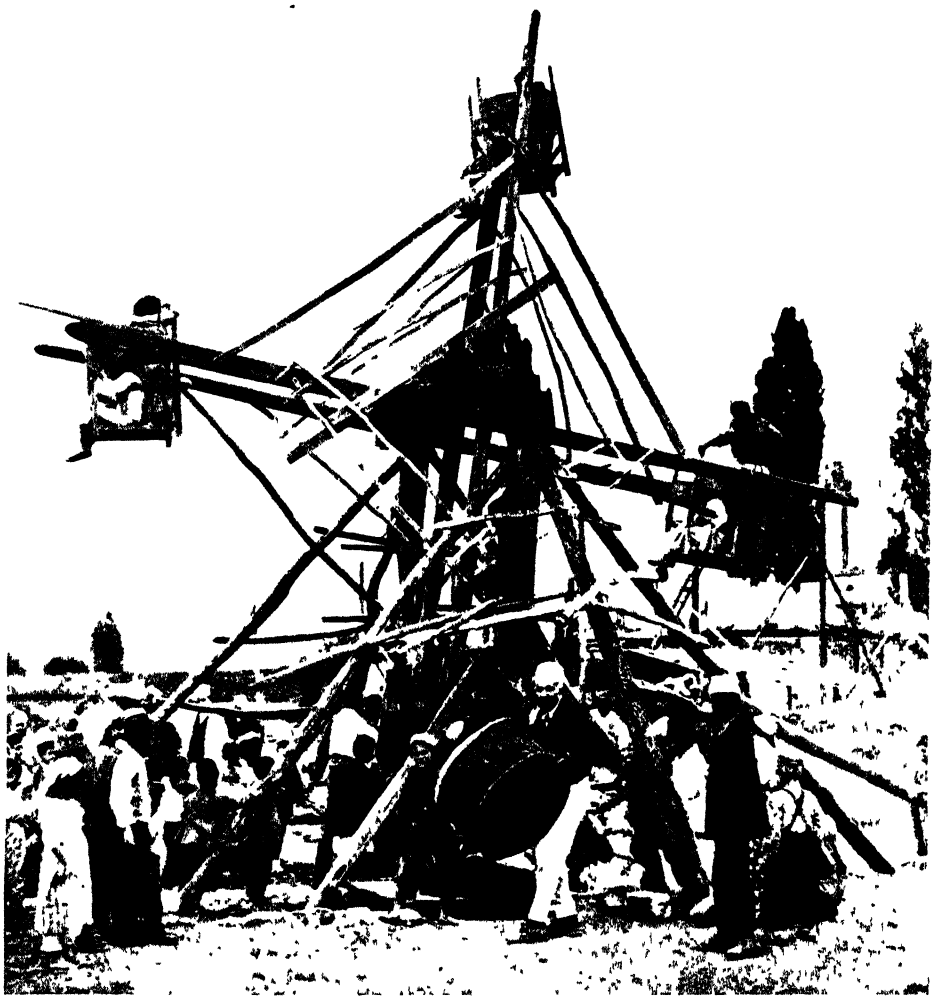
In this chapter the writer deals specially with the Serbs, whose country, as a result of the Great War, has become part of what is known as the Kingdom of the Serbs, Croats, and Slovenes. This kingdom also includes Dalmatia, Croatia, Slavonia, and Slovenia, countries dealt with in the succeeding chapter; and Montenegro, which is described under its own heading

SERBIA is a country of peasants. There is no hereditary upper class, nor is there any middle class to speak of. The number of those who wear European clothes, who have received a European education, and who occupy themselves with "white-collar jobs" is very small. Nine-tenths of the people are farmers, small farmers, who get out of the soil what to them is a comfortable living, and who have no desire to do any more than this.

Every writer on Serbia points out that if the peasant farms were better cultivated, if their owners worked harder, if they took up with modern methods of agriculture, they might become rich. But they do not want to become rich. They are a contented race. As long as they have plenty of simple food to eat and enough beer or wine and plum brandy to drink, as long as they can feel themselves the equals of anybody and enjoy life, they ask for nothing more. Writers about Serbia discuss also, with tables of figures and diagrams of imports and exports, the possibilities of developing industry in the country. Industry means manufactures. Of these the Serbians have very few. They make rugs and carpets in the town of Pirot. They make cigarettes in vast quantities. There are rope-walks at Leskovatz. But factory labour is almost unknown. Whether it is in consequence of this that there are no poor in Serbia I will not venture to decide. I rather fancy there is some connexion between these two aspects of Serbian life.

CAPABILITY AND COMELINESS
Among the women of South Serbia are many fine physical types which, though not actually handsome, are suggestive of a certain quiet pride and unbounded energy and endurance
Photo, Sir Harry Johnston

On a hundred pounds a year a family could be well-off before the Great War. A comfortable cottage could be built for twenty pounds. Food was very cheap. Except in Belgrade, there were next to no opportunities for spending money. The climate is not severe, although the weather is sometimes very hot in summer and



COUNTRY CARNIVAL IN AN OLD MOSLEM SECTION OF LOWER SERBIA

In the land of Serbs, Croats, and Slovenes, fairs and feast days are welcomed with enthusiasm by the village communities, and Moslem and Christian join wholeheartedly in the amusements. Swings, big wheels, wrestling, and jumping are numbered among the popular pastimes, and during the evening dancing, eating, and drinking take place at the neighbours' houses

Photo, Meri La Roy

sometimes very cold in winter. The soil is rich It produces excellent crops of maize, wheat, and barley. Two mowings of hay can be counted upon. Tobacco can be cultivated with profit. Fruit and vegetables are given away, and those who are fond of bacon can eat it at every meal.

For the chief national occupation of Serbia is pig-keeping. Far back in the mists of what is styled History, but which might more correctly be called Legend, we can discern the chieftains of the Serbs fleeing from their enemies, Turks or Bulgarians, and driving herds of pigs before them In no country, save Ireland, are so many pigs to be seen as in Serbia Which brings me to a reflection that has often passed through my mind: that the Serbs and the Irish are in several particulars alike.

Their history is a living thing to them. They will not allow any of their glorious deeds or any bad turn done them to be forgotten. Their folk-lore is exceptionally vivid because it is based mostly on national traditions. Although it has been affected by waves of Jewish,

Gypsy, Celtic, Moslem, Greek, Roman, and Turkish invasion or immigration, it has remained distinctively Serbian.

When the day's work is over, and the evening meal done, the peasants are often to be found sitting round some old man who tells them stories of the past, while the "gusla," the Serbian one-string fiddle, contributes a mournful wild accompaniment.

The Serbians, also like the Irish, have been cursed by their politicians, who make their living out of politics and have made as great a mess of the country's affairs as was possible. If the people had not been, on the whole, sensible and law-abiding and more interested in their own business than in the strife of parties, each striving to secure the spoils of office, the mess would have been worse still. Unfortunately, the spoils were so widely distributed that a considerable part of the nation was forced to take part in political conflict.

When a ministry went out of office, all the officials whom it had appointed lost their places. There were always in the country, therefore, a large number of the more active-minded kind of

UNOSTENTATIOUS DWELLING-HOUSE ON THE KOSSOVO PLAIN

Such primitive homes are not infrequently to be seen in Old Serbia, where ancient customs and beliefs still sway the peasantry. The long years of oppression under Ottoman rule taught the Serbs to conceal whatever wealth they happened to possess; this habit became a second nature, and in many instances the unpretentious mud hut is the only dwelling the Serb is accustomed to or desires

Photo, E. A. Payne

WANDERING MUSICIANS HELPING TO MAKE MERRY AT A FEAST-DAY OF THE PEASANTRY IN OLD SERBIA

Nomads of many nationalities are scattered about the territory of Yugo-Slavia Gypsies form the largest element, and there are also pastoral tribes who depend on their flocks of black sheep for a livelihood Itinerant pedlars and musicians roam the country, gathering their sustenance from among the peasantry Seldom do these nomads meet with a cold reception, for Serbian hospitality is proverbial and the poorest host will greet the traveller with the words "The house is God's and yours, and we shall find something to eat, be it but two potatoes with love and the goodwill that cannot be divided"

Photo E A Payne

MAKING AGRICULTURAL IMPLEMENTS IN THE MARKET PLACE AT MITROVITZA, OLD SERBIA

The quaint small town of Mitrovitza is situated on the Sitnitze a southern tributary of the Ibar, rivers that form the northern and eastern boundaries of the Kossovo Plain Mitrovitza witnessed many a melancholy spectacle during the Great War, but town life has once more resumed the peaceful aspect of normal times, natives loll and loiter about the narrow streets and chat with the country folk who barter their produce, or the husbandmen who come to the market to invest in new wooden plough or harrow and delight to watch these growing into shape under the skilful hands of their makers

Photo E A Payne

people striving to make the opposition parties hateful to the electors, and an equally large number doing their best to bring contempt upon the government in office, so that they might be appointed to administrative posts.

The politicians were not, as a rule, men whose characters commanded respect, or who were moved by any higher impulse than self-interest. Serbia, therefore, which might in better hands have been a country without political friction, became the scene of bitter party warfare, degenerating sometimes into open fighting between the partizans

But under all governments there existed in the more remote country districts bands of brigands who used politics merely as an excuse for their method of earning a living by robbery and sometimes by violence. They were as humane as bandits can be, and they had some sense of humour. Once they captured the Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs, and let him go after drinking and talking with him for half an hour. He said it was one of the most entertaining half-hours he had ever known. In the Balkans brigands are known as "Komitadjis," which means "members of committees" Thus the nomenclature of politics is the same as with the British, though the "Komitadjis" use bombs instead of arguments to convert political opponents

Serbia resembles the Ireland of the past also in this, that the national Church is the Church of the entire nation Ninety-eight out of every

MEMBERS OF THE CROATIAN COMMUNITY OF YUGO-SLAVIA

Croatia, with Slavonia, once formed an annexe of the Kingdom of Hungary, but is now a portion of Yugo Slavia The Croats are closely akin to the Serbs and speak the Serbo Croatian language, but use the Latin alphabet instead of the Cyrillic, and are Roman and not Greek Catholic They are a good natured, hospitable people, and have many quaint national customs and costumes

CLASSIC GATEWAY IN SPALATO, DIOCLETIAN'S CITY BY THE SEA

Spalato takes its name from the fact that the Roman Emperor Diocletian built himself a "palatium" or palace there where he hoped to be safe from the disturbances of his time. Much of the older part of the town lies within the palace walls. Behind, encircling hills enhance the view, and in front a little bay opens out of the Adriatic.

hundred Serbs are Orthodox. Their Church is affiliated to the Greek, Russian, Bulgarian, and Rumanian. They are Eastern instead of Western, Christians, taking the forms of their religion from Byzantium and not from Rome. As the Roman Catholic priesthood of Ireland has been prominent in all national movements, so the "popes" of Serbia have always been identified with the struggles of the people against foreign rule. Every priest is a "pope" (the word means father), and the Serbian popes are not so much a class apart as the Russian. They are more respected by their flocks, and often take the lead in local affairs.

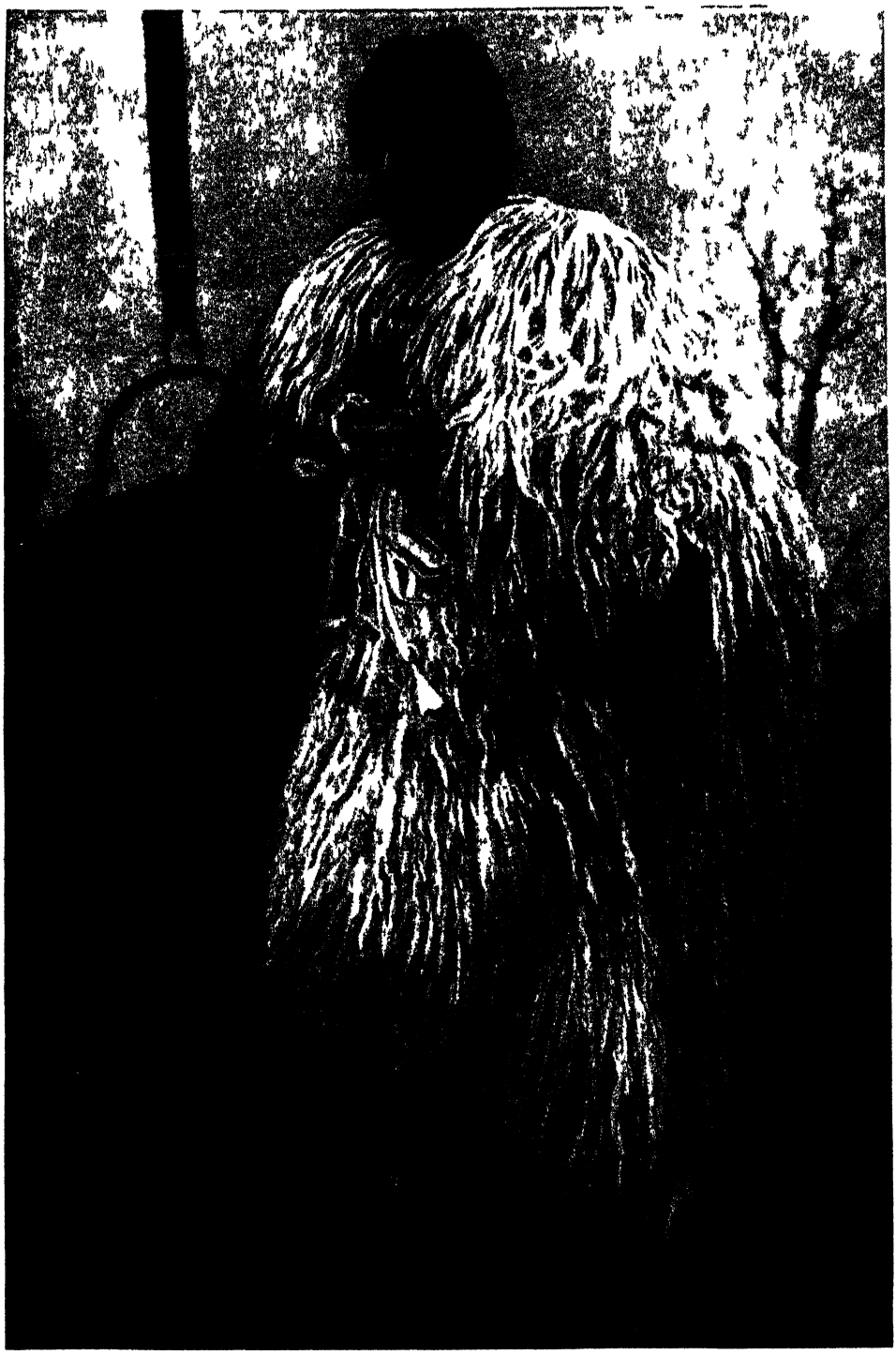
Stories are told against them such as that which represents the world at one period being divided into two parishes only, south-east and north-west. There were, therefore, only two priests. When they met, one would ask, "How art thou, brother in Christ?", and the other would invariably reply: "Well enough, thank God, but I should be better if the world were only one parish and I were the only priest."

They are made fun of for looking after their fees, as in the tale of the priest who was drowned. The man who told the widow about it said he did everything he could to save the drowning man. "I leaned over the water and called out again and again, 'Give me you hand, father. Give me your hand.'" To which the widow replied, weeping, "God's judgement be upon you. You ought to have called to him, 'Take my hand!' You ought to have known that priests are not accustomed to give. They always take." But there is no real ill-feeling behind these satirical anecdotes.

All the parish clergy must be married, and some of their wives turn out odd helpmates for priests. There was one not long ago who was backed by her

ON THE ROAD TO MARKET IN THE COUNTRYSIDE OF YUGO-SLAVIA

Throughout the Serbian lands the woman has her full share of work. She is the first to rise in the morning, the last to lie down to sleep at night; during the day she has little or no respite; much manual labour falls to her lot, and she may often be seen guiding a bullock-wain or plough the while a burly yokel loiters tranquilly in the background



WARM WINTER COSTUME OF A SLAVONIAN FARMER

The valleys of Slavonia are extremely fertile and agriculturists are successful in producing fine crops of grain, fruit, grapes, hemp, and flax Slavonian farmers are a stalwart race, energetic and independent, the land they tend is generally their own property, little outside labour is required, for neighbours willingly lend their services should the farmer and his family be unable to cope with their crops

MAHOMEDAN GREENGROCER OF MOSTAR, CHIEF TOWN OF HERZEGOVINA

There are large numbers of Mahomedans in Herzegovina and much of the local trade is in their hands Mostar was transferred from what was the Austro Hungarian province of Bosnia It lies upon the banks of the Narenta river and many mosques surround the Greek cathedral The neighbouring country, well watered and fertile produces a number of vegetables especially cucumbers and the vender usually has his baskets and sacks overflowing

DISPLAY OF FEMININE FINERY AFTER THE MORNING SERVICE IN A VILLAGE CHURCH OF YUGO-SLAVIA

The country now familiar as Yugo-Slavia is the home of several distinct peoples, speaking separate languages, and differing from each other in their modes of living and their religious beliefs Costumes naturally vary as much as customs, and it often suffices to have but one glimpse of headdress or ornament in order to ascertain the native districts of their wearers Bright colours are in vogue throughout the country, and the Sa¹ bath day, or a gala day, brings them all to view

husband to drink against any officer in the Serbian Army! It is no doubt the fact that the clergy are on the same level as the people which accounts for the Church having so much influence and for its keeping the nation together as it has in many critical hours.

The Orthodox ritual is not in the speech of the present day, but in Church Slavonic, which corresponds to the Latin ritual of the Roman Catholic Church in Ireland. Neither is understanded of the people. The music in Serbian churches is usually good, and it will probably be considered by most as another point in their favour that there is not always, or even usually, a sermon. On the other hand, the popes often, like Irish priests, make speeches to their congregations on some topic of the day. As the advice and teaching of the priests are thus apt to be more practical

HORSE AND HUNTER SHARE A SHEEPSKIN COAT

Like ancient armour the huge sheepskin coat of this Slavonian hunter protects both horse and rider with its inside fleece. In the mountainous districts wild animals are still to be encountered by the persevering hunter, while goats can be stalked among the higher peaks and deer shot in the woodlands Smaller game, hares, and rabbits are seldom considered worthy quarry

FINISHING TOUCHES TO THE SUNDAY TOILET OF A YOUTHFUL SERB

Not far from Belgrade lies the little village of Kupinovo; a pleasant spot, inhabited by an industrious and attractive peasantry. The women are handsome and sturdily built, and, when household duties are done, spend much time in the fields, tilling, sowing, and reaping, or tending their flocks. The headdress, usually worked in gorgeous colours, is the prerogative of the married woman

than ideal, no one will be surprised at the emptiness of the Serbian churches, except on the great festivals, Good Friday, Easter Day, Whit Sunday, and on the anniversaries of famous events in the national history. Serbs consider their church more as a patriotic institution which holds the country together than as a religious establishment for purely spiritual ends.

Possibly this is due in some indirect fashion to the same cause which accounts for the absence of a Serbian aristocracy and the very slow growth of a middle class. Aristocracies grew up out of feudalism. Under the feudal system the land was held by a few men (the nobles). The mass of people were landless (the serfs). The nobles allowed the serfs to cultivate land and to live round their castles for protection, and in return the serfs had to be ready to turn out and fight whenever they were called upon, either to defend their masters' territory, or to attack that of some neighbouring people. In most Western countries this system decided the structure of society which still remains more or less on an aristocratic and proletarian basis. In Serbia there never was feudalism. The land never got into the hands of a small minority. Therefore there was not a nobility. The unit was the family or

DALMATIAN PEASANT GIRLS OF THE ISLE OF ULBO

In the midst of the archipelago that litters the Adriatic from the Gulf of Fiume in the north nearly to Ragusa in the south lies the little Isle of Ulbo Though somewhat off the tourists' track it has a busy port which gives harbour to the inter island shipping that carries the wine, olives, and fish for which Dalmatia is famed The full-skirted costume is one of the prevailing styles

DALMATIAN HOUSEWIFE GATHERING ORANGES ON THE ISLAND OF ULBO

The hardy fisherfolk who inhabit Dalmatia on the Adriatic coast have little difficulty in procuring a livelihood, for, besides the extensive fisheries, Mediterranean fruit trees grow abundantly, and wines, olive oil, and maraschino—a cordial distilled from fermented cherries—are produced, all helping towards the support of the population of the mainland and the adjacent islands, including Ulbo

PEASANTRY OF RAGUSA QUENCHING THEIR THIRST AT A FOUNTAIN

Surrounded by a wall with numerous towers, the old city of Ragusa, a seaport of Dalmatia, lies on the shores of the Adriatic. City life centres round the Placa, or Corso, which was once an arm of the sea and intersects the whole town. At its east end rises the Guard House, in the hoary walls of which nestles the handsome and much-frequented old fountain seen above

group of families, the "zadruga." This, however, only comes into prominence in Serbian history during the Middle Ages. Its origin is traced by some authorities to the taxation which was then laid upon heads of families or upon houses. This taxation made it advantageous to have as many people as possible living under one head or in one house.

Even now one comes across in parts of Serbia vast, shapeless dwellings containing as many rooms as will house not far off a hundred souls. One can see how these rooms have been added from time to time. Many of them are merely lean-to shelters. As each young man of the "zadruga" married he built on his room and brought his bride along. So the payment of taxes was evaded.

It was a bad system in a military sense, for there was no means of compelling the people to fight, as the feudal barons could compel their serfs. That is why Serbia was so often overrun by its neighbours and has had so sad a history. The people were patriotic up to a point. They drank in their country's traditions as they sat in the hall of the "zadruga," listening as children to songs and legends of past glories. But they had no compact and disciplined military framework. When a man had

From the Editor's Desk—continued

comparatively few people realize that in fact Siberia is a land of infinite potentialities, almost a Land of Promise.

卐

The Other Side of the Shield

THUS Mr. Julius Price's account of Siberia as he has seen it with his own eyes will very likely surprise many readers. Had this vast area lain in Canadian or American territory it would long ago have been one of the world's granaries, principal stock-raising regions, and perhaps its chief source of mineral wealth. In its immense forests, whose timber could yield enough paper-making material to supply generations, there is a wild fauna to employ innumerable hunters, trappers, and fur-traders. And besides all these material interests there are fine towns in which an intelligent and cultured social life is carried on. Traveller, artist, and author, Mr. Price has viewed Siberia from end to end, and has written about it with a note of enthusiasm warranted by his knowledge.

卐

Sir George Macartney

TO describe Sin-Kiang, often known as Chinese Turkistan, I have been fortunate in enlisting the pen of Sir George Macartney. Son of Sir Halliday Macartney, for many years counsellor and English secretary to the Chinese Legation in London, Sir George Macartney inherited an interest in Eastern people and things, and entered the service of the Government of India in 1889, being at once employed on special duty with the Sikkim Field Force, 1889-90, and then as Agent of the Indian Government for Chinese affairs in Turkistan. It was in 1890, during his tenure of this appointment, that he made the acquaintance of the Swedish explorer, Dr. Sven Hedin, then paying his first visit to Kashgar, and in his book, "Through Asia," describing the journey he afterwards made across the continent, that distinguished traveller gratefully records the help and hospitality which Mr. Macartney, as he then was, extended to him. "He had had a first-rate training," Dr. Sven Hedin says, "and spoke fluently the principal languages of Europe and the Orient, being especially distinguished in Chinese. In fact, he was too good for his post. He was capable of rendering his country substantial services in a more distinguished sphere of action."

Sir GEORGE MACARTNEY

NOTABLE among the substantial services which Sir George did render later was his work on the Anglo-Russian Pamir Boundary Commission, receiving the thanks of the British Government for his part in that difficult and most delicate matter. Thereafter, from 1910-18, he was British Consul-General at Kashgar. His later rewards for meritorious work included the thanks of the Government of India and of the Kashgar Durbar, and his creation as a Knight of the Order of the Indian Empire.

卐

Forthcoming Colour Plates

MY readers have so often expressed, both in correspondence to this office and in conversations, reports of which have reached me, their kind appreciation of the special sections in full colour which have already been published, that they will, I am sure, be more than pleased with the eight plates in colour illustrating Spanish life which we are publishing in Part 43, with which Volume VII begins.

卐

THESE are all carefully selected photographs, and most of them have not previously appeared in any publication in this country. A country so full of colour and sunlight as Spain urgently called for representation on colour plates, and although I have other colour sections in hand, all considerations of the extra expense involved were put on one side. Of course, as in the case of other colour sections as well as in the ordinary black-and-white illustrations, no pains have been spared to secure the fidelity to life which has made the volumes of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS a standard of reliability and usefulness to teacher and artist as well as to the ordinary reader.

卐

Service to Art and Craft

CONFIRMATION of its usefulness for two widely different purposes reached me only within the last few days. A well-known sculptor, commissioned to decorate new offices for a commercial firm dealing largely in African produce, selected as subjects for three of his medallions some native heads of which photographs appeared in these pages, and he contemplates adapting for a frieze the photograph that appears in page 709 of Kikuyu warriors and girls pairing for a dance. The other purpose for which I heard of the work being specially consulted was for suggestions for a costume to be worn at a fancy dress ball at which the lady aspired to win a prize for a dress that should be at once becoming and unmatched in the assembly.

Part 42 PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS will be on sale everywhere Tuesday, October 9

SAGAMAN.—One of the most primitive of all story-tellers, the Sagaman delighted our Viking ancestors with his tales of prowess and adventure

JONGLEUR.—In the Age of Chivalry, the Jongleur wandered from Castle to Castle, telling the Ladies in their bowers and the Knights at their feasting, marvellous tales of bravery, love and romance

SCHEHERAZADE.—The famous Queen of Arabia who prolonged her life from night to night by telling of wonderful tales of the Arabian Nights

TOLSTOY.—The great Russian reformer, idealist and novelist, famous for his fearless courage, power and sincerity

DICKENS.—The immortal novelist of London life, creator of Mr. Pickwick, Little Nell, Oliver Twist, Mrs Gamp, Mr Micawber.

"Tell me a Story"—

The Cry of Humanity throughout the Ages.

THE art of the Story-Teller brings you the knowledge of strange lands, vivid emotions, great deeds. Like a magic carpet it carries you away wherever and whenever you will, giving you, not only the dry bones of historical fact, but men and women in their habit as they lived and as they live.

It keeps you in touch with the wide kingdom of thought and imagination. It lifts you clear of the monotony of your daily occupation, and transports you into a world thrilling with passion and drama, beautiful with the visions of the lover and the artist. And here is your opportunity to get the world's greatest Story-Tellers to practise this art for you, to tell you in your own home the tales that have made them immortal. Write to-day for particulars of

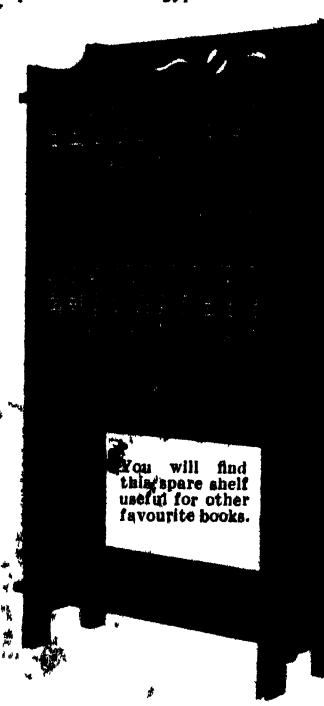
The Masterpiece Library of Short Stories

20 superb volumes containing the 1,000 best short stories of all nations and centuries, selected by a Board of the most eminent critics and writers of the day.

General Editor J. A. HAMMERTON

Read in them the marvellous tales of love and intrigue told 4,000 years ago in the sacred walled cities of China, and in the palaces of the Egyptian Pharaohs.

Read the dark stories of medieval Italy, stories of poison and murder and feud; real original contemporary documents which no Grand Guignol thrill can rival. Read the splendid stories of old Scandinavia, of Spain and Portugal, and the gorgeous Courts of France. Read the work of Victor Hugo, de Maupassant, Maeterlinck, d'Annunzio. Read the 3 volumes of American stories, by such writers as O. Henry, Jack London. Read the stories of Ireland and Scotland; stories by H. G. Wells, Galsworthy, Anthony Hope, W. W. Jacobs, Boyd Cable, Stephen McKenna, Alec Waugh. This collection [illegible] indeed—the best stories by [illegible] in the world, and end[illegible]time. If you were to [illegible] very day, it would [illegible] to finish these 20 vol[illegible] would want to begin a[illegible]



Write for the FREE B[illegible]

Do not miss the chance of a[illegible] incomparable and [illegible] Library for your [illegible] own.

Send a [illegible] of copy, [illegible] "Peoples [illegible] All Nations" [illegible] tiquel Road, Farringdon Ltd., [illegible] Street, [illegible] free A[illegible] [illegible] of the [illegible] of stories [illegible] has ever [illegible], will be sent you post free by return.

[illegible] and published every alternate Tuesday by the Proprietors, The Amalgamated Press (1922), Ltd., The Fleetway House, Farringdon [illegible], E.C. 4. Sole Agents for South Africa: The Central News Agency, Ltd. Sole Agents for Australasia: Messrs. Gordon & Gotch, Ltd. Canada: The Imperial News Co., Ltd. (Canada). Subscription Rates: Inland and Abroad, 1s. 8d. per copy. September 23th, 192[illegible]

One More Volume to Come—Bind Vol. VI. N

42 PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS

Edited by J.A.Hammerton

BACK NUMBERS OF 'PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS' CAN STILL BE HAD

Contents of this Part

SERBIA I.	Life and Character of the Serbs	16 *Photographs*	Hamilton Fyfe
II.	Other Branches of the Slav Family	9 *Photographs*	Anthony Dell
III.	Story of the New Balkan State	1 *Illustration*	Anthony Dell
SIAM I.	A Land of Peace and Progress	21 *Photographs*	W. A. Graham
II.	Story of "the Land of the Free"	2 *Photographs*	W. A. Graham
SIBERIA—Its Peoples and Possibilities		13 *Photographs*	Julius M. Price
SIN-KIANG—Mongols & Moslems of Turkistan		23 *Photographs*	Sir George Macartney

PHOTOGRAVURE SECTION · IN NEW SERBIA WITH ITS DIVERSE RACES *(16 Photographs)*

COLOUR PLATE: New Serbia in Becoming Workaday Costume

From the Editor's Desk

THE FLEETWAY HOUSE, FARRINGDON STREET
LONDON E.C 4

THIS Part of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS completes the sixth volume, and I desire once again to draw the attention of regular subscribers to the advertisements on the other pages of the cover setting forth the terms upon which the publishers are prepared to carry out the work of binding for anyone who cannot conveniently get this done in his own locality.

卐

Safe Bind, Safe Find

IT must now be apparent to everyone that the promises made at the outset of publication have been abundantly fulfilled, and that this work, when completed, will rank far above anything of the kind ever before produced. To omit to bind the separate Parts as each volume is completed is to invite disaster; inevitably they will become soiled; very likely they will get lost; in either event perfection will be marred. And while it is true that back numbers can still be procured, the expense of buying them might quite likely exceed that of binding the Parts first obtained on subscription. On all counts, then, subscribers should avail themselves of the publishers' offer and avoid all risk of spoiling what should be a possession of permanent value through dilatoriness or reluctance to spend the few shillings required.

卐

Contents of Part 43

SPACE for editorial notes is restricted on this occasion, and the contents of the present Part may be left to speak for themselves. Their range is so wide—from Near to Far East—that they certainly do not lack diversity. In Part 43 two countries only will be dealt with, yet the subject matter has to be divided into five chapters in order to conform to the scheme of the work. Life in South Africa is described by Mr. Hamilton Fyfe, who has intimate knowledge of all the constituent provinces of the Union, and the history of that rich British possession is ably summarised by Mr. Basil Worsfold, whose recently published "Sir Bartle Frere" confirms his position as an authority on South Africa. The many people who subscribe to "P.A.N." because of its educational value should make a point of increasing the knowledge obtained from its pages by reading this new book by Mr. Worsfold.

卐

Our Spanish Colour Section

THE remainder of Part 43 is occupied by three chapters on Spain. The first—descriptive—chapter on the kingdom itself is written by Mr. Hamilton Fyfe, and the second—historical—chapter by Mr. Edward Wright. This is followed by a chapter outlining the rise and fall of Spain's vast colonial empire, and giving some account of its remaining colonial possessions. The notable feature of these chapters is the beauty of the illustrations which accompany them, many of the photographs reproduced in black and white being of exceptional charm, while, as already announced, there will be eight pages of photographs reproduced in colours.

卐

THESE colour sections are deservedly so popular that despite the really great expense involved I have arranged for the production of three more, Parts 45, 46, and 47. The first section will illustrate Tunis, and the other two will depict Red Indian tribes and the Pueblo and other Indians of Arizona, New Mexico, and other regions of the United States of American. Of these more anon.

The entire contents of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS are protected by copyright in all countries signatory to the Berne Convention
The literary and most of the pictorial contents are copyrighted in the United States of America

had enough of fighting, he went home. Even the leader who is most famous in Serbian history, Karageorge, or Black George, the founder of the Karageorgevitch family, which is now on the throne, threw up the sponge after he had fought Turkey for eight years. He was disappointed, it is true, by the failure of the Russian Tsar to keep his promise to help Serbia to break away from Turkey altogether. But Black George's desertion of the cause of liberty was a bitter grief to his countrymen.

It is only during the last twenty years that Serbia has had a modernised military system with compulsory service with the colours for two years, and after that service in the first, second, and third classes of the reserve until the age of fifty. Her troops fought well in the Balkan War, which at last gave them victory over the Turk, and in the Great War they distinguished themselves on many battlefields, though their losses were appalling.

The Serbian officer is often a well-educated and intelligent man, talking French or German, perhaps both, and knowing Russian, too, because it is so like Serbian.

The Army fell into discredit abroad because it made the revolution of 1903, in which the degenerate and dissolute King Alexander and his disreputable Queen Draga were assassinated with repulsive barbarity. But those who were shocked by this act, now admitted to be necessary and just, were not the Serbian people, who had suffered under Alexander's misgovernment and under the weak, tyrannical rule of his father

BRIDAL PARAPHERNALIA OF BARANYA, NORTH YUGO-SLAVIA

Among the rural festivals of Baranya none affords so much merriment as the marriage feast. The preceding matrimonial ceremonies are varied and permeated with native tradition, but material considerations influence the young yokel less than formerly, and pretty faces and robust figures never fail to attract a suitor, even though there be no substantial dowry with them

Copyrighted, 1922, by The Amalgamated Press (1922), Limited

RICH AND VARIED RAIMENT IN VOGUE IN THE USKUB DISTRICT

As one views the intricate designs of these Macedonian costumes, one can but marvel at the infinite patience and skill which could produce such exquisite pieces of ornamental needlework The somewhat ponderous costume on the right may be seen at Uskub in both summer and winter and would certainly require a sturdy frame to carry it with any degree of comfort

Photos, L G Popoff

Milan, whose quarrels with his wife Natalie were the scandal and the joke of all Europe

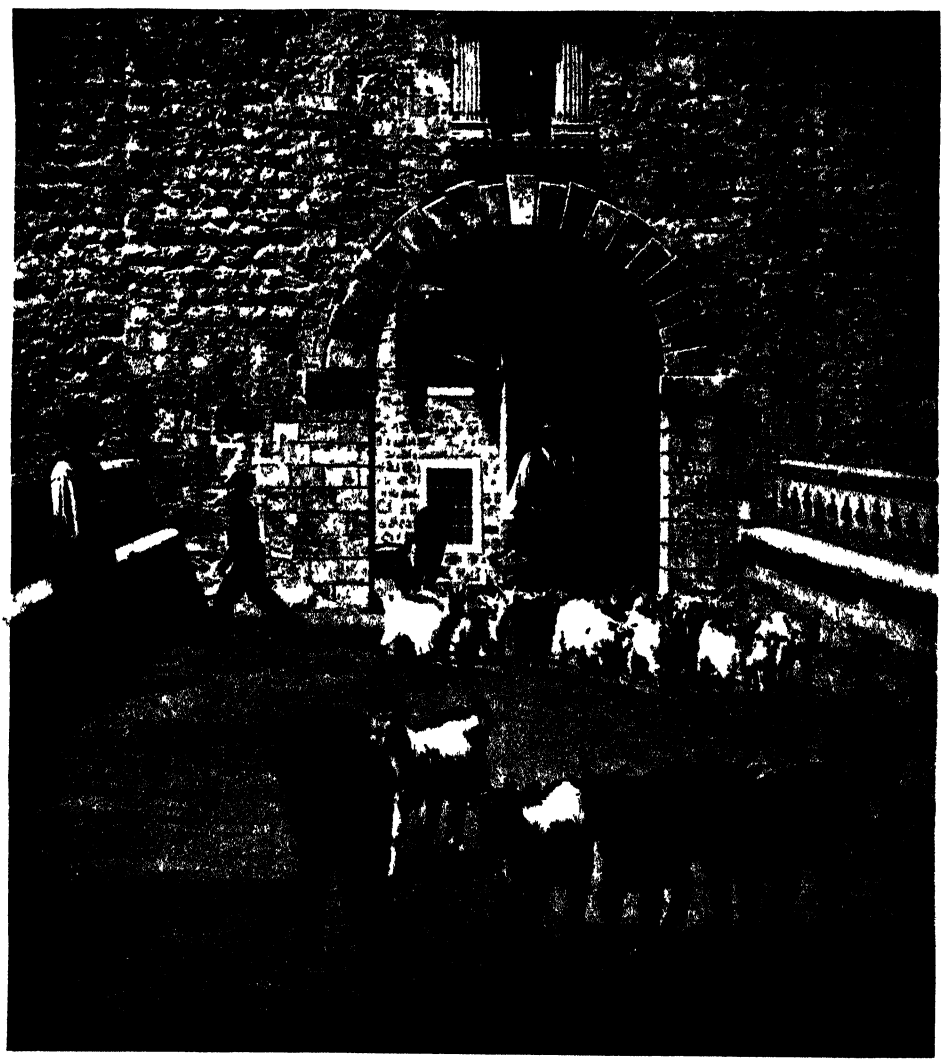
The officers who killed the king and queen were carried away into hideous excesses by their fury and long pent up resentment, but they certainly did their country a service. Like the Irish, the Serb, though usually gentle and considerate, can be roused by sudden anger or by brooding over grievances to the commission of horribly cruel acts

The Serbian character has, indeed, several points of resemblance with that of the Irish. This follows naturally enough from the likeness which we have traced between the institutions of the two races Institutions ar the

natural outcome of national character, wherever the national character is strong enough to resist having them forced upon it from outside. The Serbs are even more independent than the Irish They will not become domestic servants. The few in Serbia who keep servants have to go outside the country for them.

The Serbian peasant is not fond of hard work. He does not do more than he need. Most of them have more land than they care to cultivate, and they do not take any trouble to add to its fertility. With such vast numbers of pigs they could manure it richly at no cost and with little labour, but there are few farms on which this is done.

Like the Irish again, the Serbs are simple and natural and open-hearted. Their manners are kindly and dignified. They are at ease in any company, and



S. BLASIUS KEEPS VIGIL OVER RAGUSA FROM THE PORTA PILLE

Immense walls defend Ragusa, whose position on the Adriatic is of great strategic importance. Approached from Gravosa, Ragusa's chief harbour, the town is entered across a bridge and through the narrow Porta Pille, over the arch of which is a statue of S. Blasius, patron saint of the town At the other side of the city the Porta Ploce gives access to the old harbour of Casson

EMBROIDERED WAISTCOATS AND APRONS FOR THE ADORNMENT OF MEN

The national costumes of Scibia are extremely varied and attractive, and the peasantry show little inclination to modify the quaint fashions which have been handed down to them from their fathers, and strapping, broad shouldered young men, such as this pair from the village of Resnik, rigidly adhere to their linen shirts, embroidered waistcoats, and variegated and fringed aprons

IOMELY WOMEN OF OBRENOVAC IN THEIR CURIOUS LOCAL HEADDRESS

ıs a rule, the hardy peasant-woman of Old Serbia makes very light of the domestic worries which she ncounters duıing the routine of her everyday life Laborious out of-door work has fitted her with ound health and a vigorous frame, so that she ıs constitutionally well equipped against the troubles that beset her, and ıs always ready to see the silver lining to every cloud

KALEIDOSCOPIC ACTIVITY IN SERAJEVO'S LABYRINTHINE BAZAAR

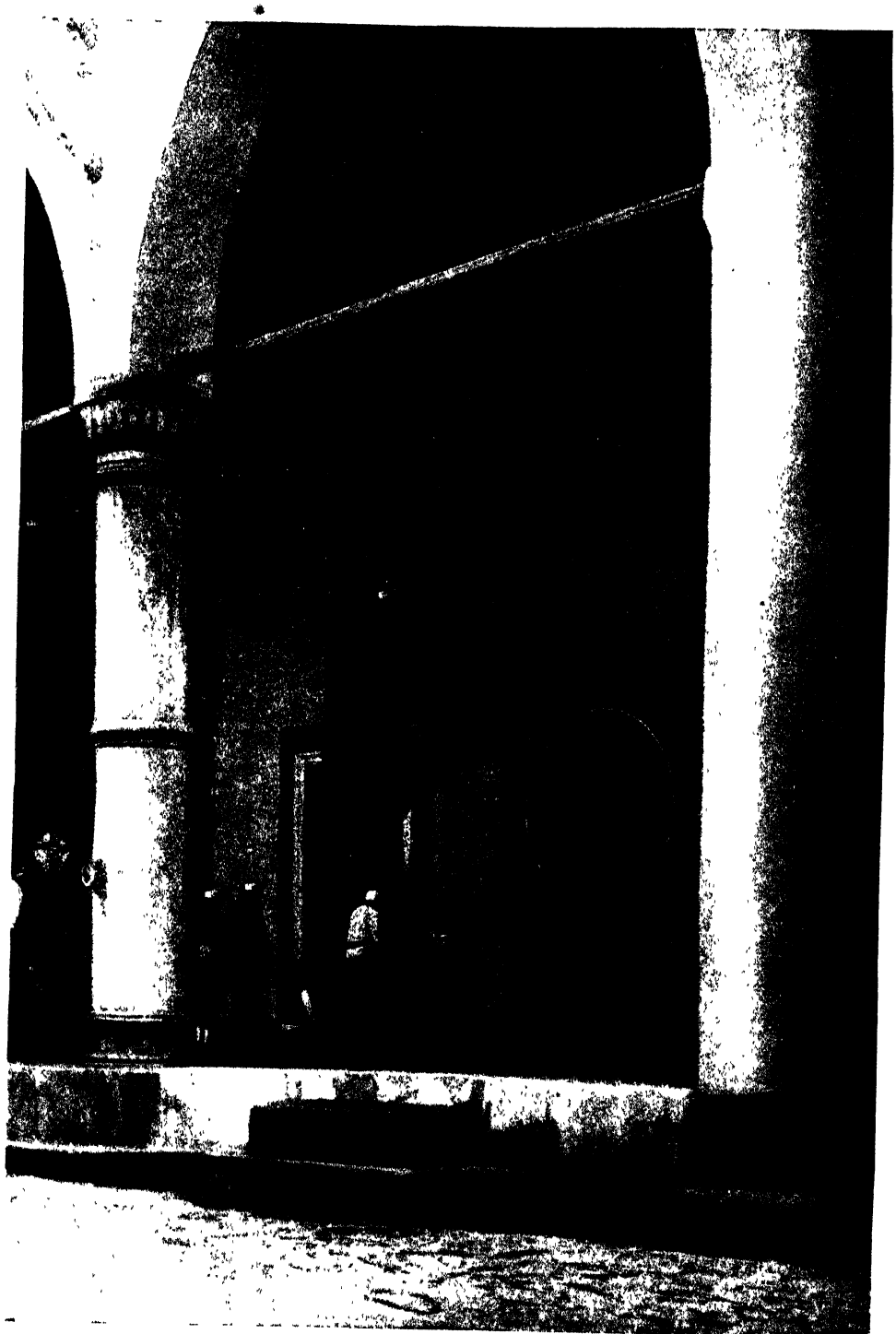
Most fascinating in its riot of colour is the Carsija, or bazaar, of Serajevo, where the weekly market gathers peasants in variegated costumes from all parts of Bosnia. The bazaar is made up of more than half a hundred narrow lanes lined with wooden booths allotted to virtually every trade and handicraft. Especially noteworthy are the carpets, copper wares, and native filigree work

in public places they often choose to sit down next to those who think themselves somebodies just to show that they have no idea of admitting any pretensions to superiority.

But here the points of resemblance between Serbs and Irish come to an end. The Serb has a soil to cultivate which easily yields him up the kindly fruits of the earth in variety and abundance. He lives in sunshine and amid pleasant surroundings. Almost the whole country—three-quarters, at the least—may be said to be cultivable, for the mountains are not high. The Serb has not to fight against adverse conditions of weather and soil. He cannot be deprived of his land.

By a law passed as long ago as 1873 it was enacted that if a peasant were proceeded against for debt, and if his creditor sold him up, at least five acres, with a plough and a pair of oxen, and other farm implements, must be left to him. He can get help from his neighbours to cut his grass or harvest his grain, for the cooperative principle is well understood and valued in Serbia. Further, he can make sure of a wholesome and attractive diet by very moderate exertions, instead of being obliged to live mainly on potatoes.

If you are invited into a peasant's house, which you are sure to be if you arrive at a meal time, for the Serbians are most hospitable, you will find on the table cheese, bacon, perhaps dried fish or dried meat, and certainly cabbage. Or you may find the family about to dine off a nourishing and appetising soup called "charba," a Turkish word signifying thick broth. This has meat or fish in it, and plenty of vegetables. Tomatoes are largely used in Serbian



IMAM CONDUCTING FRIDAY PRAYER AT SERAJEVO'S GREAT MOSQUE

The Hursef Bey Mosque, or Begova Djamia, rising in the west part of the bazaar, is one of Serajevo's most famous and beautiful structures. Built in the sixteenth century by Hursef, Pasha of Bosnia, it is said to be surpassed in Europe only by the mosques of Adrianople and Constantinople. This photograph was exceedingly difficult to procure owing to the use of a camera being rigorously forbidden

Photo, G. R. Carline

dishes. A very good hash of meat and tomatoes is often served.

Fresh beef they seldom have, but young lamb is a favourite dish, and no wonder, for it is perfectly delicious. Often the lamb is small enough to be roasted whole. They roast sucking-pigs, too. I remember one afternoon coming

BEAUTY BRILLIANTLY ADORNED
A love of brilliant colours and glittering trinkets distinguishes the Macedonian woman, and this dark-eyed belle of Struga is a staunch upholder of the fashion
Photo, L. G. Popoff

across some Serbian peasants cooking a little pig over a fire on a river bank. When it was ready I shared it with them, and very succulent it was.

The peasant houses are mostly two-roomed. In one room is a big stove and oven, with all the household pots and pans and crockery. The other is a bedroom for the whole family, excepting those who prefer to sleep on the stove. This indiscriminate use of the sleeping place is not so shocking to the English way of thinking as it sounds, for the Serbians do not undress to go to bed. Around the house are fruit-trees, mostly plum and damson.

The Russian "mir" or village commune was very much like the old Serbian system of the "zadruga" already referred to, except that the tribal element was absent from it. That also is disappearing. It is curious that, as Socialism on a vast scale seems to attract more and more adherents, the small existing Socialist communities tend to become extinct.

Go into the fields after your meal in the peasant house and you will see men using wooden ploughs, just as Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob did in Old Testament times. You will see women and children sowing maize and pumpkin-seed together. They hold it in their aprons, throw it into the furrows prepared, and trample it in with their bare feet. When Serbians want to harrow their land, they cut down bushes and, weighting these with stones, drag them over it. It is an ancient way, but it seems to serve its purpose in Serbia.

By way of providing against any possible shortage of food, the local authorities tax every head of a family 300 pounds of grain each year. This is stored in a local granary, and cannot be sold until the next harvest has been gathered in. Thus there is always a reserve store. At harvest time the bullock carts (creaking, clumsy things, but "why should we want anything different?" the Serbians say) come to the granary from all the farms round, bringing in the "taxes," which the peasants willingly pay because they can see what a useful purpose such taxation in kind serves.

The Serbians have not the same love of colour as most races in the Near East. They dress mostly, men and women both, in white and grey. The men wear linen knickerbockers, linen kilt, linen shirt, and generally two waistcoats, on the inner of which, as a rule nowadays, there is a chain with an American watch attached to it. When this costume is clean it looks attractive, but it does not keep clean for long. This, and the length of time it takes to

put on so elaborate a dress, are reasons which have induced many Serbians of late years to abandon the traditional dress and wear tweeds, at all events on working days In the more northerly part of Serbia, the district in which Nish, so long the temporary capital, is situated, the costumes are gayer and more varied Up there the scenery is bolder and the mixture of races far more pronounced

Here, too superstitions have more hold All peasants are superstitious, and often wise men think there may be something real or valuable behind their superstitions, but the common sense method of education in Serbia is destroying the belief in the supernatural among most of the generation now growing up There is one belief however, to which all cling That is the belief that no work ought to be done on saints days They say, half seriously, half in fun, that the saints are angry if their days are not honoured, and are sure to take their revenge A British farmer in Serbia had occasion to recollect this warning all his life His farm hands told him they would not work on S Mark s day

But he is not a red letter saint "

(Saints whose holidays are to be kept have their names printed in red in calendars)

No, but he is powerful all the same '

" Well, he may be or he may not be Anyway, there is work to be done, and if you won t do it I shall go into the fields myself "

CROATIAN PEASANTS IN AGRAM'S VEGETABLE MARKET

Advantageously situated on the River Save in a fertile vine and grain growing country, and with good railway communication Agram, or Zagreb, is a commercially prosperous capital town of Croatia Most of the trade and other modern activities are carried on in the Lower Town, the palaces of the archbishop and of the former Ban being in the Bishop's Town and the Upper Town respectively

Photo H. C Woods

COMELINESS AND CHARM CLAD IN BROIDERY AND BROCADE

She is a native of Struga, a town situated on the north shore of Lake Ochrida—a fine stretch of water, eighteen miles long, lying high among the mountains in the south of Serbia on the Albanian frontier. Her dress, with its close-fitting, embroidered bodice and handsome brocade apron, betokens that delight in personal adornment which is so marked a characteristic of the Macedonian races

Photo, L. G. Popoff

DISTINCTIVE MACEDONIAN FASHIONS OF MATRON AND MAID

In modern usage the name Macedonia is applied approximately to an area north-west of the Aegean Sea, partly in Greece, partly in Yugo-Slavia and Bulgaria The people of Western Macedonia, now belonging to Yugo-Slavia, are of a lively, enterprising character, skilled in diverse handicraft, with the Oriental love of fine colours strongly developed in them, as these natives of Krushevo testify

Photo, L. G. Popoff

PILGRIMS ASSEMBLED OUTSIDE THE CRUMBLING WALLS OF AN OLD GREEK MONASTERY IN MACEDONIA

A large percentage of the inhabitants of Macedonia belong to the Greek Catholic Church, and Greek monasteries, inhabited by followers of the Orthodox Faith, are frequently found about the country. The women are assiduous churchgoers, and most scrupulous in their observance of the formulas prescribed by their Church respecting all fasts and feasts of the ecclesiastical year. This small group, gathered near an old monastery of West Macedonia, is chiefly composed of peasant pilgrims, who in their bright-hued costumes display a pleasing touch of vivid colour against the drab and tiresomely uniform tone of the decaying walls around them

Photo, L. G. Poboff

"Don't go, master You will only provoke the saint Some harm will come to you"

Out the master went, however, and worked all day As he rode home in the evening his horse shied and threw him, and his collar-bone was broken A coincidence, of course, unless the horse was purposely startled but a decided "score" for the devotees of S. Mark.

In some of the stories about saints and their assistance there is a spice of humour A Serbian is said to have fallen into a river and called upon S Nicholas, his patron, for help The saint replied "Yes, yes, here I am, but strike out with your hands and feet and swim out by yourself without waiting for me to drag you out"

POPULAR COSTUMES OF SMILEVO VILLAGE

Heavy coloured fringes are a striking feature of this Macedonian costume which leaves little to be desired so far as ornamentation is concerned, for there is scarcely a square inch of material that has not been carefully worked with the needle

Photo I G Popoff

Every member of the Orthodox Church has a patron saint, and celebrates his saint's day as we celebrate birthdays, only more so These celebrations are called "Slavi" "Slava" means 'glory," and the expression is derived from glorifying the saints on their name-days, though now the "slava" is a festival of eating and drinking without, as a rule, any religious significance

The Serbians are fond of noise Their way of showing that they are getting enjoyment out of life is to fire off guns or pistols I have been at a Serbian dinner-party where a number of the guests made holes in the floor and the ceiling with revolver bullets I left early on that occasion, after sitting with my feet drawn up to the seat of my chair, and I heard next day that one of my Slav friends had said of me, "Such a pity he does not understand or appreciate the Slav temperament" On that occasion, too, the host, a gentleman with a bushy black beard, kissed me affectionately before I left This is the common form of salutation among men in Serbia An acquaintance of mine who had not been long in the country, saw two bearded and truculent-looking fellows fall against one another on a railway station, thought they were fighting, and wanted to have them separated But they were only two friends greeting each other after a long separation.

The Serbians are a genuinely musical folk In the fields you hear young peasants playing their flutes Shepherds

RAINBOW HUES IN A GARDEN OF SOUTHERN SERBIA

Her attractive attire is shown to the best advantage among the autumnal tints of the old garden Though belonging to the upper and wealthier class of Tetovo society, she is conservative and artistic enough to prefer the graceful and tasteful national dress of her people to the more modern, though infinitely less becoming, costumes, which are frequently ridiculous travesties of Parisian fashions

Photo, L. G Popoff

MODERN MAHOMEDAN MAIDEN OF TETOVO

The long coat and full trousers stamp her as an inheritor of an Eastern culture The veil has been discarded by many of the Moslem sections of the heterogeneous population of Southern Yugo-Slavia, who, freed from the Turk, have grown accustomed to the sight of Christian women, and now unblushingly expose their features, delighting in the comfort and freedom which this new fashion entails

Photo, L. G. Popoff

pipe to their sheep a large part of the day. Singing is very often heard in the villages and small towns. It is a natural, irrepressible expression of their good health and light-hearted satisfaction with life. They dance, too, but not so elaborately as the Russians.

Their national dance is the Kolo (a word meaning circle). They stand in a ring, men and women together, holding each other by the hands or by the belts. First they all move a few steps to the right, then a few steps to the left. This with a few steps backwards and forwards completes the performance. There is a variation which keeps the dancers in a file instead of a circle, and allows the leader to lead them about as he pleases. There is singing during the dance. Suddenly it will burst forth from the young men's throats:

"Opa; tsovpa,
Danas, sutra,
Nikad nishta
Do izdrtih opanaka!"

Which means:

"Up and down,
To-day, to-morrow,
No result
Save torn sandals!"

Few travellers see these village dances, for they seldom visit more of Serbia than a few towns. These are not in any way indicative of Serbian character, nor do they illustrate any but the meaner aspects of Serbian life. Only some 70,000 families inhabit them, out of a total of 375,000.

There is a fine view from the high public garden at Belgrade, and the whitewashed houses which keep up the fitness of its name (Biyele-grad, White City, so called originally from its white walls), give it a shining, attractive appearance as it is approached by river. In the spring it is gay with the blossom of lilac and chestnut. In summer one can sit in almost any garden beneath the shade of spreading walnut or fig.

Nish is not much of a town—yet, but "some day" the inhabitants tell you!

As for the inns, they are sometimes surprisingly good and seldom intolerable. A man once reproached a friend for telling him he would find them "passable."

"No, no," his friend replied, "I said they were 'possible.'"

At all events they are not so bad as to deter enterprising travellers from making the acquaintance of an interesting people and their drably picturesque land.

II. Other Branches of the Slav Family

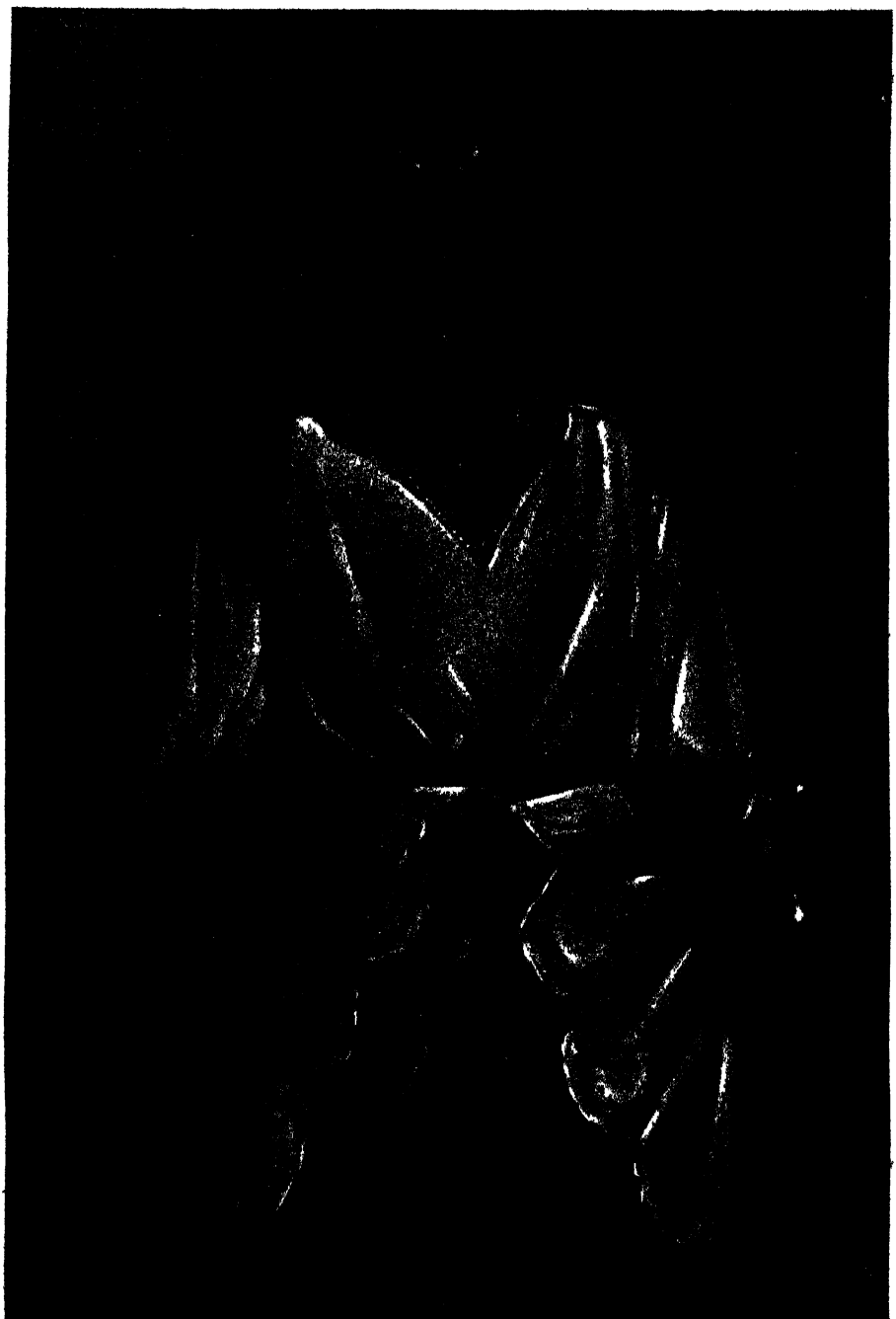
By Anthony Dell

Author of "Italian and Serb," etc.

THE people of Bosnia and Herzegovina, now part of the kingdom of the Serbs, Croats, and Slovenes, have been more deeply influenced by the centuries of Turkish rule than any other branches of the southern Slav family. Religious dissensions played a large part in the history of these countries, and the struggle between the Greek Orthodox Church and the Bogomil heretics was very keen. After the Turkish occupation the Bogomils largely turned to Islam. These included many of the principal landowners. Gradually the whole of the landowning class became Mahomedan, while many peasants followed them, others remaining Christian.

At the present time about one-third of the population of Bosnia and Herzegovina is Mahomedan, the bulk of the remainder being Orthodox. There are, however, a large number of Roman Catholics and Jews. The Jews are of Spanish origin. Apart from these the whole population is Slav and speaks

IN NEW SERBIA
With Its Diverse Races



Elegant in figure and deportment this girl of Yugo-Slavia displays to advantage a simple yet richly embroidered variety of national dress

Time stands still when a couple of Croatian matrons come together, for a friendly chat comprises all the tittle-tattle of the countryside

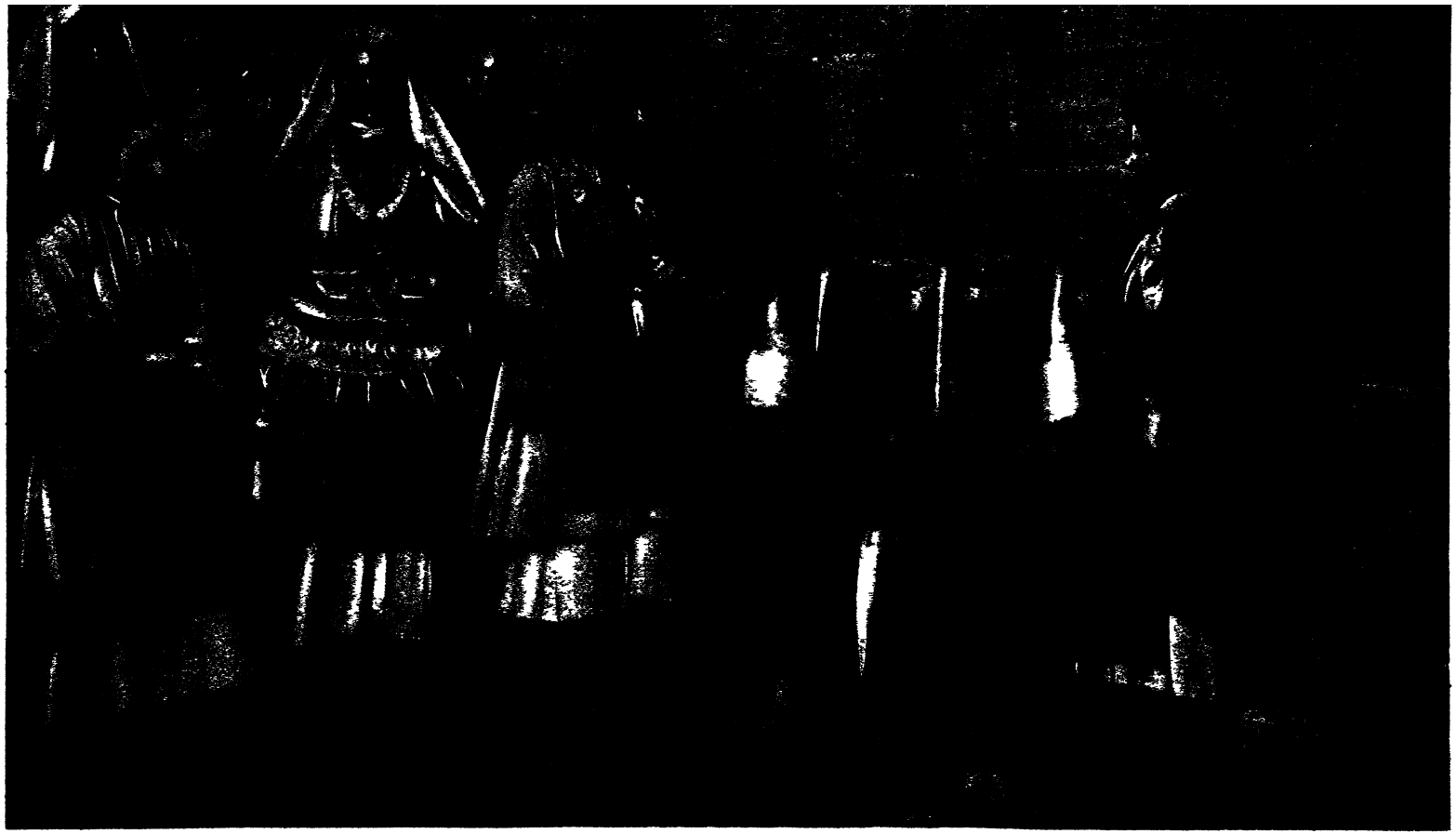
A bottle of home-made wine is a pleasant sight on a sultry day; it gladdens the heart of the Serbian peasant and makes his face to smile

Kupinovo boasts not only many natural beauties but much sturdy young life flourishing in the sunshine under loving maternal care

With book and beads this aged Serb makes his way to church; his equipment complete with wooden crook—the emblem of his pastoral calling

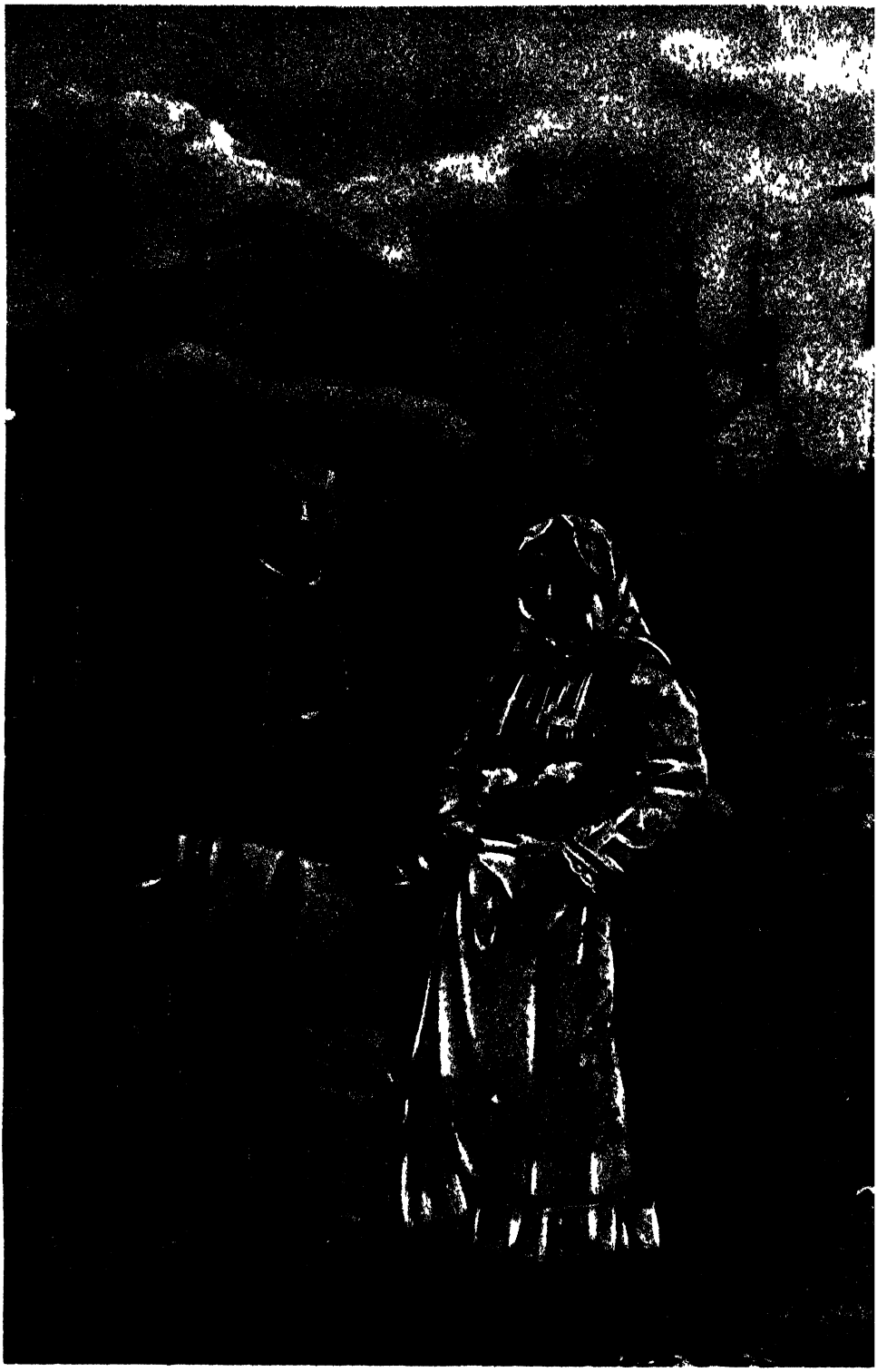
The full, baggy trousers in vogue among certain sections of the Moslem community in South Yugo-Slavia, though not distinctly graceful on the feminine figure, come not at all amiss when practising the equestrian art

Photo. L. G. Popoff



The Kingdom of Serbs, Croats, and Slovenes has many subjects varying in costume, creed, and custom. The small Macedonian population is notable for its diversity in feminine fashions and the gorgeousness of their colouring

Photo, I G Popoff



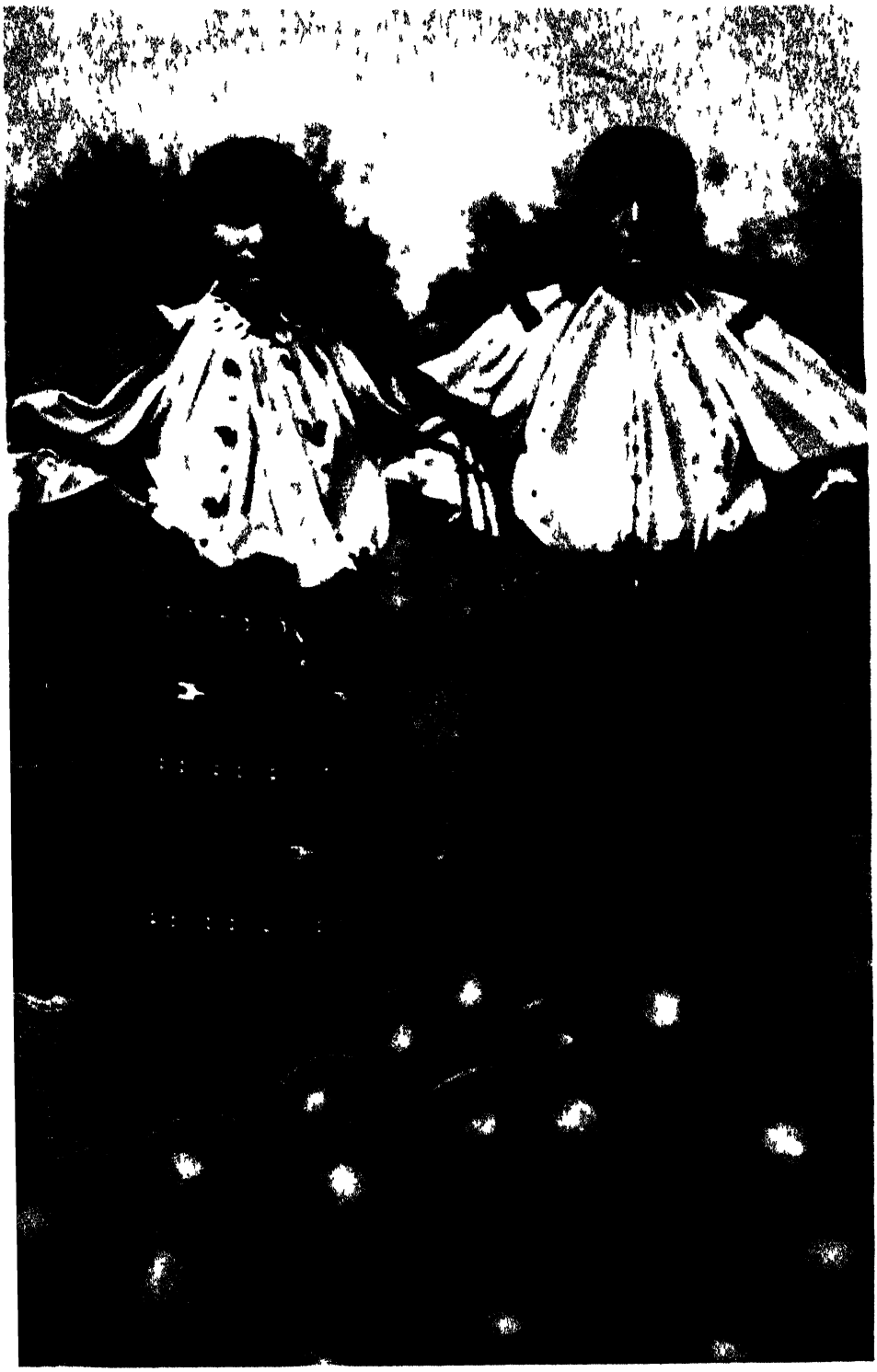
This handsome young couple of the Macedonian peasantry delight to display their brave local finery on this—their wedding-day

Photo, L. G. Popoff

Macedonian women are picturesque in all their diversified styles, of which coloured and gold embroideries form conspicuous features

Photo, L. G Popoff

Cupid in Croatia! This is no chance encounter at the garden-gate, for here soft amatory nothings are whispered daily into willing ears



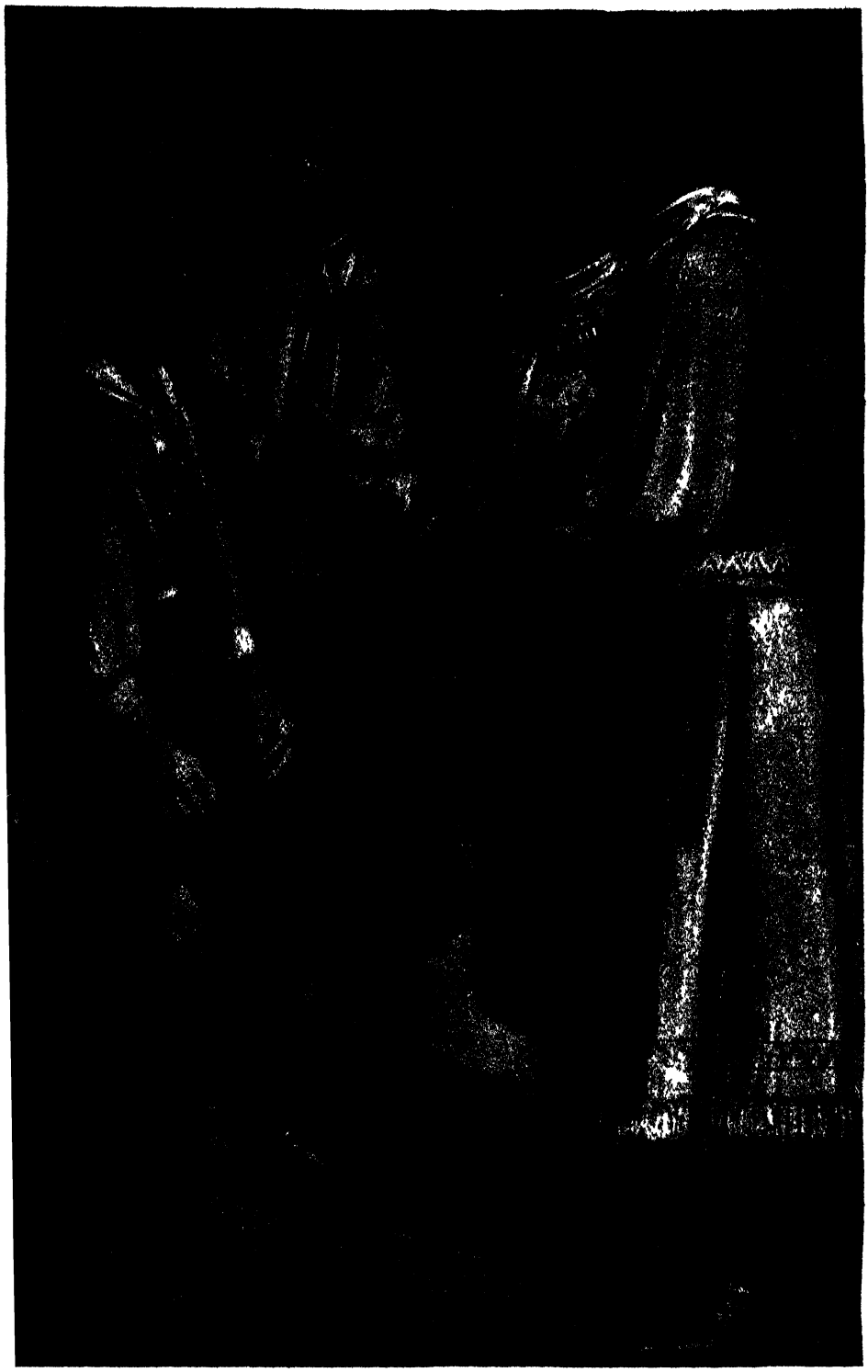
Thrifty Croats sow various seeds on the same plot of ground, and prime pumpkins come to light when the maize crops have been harvested

A stirring tale is this native of Kupinovo unfolding, while the tiny son hastens to relate his version to a slightly credulous listener

Belgrade fashions do not attract the girls of Kupinovo ; they find scope for fancy in their own modes ; even the coiffure is a work of art

Though holding the proud position of teacher in a village school of Serbia she does not disdain the homely costume of the peasantry

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service



Broideries and fringes adorn the Sabbath costume of these Croatian gallants discussing rural problems—and their latest conquests

Weary, yet with cheery countenance, these Serbian women tread barefoot the rugged road to market. The burden usually falls on the woman in the Balkans ; man takes a share, but a " comfortable " one when possible

the Serbo-Croatian language, using the Cyrillic alphabet as in Serbia. The Mahomedans, however, have adopted many Turkish customs, and the bazaar at Serajevo or any other Bosnian town closely resembles in appearance the Turkish bazaars of the Near East. The wares sold are also Oriental in character. Only the language in which the trade is carried on proves that the country is ethnologically Slav.

The system of large landed properties everywhere encouraged by the Turks exists still in Bosnia and Herzegovina. This system is totally opposed to the ideas of the Serbs of Serbia, where the land is parcelled out among peasant proprietors. One of the first steps of the new government at Belgrade after the war in 1919 was to introduce measures to expropriate the Bosnian and Croatian landlords. This has naturally caused opposition on the part of the landowning class.

Conservatism in Customs and Costume

In no part of Europe, with the exception of Albania, does a more primitive state of society exist. The greater part of the region is shut off by high mountains from the outside world. The inhabitants live in narrow valleys, occupied with their flocks and herds and their few crops, as their ancestors have lived before them for centuries. Probably no important changes have been made in the habits of the people since the conversion to Islam. The Christians, for their part, follow the customs of a thousand years ago, save that among them may be seen traces of Mahomedan ceremonial. At some Christian churches, for instance, the worshippers bring praying mats, and it is common to see them prostrate themselves to the ground in the Mahomedan attitude of prayer.

The national costumes are very strictly adhered to. These vary according to religion and locality. There are therefore a bewildering number of different costumes to be seen at any large market town. In general the men wear a white shirt, often embroidered, beneath a sleeveless jacket or waistcoat. The trousers are dark-coloured woollen homespun, tight up to the knees and extremely baggy above. This shape is designed to suit the custom of sitting on the heels.

Bosnian and Herzegovinan Fashions

"Opankes," pieces of untanned hide laced so as to form a kind of shoe, are worn on the feet. The lacing is usually carried up the calf of the leg by means of a stout strap. A brightly coloured sash or belt is worn in some districts, into which knife, tobacco box, flint and steel, and revolver may be tucked. The waistcoat is also often of a gay colour. In certain districts it is of scarlet cloth finely embroidered with gold braid. A short jacket or a long-tailed coat may be worn over the waistcoat.

The long coat is more affected in the districts of Herzegovina towards Montenegro, where it becomes universal. Here also knee breeches and white stockings take the place of the long trousers. A turban or fez is worn by the Mahomedans of Bosnia and by many of the Christians. The true Slav headgear consists of a small skull cap, of various shapes and patterns according to locality. In winter this is often replaced by a fur cap ("shubara").

Women Like Variegated Tulips Show

The women have such a variety of brightly-coloured costumes that no attempt can be made to describe them in detail. The Mahomedan women are strictly veiled and many of the Christian women wear veils as part of their dress. A prevailing style of costume is a short, sleeveless and richly embroidered jacket, similar to the men's waistcoat, worn over a loose white robe with wide sleeves.

The most elaborate embroidery is often reserved for the apron, which is very widely worn. Highly ornamented

headdresses of various kinds indicate whether the women are married or single and from what district they are. A great amount of jewelry is worn, often in the form of silver coins, which sometimes form a complete breastplate.

Like the Serbs, the Bosnians and Herzegovinans cling to their primitive folklore and belief in spirits of the woods and rivers, fairies, wolf men and witches. The forest spirits are called "vilas." But although the Bosnian folk tales are coloured by Slav legend and history they are not radically different from those of the Central European peoples. The artistic sense of the people seems to run in the direction of literature and music rather than towards the fine arts. Poetry and dancing make a strong appeal to them, and their old sagas are handed down from generation to generation by "guslari," who recite the stories at great length in verse, to the accompaniment of the "gusla," a musical instrument, in form like a mandoline, with one string made of horsehair.

WHERE ARTISTIC FINGERS PLY THE NEEDLE
Bright local colour is supplied to the town of Üskub, or Skoplye, by the variegated costumes of its feminine world, and here is one example of a simple though elegant design embellished with elaborate and multi-hued embroidery
Photo, L. G. Popoff

Bosnia is an inland province lying to the west of Serbia. It is bounded on the north by Slavonia, from which it is separated by the river Save; on the north-west by Croatia; on the south and west by Dalmatia; and on the south and south-east by Herzegovina, Montenegro, and the sandak of Novi Pazar. The Dinaric Alps, a high limestone chain, separate Bosnia from Dalmatia, and branches of the same range divide Bosnia from Herzegovina and Montenegro.

Herzegovina, to the south of Bosnia, is a much smaller territory and is almost entirely mountainous. It is bounded on the south and west by Dalmatia, and on the east by Montenegro. A great part of Herzegovina is bleak, but there are fertile upland plains formed of the silt brought down in the winter floods. Maize and other cultivation is carried on, the villages being situated on the lower slopes of the surrounding mountains.

The largest river is the Narenta, which rises on the Montenegrin frontier and, after flowing north-west towards the borderland between Bosnia and Herzegovina, turns south-west and pierces the Dinaric Alps through the Narenta defile. In this defile, which forms one of the most remarkable sights in Europe, the Narenta flows with considerable speed between limestone cliffs some thousands of feet high.

In the more fertile districts the chief crop is maize. Sugar and tobacco are also grown, and in the more sheltered parts of Herzegovina Mediterranean fruits flourish, among them being figs, pomegranates, grapes, oranges, and lemons. Plums are exported from Bosnia in large quantities in a dried state. Pigs are reared, chiefly in the lower-lying districts of the north-east on the bank of the Save.

Industries have hitherto been of little importance, although the deposits of coal, iron, and other minerals, together with the water power available, indicate the possibility of great industrial development. Various arts and handicrafts are plied in Turkish fashion, and in the bazaars at Serajevo and other towns inlaid and metal ware may be seen in process of manufacture, together with carpets, rugs, embroidery, and leather work.

The population of Croatia and Slavonia is Slav, and speaks the Serbo-Croatian language. The Croats, however, use the Latin alphabet, so that although the spoken word is the same in Zagreb (Agram) and Belgrade, the Croats of Zagreb cannot necessarily read Serbian books or newspapers. Most Serbs, however, can read the Latin characters.

SEQUINED AND SILKEN FINERY
Picturesque in style and pleasing in colour is this variety of Macedonian costume photographed at Uskub, on which sequins, beads, buttons, and coins are set among coloured embroideries in lavish but artistic profusion
Photo, L. G. Popoff

These two branches of the southern Slav family have always existed as separate political entities, and their different history has caused points of divergence in tradition and custom, some of which are important. The chief point of difference is religion. The Croats are Roman Catholics and the Serbs Greek Orthodox. Since in Serbia Church and State are very closely allied, this difference of religion has been in the past a stumbling block to political union.

With the growth of more liberal ideas, however, and the inclusion in Serbian

BEAUX AND BELLES DRESSED IN THE FANTASTIC GALA COSTUMES OF THEIR HAMLET IN WESTERN MACEDONIA

So strong is the influence of the West in the Balkan countries that during the last three decades many incongruities noticeable in the feminine world of fashion have been superseded by more simple and modern garments The women of the middle and lower classes were likewise infected and not a few of the old time national costumes disappeared before the advance of Western modes Nevertheless, in many remoter districts the popular costume still holds its own, and, as with these natives of a small hamlet in the vicinity of Krushevo, may be seen in all its fantastic beauty and traditional originality

Photo I. C. P. A.

PEASANT MOTHER AND DAUGHTERS OF THE GOSTIVAR NEIGHBOURHOOD IN THEIR WORKADAY DRESS

Their everyday dress is by no means elaborate, for hard work is their portion, and trinkets and best embroideries are kept exclusively for gala occasions. These countryfolk lead a laborious, thrifty life and the women are good wives and affectionate mothers The girls of the peasant household can usually find plenty of occupation at home, such as threshing the corn, tending the sheep and goats, spinning and weaving the flax and wool, and they dwell under the parental roof until they marry, which is generally when their father can amass a sufficiently large dowry to attract a suitable husband

Photo, L G Popoff

MACEDONIAN MARTHA AND MARY PLAYING THEIR RESPECTIVE PARTS
In Yugo-Slavia spinning, weaving, and other home manufactures are carried on chiefly during the winter months, when the female members of the peasant population have little or no outdoor work to claim their time. At Ochrida, a prominent town of Western Macedonia, situated on the lake of the same name, flourish many ancient industries, but none so favoured by the housewife as spinning
Photo, L. G. Popoff

territory of large Mahomedan and other non-Orthodox districts, it is unlikely that this question will present serious difficulties in the future, except in so far as the difference in religion causes different social customs and outlook. The difference of thirteen days in the calendars has now been abolished by the Serbian adoption of the Roman calendar.

Croatia has been less influenced by Turkish occupation than Bosnia and Serbia, and correspondingly more by Austro-Hungarian administration and Teutonic influences generally. Under the empire Croatia approximated in level of civilization to the agricultural districts of Central Europe. The educational and public health services, as well as road and rail communication, were far in advance of anything in the Balkans. In Agram, or Zagreb, and the other towns there were facilities for education of which the naturally intelligent inhabitants took full advantage, while not ceasing to resent the anti-Slav character of the administration. Zagreb itself is a finely-built town with well-paved streets, broad boulevards, and imposing public buildings. It contains a university, a first-class library, a palatial opera house, and villa residences of a type recalling an Austrian or Swiss town.

The general level of education here is equal to that in a Central European city, and this fact is of importance in considering the future relations of Croatia and Serbia. The educated Croatians, who, as in most countries,

have a disproportionate influence over the ignorant peasantry, have an essentially European, as distinguished from a Balkan, outlook.

The Serbs, whose outlook is purely Balkan, by force of circumstances and their own patriotic ardour, have won for themselves the headship of the new state; and the centralisation of the government at Belgrade since the liberation has not failed to find Croatian critics. This inevitable clash of views forms one of the chief difficulties of the new kingdom.

In the eastern districts of Slavonia Serbs predominate. These are Orthodox and use the Cyrillic alphabet.

In spite of the differences in tradition and outlook above referred to, the influences making for union with the rest of Yugo-Slavia, both in Croatia and Slavonia, are far greater than the disruptive ones. In general, the habits of the peasantry throughout Yugo-Slavia are very similar, and in temperament the same leading features are everywhere manifest.

Croatia and Slavonia formed, until the Great War, a joint kingdom attached to the kingdom of Hungary.

Croatia is mountainous, being traversed by the line of the Karst mountains, which border the Adriatic from Istria, through Croatia into Dalmatia. These mountains, which form parallel ranges, are dry and arid, but farther east, towards the Croatian capital of Zagreb, the country becomes more fertile, the higher regions being here well wooded and watered by the Save and its tributaries.

In Slavonia the mountains are of less height and a large part of the country consists of fen and marsh land along the banks of the great rivers. There are, however, in Slavonia,

MEMBERS OF THE SOUTHERN POPULACE OF NEW SERBIA

In Galitchnik, as in other villages of Western Macedonia, fragments and relics of old Macedonian lore are evident in the everyday life of the present generation, whose festivals are a curious fusion of ancient rites and permeated with strange cosmogonic myths. The women present a medley of homeliness and pretension, and though possessing little education are not without intelligence

Photo, L. G. Popoff

ONE OF THE MULTIFARIOUS NATIONAL COSTUMES OF MACEDONIA
Turks, Greeks, Bulgarians, Serbs, Albanians, Vlachs, and Jews form the present polyglot population of the ancient monarchical territory of Macedonia, now comprised in the governments of Greece, Yugo Slavia, and Bulgaria The general traits of this variegated community are widely divergent—and the costumes alone, differing in most districts, include numberless distinctive styles
Photo, L G Popoff

especially in the northern and eastern districts, wide areas of high fertility. The climate of Croatia and Slavonia is subject to extremes of winter cold and summer heat

As in Bosnia, the full mineral resources of Croatia have not yet been developed or possibly discovered Agriculture is hampered by the arid and mountainous character of the western half of the kingdom and by the marshy nature of much of Slavonia Nevertheless, it forms the occupation of the vast majority of the population The crops are similar to those of Serbia and Bosnia, maize being the chief cereal Among the other crops are flax, hemp tobacco, and plums The vineyards are extensive, and silk is manufactured

The wide plains of Slavonia favour the rearing of stock, and the horse-breeding industry is a flourishing one Excellent furniture is made at Agram, and the abundant forests and variety of excellent timber should favour the growth of this and allied industries

Dalmatia, the most beautiful province of the new Serbian kingdom, is distinguished from the rest by being almost purely maritime, and by its long subjection to Latin influences Although the Dalmatians are Slavs and speak the Serbo-Croatian language in its purest form, the Italian influence

NEW SERBIA IN BECOMING WORKADAY COSTUME

Her dress, though of sober style, with little of the heavy, elaborate needlework that distinguishes the costumes of many of her countrywomen, suits to perfection her winsome, sunburnt comeliness

To face page 4600

is everywhere marked, especially in the larger towns. The long ascendancy of Venice explains the Venetian character of the architecture and the prevalence of Italian words in the vocabulary. The population is Roman Catholic, but the Slavonic liturgy is frequently used. In the towns there is a proportion of Italians calculated to be about three per cent. of the whole.

Dalmatia consists of a strip of coastland, running down the eastern shore of the Adriatic between Croatia and Montenegro. A string of islands, some of considerable size, lie close to the mainland and form numberless creeks and lagoons. The Dinaric Alps traverse the country from north to south and render it for the most part unfertile. In contrast, the number and excellence of the harbours and the wealth of fish, sponges, and coral in its waters favour the prosperity of Dalmatia as a maritime province

The Slovenes, although still strongly Slav in sentiment, have been more subjected to Teutonic influences than any other part of the new southern Slav kingdom. They are Roman Catholic, and their dialect is mixed with many Germanic words. Their Slav patriotism is, however, unquestionable. They form a separate political party at Belgrade. Lying outside the Balkans proper, the Slovenes have discarded some of the more characteristic Balkan customs, although such of their tradition as reaches back to early days is purely Slav in character.

Slovenia is formed of the old Austrian province of Carniola, together with parts of Styria, Carinthia, and Istria. It lies to the north and west of Croatia. The country is extremely mountainous, and contains many remarkable natural features, such as caverns, grottoes, subterranean streams, mineral springs, waterfalls, and lakes

LOWLY PEASANT DWELLING OF STONE AND TIMBER CONSTRUCTION

The peasant home of Western Macedonia varies with the character and mode of life of its occupants. In the highlands the small wooden houses are perched about the hillsides on high stone foundations, surmounted by thatched roofs. They are generally of very unpretentious aspect, the ground floor being used partly as a storehouse, partly as a shelter for the livestock during the cold months

Photo, L. G. Popoff

THE BRIDE AT THE SPRING: TIME-HONOURED CUSTOM OBSERVED BY A WEDDING-PARTY IN A MACEDONIAN VILLAGE

Of the Christians of Western Macedonia a large majority belongs to the Eastern Orthodox Church and owns allegiance to the Greek Patriarchate; but among the various communities the Church festivals are intermixed with old pagan beliefs and customs. In the matter of marriage racial tradition plays an important part; one quaint observance being the accompanying of the bride to a neighbouring well or spring, where she performs the archaic ceremony of propitiating the naiad of the spring by dropping a coin into it. This done, the young wife draws some water which she carries home and pours a libation of the liquid over the hands of her husband

Photo, L. G. Popoff

Serbia

III. The Story of the New Balkan State

By Anthony Dell

Author of "Serbia To-day and To-morrow," etc.

THE countries united in the kingdom of the Serbs, Croats, and Slovenes by the Constitution of 1921 have had no common national history. The ideal of southern Slav unity arose from the knowledge of common racial inheritance, and although at various times since the southern Slavs invaded Europe one or another branch of the race has obtained temporary sway over other branches under some powerful leader, there has never been any permanent national unity.

The southern Slavs are believed to have come originally from the district in south-west Russia east of the Carpathians. They penetrated the Balkans from the east during the sixth and seventh centuries, and had become a menace to the Byzantine Empire in the days of Justinian. Their penetration was not a military invasion, but rather the encroachment of tribal hordes seeking pastures for their flocks and herds and sites for their scattered village settlements.

Rise of the Medieval Empire

In 627 the Slavs, dominated by the barbarian Avars, laid siege to Byzantium. They were defeated by the Emperor Heraclius, but continued to occupy Roman territory until, by the middle of the seventh century, they were in possession of practically all the lands which the southern Slavs inhabit to-day. They had by this time acknowledged Byzantine suzerainty. The invaders gradually split up into various groups corresponding roughly to the modern branches of the southern Slav family.

The history of Serbia proper falls into three periods. First came the rise of the medieval empire, then the long subjection to Ottoman rule, and, thirdly, the struggle for national independence in the nineteenth century. By the end of the tenth century the nucleus of the Serbian kingdom had been formed in the mountainous district of Novi Pazar, with the capital at Rashka, and an expansion followed westwards in the direction of Montenegro (q.v); and southwards to Ipek, Prisrend, and Skoplye (Üsküb).

Christianity was introduced in the ninth century, largely through the influence of two monks, Cyril (Constantine) and Methodius, who composed the Slavonic alphabet still in use in Serbia and known as "Cyrillic."

Towards the end of the twelfth century Stephen Nemanya, Grand Zhupan of Rashka, laid the foundation of the medieval Serbian empire. In alliance with the Hungarians he reduced the fortresses of Nish and Belgrade, and subsequently overran the whole of Zeta (Montenegro) as far as Cattaro. By a treaty between Nemanya and the Byzantine emperor in 1190 Serbian territory was extended as far as Kragujevatz and Leskovatz. Nemanya abdicated in 1196, and retired as a monk to Mount Athos, whither his youngest son, Sava, had preceded him.

Increase of Material Wealth

Stephen, the second son, who succeeded as Zhupan, was crowned king by the Pope's legate in 1217, but through the influence of S. Sava, Serbia returned to the Orthodox Church and Stephen was crowned again at Uzhitze, in accordance with Greek rites, by S. Sava, who had been appointed the first Serbian archbishop.

Under Urosh II. (1282-1321), of the same dynasty, Serbian power was considerably developed. Belgrade and the district south of the Save had by now been granted to Serbia by Hungary. Urosh carried out successful campaigns against the Greek emperor, capturing Skoplye (Üsküb), which henceforth became the capital of Serbia. The economic resources of Serbia, both mineral and agricultural, were being extensively exploited at this time, and with increasing material wealth there was a development of art (particularly church architecture) and literature.

Serbian Power at its Zenith

At the death of Urosh II. a dual kingship was established, the two sovereigns being Urosh III., son of the late king, and his own son, Stephen Dushan (1322). The seizure of Prilep led to a war with the Greeks and their allies, the Bulgars, and in 1330 the Bulgars were totally routed at Kustendil, the Tsar Michael being killed. An attempt by Urosh to depose Dushan led to his own deposition and death, and Dushan became sole king in September, 1331.

The reign of Stephen Dushan (or Dushan the Great) marks the summit of the power of the medieval Serbian kingdom. Dushan, one of the foremost soldiers and statesmen

of his time, reduced practically the whole of the Balkans in successive campaigns, including Bosnia, Albania, Macedonia, and northern Greece. His influence extended from Ragusa in the west to Bulgaria in the east. Venice was his constant ally, and the Holy Roman Emperor addressed him as an equal.

Stephen Dushan's Glorious Reign

Dushan was crowned Tsar of the Serbs and Greeks on Easter Sunday, 1346, by the Patriarchs of Serbia and Bulgaria. He contemplated opposing the Turkish advance, now becoming menacing, by a Christian league, of which he was to be the head under the aegis of the Pope. He received only verbal encouragement at Rome, however, and proceeded to move against the Turks on his own account. His plan was first to occupy Constantinople, already in danger from Turkish attack.

In leading his armies towards this objective Dushan fell ill and died in 1355. His death removed the chief obstacle to the advance of the Turks in Europe, and was felt at the time throughout Europe to be a blow to Christendom. The military conquests of Dushan's reign coincided with a period of great material prosperity in Serbia. The magnificence of his court was famous. His statesmanship is evidenced by his legal code (Zakonik), published in 1349, which shows that at this time Serbia was comparatively advanced in civilization

After the death of Dushan the Serbian empire split up among several semi-independent rulers, among whom the most important were Vukashin, King of Prilep; Lazar, Knez of Rudnik; and Tsar Urosh, the son of Dushan. After the seizure of Adrianople by the Turks the three Serbian leaders entered into an alliance with the Bulgarians and Hungarians and met the Turkish army on the banks of the River Maritza near Adrianople (1371). The Serbs were completely defeated, and Vukashin was drowned.

Independence Lost at Kossovo

The Turks then conquered the whole of Eastern Macedonia, and gradually subdued the Serbian princes west of the Vardar. One of the most famous of these vassal princes was Marko Kralyevitch, King of Prilep and son of Vukashin. He is the hero of many Serbian legends. About 1382 Nish fell into the hands of the Turks. Lazar remained the most powerful leader of the Serbs, and in 1387 he defeated a Turkish army at Plotchnik.

Two years later, however, on June 15, 1389, the Serbian and allied armies under Lazar were totally defeated on the Plain of Kossovo. Lazar and Sultan Murad were both killed, the latter (according to Serbian legends) being murdered in his tent before the battle by Milosh Obilitch. The battle of Kossovo practically closed the period of Serbian medieval independence.

Montenegro successfully resisted the Turkish attacks, but all Serbia proper, together with Bosnia and Herzegovina, fell. The last independent Serbian ruler was George Brankovitch, who fortified himself at Smederevo (Semendria), at the mouth of the Morava, on the Danube. The fortress held out till 1459, Brankovitch having died the previous year. The Belgrade district had been previously ceded to Hungary.

The period of Turkish rule in Serbia lasted from the fifteenth to the nineteenth centuries, and contains few outstanding historical events. The development of Serbia as a nation was in a state of complete suspension, although several causes combined to keep alive the spirit of independence. The continued independence of Montenegro was an example to Serbia, and afforded an asylum for her insurgents.

From Irritation to Insurrection

Economic and religious factors intensified Serbian irritation against the conquerors. The Serbian nobles and landowners had been largely replaced by Ottoman lords, while the Serb peasantry remained Orthodox Christians. The repeated risings which took place were, therefore, those of a discontented peasantry against alien overlords. These risings were carried out sometimes in alliance with Austria and Hungary, and sometimes on a smaller scale in league with the roving bands of outlaws (haiduks) who maintained their independence among the wilder and least accessible regions of Serbia, carrying on guerrilla warfare against the Turks.

There were occasional migrations of Serbs during this period across the Save to Slavonia and south Hungary. One of the most important was carried out under the aegis of the Serbian Patriarch Arsem III. towards the end of the seventeenth century. Between 1718 and 1739 Belgrade and portions of northern Serbia were in the hands of Austria, but in the latter year Austria was forced back beyond the Danube.

The Turks interfered comparatively little with local institutions in Serbia, and allowed freedom of worship. Serbs served as Christians in the Turkish armies, although levies were also made from time to time for janissaries—that is, Serbian children were taken to be reared as Mahomedans for the Turkish janissary corps.

The first national insurrection against the Turks began under Karageorge in

1804. Karageorge (Black George) was a pig-dealer who had served in the Austrian army and understood both regular and guerrilla warfare. Serbia contained a large number of men accustomed to arms at this time, as corps of Serbian volunteers had twice been enrolled by the Pasha of Belgrade, to subdue revolting janissaries. The janissaries had by this time become a menace to the Sultan as well as a terror to the Serbs. Between 1804 and 1807 Karageorge and his bands defeated several Turkish forces sent against them and captured Belgrade, Shabatz, and Uzhitze. In 1809, however, the Serbians were severely defeated near Nish. The Turks built a tower with the skulls of the slain Serbians, which is still shown to the traveller. In 1813 the Turks finally reconquered Serbia, Karageorge escaping to Austrian territory

Another successful rising in 1815 was led by Milosh Obrenovitch, who, in 1817, became Prince of the Serbs. In the same year Karageorge returned from Austria and was murdered, probably with the connivance of Milosh. This began the long feud between the rival royal houses of Karageorgevitch and Obrenovitch. In 1830, after the peace of Adrianople, the Sultan granted local autonomy to Serbia under Milosh as hereditary prince. Turkish garrisons still occupied the fortresses, and tribute was paid. The arbitrary rule of Milosh, though marked by considerable reforms, led to his enforced abdication in 1839. His encouragement of peasant proprietors with small holdings has had most important effects on Serbian history, and is largely responsible for the chief economic and social characteristic of the country to-day. Serbia remains a nation of peasant smallholders without large landowners.

Milosh's son Michael (Mihylo) reigned till 1842, when he was expelled, and Alexander, a son of Karageorge, was elected by the Skupshtina, the national assembly. Alexander was, in turn, expelled in 1859, and the old prince Milosh recalled. Milosh died the following year, and was again succeeded by his son Michael, whose reign of eight years was marked by enlightened reforms. He enhanced the power of the popular Skupshtina at the expense of the Senate. In

THE KINGDOM OF THE SERBS, CROATS, AND SLOVENES

1867, with the support of France and Russia, he obtained the withdrawal of all the Turkish garrisons from the Serbian fortresses. In 1868 Michael was assassinated at Topchider and was succeeded by his son Milan.

The rising in Bulgaria led to war by Serbia and Montenegro on Turkey in 1876. Serbia was at first unsuccessful, and Belgrade was only saved by an armistice imposed on the Porte by Russia in October. In the following year, during the Russo-Turkish hostilities, Milan again declared war on Turkey, captured Nish, and expelled the Turks from Kossovo. By the treaty with Berlin Serbian independence was recognized, and she received new territory in the south from Nish to Vranja.

End of the Obrenovitch Dynasty

Milan assumed the title of king in 1882. His despotism and personal vices made him unpopular, and his abortive attack on Bulgaria in 1885, at the instigation of Austria, intensified the feeling against him. Dislike of foreign influence over its rulers is very marked in Serbia, and it should be noted that the reigning dynasty comes of Serbian peasant stock.

After suddenly presenting the country with a Constitution, Milan abdicated in 1889 in favour of his son Alexander, a minor. Alexander proved himself as despotic as his father, and his marriage in 1900 with a widow, Draga Mashin, of notorious character, enraged the country against him. The introduction of a new Constitution did nothing to alleviate this, and in June, 1903, Alexander and Draga were murdered in the palace at Belgrade by a band of military officers. Peter Karageorgevitch was called to the throne.

The following years were marked by the hostility of Austria, who put a ban on Serbian pigs in 1905, and in 1908, by the annexation of Bosnia and Herzegovina, brought the two countries to the verge of war. The outcome was the Balkan League between Serbia, Montenegro, Bulgaria, and Greece, directed as much against Austria as Turkey.

First and Second Balkan Wars

In 1912 the misgovernment of Macedonia by the Turks finally led to war between them and the Balkan League. In a few weeks the Turkish forces were entirely broken, and the whole of their European territory, as far as Adrianople, lost. The victory was marred by a quarrel over the spoils between Serbia and Bulgaria, leading to war between the former allies in the summer of 1913. The Serbians were again victorious, and by the treaty of Bukarest received virtually the whole of Macedonia, the Serbian territory extending nearly as far as Salonica (Greek), in the south, and westwards as far as Prilep, Monastir, and Ochrida. The sanjak of Novi Pazar was divided between Serbia and Montenegro.

By the Balkan War Serbia was almost doubled in size and recovered Üsküb, the ancient capital of Serbia, together with the whole district known as Old Serbia, including the plain of Kossovo.

The aggrandisement of Serbia during the Balkan War made her the focus of Yugo-Slav aspirations, and brought upon her the redoubled enmity of Austria. The assassination of the Austrian Crown Prince, Francis Ferdinand, at Serajevo, on June 28, 1914, gave Austria an opportunity of accusing Serbia of complicity and of declaring war upon her. In this devastating war Serbia's armies again showed the élan and hardihood for which the Serbian soldier is noted. The Austrians twice invaded the country and were twice repulsed, the second time with enormous loss.

The entry of Bulgaria into the war, and the dispatch of a German force under Mackensen to direct the final attack, led to the disaster in the autumn of 1915, when the whole country was rapidly overrun from three sides at once.

Establishment of the Triune Kingdom

Part of the army, together with the king and the government, escaped to Albania, and retreated through the mountains to the coast, where the survivors were received by the Allies and transported to Corfu. In three months the remnants of the army had been reorganized and occupied part of the Allied line in Macedonia. The triumphal onslaught on the Bulgarians and Austrians in 1918 was very largely due to the Serbian troops, and is said to have been planned by Voyvoda Mishitch, their brilliant field-marshal.

By the Pact of Corfu, signed during the war, Serbs, Croats, and Slovenes agreed to unite in a Triune Kingdom under King Peter. The defeat of Austria enabled this project to be carried out, and the Yugo-Slav agreement with Italy in 1921 gave to the new kingdom Dalmatia and most of its islands. Montenegro also declared its adhesion to the Serbian Kingdom. A Constituent Assembly ratified the Constitution in 1921.

King Peter died in August, 1921, and was succeeded by his second son, Alexander, who had for some years acted as Regent.

Bosnia and Herzegovina have only had short periods of independence. They appear to have been subject in turn to Croatia, Hungary, and the eastern

emperor, finally falling under Turkish rule.

Risings against Turkish misgovernment marked the first half of the nineteenth century, and the Christian revolt of 1875 was followed by the Austro-Hungarian occupation of 1878. Annexation to Austria was declared in 1908. The Austrian occupation was violently opposed, and Yugo-Slav agitation was active in the country till 1914. It was at Serajevo, the capital of Bosnia, that the Austrian Crown Prince Ferdinand was murdered.

The Turks arrived in Croatia in the sixteenth century and occupied the country until 1718, when, by the Treaty of Passarovitz, the emperor regained most of the territory. There was no conversion to Mahomedanism under Turkish rule, as in Bosnia. The Croats remained Roman Catholic, and Western rather than Eastern in civilization.

Dalmatia, throughout its history, has been divided into isolated harbour towns, where Latin civilization has been predominant, and the country districts, where the Slav element has been important since the seventh century. The towns have been Roman Catholic, and the country districts Orthodox. Venice and Hungary competed for mastery in the Dalmatian towns for several centuries, the local population being divided in its allegiance, some helping one and some the other.

Slovenia, the third and most northerly division of the new kingdom, includes Carniola and parts of Carinthia, Styria, and Istria. It is historically interesting as being the first to obtain independence after the Slav invasions of the seventh century. It was conquered by Charlemagne and remained under Austrian influence till 1918, though the Slav language and habits persisted.

KINGDOM OF THE SERBS, CROATS, AND SLOVENES: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Includes the former kingdom of Serbia and Montenegro and large portions of what was Austro-Hungarian territory, and some small concessions from Bulgaria. The states of Bosnia and Herzegovina are comprised within the territory of this kingdom, as are Croatia-Slavonia, Dalmatia, the Backa and the Banat districts and Slovenia, the name given to those parts of Carniola, Styria, and Carinthia peopled by Slovenes. Dinaric Alps and subsidiary ranges divide Montenegro and Herzegovina from Bosnia and are cleft by the gorge of the Narenta river. Large forests cover part of country. Main rivers are the Danube, Save, Morava, and Narenta. Total population of kingdom totals about 12,017,000, inhabitating an area of some 6,000 square miles.

Government and Constitution

Under the Constitution of June 28, 1921, provision is made for a single chamber of over three hundred members, called the National Assembly. It is summoned and dissolved by the king, who is bound to uphold constitution. There is a Prime Minister, and a Cabinet of fifteen ministers. There is also a Constituent Assembly.

Defence

Service in army is compulsory between ages of twenty-one and forty-five. Total forces in peace time, about 127,000 officers and men. Navy consists of some four monitors on the Danube, and twelve torpedo-boats for police purposes.

Commerce and Industries

Agriculture the main occupation of inhabitants. Apples, plums, pears, olives, vines, and tobacco are grown, and many are employed in the culture of silk. In 1922 the country had more than 5,000,000 head of cattle, and 7,000,000 sheep. There are large, but mainly undeveloped, tracts of forest containing fir, beech, and oak. Mineral deposits include iron, coal, gold, copper ore, and antimony. Among principal industries are distilling and brewing, tanning, and iron working, and there is an old-established carpet weaving industry. In 1921 imports, of which the chief were agricultural products, chemicals, animal products, and machinery, totalled 4,122,097,642 dinars. Exports for same year totalled 2,460,737,562 dinars, and included corn, maize, prunes, cattle, and timber. Standard coin the silver dinar, nominally worth one French franc.

Communications

Total railway mileage about 5,700, mainly state owned. Roads aggregate about 3,500 miles, and are largely in an indifferent state. There is a navigation syndicate controlling the rivers Danube and Save, the total length of navigable waterway being about 1,700 miles. There are over 11,000 miles of telegraph, and more than 16,000 miles of telephone line. Post offices number about 3,700.

Religion and Education

About 47 per cent. of population belong to Greek Orthodox Church, 39 per cent. are Roman Catholics, 2 per cent. Protestants, and 11 per cent. Mahomedans. There are two Roman Catholic Bishops, and Serbian Orthodox Church is under a synod of bishops, and all ecclesiastical officials are controlled by a Minister of Public Worship. There is complete freedom of conscience. Primary education free and compulsory under Ministry of Education. There are about 6,000 elementary schools, with about 800,000 pupils and a staff of 12,700. There are veterinary, law, and engineering schools and universities at Belgrade, Laibach, and Agram.

Chief Towns

Belgrade, capital (estimated population, 120,000), Agram (80,000), Laibach (60,000), Serajevo (50,000), Novi Sad (40,000), Nish (25,000), Kragujevatz (18,000), Sabac (11,500).

PHRAPATOOM'S IMMENSE PAGODA ASPIRING TO THE SKIES

Lying west of the Menam river, not far from Bangkok, Phrapatoom is an important educational centre, with military and agricultural schools Its distinguishing asset is its huge pagoda, the largest in Siam, much resorted to by pilgrims, especially on the first and eighth days of the waxing and the first and eighth days of the waning moon, when it is always thronged with worshippers

Photo, W A Graham

Siam

I. A Far Eastern Land of Peace & Progress

By W. A. Graham

Author of "Siam A Handbook"

SIAM is one of the few tropical countries in the world now in a complete state of independence, and is the only country that combines a considerable degree of modern civilization with the rule of an untrammelled Oriental despot

About 95 per cent of the nation consists of a primitive peasantry entirely devoted to agricultural pursuits, with an infusion of Chinese merchants, tradesmen, and artisans The remainder includes the sovereign and his court, the uncles, brothers, cousins and nephews of the king with their households, the ministers of state, and their functionaries great and small, engaged in the administration

Siam contains about nine and a quarter million inhabitants Outwardly the people are all very much alike, about 90 per cent being Buddhists, while the features, complexion, stature and other characteristics of the Mongoloid type are common to all

Actually, however, the nation is far from homogeneous The great central plain, the wealthiest part, is occupied by the Siamese proper, who call themselves 'Thai," in number about four millions, a race evolved from a fusion of the two great and quite distinct families of Mongoloid stock, the Lao-Tai and Môn-Annam

Eastern and Northern Siam are inhabited by people of unmixed Lao-Tai stock, cousins of the Siamese, to whom their relationship appears in the approximation of the languages and customs and in the appearance of the two peoples These the Siamese call Lao, but for all purposes of official administration they now class them with themselves as Thai The Lao in Siam number about three and a half millions In addition to the above there is a population, chiefly confined to the mountain ranges, of the Môn-Annam clans, the largest of which are the Ka and Lawa, or hill tribes remotely connected with the Burmese race, and of communities of Shan, Karen, Khmers, Annamese, and Malays Lastly there is the population of Bangkok, the capital, a city of shopkeepers, merchants, and officials, the first two categories almost entirely pure Chinese and the last Siamese,

CHIEF ABBOT OF SIAM

In consideration of the fact that they have passed the nine grades of proficiency, Siamese abbots are called Maha, or great This particular dignitary is, besides, a king's uncle

Photo, W A Graham

SIAMESE VILLAGERS AND A GRASS-ROOFED VILLAGE DWELLING

Most Siamese houses up country stand on or near a river bank When a young man marries he builds his home gradually First of all a structure like this is made of teak if he be well to do otherwise of bamboo with a grass roof As time goes on and the family increases, similar structures are added so as to form three sides of a square

Photo Charles J Charbet

with a crossing of Chinese blood The features of the Siamese are strongly Mongoloid A wide, flat head, a prognathous jaw, a flat, broad nose, long and slightly oblique eyes, large ears, and high cheek bones, are usual physical characteristics The physique of the countryman is naturally sturdy and well developed, and that of the townsman has been immensely improved by the physical exercises and athletic games ordained by King Rama VI for all schoolboys and youths, and by compulsory army service

The complexion of the Siamese is brown, and varies much with individuals, passing from the nearly white of high-bred women through infinite gradations to the deep chocolate colour of the sunburnt peasant. Black hair and brown eyes are universal, and facial and body hair is more or less absent The average height for men is about five feet two inches, and for women about four feet ten inches

At one time both sexes of all classes wore the hair short and stiffly upright, and the teeth, partly from chewing betel and partly from intentional dyeing, were usually deep black At the beginning of his reign, in 1910, King Rama VI. allowed it to be known that stubbly hair and black teeth were not by him considered obligatory

Thereupon young men began to wear their hair in European fashion, while young women grew theirs long and learnt to "do" it in various attractive ways At the same time the colouring of the teeth was given up and the use of cheap imported cigarettes, capturing the fancy of th

younger generation, ousted betel-chewing from its former pride of place

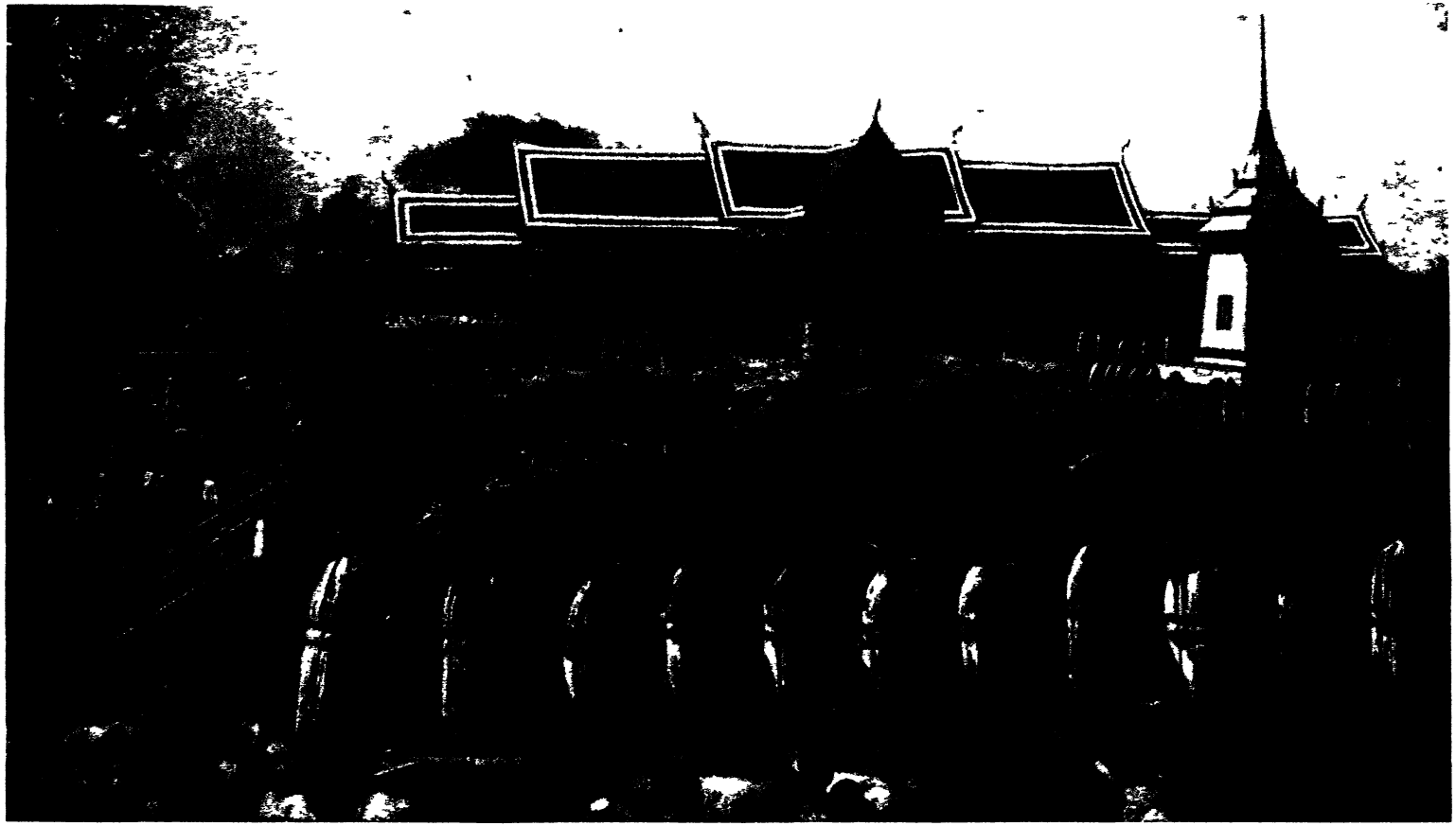
The principal garment of the Siamese, both male and female, is a cloth about two and a half feet wide and seven feet long, the middle part of which is passed round the body, which it covers from the waist to the knees, and hitched in front so that the two ends hang down before These ends being twisted together into a rope are passed backwards between the legs, drawn up and tucked into the waist at the middle of the back The garment is called "panoong," may be of cotton or silk, and is of all sorts of patterns, an ancient custom prescribing a distinctive colour for each day of the week

In addition to the panoong, the rustic man wears either nothing at all or a short loose jacket, while his women-folk wear a narrow scarf, called "pa-hom," wound round the bust, or a tight-sleeved and closely buttoned jacket The men of the upper class wear white drill or tussore silk coats of European cut over a muslin shirt, Homburg hats, cotton stockings, and pipe-clayed shoes, which, with the panoong, make an effective costume, but uniforms on European models having been introduced for civil as well as military officers, the panoong has given place to trousers for occasions of ceremony

The ladies of the upper class wear blouses, silk stockings, and high-heeled shoes, and a few of them have taken to skirts, either European or similar to those worn by their Lao cousins of the north, in place of the panoong. Small children wear no clothes at

BRILLIANT DIGNITY OF THE CORONATION CEREMONY IN SIAM

In front of a beautifully designed pavilion sits the King On both sides are attendants who bend the knee while they hold the queerly shaped but gorgeously decorated sunshades, a feature of all Siamese ceremonial In front of his Majesty is a table bearing the consecrated waters Drinking and pouring water over the person play a large part in religious rites, and are often Brahman in origin



SELECTING A BULL FROM A CAPTURED HERD OF WILD ELEPHANTS IN THE ROYAL KEDDAH AT AYUTHIA

All wild elephants in Siam are held to be royal property, and those which live in the plains are specially reserved for the restocking of the royal stables Periodically a herd is driven slowly towards Ayuthia, some forty miles north of Bangkok The animals are herded into the enclosure or keddah on the first day of the show. During the second, men on trained elephants and carrying ropes contrive to noose certain bulls by the leg Huge crowds assemble, and the king comes in person to watch the proceedings, which form the chief royal diversion

all except on state occasions. Jewelry of artistic design is much worn by women and children. The heads of babies and small children are usually shaved bare except for a small spot in the middle of the crown on which the hair is allowed to grow long.

It is only a few years since Siam began to emerge from the traditional social conditions of Oriental despotism, and the national character still bears signs of the influence of such conditions. These appear in the subserviency shown to all acknowledged superiors and the equally pronounced arrogance indulged in at the expense of inferiors.

Towards their equals the Siamese are light-hearted, open and frank, hospitable, peace-loving, and usually humane. Family ties are very close, and love of children is strongly developed. The national character is easily influenced either for good or evil. Many of the commoner failings are due to an inordinate vanity.

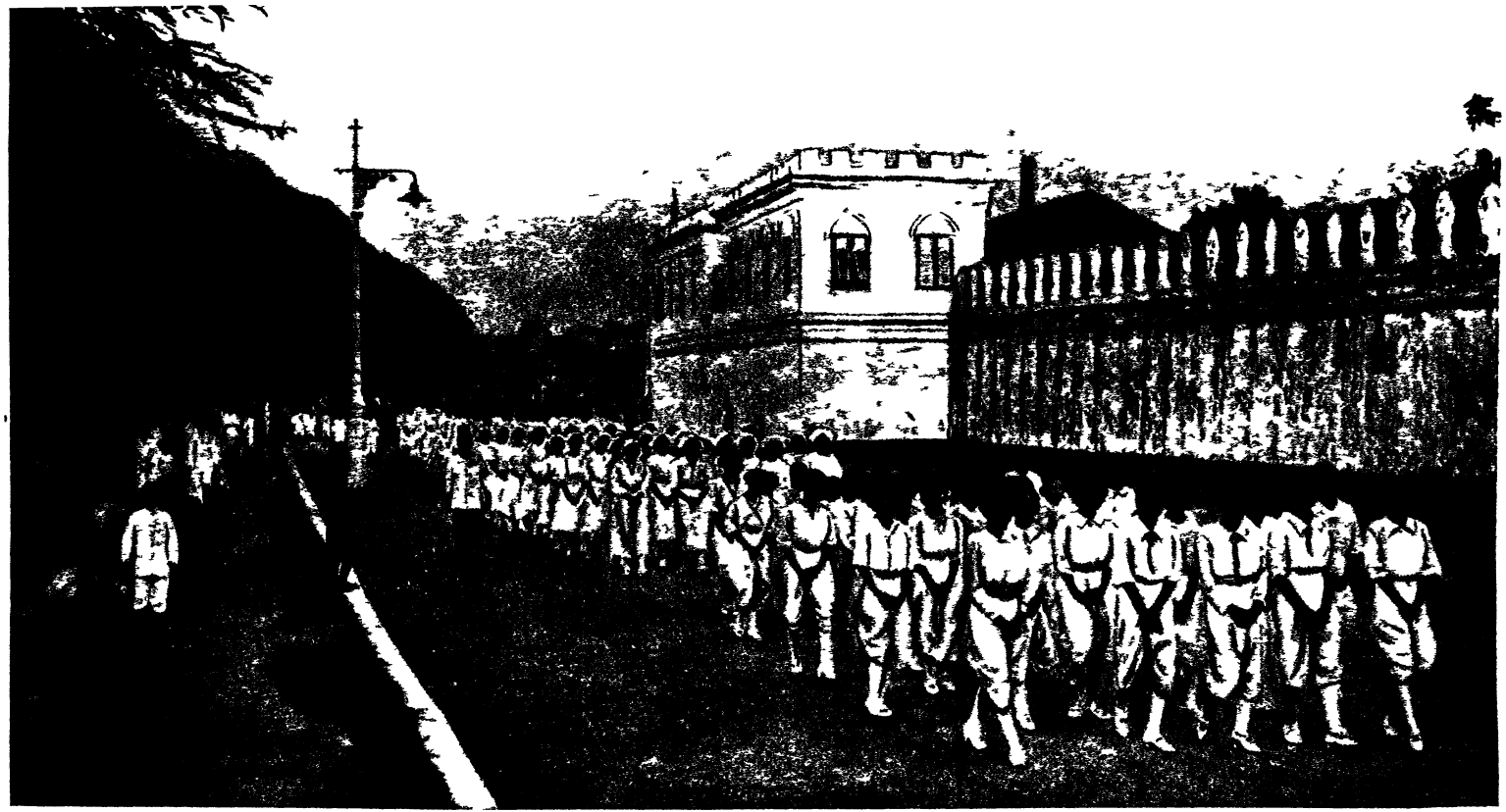
"IT IS ALWAYS SAFE TO LEARN"
Arrayed in academic robes, the Minister of Public Instruction points to printed books, whose introduction into Siam has revolutionised education there. The system now includes primary, secondary, and departmental schools, and the admirable Chulalongkorn University at Bangkok
Photo, W. A. Graham

The Siamese have no commercial aptitude. Naturally, therefore, the business of the country is almost entirely in the hands of foreigners. The peasant has few wants, and no incentive to undertake more than the two or three months' labour that suffices for the raising of his yearly rice crop. The townsman differs from his country cousin only in having more wants, to satisfy which he will engage in the lighter forms of work, but to as small an extent as possible. The typical peasant's house is a wooden structure on long posts standing on the bank of a river or creek. It consists of one, two, or three oblong buildings opening on to a wooden platform from which a flight of steps descends to the ground or into the water. Each oblong consists of one or more rooms opening into a narrow veranda which skirts the platform. The kitchen occupies a small back room whence refuse is discharged through the interstices of the floor. Building material varies from the flimsiest bamboo matting and thatch to solid teak and tiles. Nowadays corrugated iron is freely used. Bangkok—with its royal palaces, its

CONVEYING THE GOLDEN URN CONTAINING A ROYAL CORPSE FROM A STATE BARGE TO THE PYRE

When some personage near the throne comes to die, his remains are placed in a sitting posture and packed in a copper urn covered with gold The cremation is a matter of days First the body is brought to the place of burning Next it is placed on the pyre the whole is ignited, and the residue at length collected in a smaller urn The state barges of Siam are some one hundred and sixty feet long and seven feet broad their hulls being dug out of a single tree trunk The crew with their long paddles keep time to the thudding of a silvern spear upon a platform in the bows

H t Chr J hri



WHITE-CLAD PALACE LADIES PRECEDE THEIR MISTRESS ON HER PROGRESS TO THE FUNERAL PYRE

Funeral ceremonies are elaborate and inordinately protracted in Siam So much so that, where members of the royal family are concerned, the ultimate cremation of the corpse may be deferred for as long as several years after death White is the mourning colour in the country, and a touching note of simple grace was imparted to the procession that escorted the remains of the queen mother to the funeral pyre in 1920 by the company of palace ladies in snowy garb marching with hands clasped before them They were followed by hospital nurses in skirts and caps of equally dazzling whiteness

Photo W. & G. Graham

UNIFORMS RICH AND RARE AND ELABORATE CEREMONIAL AT THE ROYAL PALACE AT BANGKOK

Siamese kings were second to none in their insistence on the royal prerogative and dignity of the sovereign who was the brilliant and awesome head of a formality ridden social structure the education and ideas of other lands, have done away with much of the cumbrous ceremonial pomp still attends their going out and their coming in

Not merely every subject, but his goods also were at the disposa Though the more modern monarchs who in their youth tasted and particularly the nuisance of the complete prostration great

Int Chare I Clark

handsome public offices, clubs, business houses, foreign legations, busy streets served by electric trams and lighting, and, down-river, its rice-mills, saw-mills, wharves, and warehouses, mingling with innumerable and very beautiful Buddhist temples and monasteries; and with, at its riversides, its serried rows of floating houses and quaint, ramshackle dwellings on posts – is a most interesting city.

The floating houses are a peculiar feature. These are usually of teak covered with Nipah thatch. One or two high-pitched roofs cover a floor some forty feet square resting upon floating pontoons. The space is divided into front and back room, with a small kitchen behind and a veranda in front. The house is moored near the shore facing outwards, and is approachable from the water.

Amphibious Life of the Siamese

The people being mostly riparian dwellers, it follows that they are expert watermen. Excepting in the mountainous districts, the rivers and creeks are the principal highways, and much of the out-of-door life of the people is passed on the water. Children can usually swim almost as soon as they can walk. The women go in boats to markets that are held on the water; the monks go their alms-seeking rounds in canoes; pedlars of food and other goods paddle themselves and their wares from house to house; and, in spite of the railways, seven-tenths of the merchandise of the country is conveyed in boats from the places of production to those of sale.

Many people live either altogether or for a part of the year in boats, varying in size with the means of the owners, and in shape with the locality where they are built. The waters of the Menam river at Bangkok are usually alive with steam and motor launches used by the well-to-do for business or pleasure, while passenger launches, called by courtesy "mail boats," ply daily on the main rivers and canals. The principal domestic customs of the various races have much resemblance, are mostly of common origin, and are more or less connected with religion in one or other of its various aspects.

Happy Days of Early Childhood

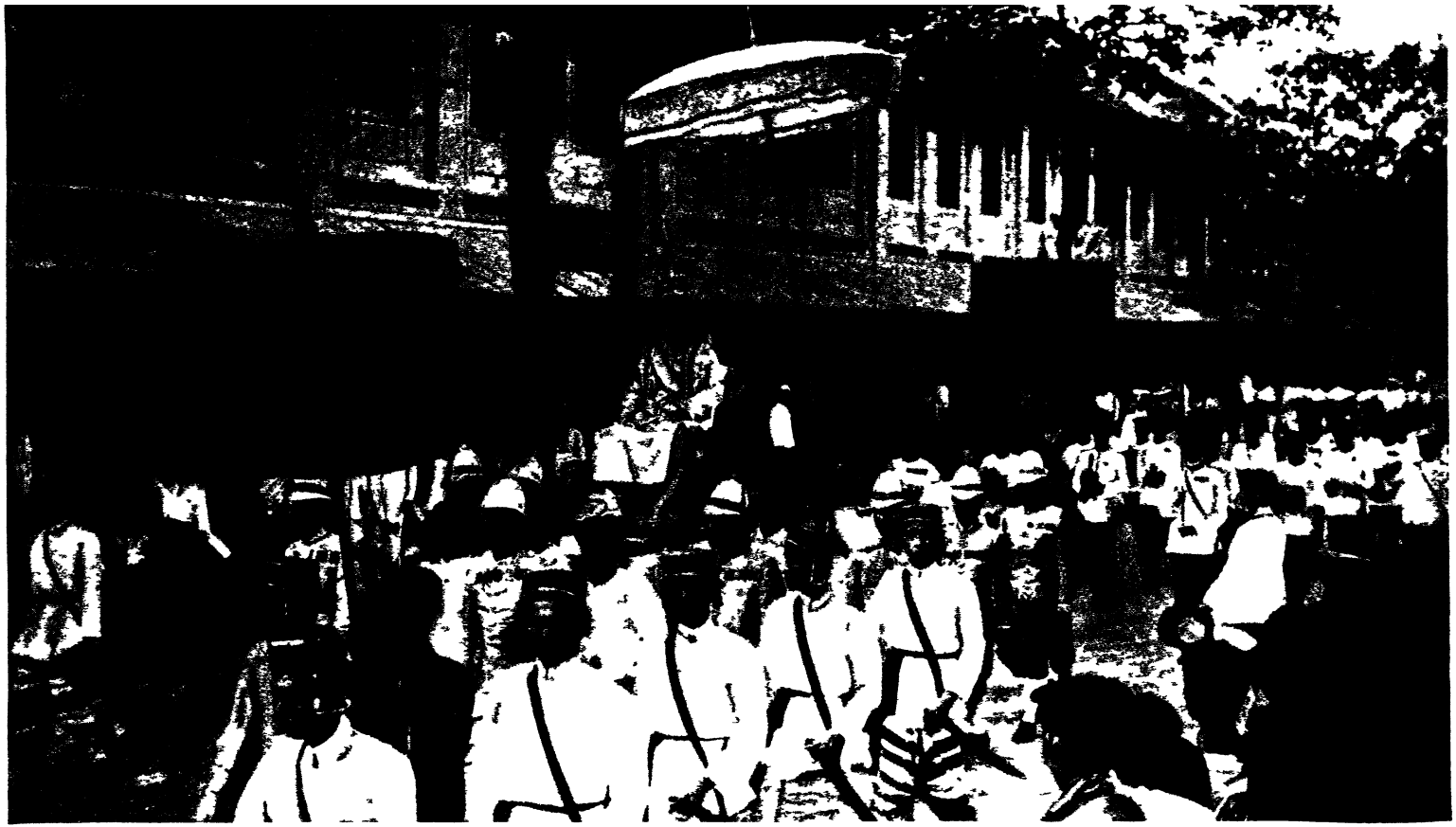
A Siamese child is born in a room from which all evil influences have been carefully removed by incantation and prayer, such medical assistance as may be considered necessary being provided by a wise-woman, who notes all particulars of the birth and directs the heat-cure to which the mother, in accordance with the general practice of Further India, is subjected.

As soon as convenient a soothsayer is called in, and in the presence of an assembly of relatives, the horoscope of the child is drawn and an appropriate name selected. At the age of about two years the child is finally weaned, being by that time able to run about, to talk, and to take an intelligent interest in the life surrounding it.

From then until the age of five or so the child lives free and naked, the spoilt darling of the family, acquiring much fairy lore, many superstitions, and probably a knowledge of the alphabet. At the age of about six the regular use of clothing is adopted, whereupon school life begins.

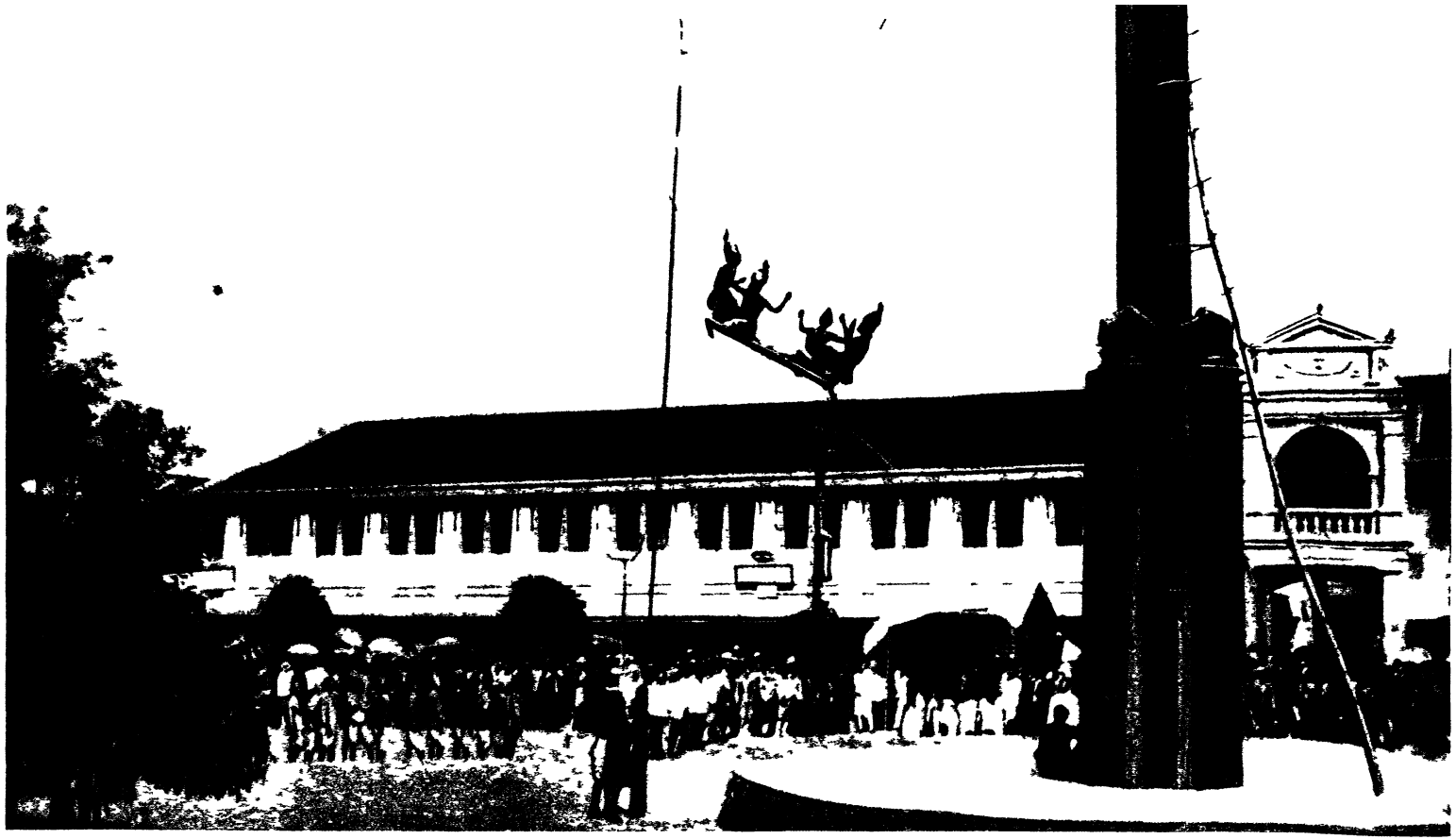
Religion and Ritual in Education

Under a modern Compulsory Education Act the peasant child faintly pursues knowledge in the village monastery or at a secular school, until released to the avocations of husbandry at the age of fourteen or thereabouts. The town boy, intended for non-agricultural pursuits, will continue his education through school and university until fitted for the profession or calling it is his lot to follow. Though schools for girls exist, female education in Siam can hardly be said to have begun. Chinese voluntary schools for boys and girls, with complete Chinese



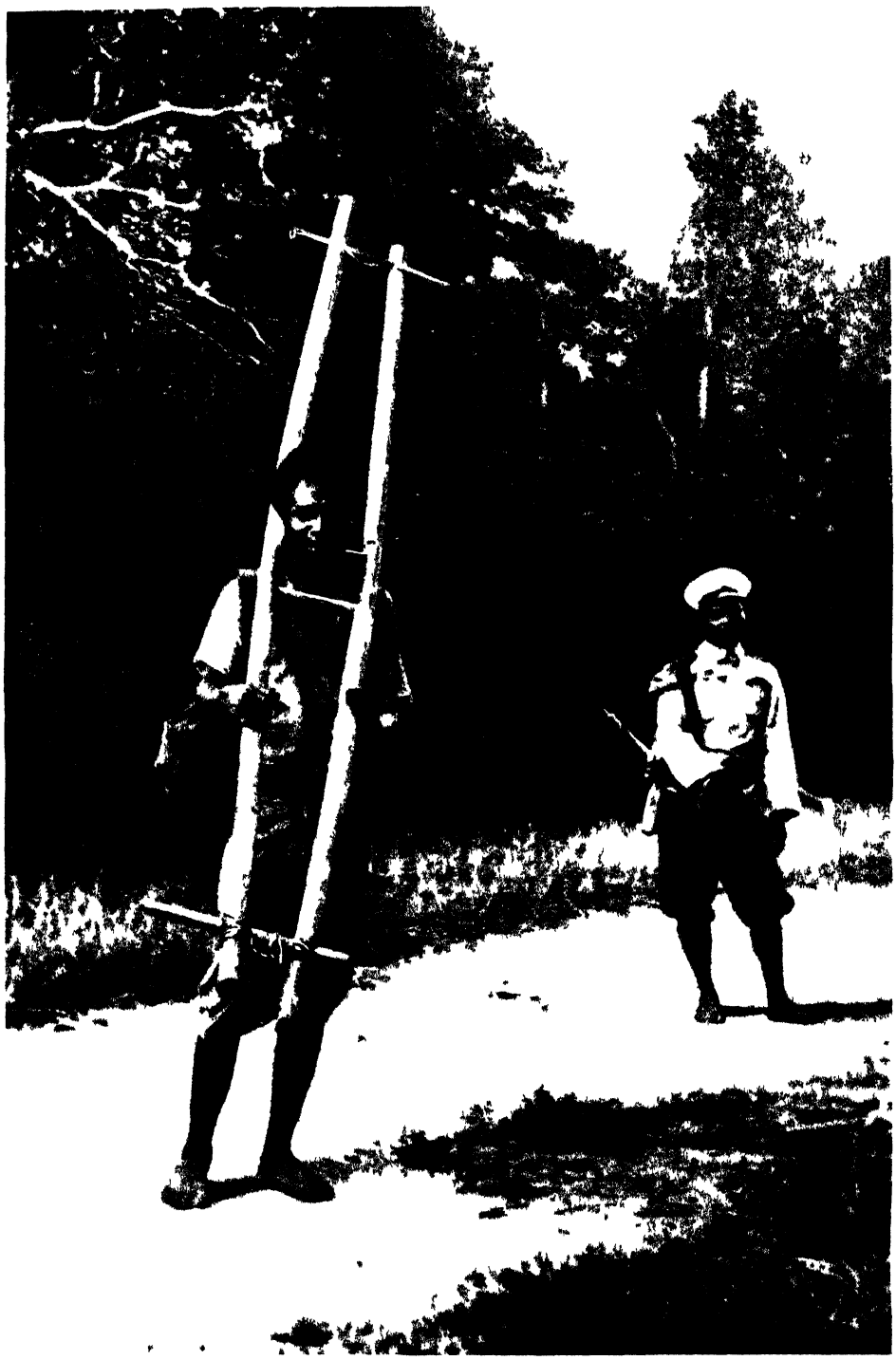
NOBLEMAN REPRESENTATIVE OF THE DEITY PRESIDING OVER AGRICULTURE ON HIS WAY TO THE SWING FESTIVAL

As a mark of gratitude for the harvest and to ensure future prosperity for the husbandmen there is held at Bangkok between the latter days of December and the middle of January the curious and remarkable Swing Festival The ceremonies are conducted by Brahmans and the first consists of parading through the streets a human representative of the god of the lower heaven This personage is a member of the nobility chosen by the king and is not twice elected He takes lessons beforehand in divine deportment from Brahman professors and is accorded all the reverence due to his temporary godship



IN FULL SWING AT THE GREAT ANNUAL HARVEST CELEBRATIONS AT BANGKOK

When the deputy of the god has taken up his prescribed position, four men are hoisted to the seat of the swing This measures six feet by one, and is suspended with its greatest length at right angles to the cross bar by six rattan ropes, at a height of about fifteen feet from the ground A rope fastened to it is pulled by men below, and one of the swingers must, in full course, seize in his mouth a small bag of money at the end of a pole This is repeated twice, and the crowd anxiously watch, for according to their notion, bungling means bad harvests for the rest of the year



SIAMESE CATTLE-THIEF UNDER THE YOKE

Serious crime is not very prevalent among the Siamese, who as a whole are a peaceable race amenable to authority Justice, too is well administered under the Ministry of Justice organized in 1892 On his way to gaol after conviction for cattle stealing, this prisoner is wearing a bamboo frame to prevent him running into the woods and so escaping his escort

WIFE OF A PETTY OFFICIAL WITH HER DARKER-SKINNED SERVANT

In Siam there is a special class, some of whom occupy official positions, called Môn. They are of Talaing stock, and descended in many cases from captives of war taken from the old Pegu kingdom in Burma. Mon women may be recognized by a little fringe around their foreheads, the Siamese ladies seldom indulging in long hair. The one-piece garment hitched between the legs is called a "panoong"

Photo, Charles J Charbot

MINISTRANTS TO THE ORIENTAL HABIT OF MASTICATION SIAMESE WOMEN SELLING BETEL-NUT

As among most Oriental peoples, betel chewing is an almost universal practice of the Siamese Betel nut is really the seed of the fruit of the areca palm boiled sliced, and dried in the sun Small pieces are wrapped in a leaf of the betel pepper plant with a little pellet of lime, and slowly chewed, stimulating a flow of bright red saliva which gradually turns the teeth black Within recent years the younger generation of Siamese have shown a tendency to abandon betel chewing in favour of smoking cheap imported cigarettes

Photo Underwood

curriculum, are a new feature in Bangkok. Custom decrees that, between the ages of ten and thirteen, children should undergo the ceremony of head-shaving (known as topknot cutting) as a formal proclamation of adolescence. This ceremony, observed among the royal family and higher class with much extravagant ritual, seems to be falling gradually into disuse with the general public.

Due observance of the Buddhist faith entails for every male a period of existence as a monk, which may be lifelong or for two or three days only, but should in no case be altogether eschewed. The usual term of seclusion is about three months, and the entry upon this period is marked by elaborate celebrations at which the hero of the moment appears, surrounded by worldly grandeur and delights which he discards at the appropriate moment in imitation of the great renunciation of the Buddha. These rites should properly be accomplished at an early age, but are frequently postponed until comparatively late in life.

Ceremonies Attending Marriage

A Siamese man at the age of nineteen or twenty and a girl at fifteen or so have reached full marriageable age. Marriages may be of convenience or of affection, and in fact are usually a combination of the two kinds. According to the means of the parties and their relatives, the ceremonial accompanying a marriage may be elaborate or practically absent. The matter is first and foremost a civil contract, the religious aspect, though recognized, being considered scarcely material.

A marriage celebration is held at the house of the bride's father in the presence of relatives and friends of both parties. It consists of the counting of the "Thun" (pron. Toon) or housekeeping capital, the presentation of a betel-nut outfit and joint partaking therefrom by the principals, the binding of the pair with a sacred cord and the pouring of holy water over them by the guests, and concludes with a formal introduction of the bride into the bridal chamber. Polygamy, considered correct for the higher class and necessary for the king, is not much practised by the peasantry. The first wife is the chief wife, and marriages with lesser wives are usually without ceremony. But children of lesser wives are recognized legally.

Pomp and Circumstance of Death

When a Siamese dies his body is placed in a coffin, or a large golden urn if of royal blood, and mounted upon a sort of altar constructed in the principal room of the house, where it remains in state surrounded by the most cherished belongings of the deceased, and by such ornaments and valuables as the family may be able to assemble. Previous to being placed in the coffin it is washed with much ceremony, relatives and friends assisting and choirs of monks chanting appropriate formulae.

Afterwards religious services are held at intervals, those on the seventh, the fiftieth, and the hundredth days after the death being particularly important. After a period, which may extend to several years, the ceremony of cremation takes place, when the relatives of the deceased entertain their friends to the utmost of their means. Unlimited food and drink and various games are provided, everyone, beginning with the guest of honour, contributes fire and combustibles to the funeral pyre, and an exhibition of fireworks fills in the time between the burning of the body and the collection of the ashes next morning.

Religion, Art, and Literature

These ceremonies run through infinite gradations according to the importance of the deceased and the wealth of his heirs. The lying-in-state services and cremations of members of the royal family are in a measure public festivals,

which last many days, thousands of people being fed daily and entertained with all manner of diversions at the royal expense. On the other hand the obsequies of the average peasant are of a quite humble nature, the body, after the first or second ceremony, being removed to the village monastery to be out of the way, and there left until the family has time and money for the cremation. The Lao practise both burial and cremation, the latter being reserved for their rulers and monks. Chinese, Malays, and other races inhabiting Siam bury their dead.

Siamese Buddhism is of the southern variety and similar in its tenets to the religion of Burma and Ceylon. The king is in fact religious primate, and there is a complete hierarchy by law established, as well as an ecclesiastical department to control the secular affairs of the Church. There are over ten thousand monasteries, and the monks, exclusive of temporary recluses, number nearly two hundred thousand. Though, with the growth of Western ideas, the intellectual classes have fallen away from the full observances of religion, in the rural districts the people still observe them fully.

The art and literature of Siam were, until recently, secondary religious exercises, that is, they were inspired by religion, devoted to religious ends, and pursued chiefly by monks. Modern requirements have changed this somewhat, but even now the greater part of the artistic and literary productions of the country has to some degree a religious significance.

Of the arts, the principal are silver-working, wood-carving, bronze-casting, lacquer-working, embroidery, drawing and painting. Betel-boxes, tobacco-boxes, drinking-cups, cuspidors, and

ANOINTED FOR THE SACRIFICE TO ADOLESCENCE

Her topknot carefully arranged and garlanded, this young lady smilingly awaits its removal at the tonsure ceremony undergone by all Siamese children as formal proclamation of their adolescence. On his accession, in 1910, King Rama VI. sanctioned European fashions of hairdressing, and many young women now grow their hair long and arrange it in various attractive ways

PLAYING PITCH AND TOSS BY THE DOOR OF A CRUMBLING TEMPLE

Siamese are confirmed gamblers, and before the authorities closed the public gaming houses a considerable revenue was derived from the sale of gambling monopolies The game is here being played outside a ruined temple There are many such, for the Siamese hold that, in the eyes of heaven, he who repairs a temple acquires no merit himself, but merely adds to that of the original builder

Photo, O. A. Fry

other utensils are made in silver with designs, of religious or mythical origin, in repoussé work, unadorned or inlaid with a black metallic flux (niello). The designs used for carving, lacquer-work, and embroidery are all similar to those found in silverware.

Lacquer-work is of several kinds: the design imposed in gilt on a black lacquer ground, or inlaid in mother-of-pearl in soft lacquer, or etched on hard lacquer with lines filled in with various colours. Images of the Buddha in thousands, censers, dishes, and trays are cast in bronze. Figure and freehand drawing have attained a considerable degree of excellence, but notions of landscape, perspective, and colour are very primitive.

Music is much cultivated; instruments are numerous and are used in concert or alone Singing is a common accomplishment, but the singing voice has peculiarities which make it difficult of appreciation by foreigners. Harmony has no place in the national conception of music, but young Siamese take readily to the European system. Military marches and soldiers' marching songs, all in Siamese rhythm and cadence, are a recent development of the indigenous art.

COATS CUT ACCORDING TO CLOTH

Clothing with the Kamoos is no question of propriety, but of means He whose portion of the world's goods is sufficient for his needs dons trousers or at least a skirt Otherwise a loin cloth must suffice, save for gala days

Photo, W A Elder

The drama is highly developed. Until recently a rigid adherence to classic stage convention was carefully observed, but since about 1910 a new form of the art has grown up, based upon a union of Oriental and European methods. This new art, encouraged by the king, a devotee of both schools, seems likely to have far-reaching results. All classical plays are operatic, and, the facial expression of the actors being concealed by cosmetics, and natural voice-modulation forbidden, the emotions are expressed by conventional gestures.

The Siamese language is closely allied to Shan and distantly to Cambodian. Both Bali and Sanscrit enter largely into its composition The alphabet belongs to the Further Indian group, and has forty-four consonants with thirty-two vowel signs Writing is from left to right without space between words, and with almost no punctuation.

The literature consists of sacred scriptures; of romantic stories taken from Brahman mythology, of local histories, of laws made by wise kings, of medical treatises inextricably confounding pharmaceutics with witchcraft, of epics, ballads, and love songs innumerable; and of guides to wisdom and deportment for every walk in life.

Before the introduction of printing, books were few, and each consisted of a single sheet of coarse cardboard-like paper many yards long and folded in accordion pleats The script was always clearly and carefully executed, and elaborate illustrations were frequent. Most of these were the work of monks, and the library was a feature in many monasteries of note. Such literature was practically beyond the reach of the common people, but it provided the repertoires of minstrels, raconteurs, soothsayers, and others who lived by retailing it viva voce to the populace.

Printing, of course, revolutionised the system. All the old literature is now available in cheap books, while of modern works on history, art, law, and other subjects, and translations or adaptations from novels and plays of Europe, there is a continuous production. A peculiar form of book consisting of sacred verses and formulae

KAMOO TRIBESMAN FROM THE HILLS OF NORTHERN SIAM

Believed to be descendants of some of the original inhabitants of this part of South Asia who were driven to the refuge of the high hills by subsequent invaders, the Kamoos are related to the Môn-Annam race. They are grouped by the Siamese with other northern tribes, and called collectively Kachĕ or Ka. Many find employment in the teak forests

Photo, W. A. Elder

SIAMESE ACTORS IN CONVENTIONAL POSES OF THEIR CLASSIC DRAMA

Among the most ancient and precious institutions in the country, the drama is highly developed and well patronised The players themselves are either peripatetic or maintained privately by the nobles Here is a scene from the " Yi Kay " form of play in which female parts are taken by men These actors are in the conventional characters of princess, prince and demon

Photo Charles J Charbot

ELABORATELY GARBED ACTRESSES IN A TRIUMPH OF POSTURE

Incidental dancing is often interpolated with the action of a Siamese play. When actresses take part, the type of performance is called "Lakhon" as opposed to the other form of legitimate drama "Yi Kay" The stage is usually a space on three sides of which sit the audience, and the only "property" is a raised platform that serves for anything from a cottage to a throne

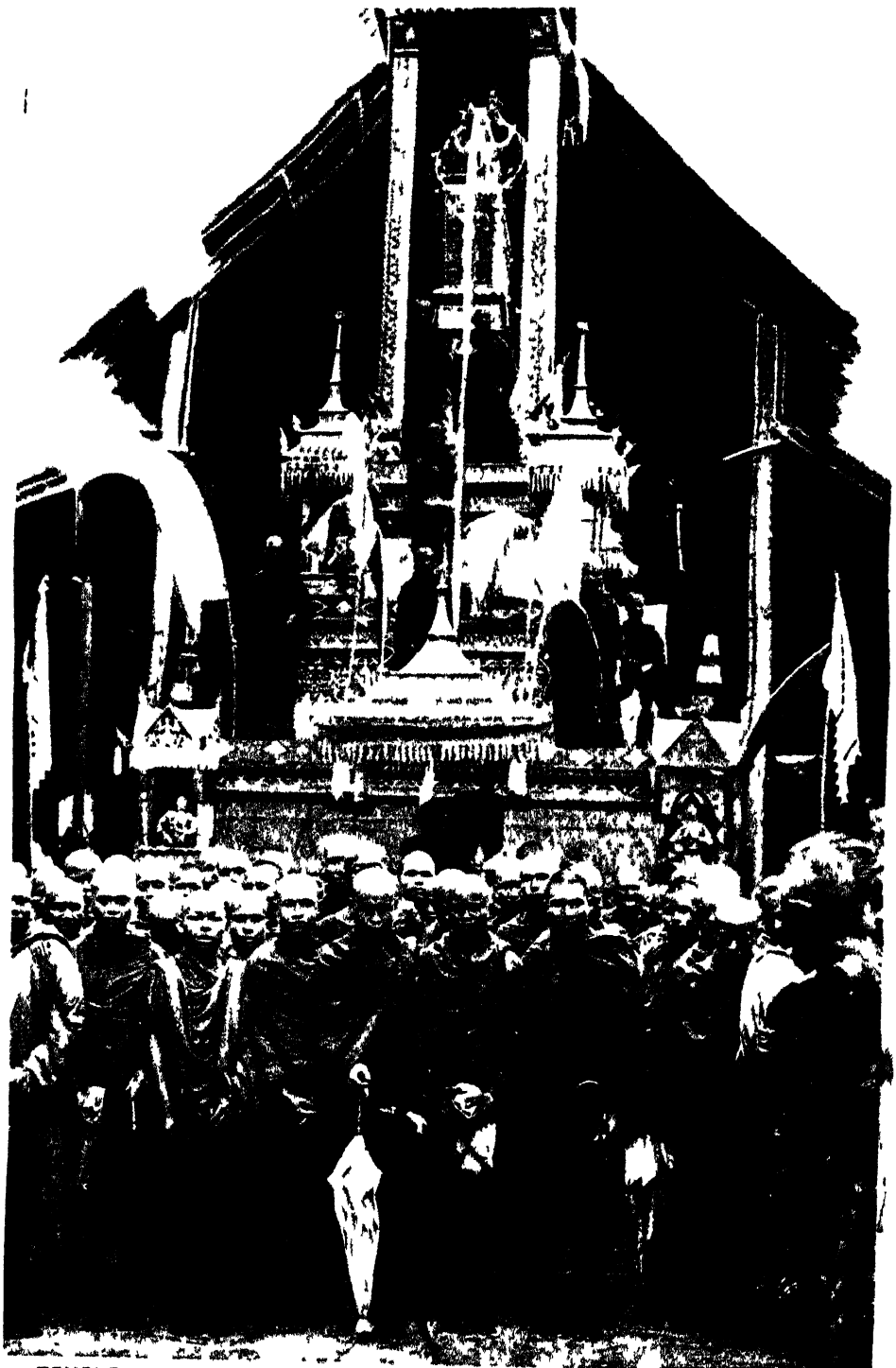
Photo, Charles J. Charbot

etched on slips of palm leaf is stored in most monasteries, and is used for administering oaths and other matters of grave importance.

With the exception of rice-milling only considerable industries in Siam are connected with the production of raw material, all manufactured articles being imported. Rice-growing is the first of these, providing food for the population and a surplus for export that is the chief source of the national income. The industry, up to the point of reaping, is entirely in Siamese hands, but from then on it is Chinese. The rice is brought to the winnowing ground by Chinese middlemen; it is carried to Bangkok in boats rowed by Chinese coolies; it is sold in Bangkok to the Chinese owners of Chinese-manned mills, and there finally prepared for export or for consumption in the local market.

Other agricultural products include coconuts, exported in the form of copra, pepper, rubber, cattle, pigs, pulse, and various fruits. Of non-agricultural products, teak and other forest timbers are extracted, and tin is mined. The control of these is mostly in the hands of Europeans, and the labour employed is Lao for the former and Chinese for the latter. Boat-building, brick-making, pottery, weaving, sericulture, are other minor industries.

Sea and freshwater fishing occupies everybody more or less, and provides permanent employment for a considerable number of people; rice with fish, cured or fresh, forming the staple food of the population.



TEMPLE OF THE SIAMESE FAITH AND ATTENDANT BUDDHIST MONKS

In Siam a temple is called a 'Bot" There is usually a monastery attached known as a "Wat," whose inmates spend much of their time wandering about the country from shrine to shrine in parties They are entirely supported by voluntary contributions in kind, and though forbidden to beg, they will stand outside a house, meditating, till someone comes and fills their alms bowls with food

Photo, Hylton R Philipson

Siam

II. The Story of "the Land of the Free"

By W. A. Graham

Author of "Siam: A Handbook"

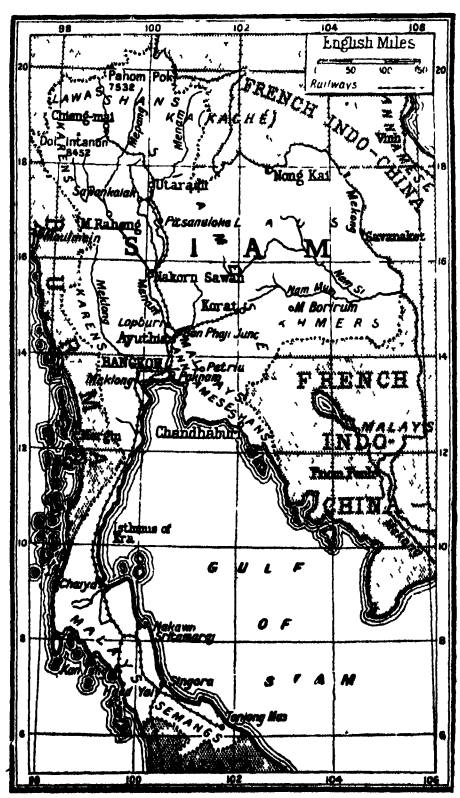
THE country now called Siam, the native name of which, Muang Thai, means the Land of the Free, appears to have been inhabited at first by Negritos, a primitive race whose wild descendants still persist in the mountains of southern Siam. These were supplanted by tribes of the Mongeloid family, Mon-Annam, which, some two thousand years ago, overran the Further Indian Peninsula to its southernmost point

Influenced by colonists from India, these tribes developed on the one hand into the Peguan or Mon race, and on the other into the Cambodian or Khmer, those inhabiting the territories between (now constituting Siam) remaining in the original benighted state Gradually the civilizing influences of the Mon and Khmer spread to these backward tribes until the whole sub-continent was more or less on a level of advancement, and groups of small states had been everywhere set up, their rulers adopting the customs and beliefs imported from India.

Some centuries later these states had resolved themselves into three main groups, admitting the suzerainty of the kings of Pegu and Cambodia to the west and east, and of a state then named Sajanalaya in the middle. Into this last there penetrated from the north hordes of another Mongoloid family, the Lao-Tai, who struggled with Sajanalaya for several centuries, and finally fused themselves completely with the people, and so gave rise to a new race, the Thai or Siamese.

The centre of power of the Sajanalaya states moved to and fro about the country, as its component parts waxed and waned in strength, until at last it was fixed at the capital of Maha Nakon Sri Ayudhya (Ayutthia) in A.D. 1350

The period 1350 to 1765 constitutes the Ayuthia era. What with internal upheavals, and struggles with Burma and Cambodia, this period seems to have been one of almost continual war Many of the kings preferred the arts of peace to those of war and found time for law-making, administration, and religious exercises, but fighting continued all the time and the state passed through extreme vicissitudes, being sometimes almost extinguished and at others rising to pinnacles of power and glory Thus, about 1550 Ayuthia was taken by the Peguans and Burmese, and the Siamese king was carried into captivity. Thirty years later a complete recovery had been made, Burmese armies had been defeated and Pegu pillaged, and a successful war had been prosecuted against Cambodia.



SIAM AND ITS PEOPLES

Portuguese merchant adventurers and missionaries found their way to Siam in the latter part of the sixteenth century, and early in the seventeenth century English and Dutch ships appeared in Siamese waters.

In 1641 the defeat of the Portuguese by the Dutch at Malacca ruined the prestige of the former and caused their downfall in Siam. The Dutch prospered for some time, and the first formal treaty contracted by Siam with Europeans was that made with the Dutch East India Company in 1664. The Dutch, however, finally lost the royal favour and left the country. The British East India Company

MEOS DAMSEL OF THE NORTH

Near the borders of French Indo-China live the sturdy Meos tribe. They are remarkable among their neighbours for their cleanliness, intelligence, and industry

established stations at Pattani and Ayuthia, but did not obtain much trade.

A French Roman Catholic mission was opened at Ayuthia in 1662, and, under the protection of Constantine Faulkon, a Greek adventurer who had risen to power as the king's chief minister, prospered to such an extent that the missionaries conceived the idea of converting the whole population to Christianity and the country into an appanage of France.

The interest of Louis XIV was aroused. He sent envoys to Siam and received the first Siamese diplomatic mission ever sent to Europe. He also sent ships, a general, and 1400 soldiers to Ayuthia. The Siamese nobility, becoming alarmed, rebelled, killed the king and his Greek minister, and turned every European out of the country.

A successful soldier of low birth was then made king and quiet was restored. On his death the legitimate dynasty recovered the throne. In 1759 serious war with Burma broke out again, Alaung Phra, king of Ava, invading Siam with a large army. Ayuthia was invested, but the Burmese king died and his army thereupon retired.

The successor of Alaung Phra renewed the conflict and again drove the Siamese behind the walls of Ayuthia. A long siege followed, ending in 1765 with the destruction of the city, the death of the Siamese king, and the general break up of the kingdom.

Resuscitation began with the exploits of Phaya Tak, a half-Chinese ex-official who, having taken to the jungle on the fall of Ayuthia, assumed the rôle of Liberator. He raised a following and defeated the Burmese army of occupation, made himself king (1772), founded the capital of Bangkok, recovered the allegiance of the outlying provinces and, in 1781, went mad and was removed.

The people, expecting a Burmese attack, now chose as king Phaya Chakkri, a prominent war leader, and this was as well, for a Burmese offensive soon materialised. Chakkri rose to the occasion. He enticed the enemy far into the country, then cut off their supplies by removing the entire population, and, having starved the invaders into demoralisation, attacked them with vigour and signally defeated them.

The remainder of Phaya Chakkri's reign was passed in consolidating his hold over the country, which he did in such a manner that when he died, in 1809, his son succeeded without opposition and passed his rather short reign in almost unbroken tranquillity. On the demise of the Crown in A.D. 1825 a lesser prince forestalled his brother, the rightful heir, by a coup d'état, and, under the title of Phra Chao Prasat Tong (also known as Phra Nang Klao) reigned for twenty-seven years. He entered into treaties of friendship and commerce with Great Britain (1826) and the U.S.A. (1833), thus opening the door to European trade, practically non-existent since 1688. He, however, declined to admit consuls or consular jurisdiction, whereby the value of his treaties was largely nullified, as foreign commerce was entirely in the hands of Chinese monopoly holders, altogether inimical to the advancement of Europeans.

Phra Nang Klao fought a campaign against Wieng Chan, a rebellious dependency on the Mekong, and sent an army against Annam, thereby obtaining Cambodia as a Siamese protectorate. He died in 1851, when the rightful heir, who had lived in retirement as a monk, succeeded under the title of Phra Paramindr Maha Mongkut.

This king brought to affairs of state education and enlightenment in an unusual degree. A student of European customs, and efficient in the English language, his attitude towards foreign relations differed from that of his forebears. His reception of Sir John Bowring, the envoy sent by Great Britain to Siam in 1855, was highly favourable, and the

outcome of the mission was a treaty whereby Siam admitted British consular jurisdiction, abandoned trade monopolies, fixed tariffs, and placed the British trader in Siam on a sure footing. Similar treaties followed with other countries, and soon Siam was in sound commercial relations with the U.S.A. and nearly the whole of Europe.

Maha Mongkut strongly encouraged education and gave special care to that of his own children He also did much to purify the national religion. Though strictly celibate up to the age of forty-seven years, he married a number of wives on becoming king, and when he died left about a hundred children.

In this reign France laid claim, as conqueror of Annam, to Cambodia. The king saw fit to surrender his rights and admit the French contention.

Mongkut died in 1868, and his son Chulalongkorn succeeded as a minor. The state was under a regency, but the king soon assumed full power. He reigned forty-two years and devoted himself solely to the interests of his country His internal reforms were constantly hampered by trouble with the French that almost culminated in war in 1893. An agreement between Britain and France to respect Siamese autonomy removed the trouble: relations improved, and treaties in 1904 and 1907 closed the breach, not, however, without material loss of territory to Siam.

The king's ambition was to disestablish consular jurisdiction in Siam. In this he was partially successful, bartering his Malay provinces and the district of Battambang to Great Britain and France respectively in return for partial surrender of extra territorial rights.

Chulalongkorn visited Europe twice. He inaugurated military conscription, ports and telegraphs and railways, fostered education, and reformed the revenue, justice, police, and social systems He died in 1910 deeply mourned, and was succeeded by his son Rama VI., who continued his father's reforms, adding Denmark and the U S.A. to those Powers who had surrendered extra territoriality. In 1917 he joined the Allies, declared war on Germany, and sent a Siamese contingent to France.

SIAM: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Forms part of the extreme south-easterly projection of Asia which also includes Burma, French Indo-China, and the Malay Peninsula. Bordered on north-west and west by Burma, south by Malay States, east and north-east by French Indo-China. South portion of country is a peninsula between Indian Ocean and south China Sea; chain of mountains passes down the centre, and there is good pasturage. In the north are many parallel ranges covered with forests and well watered. Eastern part is mainly a plain surrounded by hills and is covered by jungle and swamps. In the centre of country is a large fertile tract of level country through which flow principal rivers. Total area about 195,000 square miles, with an estimated population of some 8,800,000.

Government and Constitution

King wields executive power with the advice of a Cabinet composed of the heads of Governmental Departments. Legislative council convened by royal decree consisting of Ministers of State meets not less than once a week. Royal signature necessary to all legislation except in time of temporary disability of sovereign. Kingdom is divided for administrative purposes into eighteen "circles" under Lords Lieutenants with the exception of Bangkok, which is controlled by the Minister of Local Government.

Defence

Compulsory military service is in force for every able-bodied citizen for two years in the line and twenty-two in the three reserves. Army consists of ten divisions, and there is a flying corps. Navy comprises gunboats and destroyers with a total personnel of about 5,000, including marines, and a reserve of 20,000.

Commerce and Industries

Principal product of Siam is rice, to which over 6,300,000 acres were devoted during 1921-22. There are large numbers of live-stock, including more than 6,000 elephants. Teak cutting in the north and rubber planting in the south are pursued. Mineral deposits include coal, iron, tin, tungsten, zinc, and antimony. Cost of labour high in comparison with other Oriental countries Imports for year 1921-22 were valued at £13,958,512, and included cottons, food-stuffs, and metal manufactures. Exports for same year, mainly rice and teak, amounted to £17,170,777. Standard coin, the silver tical. Nominal value, 1s. 6½d.

Communications

There are over 1,300 miles of state railway. Post offices and agencies number about 380, with some 90 telegraph offices working over 6,500 miles of wire. Two telephone exchanges and wireless stations are in operation.

Religion and Education

Bulk of population are Buddhists, and there are more than 13,000 temples and over 87,000 priests. There are besides a large number of Malays who are Mahomedan. There are over 400 elementary schools, with some 41,000 pupils. All education save in departmental schools for military, naval, and legal purposes is in the hands of the Minister of Education. There is a university at Bangkok.

Chief Towns

Bangkok, capital (estimated population 541,000), Ayuthia (50,000), Chieng-mai (30,000), Petriu (10,000), Korat (7,000), Chantabun (5,000).

SUNDAY IN SIBERIA. VILLAGERS ASSEMBLED AT A TRANS-SIBERIAN RAILWAY STATION TO VIEW A PASSING TRAIN

Siberian life is by no means uncongenial to its natives, who are well able to resist the extremes of temperature. Usually regarded as a country of intense cold and eternal snow, Siberia is seldom pictured in its summer garb, when the woods and wide stretches of plain are resplendent with a rich ripe vegetation and numerous flowers and berries may be found for the gathering. And there are vast regions, chiefly in the steppe zone where the earth is of such untainted fertility the Siberians say of it: "When tickled with the hoe it laughs with a harvest."

Siberia

Its Peoples & Its Possibilities

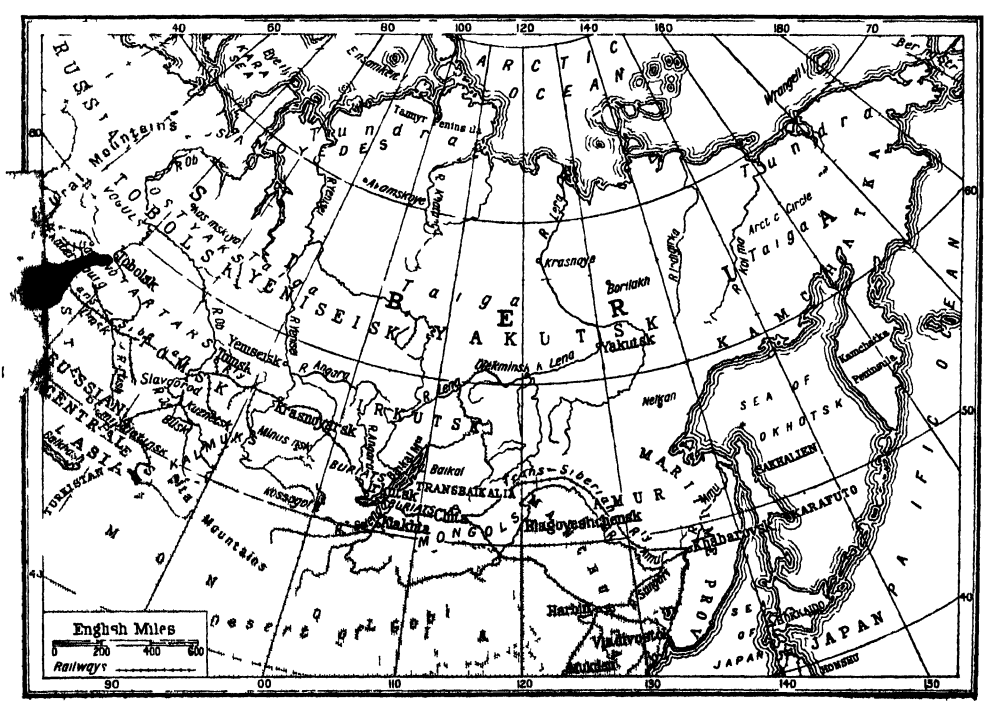
By Julius M. Price

Author of "From the Arctic Ocean to the Yellow Sea"

NOTHING is known with certainty as to the origin of the name Siberia Some authorities have conjectured that it is derived from the Russian word "Syever," signifying north, others suggest that it was a designation of the chief settlements of the Tartar, Khan Kuchum, a sultan who reigned in the region of the Irtish in the sixteenth century

This immense territory now forms part of the Union of Socialist Soviet Republics, as the former Russian Empire is now known Inhabited by exiles and descendants of exiles who were sent from Russia for political or criminal offences, and by native tribes of Mongolian origin with a total population estimated at about 11,000,000, it covers the whole of the northern part of the continent of Asia and is bordered on the north by the Arctic Ocean, on the east by the Bering Strait, the Sea of Okhotsk and the Pacific Ocean, on the south by the Chinese Empire, and on the west by European Russia, from which it is divided by the Ural Mountains

The greater part of its 4,860,000 square miles is remarkable for rolling plains of desolate uniformity and the striking contrasts in physical conformation Snowclad mountain ranges rising to almost Alpine altitudes, and of a grandeur unsurpassed in the world, are almost contiguous with wide expanses of monotonous, level table-land



THE TERRITORY OF SIBERIA AND ITS PEOPLES

TWO OF THE SOYOT TRIBE INHABITING THE MONGOLIAN FRONTIER

The Soyots, an aboriginal people of Siberia, chiefly inhabit the Savansk Mountains. They are peaceable and timid, keeping strictly to their own domains. Divided into two parties the northern Soyots exist by hunting and trapping, professing Christianity but practising Shamanism; those in the south are more primitive and have no definite religion, though a few have become Buddhists.

In the north, extending for several hundred odd miles from the Arctic seaboard, are broad marshy tracts or tundras—barely above sea-level, and frozen over during the greater part of the year. These are succeeded by a belt of virgin forests known locally as the "taiga," or jungle. Farther south is the steppe, the vast plateau of Central Asia which extends to the Gobi Desert.

The climatic conditions of this inhospitable region present remarkable contrasts. During the winter, which lasts from October to April, frosts of 13° to 18° Fahrenheit are of common occurrence, while in some places, as for instance Yakutsk, the thermometer has been known to fall to 80° of frost.

With the advent of spring the ice disappears, and vegetation grows with incredible rapidity; flowering plants spring up as if by magic from the sodden earth, and corn sown in May is ripe for harvesting a couple of months later. Myriads of migratory birds, butterflies, and insects are to be seen even in the extreme north, and the whole region takes on a new lease of life.

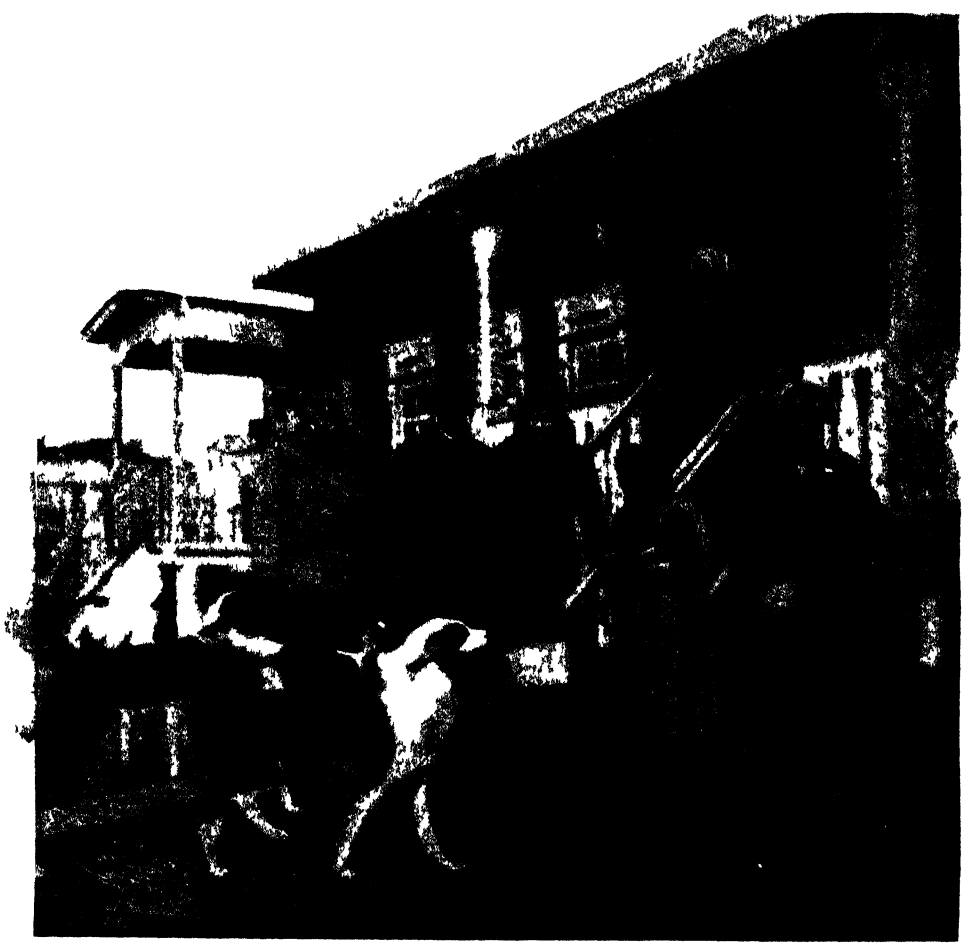
But this marvellous change is only of short duration. Early in September there are already signs of approaching winter, and in the first weeks of October the rivers and lakes begin to freeze again, and soon all is gloom and desolation once more.

Before the Revolution the territory was divided into four governments, namely, Tobolsk, Tomsk, Yeniseisk, and Irkutsk, and six provinces—Yakutsk, Transbaikalia, Amur, Kamchatka, Sakhalien, and Maritime or Primorskaya; the principal cities were Irkutsk, Tobolsk, Tomsk, Krasnoyarsk, Yeniseisk, Yakutsk, Chita, Blagoveshchensk, Khabarovsk, Kiakhta, and Vladivostok.

The bulk of the population is mainly composed of Russians, and was officially estimated in 1914 at 10,377,900; but it was not stated whether this included the scattered native races — Samoyedes, Ostyaks, Voguls, Mongols, Kalmuks, Buriats, and Tartars.

In all the cities prior to 1915 there was a very high state of civilization, and municipal organization and systems of primary and elementary education were making big strides forward The city of Tomsk had its university, which was rapidly becoming famous throughout Russia, and collegiate schools and colleges were being opened in every town of importance Travellers have always been impressed with the diversity between the life in the villages and that in the big towns This is explained to a great extent by the distances generally separating them and the lack of railway communication, but there is so distinct a line of demarcation between the peasantry and the middle and merchant classes that even the development of means of communication is scarcely likely to bring them together

In the villages, which are all practically little Soviets in themselves, and are always contained in a ring fence, which effectually keeps not only the cattle but the inhabitants from straying outside the bounds of the little community there is an isolation and drab monotony of existence that are probably without parallel in any other part of the



SETTLER'S HOME IN THE "LAND OF UNLIMITED POSSIBILITIES"

Among the Slavs banished to Siberia, or transported as convicted criminals, were many reformers and malcontents, strong souls, continually at war with the prevailing state of affairs in European Russia Other bold men emigrated of their own free will, their energy and enterprise finding for them in Far Siberia that freedom of speech and action denied to them in their native country

Photo, Underwood Press Service

YAKUT ON THE TRAIL OF THE TUNGUS

Shrewd, enterprising people, the Yakuts of Eastern Siberia follow the Tunguses into their hunting grounds to trade guns and stores for furs. The Yakut's outfit commonly includes a whisk to fight the flies, that are a plague in Siberia

world ; whereas in the big towns is to be seen normally a social life comparable with that in any European city.

Society was represented by the families of the officials, the wealthy gold-mine owners, and merchants. Siberian hospitality was proverbial, and if a traveller came provided with letters of introduction, he was welcomed with open arms. In the "Sobranje," or club, which formed the principal institution in all Siberian towns, dances and concerts were constantly held.

Most of the people speak French or German, as is usual among the Russians, and excellent musicians abound—a fact due to so many of the inhabitants being descendants of political exiles of superior class. But to see the real social life of Siberia one had to stay awhile in the capital of Eastern Siberia, Irkutsk.

Situated on the beautiful river Angara, and containing over forty thousand inhabitants, Irkutsk covers an enormous extent of ground, being two miles in each direction. It has many fine buildings and the general aspect, when I saw it, was almost European. The principal street, or "Bolshoi Oulitza," is over a mile in length, and there are several other equally noble thoroughfares.

It was quite a relief, after the desolate look of the streets at Krasnoyarsk and Yeniseisk, owing to the apparent absence of shops, to see here the handsome buildings with large plate-glass windows, in which were displayed every description of European goods. Irkutsk is not nearly so cold a place as Krasnoyarsk, for, according to Keane, the mean winter temperature is only minus 4° Fahrenheit, and summer temperature equal to that Melbourne, and higher than that of Paris.

Life in the capital was but a replica of what one found all over Siberia in the big towns, though here, of course, it was on a larger and more luxurious scale, owing to the fact that Irkutsk was not only the centre of a large producing district, but was the home of some of the richest men in the country.

After the disastrous fire in Irkutsk in 1879, when almost the entire town was burnt to the ground, it was forbidden to build any but stone or brick houses in the principal streets so the result is

broad thoroughfares with lofty buildings of imposing architectural proportions on either side which would not disgrace any Western capital

For its size there is probably no other city in the world which can boast of more public institutions than Irkutsk On first driving through the city this was the characteristic feature which struck me for everywhere, almost in every street was some important public edifice many of the institutions being the result of private munificence

There are nineteen public schools all under the supervision of a government educational committee, six hospitals —three town hospitals a foundling hospital a military hospital and an asylum for the mentally deficient at least four homes for children three asylums for the aged and infirm a monastery for men and a convent for women a convict and a civil prison a geographical institute, a large observatory with an English telescope, and [redacted] clubs—one military and the other for merchants

Of the handsome churches, of which there are twenty-two besides two cathedrals many were also presented to this city by its millionaire inhabitants The monastery of S Innocent, a short distance from the city, is a beautiful specimen of Italian architecture, and cost its donors, several rich merchants, I do not know how many million roubles It is not only in Irkutsk, however, that one finds such proofs of great private munificence, for the magnificent cathedral of Krasnoyarsk was presented to that city by a rich man who had made millions out of vodka In

REINDEER TUNGUS OF WILD SIBERIA

Brave and hardy hunters and fur traders are the Tunguses, roaming the vast forested areas of Siberia and the Amur basin They use reindeer as riding and transport animals, and their artistic national dress shows distinct Japanese influence

Photo, Dr Charles Hose

WOMAN OF STANDING BELONGING TO A BUDDHIST BURIAT TRIBE

The Buriats, one of the most numerous native races of Siberia, are cattle-breeding Buddhists, said to have migrated north in the early thirteenth century, when Jenghiz Khan ruled supreme in Mongolia, and are to be found chiefly in the province of Irkutsk and the Trans-Baikal territory. They are of Mongolian stock, possessing its features and characteristics in a marked degree

Photo, Dr. Charles Hose

KARAGASSE COUPLE IN THEIR WARM WINTER COSTUMES

The classification of the Siberian Tartars, of whom some 80,000 are of Turki and 40,000 of mixed Finnic stock, presents great difficulties, owing to the constant intermingling of races and customs The Karagasses of Turkish origin, and numbering now only a few hundred, live chiefly in the district north of Lake Baikal Fish forms their staple diet and several salted specimens are in this woman's arms

DINNER HOUR OF TH[illegible]OTS: MEMBERS OF THE FAMILY CIRCLE GATHERED ROUND THE OPEN HEARTH

The Soyots, or Soyons, who inhabi[illegible]isk Mountains, are said to be of mixed Finnic and Turki stock; they speak a Turki dialect, and in recent years have come considerably under Russian [illegible]ian influence. In Southern Siberia the "yurta" is a general name for a native dwelling. It is usually built of wood with a peaked roof, and is a slight[illegible]ilized example of the cone-shaped tent of skin or felt still in use among some of the nomadic tribes. An open hearth [illegible]ccupies the centre of the floor, directly under the smoke-hole in the roof

pre-Bolshevist days police arrangements were particularly efficient. In the daytime mounted men were continually patrolling the streets to prevent any congestion of the traffic—a very necessary measure, considering the reckless manner in which Siberians drive; at night there was a curious and truly Eastern custom, watchmen parading the streets continually agitating a peculiar sort of knocker which emitted a sound not unlike that of the rattle London policemen used to be provided with.

The Siberians are born gamblers, and card-playing, drinking, and fast living have been the curses of the wealthy classes, whose fetish seems to have been "pleasure for pleasure's sake." "Vint," a card-game closely resembling bridge, was a veritable craze, and was played night and day for big stakes.

Vast Areas of Unknown Wealth

The enormous fortunes which one was continually hearing of in Siberia before the Revolution were chiefly amassed by private goldmine owners, and one frequently met men who had risen from poverty to fantastic opulence through lucky "finds" of the precious metal.

In connexion with the goldmining industry of Siberia, it is of interest to mention that in the old days all gold had to be sold immediately to the government, who bought it at current [illegible] A mine-owner was not permitted to sell to a private individual, nor even to have the smallest amount of the precious metal in his possession beyond a certain time. If he desired to keep a small nugget—say, as a curiosity—he had to buy it from the government, who would then give him a special permit, authorising its possession.

All gold had to be delivered at the owner's expense at the government smelting-houses, where it was made into nuggets and then sent to Petrograd—the cost of smelting and carriage being also charged to the owner.

Commercial enterprise in Siberia has always been out of proportion to the vast natural resources of the country. It has often been said that, were Siberia in Canadian or American territory, it would long ago have been one of the world's storehouses, for its potentialities are immense as a grain or cattle producing country, while its mineral wealth has been scarcely scratched as yet, and its vast forests could provide paper-making materials for generations. Meanwhile, it has been in a state of stagnation and somnolence, and, outside the big cities, principally used as a vast penal colony for political prisoners and convicts sent from Russia during the reigns of the Tsars.

Masterpiece of Railway Construction

The completion in 1905 of the great Trans-Siberian Railway, which extends from the Urals to the Pacific and is the main artery of the whole territory, was a notable achievement. It took no fewer than thirteen years to build. The length of the line with all its branches is 5,413 miles, and it is said to have cost eighty-seven and a half millions sterling. It was begun at several points, the first section to Cheliabinsk and Omsk from Zlatoust, with branches to Tomsk and Ekaterinburg, being completed in 1895, and the main line carried to Transbaikalia in 1901.

Inadequate Road and River Transport

The section round Lake Baikal, a mountainous district which presented enormous difficulties, was completed during the Russo-Japanese War, and in spite of much pessimistic contention at the time with regard to its efficacy, proved of invaluable service to the line of communication with the Russian army in Manchuria.

Apart, however, from its utilitarian and strategic aspect, it is certainly one of the most picturesque railway lines in the world, and if ever conditions become normal again it will be the quickest, cheapest, and most interesting

of all routes to China and Japan - connecting as it does with Harbin Mukden Dalny and Port Arthur on the Eastern Chinese Railway

But wonderful though it is it is but a mere scratch across the vast territory and only serves a very small portion of it In most parts the tarantass (a four wheeled springless cart) in summer and a sleigh in winter are still the sole means of transport Motor transport is in its infancy—mainly owing to the fact that most of the roads away from the main routes are but rough cart tracks

But if conveyance by land is quite behind the times that on the majestic rivers which intersect the vast region is still more so Several of the longest rivers in the world intersect Siberia from east to west from south to north—the Yenisei 2 950 miles, the Obi 2 700 the Lena 2 600, the Angara 1 100 and several important tributaries of from 600 to 250 miles each in length The basin of the Yenisei alone is estimated to cover some 1 950 000 square miles

All these rivers although ice bound for many months in the year present immense possibilities for inland navigation during the summer months yet no serious attempt has ever been made to exploit them On some there are a few old wooden steamers and barges but generally these magnificent waterways are deserted

The same may be said of the immense sheets of fresh water The principal of these Baikal is one of the largest fresh water lakes in the world It covers an area of 12 441 square miles is 420 miles in length and 90 miles in breadth in its widest part Lake Baikal is called by the Russians the Holy Sea of Siberia and has certain remarkable features among others the marvellous transparency of its water the rapidity with which it freezes when winter sets in and its enormous depths—in fact in some parts where lines of 5 000 and 6 000 feet have been used no bottom has been found while in most places its average depth is 5 404 feet

It is said in Irkutsk that it is only on Baikal that 'a man learns first to pray from his heart," for so unexpectedly do awesome hurricanes arise that no one can tell, however promising may be the outlook when starting, under what conditions the opposite shore may be reached Seals are caught in large numbers, and there has always been

CRABS FOR SALE ON A SIBERIAN STATION

A large proportion of the population of Siberia is descended from the early settlers—sturdy folk, capable of countering every hardship The present generation, no whit less enterprising, follows many trades—including the sale of dainties along the railway

much conjecture as to how they come to be in the lake.

There is a small fleet of sailing ships plying on it, but these are mostly obsolete old tubs. Until the completion of the Trans-Siberian Railway the Baikal was crossed in big ferry steamers during the summer months, and by sleigh on the ice in the winter. In the winter the roadway across was indicated by means of a double row of pine saplings stuck at intervals in the ice—a curious effect being thus produced as of a miniature boulevard stretching away into the distance. This method of crossing is still adopted in the winter in parts remote from the railway.

The mountains around the lake are a veritable storehouse of mineral wealth—even gold and precious stones have been found—but the "finds" have been undeveloped.

The various indigenous tribes scattered over the whole breadth of Siberia form communities in themselves which seldom intermingle, nor does one hear of marriages between the settlers and these tribesmen.

In the extreme north is a flourishing little settlement entirely inhabited by a portion of the secret sect called "Skoptsi" or White Doves, who were banished from Russia on account of their peculiar doctrines. There are few women in the sect, all the men are eunuchs, marriage being forbidden, and the form of their worship is dictated by their Elders. They are strict vegetarians and total abstainers.

PIONEER OF SIBERIAN COLONISATION

In peasant rubashka, or shirt, and with bare feet he represents that host of convicts exiled for religious and political opinions, who, after several years' detention, were liberated on condition that they adopted the settler's life within prescribed limits

Religion all over Siberia has always been practised with a very convincing fervour; indeed, it used to be said in Russia that nearly half of the year was given up to religious holidays. The truth of this is very patent in the towns and villages of Siberia, where a week seldom passes without a prasnik (or festival) of some sort occurring.

There is a great diversity of religion—all the Russians, of course, normally profess the Greek Orthodox faith, or some form of nonconformity in connexion with it; the Poles are Roman

PRIVILEGED PRIEST VERSED IN THE SORCERIES OF SHAMANISM

Shamanism, a form of spirit-worship, said to be one of the oldest religions in the world, is still practised by some aboriginal races of Siberia. This strange object, with bits of iron, small bells, rusty nails, copper coins, and other metal rubbish dangling about him, and holding a weird drum, is a Shaman priest in ceremonial garb, ready to conduct intercourse with the supernatural powers

MEMBERS OF AN EAST SIBERIAN TRIBE OUTSIDE THEIR LOG YURTA

In the northern districts near the mouth of the Amur dwell the Gilıaks, a race of hunters, fishers, and trappers Their villages are few and scattered, for this race is rapidly declining in numbers The men and women are of diminutive stature, and dress very much alike, but feminine costume is sometimes distinguished by a fringe of metal disks suspended round the lower edge of the outer garment

Catholics, and there is a large community of Jews Among the indigenous tribes the Tartars are Mahomedans, the Samoyedes, Ostyaks, and Voguls are Fetichists, and the Kalmuks are Buddhist Lamaites

Whether the Bolshevists will succeed in their avowed intention to uproot all this religious sentiment—which, in many districts, takes almost the form of a superstition—is extremely doubtful

So far, the advancement of Siberia has been retarded by the ignorance and apathy of its peasantry, until these conditions are changed by education and a consequent enlightenment of ideas, the vast territory will continue to remain a hundred years behind the times.

DWELLERS IN THE MORE FERTILE PORTIONS OF THE KASHGAR VALLEY

Excepting in the extreme west of Sin kiang, cultivation is almost entirely limited to the patches and narrow ribbons of oases that border the streams But in the vicinity of Kashgar the natives have little trouble with the soil which can be made to produce sufficient to meet all their requirements and this prosperous looking family, comprising three generations, has no lack of cereals or vegetables

Photo Miss Ella Sykes

Sin-Kiang

Mongols & Moslems of Chinese Turkistan

By Sir George Macartney, K.C.I.E.

British Consul-General at Kashgar, 1910-18

THAN Sin-Kiang (or Sin-chiang, Hsin-chiang), its westernmost dominion, no province of China offers a wider field of interest, physiographic, political, or ethnic.

Here is the converging point of diverse cultures– Chinese, Mongol, Turk, Russian, Indian, Tibetan ; and just as the designs on a Yarkand carpet are a hodge-podge of alien arts, so the native who made the carpet is himself largely a product of different foreign elements, social and racial ; a fact as true of his past as of his present.

This immense tract, probably in total area as large as France and the Iberian Peninsula combined, is wedged in, on the north, by Western Mongolia and on the south by Northern Tibet and the British Indian territory of Kashmir. The Tian Shan (Heavenly Mountains), which run horizontally across Sin-Kiang, divides it into two unequal parts, viz., Zungaria on the north of the range and Eastern Turkistan on the south side of it.

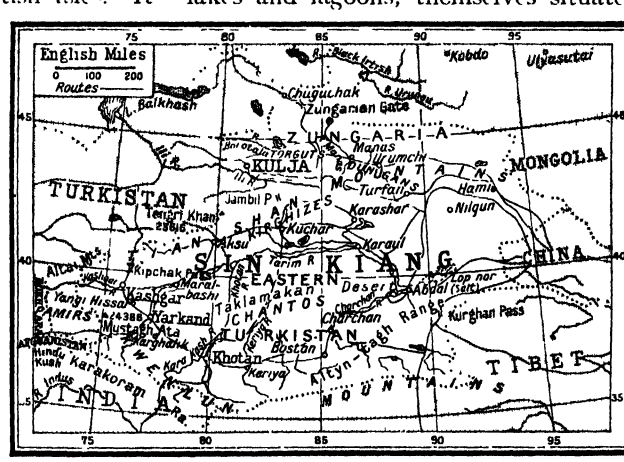
Zungaria has an area of some 150,000 square miles, and therefore is rather larger than the British Isles. It is an immense plain, enclosed between the Altai Mountains on the north, and the Tian Shan Range on the south; while, on the west, it borders on the Russian Turkistan province of Semiryetchensk, and on the east merges into the plateau of Mongolia.

On the side of Mongolia, the plain is about 2,500 feet high ; but it slopes down to 700 feet near the Siberian border at the Zungarian Gate—that strange and, indeed, only corridor in the 3,000 miles long mountain-wall stretching from the Hindu Kush right into Manchuria.

Most of the country is a desert, wherein only tamarisk and saxual will grow, with here and there patches of sand dunes and of ground incrusted with salt and inclined to be swampy.

Though the plains receive but a slight rainfall, moisture-bearing winds blow from the steppes of southern Siberia ; and as these impinge on the crests of the Altai and of the Tian Shan, they bring rain to those slopes which are turned towards Zungaria, calling forth a luxuriant growth of pine forests and green pastures on the highlands, and creating a succession of fertile oases lower down. Mongolia, however, on the one hand, and Eastern Turkistan on the other, remain dry and bare.

Generally speaking, Zungaria is a mountain-girt region ; and as a consequence most of the rivers, such as the Borotala, the Emil, the Urungu, and the Manas, have no outlet except into lakes and lagoons, themselves situated



SIN-KIANG & ITS PEOPLES

ROCKING YOUNG TURKISTAN TO SLEEP IN HIS CURIOUS CRADLE

On this roughly fashioned structure a Sin Kiang native has placed a mattress with soft cushion and coverlet forming a comfortable couch for her youngest born Here he sleeps securely, two wide cloth bands preventing him from slipping over the precipitous sides of his primitive cot while a light cloth thrown curt ain wise over the framework will protect him when necessary from sun or flies

Photo Miss Lilla Sykes

in the country The Irtish, however, which has its source here, makes a notable exception by flowing into the Arctic Ocean So does the Ili river, destined perhaps one day to notoriety in the "oil" world, in the meantime, undisturbed, its mouth (at the southern extremity of Lake Balhash) reeks with the odour of the petroleum which oozes out of the bed of the lake to float on the surface

Situated as Zungaria is on the confines of China proper, Mongolia, Russian Central Asia and Eastern Turkistan, its population is naturally a mixed one The oldest and principal race are the Mongols, here divided into Kerei, Torgut, and Charkhar tribes They are probably of the same stock as the Mongols near by, on the farther side of the Altai Still, a religious barrier, of recent date, has sprung up between these peoples, more segregating in its action than even the mountain range itself

The march of Islam in Central Asia has reached Zungaria, but not beyond The cis-Altai Mongols have accepted this faith, but the trans-Altai Mongols (in Kobdo) are still under the somnolent spell of Buddhism, and there can be no doubt that, thanks to their conversion to Mahomedanism, the former have

attained to a higher standard of life and to a higher moral code than the latter

The Mongols of Zungaria are all nomads, living in encampments of bechive like tents, and following their herds of sheep yaks, horses and camels as they are driven from one pasturage to another on the mountain slopes

The inhabitants of the oases at the foot of the Altai and Tian Shan Mountains live in five or six fairly densely populated centres These are Urumchi, essentially a Chinese town, the capital of the Sin Kiang province and the seat of the Chinese governor Manas a large agricultural district, through which the river of the same name spreads itself out like a fan into thousands of irrigation channels Chuguchak, near the Zungarian Gate on the Russo-Chinese border, a place of some strategical importance by reason of its being the only opening in the Tian Shan between Russia and Eastern China, and the old and new towns of Kulja, with about 100,000 inhabitants—famous in the eyes of Chinese diplomats, in that China wrested them back from Russia in 1881, after a decade of Russian occupation

Apart from the Mongols already mentioned the people one sees about the towns are Chantos Tartars, Chinese, and Dungans The Chantos are natives from Eastern Turkistan (the southern portion of Sin Kiang), here settled as merchants, or cultivators, or labourers The Tartars are Russian Mahomedans from Kazan Dressed in their tight-fitting coats, which button closely round the neck, with small skull caps on the head, and

WEEPING WOMEN AT THE SHRINE OF KASHGAR'S ROYAL SAINT

About a couple of miles north of the old town of Kashgar, beyond the river, is the shrine of Hazrat Afak, a saintly king who died in 1693—an imposing mausoleum faced with blue and white glazed tiles A mosque, monastery, and college were erected around it by the Ameer Yakub Bey who reigned 1864 77 and the whole enclosed within orchards, fruit gardens, and vineyards

Photo Miss Lilla Sykes

CHANTOS MAKING THE WOODEN SUPPORTS TO A NEW BRIDGE OVER THE RIVER KASHGAR IN EASTERN TURKISTAN

The southern portion of Sin Kiang is the home of the Chantos, people of the plains who make a livelihood as merchants cultivators or labourers In these various capacities they may be found throughout the province chiefly in the northern regions where many have settled in the bigger towns and villages Here a party of them is seen engaged in constructing a bridge across the Kashgar, a river watering the most fertile portion of the province and an affluent of the Tarim, which, gathering up many streams into a large channel, makes its way through the thirsty soil of the vast central plain to be finally absorbed in Lake Lop or

SMILING KIRGHIZ AT THE DOOR OF THEIR TEMPORARY ABODE

Always on the move from pasture to pasture the nomadic Kirghiz cumber themselves with a minimum of household gear. They live in circular tents, in the summer built of kamish (reeds) covered with felt, and in winter often constructed of clay. Having no windows or chimneys, these huts are dark and filled with the pungent smoke from the burnt yaks' dung chiefly used as fuel

Photo, Sir George Macartney

long jack boots on the feet, they may be seen all over Zungaria, selling Russian chintz goods, taking in return, among other things, marmot skins, here to be had for about 2d. a piece—later on to be fashioned, perhaps in London, into ladies' imitation sable coats.

But the people who really exercise an influence in the country are the Chinese and Dungans. The former temporarily settle here either as officials, pawnbrokers, moneylenders, or merchants importing Chinese and foreign wares from Tientsin. They lord it over the natives, who bow and cringe before them. With wonderful facility, they adapt themselves to their alien surroundings; yet they deviate in nothing from their own usages and customs, remembering all the time that here they are sojourners, not settlers. They make their "pile," and take it all away; for back to their native provinces in Inner China they nearly all go—alive, or in coffins.

As for the Dungans, they are Chinese Mahomedans from the neighbouring province of Kansu. Here they are settled as farmers, mostly at Manas, the agricultural centre of Zungaria. Apart from a common religion, they and the local native Mahomedans have but

WATER-CARRIERS OF KASHGAR FILL BUCKETS BY THE TUMAN'S BRIM

What is known as the old town of Kashgar overlooks the River Tuman and is called Kuhna Shahr The man and boy with their shaggy hard bitten donkeys are fetching water from the Tuman on whose bank they stand The pipe shaped implement in the hands of the man is a kind of dipper for filling the buckets

Photo Sir Percy Sykes

little mutual sympathy Outwardly the Dungans look just like the Celestials They live in much the same style eating with chop sticks, though of course the flesh of the swine is taboo for them Their language is Chinese, and their caligraphy also, even their mosques some with pagoda-looking minarets and turned up roofs, betray in their construction the influence of Chinese architecture In refinement, the Dungans are decidedly inferior to the Chinese but of the two they are the more virile also the more truculent and crafty The records of the relations of the two peoples are studded with instances of fierce revolts on the one side and of savage repressions on the other

Eastern Turkistan is also known as Chinese Turkistan Higher Tartary, The Seven Cities, or The Tarim Basin It is, not unlike Zungaria, a mountain girt plain, though on a much larger scale, but whereas the Zungarian plain descends from east to west, that of Turkistan trends downwards from west to east, the height at Kashgar (west) is about 4,500 feet, while at Lop nor (east) it is only about 2,000 feet

The general elevation of the country is therefore considerably above sea-level, yet it is extraordinary that there

is one populous centre that is actually some 50 feet below that level, viz, Turfan, which, no doubt through some strange tension or rifting in the earth's crust, has so sunk into a sort of gully as to have earned for itself the reputation of being the lowest situated place in the whole of Central Asia

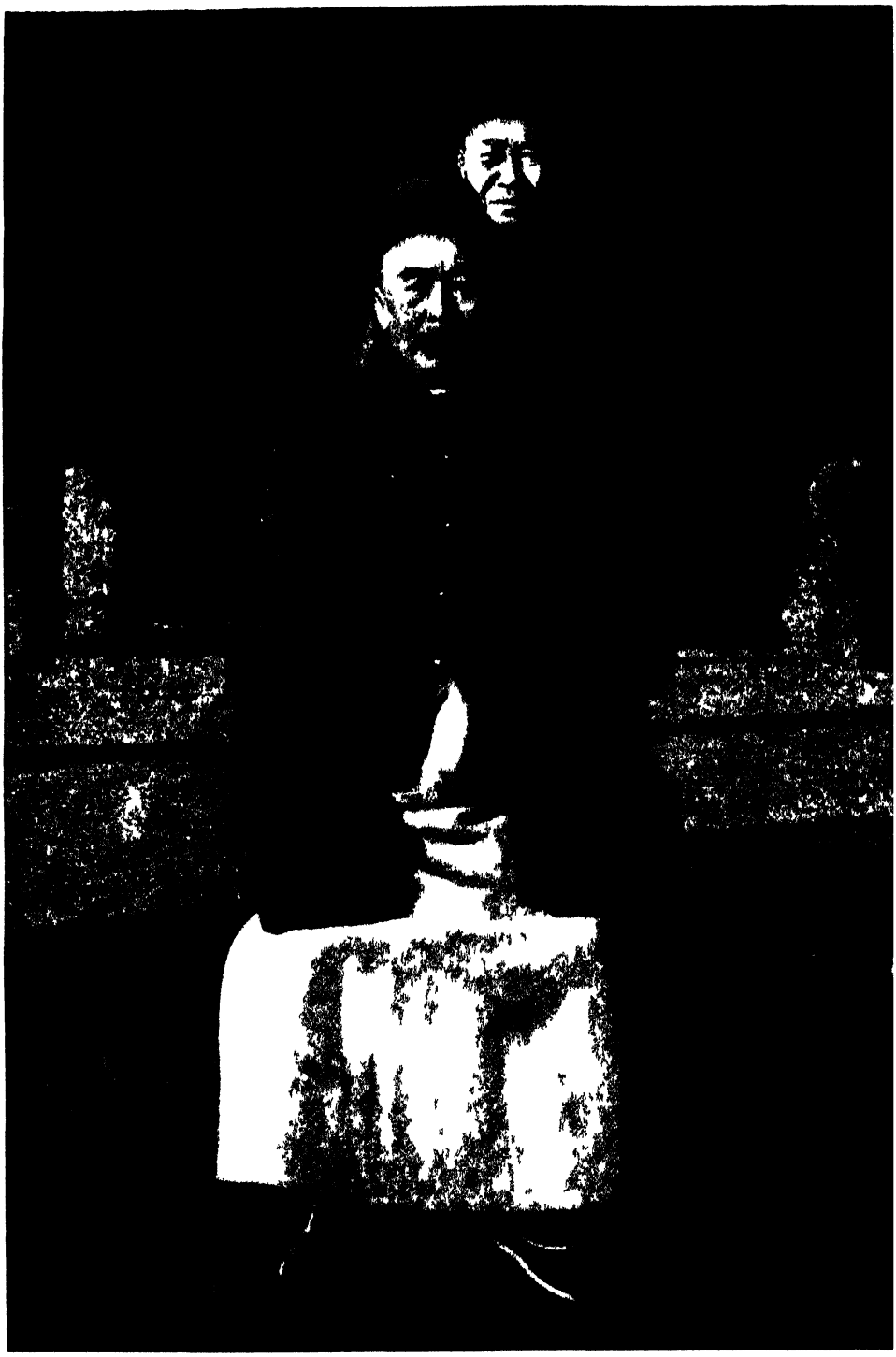
The plain of Turkistan has all the characteristics of a sea-bed, indeed, during the Tertiary or earlier Quaternary period, it was covered by an immense mid continental lake, of which Lop nor—the reedy swamp into which what rivers there are in the country drain—is a small and much shrunken survival. Now, nearly the whole of this erstwhile sea-bottom is a dreary sandy waste, where not a tree, not a blade of grass, not a bird, not an animal is to be seen

As far as the eye can scan into the boundless space it sees a panorama of sand dunes, here sinking into deep troughs and gullies, there raising their crests mountain high, now the whole scene glitters in a sun rendered all the more fierce and stifling by a heat-retaining haze of an ashy-pale colour, now it is blurred by columns and clouds of

AMID THE TOWERING PEAKS OF THE CELESTIAL MOUNTAINS

Superb scenery glorifies the entire range of the Tian Shan, the vast mountain chain that extends for nearly a thousand miles across Asia, with heights of as much as twenty three thousand feet The main road from Russian into Chinese territory runs south from Semipalatinsk to Chuguchak near the Zungarian Gate on the Russo Chinese border, and thence east into China through Suchow

Photo Sir George Macartney



MASTER AND HENCHMAN OF CHINESE OFFICIALDOM AT YARKAND

Chinese officials are scattered in considerable numbers throughout the length and breadth of Sin Kiang, but the vast administrative system is centred at Ili, the capital where reside the Civil Governor and the head officials The inhabitants comprising nearly two million persons of hardy and excellent physique though varied in nationality and creed are not fanatical and are easily ruled

Photo Sir Percy Sykes

WHERE THE EAGLE IS TRAINED "TO STOOP DOWN TO THE FIST"

Seeming as it soars in space a very incarnation of proud freedom, the eagle has yet been so far subjugated by man as to learn to kill game for its master In Chinese Turkistan eagles are quite commonly used to kill antelopes, wolves, and foxes, being carried hooded on the wrist and released when the quarry is in view. A well trained eagle has been valued at the price of two camels

Photo, Miss Ella Sykes

sand travelling across the desert like a hurricane, and obscuring the sky, so that day is changed into night.

Such is the Taklamakan Desert, and it forms the core of the country.

But between the actual desert and the mountains, which hold it as in the bottom of a basin, lies a belt of land less forbidding. It is mostly formed of Piedmont gravel, and no doubt it was the shore or beach of the whilom Tertiary Sea. Along this belt, but separated from each other by sandy wastes, are patches of ground covered with a friable and brownish-yellow soil, known as loess, which here is composed partly of alluvium from the mountains and partly of dust, which the storms of centuries have winnowed from the sands of the neighbouring desert and showered down over the land in "blood rain."

The soil is therefore largely of aeolian origin. It is eminently fertile; and as the rivers issuing from the encircling mountains yield a plentiful supply of water for irrigation, a string of oases, nestling close to the foot of the mountains on the one side, and stretching out on the other to the sand dunes of the Taklamakan Desert, have come into existence, some recently, others dating from a remote past.

It is on this loess soil that are situated such towns as Hami, Turfan, Karashar, and Kucha on the north; Aksu, Maralbashi, Kashgar, Yangi Hissar, Yarkand, and Karghalik on the west, Khotan, Keriya, and Charchan on the south.

The mountains by which the plain of Turkistan is walled in are in shape like a huge horse-shoe, with the toe turned west, and they are among the highest in the world. On the north and northwest is the Tian Shan, first dividing Eastern Turkistan from Zungaria, then forming a line of demarcation between Chinese and Russian territories. On the south is the Kwenlun, another mighty range, forming a buttress to the lofty plateau of Tibet. The Tian Shan and the Kwenlun do not meet, however, but a junction is effected between

PUPILS OF KASHGAR'S CHIEF SCHOOL STUDYING THE KORAN

Kashgar has long been famed as a political and commercial centre of Chinese Turkistan. It consists of two parts, Kuhna Shahr, or the "old city," and Yangi Shahr, or "new city," built by the Chinese in 1838. The mixed population of the old city, estimated at some thirty thousand, is composed largely of Moslem Turks, whose ability and activity have helped to develop many of its industries

Photo, Sir Percy Sykes

BOUND FOR KASHGAR MARKET WITH FRESH MELONS

Although so much of Sin Kiang is absolutely arid desert the soil in the oases at the foot of the mountains around the Tarim basin is highly fertile Careful irrigation has made the oasis in which Kashgar is situated fam is as orchard land, where most of the fruits that succeed in Europe grow and ripen well Melons in particular reach a perfection rarely attained elsewhere

Photo Miss Ella Sykes

them by a tangle of ranges (the Karakoram, the Mustagh-Ata, the Hindu Kush, and the Pamirs) that has been variously called "The Roof of the World," the "Central Boss of Asia," or, in classical geography, the "Imaos."

In this massif is situated, on the borders of Baltistan (British-Indian territory) and Chinese Turkistan, the snow-clad peak for a long time obscurely known as *K2*, but now recognized as the second highest mountain in the world (28,278 feet), under the name of Mount Godwin-Austen.

And here, in their cradles of ice, are nursed to torrential strength the faint beginnings of three mighty rivers—the Indus, the Oxus, and the Yarkand, all bringers of fertility to vast regions. Here, too, amid the crags on which the Ovis Poli and the ibex roam, India, China, Russia, and Afghanistan meet on a fourfold border, their outposts, each in its own segment, jealously keeping watch and ward

The peoples of Eastern Turkistan are the Kirghiz of the mountains and the Chantos of the plains.

The lower portions of the mountains of Eastern Turkistan are generally rough, craggy, and barren; owing to the almost total absence of rain in this belt, the soil undergoes no denudation; and what streams there are from the upper regions force their way through to the plains in narrow, precipitous, sharp-cut V-shaped gorges, filled with boulders. These gorges are but sparsely inhabited. But higher up, somewhat below the snow-line, at from 8,000 to

PATIENT TILLERS OF THE FERTILE SOIL AROUND KASHGAR

Natives of the plains the Chantos live in villages round about the towns of Eastern Turkistan, dwelling in comfortable farmhouses and cultivating their small carefully irrigated fields Of mixed blood they are a strong, hardy race, rather European than Mongoloid in appearance Their common dress is a garment of coarse cotton cloth called ' kham," padded with cotton and quilted in winter

Photo Sir Percy Sykes

QUAINT GUARDIANS OF THE STATE OUTSIDE THE KASHGAR YAMEN

There are generally two distinct cities in the towns of Turkistan, one Mahomedan, the other Chinese In the latter the Chinese resident officers have their yamens, or official residences, the staff including numerous guards, runners, banner carriers, and native interpreters Ferocious beasts moulded in clay and whitened surround the seat of government at Kashgar, supposedly to ward off evil spirits

Photo, Sir Percy Sykes

VENERABLE MAGICIAN OF SIN-KIANG AND HIS YOUNG ADEPT

Many a strange cult, reminiscent of the demonology of aboriginal Asia, prevails among the tribes inhabiting the province of Sin-Kiang. Sickness is usually reckoned to be the result of a spell cast by an enemy; a soothsayer is then employed, whose supernatural insight is supposed to enable him to discover the enemy and remove the spell, thus curing the unfortunate person of his malady

Photo, Sir Percy Sykes

MATERNAL PRIDE AND INFANT COYNESS BY THE YARKAND RIVER

Most of the inhabitants of the oases of Eastern Turkistan are of Turkish stock with a strong Aryan strain Their language is Yagatai Turkish, and they are loosely classified as Uzbegs and Sarts, the former being the more aristocratic urban dwellers and the latter the urban commonalty Many of them are of prepossessing appearance, and the children are often delightful little creatures

Photo Miss Ella Sykes

TOWNSWOMAN OF KASHGAR

Many races meet and mix in the town of Kashgar with its thirty thousand citizens. A Tartar strain is apparent in this somewhat forbidding face

Photo, Miss Ella Sykes

about 13,000 feet altitude, the mountains often open out into broad valleys, smoothed and enlarged by the action of ice at some remote geological period, and now covered with luxuriant grass and Alpine flowers.

Here a people of a Mongol-Tartar stock make their abode—a people squat-built, but mostly fair in complexion, with small slanting eyes, high cheek-bones, broad nose, but little or no beard. These are the nomadic Kirghiz; and when in the vicinity of any of their encampments, one is forcibly reminded of the fact not only by the eyes, but also nose and ears. The not particularly agreeable exhalations of cattle, the pungent smell of burnt yaks' dung rising with the smoke as it floats out of the centre of circular felt-covered tents, the chorus set up by the barking of dogs, the bleating of sheep, the grunting of yaks, the whinnying of mares, the wailing of camels—all betoken the temporary station of some herdsman.

To-day, his encampment is here; to-morrow, if the grass be consumed, it flits to another pasturage; the last place is deserted, and no trace of recent habitation is left except, here and there, a heap of ashes in the centre of a circle of down-trodden turf marking where a tent had stood. In such wise the Kirghiz may be seen, living under almost identical conditions, all over the mountains of Turkistan, some at rest in encampments, others on their migrations with women astride on camels, tiny children hardly bigger than babies sitting sturdily on horseback, and with household paraphernalia of cooking pots, tents, felts, carpets, cradles, bowls, buckets hewn out of solid tree trunks, all tied on the backs of pack animals.

In these altitudes, where the air is rarefied and breathing is distressful, no beast of burden is more suitable than the yak—an ox with long silky hair, a bushy mane, and a long tail. It is a wonderful animal for strength and surefootedness; it will carry a load up to three hundredweight on its back, and walk off with it over dizzy heights and precipitous crags—in fact, over places which no horse, and no man who is not a trained mountaineer, will negotiate.

A thing that strikes one very forcibly about the Kirghiz people is their completeness in themselves.

Practically everything they require comes from their own encampments. For example, their tent is home-made.

HEAD COOK AND BUTLER OF KASHGAR'S CHINESE CONSULATE

As the characteristic concomitants of a Chinese bill of fare are unobtainable in far Kashgar, the consular household lives simply till some important guest comes. Then appear hoarded delicacies, edible birds' nests and hams soaked in molasses that have been fetched hundreds of miles and at great cost from China. The cook and butler may be called upon for more than forty courses at one such banquet

Photo, Miss Lila Sykes

FAITH TREATMENT FOR A SORE CUTANEOUS DISEASE

Modern methods of medical treatment are available f · the native population of Sin-Kiang only in those towns where Western philanthropy has ,established hospitals or medical missions. Elsewhere the people rely mainly on supernatural influences, like thi, woman, who is throwing mud at the wall of a shrine in the pathetic belief that thereby she may be cured of the disease which afflicts her

Photo, Sir Percy Sykes

The framework, shaped like a huge circular birdcage with the bars latticed across each other, is formed of willow twigs collected in the jungles at the foot of the mountains. The pieces of felt which are laid over this framework, the ropes which keep the felts in position, the carpets on which the Kirghiz sleep, all are prepared by the women from the wool of sheep and goats that graze on the neighbouring hills.

As the Kirghiz lives in the midst of his herds, he is self-supporting in the matter of meat, milk, cream, and cheese; and if he wants something alcoholic, he has his koumiss to fall back on that is, mare's milk fermented in a leather bag made out of the whole skin of a goat.

Hardy People of the Plains

The Chantos down in the plains lead a life far more complex. The people are of an Indo-European stock But they have become mixed, through marriage, with the inhabitants of the surrounding countries, who at various periods either had invaded Turkistan, such as the Huns, Mongols, Chinese, and Tibetans, or had settled there, like the Kashmiris, the Baltistanis, the Chitralis, and the Badakhshis

Still, even now, their features on the whole come closer to the European than to the Mongoloid type. Some of the men are decidedly good-looking, though their features are inclined to be coarse and too large; and now and again one sees a woman fair in complexion and of striking beauty. As a race they are strong and hardy, despite the ravages of venereal diseases with which almost the entire population is tainted. But, morally, they are indolent and generally lacking in substantial qualities—and this notwithstanding certain amiable traits.

The greater part of the population live in the "kishlaks" or villages surrounding the towns. Here they are cultivators; and their low, mud-walled farmhouses may be seen dotted here and there, pleasantly ensconced in the midst of fruit trees. In Turkistan the fields are never in large unbroken stretches; they are all cut up into small level pieces, and are so arranged that one piece stands slightly higher than another, the whole being arranged like a succession of terraces. This is to allow the irrigation water to flood one field before it flows down to the next.

Fertility Dependent on Irrigation

The rainfall in the plains is barely two inches in the year, and agriculture takes no account of this insignificant precipitation; but it does rely on the rivers which descend from the mighty snowfields and glaciers high up in the mountains—rivers which, as they emerge on to the plains, are dissected into a network of countless irrigation canals.

The crops grown are wheat, maize, millet, rice, linseed, and clover. The fruits are mostly those that succeed in Europe, such as walnuts, apples, apricots, pears, nectarines, peaches, plums, figs, pomegranates, grapes, mulberries, strawberries, and melons. They are all good, though not unusually so, except the melons, which certainly attain here to a degree of excellence rarely rivalled elsewhere.

Town Life, Private and Public

The towns of Turkistan mostly consist of two cities—one Chinese and one Mahomedan. They are invariably surrounded by lofty and crenellated mud walls, broad enough even at the top for a carriage and pair to be driven along them. There are three or four gateways (through the wall) for each city, and these are always in charge of some Chinese soldiers who open them at dawn and lock them at dusk.

In the Chinese city the people are mostly Chinese, and there, too, the civil and military ambans (or Chinese resident officers) have their yamens (official residences), with their staff of secretaries and clerks, and their numerous followers of native interpreters, police guard, and banner carriers. As for the Mahomedan

SIN-KIANG'S CHINESE GOVERNOR-GENERAL WITH HIS STAFF AT KASHGAR

At the head of the provincial administration of Sin Kiang is a Chinese governor-general, the chuang chun, who is assisted by principal secretaries for foreign affairs, justice, finance, and so forth. Immediately under him four chief commissioners, called taoyins, administer circuits in Zungaria and Eastern Turkistan, and under each of these again are twelve hsien yins or district officers.

Photo, Miss Ella Sykes

portion of the towns apart from a few mosques flanked by minarets, and covered with facades of blue or green tiles, rarely is there in them a building with any architectural pretension.

The streets are simply a maze of intricate narrow winding passages, protected against the sun by straw matting stretched across the roadway and attached to houses on both sides, and shaded by these overhanging mattings are the booths, in which may be seen the owners, sitting cross-legged on a carpet on the ground, not infrequently dozing in the midst of their wares. The streets, however, always present an animated appearance, what with men and women on donkey and horse-back, frantically crying "posh, posh" (get out of the way), pedestrians jostling each other, and diving under the noses of camels carrying on their backs huge bales that stretch across the entire width of the road, one may well wonder how a traffic so unwieldy can force its way through such congested arteries.

The dwelling-houses of the people are not more than ten or twelve feet high, and are made of sun-dried mud bricks, with mud floors and flat mud roofs. On the street side they present a bare wall, with a single door, but no windows, as

MONOTONOUS THROBBING TO THE TINKLE OF THIN WIRE STRINGS

In m trument t native manuf acture the unsatisfactory nature of the music to Eur pe n ears is due is m the c se of this w andering tr to the paucity c f tone Lack of skill or contentment with ld w ys f makm, the s und box of these weird guitar like contriv nces results in a nasal n se that gr tes upon the ear The deep throbs of the drum provide a welcome contrast

Photo Miss Ella Sykes

the single idea of the owner is once is in de, to shut the outer world om him

The house of a well to do person is variably arranged in two parts one r men and another for women The ortion for men which is nearest to the ouse door, consists of a peristyle, or ourt with a sort of veranda running ound it, opened to the sky in the centre Around this court are arranged a number of sleeping and sitting rooms Carpets and felts are strewn on the ground of the veranda, but there is no other furniture Here, in the peristyle, in shade in summer and in the warmth of the sun in winter, the male members of the household say their prayers, lounge about, entertain visitors, setting before them a dastarkhan (a large coloured cloth spread on the floor, and on which are placed bread, sweetmeats, fruit, and cups of tea), and smoke their hashish pipes

The women's apartments communicate with those reserved for the men by a single door, taboo to all of the male sex, except very near relations These harems comprise no more than a few dingy, squalid rooms, with walls often grimy with soot—for the family cooking is done here—and with no light or air,

within his jurisdiction. Though the peoples of Sin-Kiang are Mahomedans, yet the rule over them of the Confucian Chinese is not unpopular.

In his dealings with the natives of these parts the mandarin shows great tolerance to native prejudices. It is a paradox, but it is none the less true, that in her very laxity lies one of the secrets of China's power in this Mahomedan country.

The government is there to collect taxes, to watch over public security, and to punish the grosser crimes; but it should have little or nothing to do with civil suits which can be just as well left to the Shariat—the Mahomedan religious court.

Another point Chinese officials are expected to bear in mind is the importance of good relations with those natives in the country who possess influence. China proper may be a Republic; but in Turkistan her government can only be described as a sort of oligarchy wherein the upper stratum of society lords it over the lower.

On this principle the Chinese govern largely through the bais, begs, kazis, etc., who represent the native aristocracy; and so long as these are content all is well, even if the common people be left somewhat to their oppression.

Cities Buried in the Sands

No description of Turkistan would be complete without a reference to its archaeology.

A great number of rivers having dried up on their lower reaches, many towns, once situated on their banks, have become a prey to the sands which are ever drifting against them, until at last they have been buried; and now their sites are an abomination of desolation. But, thanks to the desiccating air of Turkistan, all that the sands have hidden have been preserved from decay —and this for close upon 1,500 years. Now, under the direction of explorers and archaeologists, in the foretront of whom may be mentioned Sir Aurel Stein, excavations have been carried on at a number of ancient sites in the Taklamakan Desert.

In what must have been an ancient cemetery, the bodies, well preserved, but quite dry, of some Chinamen were found, clothed in the picturesque garments of the Tang period (about the sixth century). Certainly no costumes so ancient have been preserved by the Chinese in China proper. Those unearthed by Sir Aurel Stein must therefore be quite unique; and, moreover, should afford valuable indications on the condition of the textile industry in China at a far-off period.

Treasures of Literature and Art

Manuscripts, too, have been extraordinarily abundant; and these, not in one, but in some twenty different languages. Those in Chinese, Tibetan, Persian, Syriac, etc., can still be read with more or less ease. But other scripts, such as those in Central Asian Brahmi, Manaechian, Oughur, and Tanguti are a mystery, save to a few European scholars. Some of the books found are medical treatises; others are fragments of certain Buddhist sacred writings, and others again are fragments in Syriac of the New Testament. All these records are written on paper, birch bark, white leather, wooden tablets, or on silk cloth.

Still more striking are the frescoes and wall-paintings that have been recovered from sand-buried Buddhist temples—all relics of great interest because they indicate some of the stepping-stones by which the Graeco-Buddhist art of north-west India advanced through Turkistan to China and even to Japan. Here, therefore, in the Taklamakan Desert, we have a storehouse of bygone civilizations, and who knows what new pages of history still lie hidden under the sands?

END OF VOLUME VI.

"Peoples of All Nations" is now more than half complete

TAKE ADVANTAGE OF THIS SPECIAL BINDING OFFER

The Publishers of PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS are prepared to undertake the actual work of binding the loose parts into volume form for those subscribers who are unable to get this done to their satisfaction locally

Conditions which must be observed:

Only fortnightly parts in good condition—free from stains, tears, or other defacements—can be accepted for binding.

The parts to be bound must be packed securely in a parcel (seven parts constituting a volume) containing the name and postal address of the sender clearly written and posted direct to the publishers' binding department or handed to a newsagent, the subscriber being liable for the cost of carriage in both cases.

If the parcel is sent direct to the Publishers the cheque or postal order in payment for binding-cases and actual work of binding should be enclosed in a separate envelope, together with a note mentioning how many parts have been dispatched and what style of binding is desired The cheque or postal order should be sufficient to cover the full amount of the binding charges in respect of the actual number of parts sent in ONLY

The name and address of sender should be given in the letter as well as in the parcel, and **the letter containing cheque or postal order must not be put in the parcel: post it separately.**

All cheques or postal orders must be made payable to The Amalgamated Press (1922) Limited, and crossed "Bank of England, Law Courts Branch" Address the package to

"Peoples of All Nations," Binding Department,
The Amalgamated Press (1922) Ltd.,
Bear Alley,
Farringdon Street, London, E.C. 4.

The bound volumes will be dispatched to subscribers in strict rotation according to the order in which the loose parts have been received at the Publishers' binding department.

Before packing the parcel it is advisable to make quite certain that nothing of value has been left between the leaves of the loose parts

ALL ABOVE PRICES APPLY TO GREAT BRITAIN ONLY.

Terms for the Trade *will be supplied on application to the above address*

In sending instructions all that need be done is to specify which of the following styles is desired.

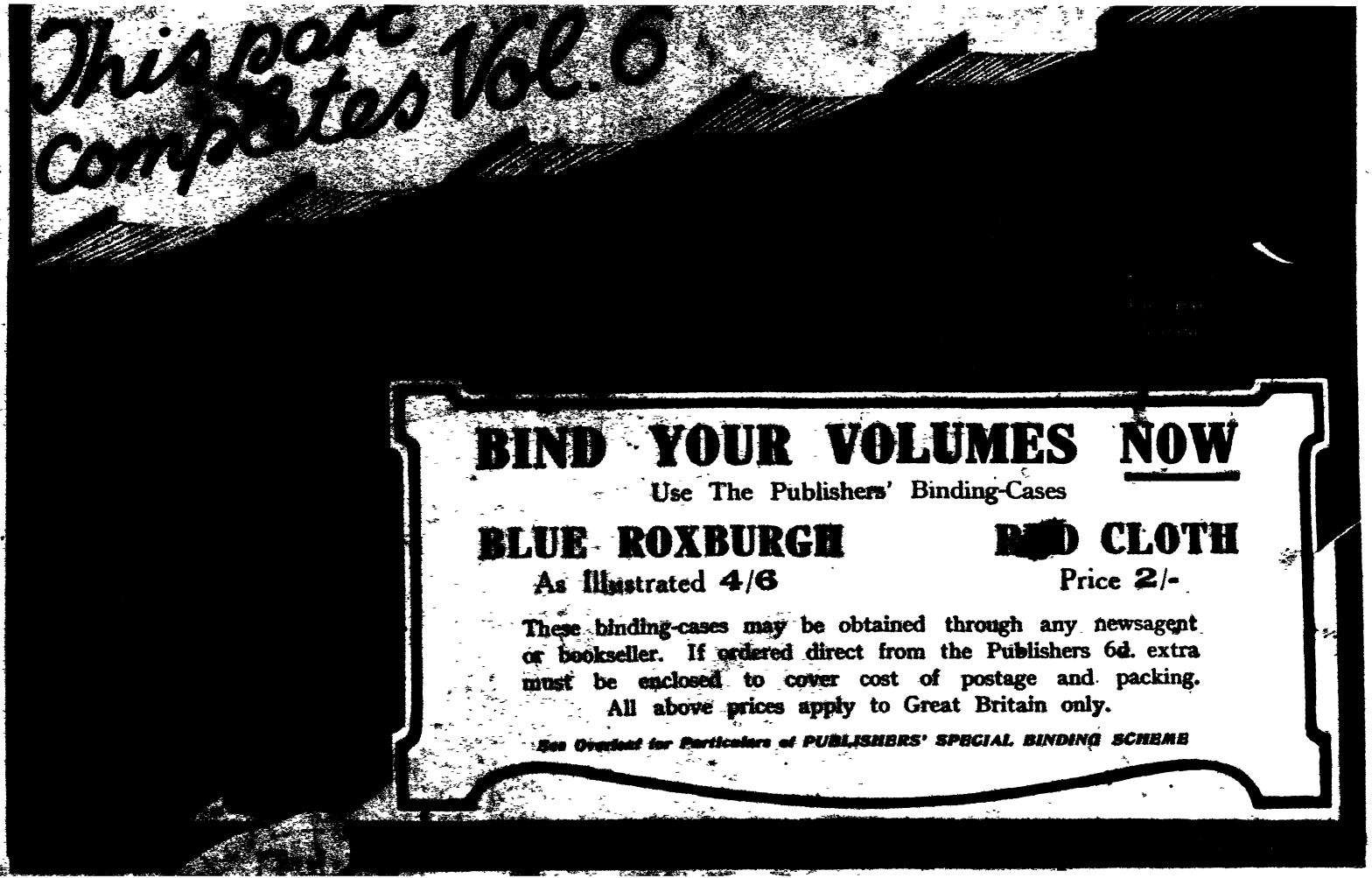
(Style No 1)—To bind the loose parts in the *Red Cloth* binding case with full gilt back the top edges of the leaves to be sprinkled The inclusive charge for this will be 6 (2 for the binding case and 4 for the actual binding and cost of packing and carriage)

(Style No. 2) To bind the loose parts in the beautiful *Blue Harburgh* style with full gilt back heavy canvas grained end papers special cloth joint and burnished top The inclusive charge for this will be 9/3 (4/6 for the leather binding case and 4/9 for the cost of binding as specified packing and return carriage)

(Style No. 2a)—To bind precisely as style No 2 but with English gold top to the leaves The inclusive charge for this is 9/9 (4/6 for the morocco grain binding case and 5/3 for the work of binding special gold top packing and return carriage)

Part 43 PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS will be on sale everywhere Tuesday, October 2

M and published every alternate Tuesday by the Proprietors, The Amalgamated Press (1922), Ltd., The Fleetway House, Farringdon Street, E.C.4. Sole Agents for South Africa: Central News Agency, Ltd. Sole Agents for Australasia: Messrs. Gordon & Gotch, Ltd.; and inside: The Imperial News Co., Ltd. (Canada). Subscription Rates: Inland and Abroad, 1s. 6d. per copy. October 7th, 1939.



"GYANLOK LIBRARY"

लाल बहादुर शास्त्री राष्ट्रीय प्रशासन अकादमी, पुस्तकालय
Lal Bahadur Shastri National Academy of Administration Library
मसूरी
MUSSOORIE

अवाप्ति सं०
Acc. No.....

कृपया इस पुस्तक को निम्नलिखित दिनांक या उससे पहले वापस कर दें।

Please return this book on or before the date last stamped below.

दिनांक Date	उधारकर्ता की संख्या Borrower's No.	दिनांक Date	उधारकर्ता की संख्या Borrower's No.

113101
प्रवाप्ति संख्या
Acc. No. 45558
वर्ग संख्या
Class No. 909
पुस्तक संख्या
Book No. Peo V.6
लेखक
Author
शीर्षक
Title Peoples of all - Nations.

909
Peo
V.6
45558

LIBRARY
LAL BAHADUR SHASTRI
National Academy of Administration
MUSSOORIE

Accession No. 113101

1. Books are issued for 15 days only but may have to be recalled earlier if urgently required.
2. An over-due charge of 25 Paise per day per volume will be charged.
3. Books may be renewed on request, at the discretion of the Librarian.
4. Periodicals, Rare and Reference books may not be issued and may be consulted only in the Library.
5. Books lost, defaced or injured in any way shall have to be replaced or its double price shall be paid by the borrower.

Help to keep this book fresh, clean & moving